The ſecond Tome of the Palace of Pleaſure,

conteyning ſtore of gwdly Hiſtories, Tragicall matters, and other Morall argument, very requiſite for delighte and profit.

Choſen and ſelected out of diuers good and commendable Authors:

By William Painter, Clerke of the Ordinance and Armarie.

ANNO. 1567.

Imprinted at London, in Pater Noſter Rowe, by Henry Bynneman, for Nicholas England.

¶ To the right worſhipfull Sir George Howarde Knighte, Maſter of the Quenes Maieſties Armarie.

EVerie Science hauing hys peculiar cõmoditie, and conducing to the trauailer and diligent ſearcher, a due deſerued benefite (byſides the exerciſe and ſhunning the peſtilent monſter Idleneſſe) diſcloſeth the miraculous effect of the Diuinitie and the excellencie of his Creature: Who breathing life into that ſenceleſſe work, framed within the mould of humane Conception, forceth in him by Nature and timely inſtitution, ſuch capacitie of Science, as not only by that knowledge he glorifieth his Creator, but alſo beſides himſelfe, helpeth and dothe good to other. For proſe wherof, the Science of that ſurpaſſing and delightſome paſture of Theologie, is profitable to teach, argue, reproue, and inſtruct, that by pacięce and conſolatiõ, we may conceue hope of Eternitie. The knowlege of Philoſophie cureth the minde, auoideth childiſh care, expelleth feare, and ſhunneth fonde deſires. O Philoſophie, the guide of life (exclameth Tullie) the inquiſitor of Vertue, and expeller of vice. Rhetorike (affirmeth he) cauſeth vs to learne that we knowe not, and that we know, to teach to other: By the ſame we exhort, with that we perſuade, with that we cõfort the afflicted, by it we incourage the aſtonned, and appeaſe the outragious. Muſike eaſeth the troubled mind, lenifieth ſorowe, comforteth the heauie hearted, and erecteth a contemplation of heauenly things. Aſtronomie reuealeth the nature of the Starres and Planets, preſageth dayes and times for the helpe and maintenance of life. Poeſie teacheth amendement of maners, directeth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonneſſe anoyeth the bodie of man. By meanes of it

(Saint Augustine saith) he learned many good lessons to p
site himselfe, and doe good to other. To be short, euery scienc
so necessarie, as the same taken away, Reason is depriued, a
the Life of man, of due order and gouernement defraude
Thinke (sayth a Greke Orator) the knowledge of many thi
to be more precious and excellent, than a chest heaped vp w
abundance of money: for the one quickly faileth, and the o
for euer lasteth. For, Scientia (affirmeth he) is the onely im
mortall storehouse of all possessions: Amongs which troupe o
Sciences the knowledge and searche of Historie deserueth
place in the chiefest ranke, and is for example of humane af
faires, a Christall light to shew the pathes of our Ancestors.
The same displayeth the counsels, aduises, policies, acts, succes
and ends of Kings, Princes, and great men, with the order and
description of time and place, And like a liuely image represe
teth before our eyes the beginning, ende and circumstance o
eche attempt. The same (like a Mistresse of our life) by proba
ble examples, stirreth vp our sluggishe mindes, to aspire the e
ternall glorie of praise and fame, and terrifieth the desperat
and aduēturous, from enterprise of things vnsemely. The same
is a passing picture of Veritie, and an absolute Patern, framing
the matter, greater nor lesse than it is. And bicause I am no
ignorant what Encomia innumerable Authors in time passe,
and writers of oure time doe attribute vnto that Science, and
with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praise of
Historicall knowledge, I onely referre the worthinesse, to the
practisers, and the singularitie of Histories trauell and de-
light, to eche willing mind that imploy their leysure and time
therin. And I for my part do confesse (that by reading of His-
stories) I find the saying which Tullie aduoucheth of Publius
Scipio to be true: That he was neuer lesse idle, than when he
was idle, and neuer lesse alone than when he was alone: Mea-
ning thereby, that when he was at beste leisure, he was neuer
idle, nor when he was alone, vnoccupied. For when Labour re-
steth

steth him selfe in me, and Leisure refresheth other affaires, nothing delights more that vacant time, than reading of Histories in such vulgar speche, wherin my small knowledge taketh repast. And for that my priuate reding might not delight and pleasure me alone, to auoide the nature of that cancred churle and foe of humane companie, Timon of Athenes, that liued but for him selfe, I haue (after my skill) culled some floures and fruites from that pleasant store of those my readings to impart for vniuersall gaine and benefite, choosing rather hereby to follow the liberalitie of Cimon a Gentleman of that Citie, who knowing himselfe to be borne to profite other, and for the enriching of his countrey, not only atchieued marueious matters for furtherãce of Cõmon wealth, but left his Gardens and Orchardes open for all men to participate the fruits of his plesure and trauell. Wherby (so well as I can) I follow the tracte and practise of other, by whose meanes, so manifold sciences in our knowne tongue, and translation of Histories bee frequent and rife amongs vs. All which be done for our commoditie, pleasure, solace, preseruation and comfort, and without the which we can not be long sustained in this miserable life, but shall become not muche vnlike the barbarous, ne discrepant from the sauage sort. The inuestigatours and bringers to light wherof, direct their eyes and mening to none other end, but for the benefite of vs and our posteritie, and that our faces be not tainted with the blushing color, to see the passing diligence of other Coũtreys, by curious imbelishing of their states, with the troublous trauaile of their brain, and laborsome course of penne, Who altogether imploye those paines, that no Science lurke in corner, that no Knowledge be shut vp in cloisters, that no Historie remain vnder the maske and vnknowne attire of other tongues. Amõgs which crew (I say) I craue an inferior place, and haue vndertaken the vnfolding of sundry Histories, from the couerture of foren language, for none other purpose and intent but to vniuersall benefite. Parte wherof, two yeares past

(almoſt) wer made commune in a former boke, now ſuccedeth a ſeconde, furniſhed with like ornaments that the other was. The firſt (by dueties chalenge) was addreſſed to the right honorable the Erle of Warwike, for reſpect of his honor, and my calling. This the ſecond, by like band, your worſhip may iuſtly claime as a iuſt tribute, nowe this moneth of Nouembre, payable. Or if your Curteſie woulde not deale ſo roughly with your bounden creditour, yet for dutie ſake I muſt acquite and content that which hath ſo long ben due. The ſame I offre now, not with ſuch vſurie and gaine as your beneuolence and ſingular bountie, by long forbearing hath deſerued, but with ſuche affected will and deſire of recompence, as any man aliue can owe to ſo rare a friend. Your worſhip I haue choſen for the firſt perſon of this boke, and the protectour of the ſame (the matter moſt ſpecially therin compriſed, treting of courtly faſhions and maners, and of the cuſtomes of loues galantiſe, and the good or yll ſucceſſe thereof) bicauſe you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldeſt Traine, and ſuche as hath ben imployed by ſundrie our Princes, in their affaires of greateſt weight and importance: and for that your ſelf in your luſtieſt time, (euer bred and brought vp in Court) haue not bene vnacquainted with thoſe occurrents. If I ſhould ſtande particularly to touch the originall of your noble Anceſtrie, the ſucceſſion of that renoumed line, their fidelitie for graue aduiſe and counſell, your honourable education, the mariage of a mighty King with one of your ſiſters, the valiant exploites of your parentes againſt the French and Scots, the worthie ſeruice of your ſelf in field, whereby you deſeruedly wanne the order of Knighthode, the truſt which hir Maieſtie repoſeth in you, by diſpoſing vnder your charge the Store of hir Armure, and your worthie preferment to be Maiſter of hir Armarie generall. If I ſhoulde make recitall of your careſull induſtrie and painfull trauell, ſuſtained for anſwering hir Maieſties expectation, your noble cheriſhing of the skilfull in that Science, your good aduaunce-

ment

ment of the beſt, to ſupplie the vacant romes, your refuſall of the vnworthie: and finally of your modeſt and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of abilitie (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumſtaunce, to adde ſufficient praiſe: Yea although my ſelf do ſay nothing (but reſerue the ſame in ſilence to auoide ſuſpect of adulation) the very Armure and their furnitures do ſpeake, vniuerſall teſtimonie doth wonder, and the Readineſe of the ſame for tyme of ſeruice doth aduounche. Which care of things continually reſting in your breaſt, hath atchieued ſuche a timely diligence and ſucceſſe, as when hir Maieſties aduerſarie ſhall be ready to moleſt, ſhe ſhal be preſt (by Gods aſsiſtance) to defend and marche. But not to hold your worſhip long by length of preamble, or to diſcourſe what I might further ſay, eyther in fauour of this Boke, or commendation of your ſelfe, I meane (for this inſtant) to leaue the one to general iudgement, and the other to the particular ſentence of eche of your acquaintaunce. Humbly making this only ſute, that my good will may ſupplie the imperfection of mine abilitie.

And ſo with my heartie prayer for your preſeruation, to him that is the Author of life and health. I take my leaue.

From my poore houſe beſides the Toure of London, the fourthe of Nouember 1567.

Your moſte bounden
William Painter.

¶ A Summarie of the Nouels ensuing.

¶ The Hardinesse and conquestes of diuers stoute and aduenturous Women called Amazones, the beginning, continuance and end of their raigne, and of the great iourney of one of their Quēnes called Thalestris to visit Alexander the great, and the cause of hir trauaile. Nouel.j. Fol.1.

¶ The great pietie and continencie of Alexander the great, and his louing interteinement of Sisigambis, the Wife of the great Monarch Darius after he was vanquished. Nouel.ij. Fol.5.

¶ Thimoclia, a Gentlewoman of *Thebes*, vnderstanding the couetous desire of a Thracian Knight, that had abused hir and promysed hir mariage rather for hir goodes than Loue, well acquited hirselfe from his falsehode. Nouel.iij. Fol.9.

¶ Ariobarzanes great Stewarde to Artaxerxes King of *Persia*, goeth about to excēde his soueraigne Lord & maister in Curtesie: wherein are conteyned many notable and pleasant chaunces, besides the great pacience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd Ariobarzanes. Nouel.iiij. Fol.11.

¶ Lucius one of the Garde to Aristotimus the Tyranne of the Citie of *Elis*, fell in loue with a faire Maiden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemus, and his crueltie done vpon hir. The stoutenesse also of a noble Matrone named Megistona, in defense of hir husband and the Common wealth from the tyrannie of the

the sayd Aristotimus : and of other acts done by the subiectes, vpon that tyrant.

Nouel.v. Fol.32.

¶ The maruelous courage & ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaquil, ỹ Quéne & wife of Tarquinus Priscus the first Romane King, with hir persuasions and pollicie to hir husband, for his aduauncement to the kingdome : hir like encouragement of Seruius Tullius : wherin also is described the ambitiõ of one of the two daughters of Seruius Tullius, the first Romane King, and hir crueltie towardes hir owne naturall father : with other accidents chaunced in the new erected Common wealth of *Rome*, specially of the laste Romane King Tarquinus Superbus, who with murder attained the kingdome, with murder maynteined it, and by the murder and insolent life of his sonne, was with all his progenie banished.

Nouel.vj. Fol.40.

¶ The vnhappy ende and successe of the loue of King Massinissa, and of Quéne Sophonisba his wife.

Nouel.vij. Fol.49.

¶ The crueltie of a King of *Macedon*, who forced a Gentlewomã called Theoxena, to persuade hir children to kil & poison themselues : after which fact, she and hir husband Poris, ended their life by drowning.

Nouel.viij. Fol.59.

¶ A strange & maruellous vse, which in olde time was obserued in *Hidrusa* : where it was lawfull (with the licence of a Magistrate ordeyned for that purpose) for euery man and woman that lyst, to kyll

 them

them ſelues. Nouel.ix. Fol.62.

¶ The diſhoneſt loue of Fauſtina the Empreſſe, and with what remedie the ſame was remoued and taken away. Nouel. x. Fol.65.

¶ Chera hidde a treaſure, Eliſa going about to hang hir ſelfe, and tying the halter about a beame, found that treaſure, and in place therof lefte the halter. Philene, the daughter of Chera, going for that treaſure, and buſily ſearching for the ſame, founde the halter, wherewithall for diſpaire ſhe woulde haue hanged hir ſelfe: but forbidden by Eliſa, who by chaunce eſpied hir, ſhe was reſtored to part of hir loſſe, leading afterwards a happie and proſperous life. Nouel. xj, Fol.67.

¶ Letters of the Philoſopher Plutarch, to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the ſayde Emperour to Plutarch, the like alſo from the ſayde Emperour to the *Senate* of *Rome*. In all whiche be conteyned Godly rules for gouernement of Princes, obedience of Subiects, and their dueties to Cõmon wealth. Nouel.xij. Fol.76.

¶ A notable hiſtorie of three amorous Gentlewomen, called Lamia, Flora, & Lais: cõteining the ſutes of noble Princes, and other greate perſonages made vnto them, with their anſweres to diuers demaunds: and the maner of their death and funeralls. Nouel.xiij. Fol.123.

¶ The life and geſtes of the moſt famous Quéene Zenobia, with the Letters of the Emperoure Aurelianus,

nus to the sayde Quéne, and hir stoute aunswere therevnto. Nouel. xiiij. Fol.89.

¶ Euphimia the King of *Corinths* daughter, fell in loue with Achariſto, the ſeruaunt of hir father, and beſides others which required hir to mariage, ſhe diſdained Philon, the King of *Pelponeſus*, that loued hir very feruently. Achariſto conſpiring againſt the King, was diſcouered, tormented, and put in priſon, and by meanes of Euphimia deliuered: The King promyſed his daughter and kingdome to hym that preſented the head of Achariſto. Euphimia ſo wrought, as he was preſented to the King: The King gaue hym his daughter to Wife: and when he died, made him his heire: Achariſto began to hate his wife, and condemned hir to death as an adultereſſe. Philon deliuered hir: and vpon the ſute of hir Subiectes, ſhée is contented to marie hym, and thereby he is made King of *Corinth*.

Nouel xv. Fol.101.

¶ The Marchioneſſe of *Monferrato*, with a banket of Hennes, and certaine pleaſant words, repreſſed the fonde loue of Philip, the Frenche King.

Nouel. xvj. Fol.112.

¶ Miſtreſſe Dianora demaunded of Maiſter Anſaldo, a Garden ſo faire in Januarie, as in the Moneth of May. Maiſter Anſaldo (by meanes of an obligation whiche he made to a Necromancer) cauſed the ſame to bée done: The huſbande agréed wyth the Gentlewoman that ſhe ſhould do the pleſure which maiſter Anſaldo required: who hearing the liberalitie of the huſbande, acquited hir of hir promiſe, & the

Necromancer likewise discharged master Ansaldo.
Nouel.xvij. Fol.n4.

¶ Mithridanes, enuious of the liberalitie of Nathan, and going about to kill him, spake vnto him vnknowne, and being informed by himselfe by what meanes he might doe the same, he founde him in a little woode accordingly as he had tolde him, who knowing hym, was ashamed, and became his friende.
Nouel.xviij. Fol.n8.

¶ Master Gentil of *Carisendi*, being come from *Modena*, toke a woman oute of hir graue, that was buryed for deade, who after shée was come againe, brought forth a sonne, whiche Maister Gentil rendred afterwards with the mother to master Nicholas Chasenemie hir husbande.
Nouel. xix. Fol.123.

¶ Saladine, in the habite of a marchant, was honorably receiued into the house of Master Thorello, who went ouer the sea, in companie of the Christians, and assigned a terme to his wife, when she shold marie againe. He was taken, and caried to the Souldan to be his falconer, who knowing hym, and suffering him selfe to be knowne, did him great honor. Master Thorello fell sicke, and by Magike arte, was caried in a night to *Pauie*, where he founde his wife about to marie againe, who knowing him, returned home with him to his owne house.
Nouel. xx. Fol.128.

¶ A Gentleman of meane calling and reputation, doth fall in loue with Anne, the Quéene of *Hungarie*, who she

the very royally and liberally requited.
Nouel xxj. Fol.140.

¶ The gentle and iust act of Alexander de Medices, the first Duke of *Florence*, vpon a Gentleman, whome he fauored, who hauyng ramished the daughter of a poore Piller, caused him to marie hir, for the greater honor and celebration wherof, he apointed hir a rich and honourable dowrie.
Nouel.xxij. Fol.155.

¶ The Infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called Antonie Bologna, with the Duchesse of *Malfi*, and the pitifull death of them both.
Nouel. xxiij. Fol.169.

¶ The disordred life of the Countesse of *Celant*, & how she (causing the Counte of *Massino* to be murdered) was beheaded at *Milan*.
Nouel.xxiiij. Fol.195.

¶ The godly historie of the true and constant loue betweene Rhomeo and Iulietta: the one of whome died of poyson, and the other of sorrowe and heauinesse: wherin be comprised many aduentures of loue, and other deuises touching the same.
Nouel.xxv. Fol.218.

¶ Two Gentlemen of *Venice*, were honorably deceiued of their wiues, whose notable practises, and secrete conference for atchieuing their desire, occasioned diuers accidents, and ingendred double benefit, wherin also is recited an eloquent oration made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and

state of that Citie: with other chaunces and acts concerning the same.

Nouel.xxvj. Fol.247.

¶ The Lorde of *Virle*, by the commaundement of a faire yong Widow called Zilia, and for hir promyse made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remaine dumbe the space of three yeares: and by what meanes hée was reuenged and obteyned his suite.

Nouel.xxvij. Fol.268.

¶ Two Barons of *Hungarie* assuring them selues to obtaine their suite made to a faire Ladie of *Boeme*, receiued of hir a straunge and maruellous repulse, to their shame and infamie, curssing the time that euer they aduentured an enterprise so foolishe.

Nouel.xxviij. Fol.292.

¶ Dom Diego, a Gentleman of *Spayne*, fell in loue with faire Ginecura, and she with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied Dom Diego his happy choise, was by the default of light credite on hir parte interrupted. He constant of minde, fell into dispaire, and abandonyng all hys friendes and lyuing, repayred to the *Pyrene* Mountaines, where he ledde a sauage life for certaine Monethes, and afterwardes (knowne by one of his friends) was by maruellous circumstance reconciled to hys frowarde mistresse, and maried.

Nouel.xxx. Fol.309.

¶ A Cen-

Nouels ensuing.

¶ A Gentleman of *Siena*, called Anselmo Salimbene, curteously and gently deliuereth his enimie from deathe. The condempned partie seyng the kynde parte of Salimbene, rendreth into his handes his syster Angelica, with whome hée was in loue: which gratitude and Curtesie Salimbene well markyng, moued in conscience woulde not abuse hir, but for recompense toke hir to wife.

Nouel. xxx. Fol. 350.

¶ A Widow called Pistrelle Helena, wyth whome a Scholer was in Loue (shée louyng an other) made the same Scholer to stande a whole Wynters night in the Snowe to wayte for hir, who afterwardes by a sleyghte and policie, made hir in July, to stand vpon a Toure stark naked, amongs Flies, and Gnattes, and in the Sunne.

Nouel. xxxj. Fol. 376.

¶ A Gentlewoman, and Widowe, called Camiola, of hir owne kynde named Rolande, the Kynges sonne of *Sicilia*, of purpose to haue hym to hir husbande, who when hée was redemed, vnkyndely denied hir, against whome verie eloquentely shée inueyed, and although the lawe proued him to bée hir husbande, yet for hys vnkindnesse, shée vterly refused hym.

Nouel. xxxij. Fol. 391.

¶ Great

¶ Great cruelties chaunced to the lordes of *Nocera* for auulterie by one of them committed with the Captains wife of the Fort of that Citie, with an enterprise moued by the Captaine to the Citizens of the same, for rebellion, and the good and duetiful answere of them: with other pitifull euents, rising of that notable and outragious vice of whoredome.

Nouel.xxxiij. Fol.297.

¶ The greate Curtesie of the King of *Marocco*, a Citie in *Barbarie*, towarde a poore Fisherman, one of hys subiects, that had lodged the King, being stolne from his companie in hunting.

Nouel.xxxiiij. Fol.410.

¶ To the Reader.



AS ſhevved curteſie deſerueth gratefull acquitall, & frendly fauor forceth mutual merit, So for gentle acceptation of my other boke, I render to thy delight and profit a Second Tome. For which I craue but like report: albeit neither worthy of any: or other, than the rude Artificer gayneth by trial of his arte. Who hauing committed to his skill and workemanſhip, ſome ſubſtance of golde or other precious mater, faſhioneth the ſame with ſuch bungled ſhape and order, as (beſides diſpraiſe) it carieth the vnableneſſe of the workman. Howſoeuer (then) the ableneſſe or perfection hereof vniuerſally ſhall content or particularly diſpleaſe: the Boke craueth milde conſtruction, for imployed paines. And yet the ſame (liking or lothing the licorous diet and curious expectation of ſome) ſhall beare regarde with thoſe, that more delight in holſome viandes (voide of varietie) than in the confuſed mixture of foren drugges fetched farre of. Who no dout will ſupply with fauorable brute, default of ableneſſe, and riper skill in the myſteries of forren ſpeche. Which is the guerdon (beſides publique benefit) after which I gaze, and the beſt ſtipende that eche well willing mynde (as I ſuppoſe) aſpireth for their trauell. And briefly to touche what comoditie thou ſhalt reape of theſe ſucceeding Hiſtories, I deme it not vnapt for thine inſtruction, to vnfolde what pithe and ſubſtance, reſteth vnder the contexte of their diſcourſe.

¶ In the Nouell of the AMAZONES, is diſplaied a ſtrange and miraculous porte (to our preſent skill) of womens gouernment, what ſtates they ſubdued, what increaſe of kingdome, what combats and conflicts they durſt attempt contrarie to the nature of that ſexe.

¶ In ALEXANDER the great, what ought to be the gratitude and curteſie in a puiſſant Prince, toward his ſlaue and captiue, and to what perilous plundge he ſlippeth by exchange of vice for vertue.

¶ In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the ſtoutneſſe of two noble Dames to auoide the beaſtly luſt and raging furie of Tyrants.

¶ ARIOBARZANES telleth the duetie of a Subiect to his Prince: and how he ought not to contend with his ſoueraine in maters of curteſie, at length alſo the condition of Courting flaterers: and the poyſon of the Monſter Enuie.

¶ARISTOTIMVS disgarboileth the intrails of Tyrannie, descubing the end whereunto Tyrants do atteine, and how that vice plageth their posteritie.

¶The two Romane Queenes do point (as it were) with their fingers, the natures of Ambition and Crueltie, and the gredy lust (hidden in that feble sexe) of soueraintie.

¶SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beautie, and what poison distilleth from that licorous sappe to inuenim the harts of valiant gentlemen.

¶The Gentlewoman of HYDRVSA the fickleneſſe of Fortune.

¶The Empreſſe FAVSTINA and the Counteſſe of Celant, what bloſſoms blome of whoriſh life and what fruites thereof be culled.

¶The Letters of the Emperor TRAIANE, do paint a right ſhape of vertue, a good ſtate of gouernment, and the comely forme of obedience.

¶Three Amorous Dames reueale the ſleightes of loue, the redineſſe of Nobles to be baited with that amorous hooke, and what deſire ſuch infamous Strumpets haue, to be honored.

¶Queene ZENOBIA, what the noble Gentlewomen, (whom the fates ordaine to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimitie ought to ſtretch, and in what boundes to conteine their ſoueraintie.

¶EVPHIMIA a Kings daughter of Corinthe, and the vnfortunate Ducheſſe of Malfi, what matche of mariage Ladies of renowme, and Dames of Princely houſes ought to chooſe.

¶Miſtreſſe DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, and SALADINE, the mutual curteſies of noble and gentle perſonages, and for what reſpectes.

¶Queene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitie of a Queene: and with what induſtrie Gentlewomen of priuie chaumbre ought to preferre the ſutes of the valiant, and of ſuch as haue well ſerued the Common welth.

¶ALEXANDRE de Medices, a Duke of Florence, the iuſtice of a Prince and Gouernour to the wronged partie, what vertues ought to ſhine in Courtiers, and with what temperance their inſolence is to be repreſſed.

¶IVLIETTA and RHOMEO diſcloſe the hartie affections of two incomparable louers, what ſecret ſleightes of loue, what danger either ſort incurre which mary without the aduiſe of Parentes.

¶Two Gentlewomen of Venice the wiſdom and policie of wiues to chaſtiſe and reſtraine the follies of Husbands, and the ſtoutneſſe they ought to vſe in their defenſe.

¶The Lord of Virle and the widow ZILIA, giue leſſons to Louers, to

auoide the immoderate pangs of loue, they pronoſticate the indiſcretion of promiſed penance, they warne to beware all vnſemely heſtes, leſt the penalties of couetiſe and vaine glory be incurred.

¶The Lady of Boeme, ſchooleth two noble Barons, that with great boaſt aſſured themſelues to impaire hir honor.

¶DOM DIEGO and GINEVRA, recorde the crueltie of women, bent to hate, and the voluntarie vow performed by a paſsionate knight, with the perfect frendſhip of a true frend in redreſſe of a frendes miſſehap.

¶SALIMBENE & ANGELICA the kindneſſe of a gentleman in deliuerie of his enimie, and the conſtant mynde of a chaſte and vertuous mayden.

¶Miſtreſſe HELENA of Florence, diſcouereth what lothſom luſtes do lurke vnder the barke of fading beautie, what ſtench of filthie affection fumeth from the ſmoldring gulf of diſhoneſt Loue, what prankes ſuch Dames do plaie for deceite of other and ſhame of themſelues.

¶CAMIOLA reproueth the mobilitie of youth, ſuch chiefly as for noble aunceſtrie regarded riches more than vertue. She like a Miſtreſſe of conſtancie leſſoneth hir equalles from wauering myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnſtedie contracts: with thoſe that care not (vnder what pretence) they come by riches.

¶The Lords of Nocera foretell the hazards of whordom, the rage of Ieloſie, the difference of duetie betwene Prince and ſubiect, the fructes of a Rebell, the endes of Traiterie and Tiranny, and what monſtrous ſucceſſe ſuch vices do attaine.

¶The King of Maroco deſcribeth the good nature of the homely and loiall ſubiect, the maruelous loue of a true and ſimple Cuntry man toward his liege & ſoueraigne Lord, & the bountie of a curteous prince, vpō thoſe that vnder rude attire be garniſht with the flowres of vertue.

To be ſhort, the contēts of theſe Nouels from degree of higheſt Emperor, from the ſtate of greateſt Queene and Ladie, to the homely Cuntrie peaſant and rudeſt vilage girle, may conduce profit for inſtruction, & pleaſure for delight. They offer rules for auoiding of vice and imitation of vertue, to all eſtates. This boke is a very Court & Palace for all ſorts to fixe their eies therein, to view the deuoires of the Nobleſt, the vertues of the gentleſt, and the dueties of the meaneſt. Yt is a Stage and Theatre, for ſhew of true Nobilitie, for proofe of paſsing loialtie, and for triall of their contraries. Wherefore as in this I haue continued what erſt I partly promiſed in the firſt: So vpon intelligence of the ſecond ſigne of thy good will, a Third (by Gods aſſiſtance) ſhall come forth.

Farewell.

¶ Authorities from whence theſe Nouels be collected: and in the ſame auouched.

Strabo.
Plinie.
Quintus Curtius.
Plutarche.
Titus Liuius.
Dionyſius Halcarnaſæus.
Appianus Alexandrinus.
Ouide.
Horace.
Propertius.
Cicero.
Valerius Max.
Tribelius Pollio.
Xenephon.
Homere.
Virgilius.
Baptiſta Campofulgoſus.
Bandello.
Bocaccio.
Gyraldi Cynthio.
Belleforreſt.
Bouſtuau.
Pietro di Seuiglia.
Antonio di Gueuarra.

THE SECOND TOME of the Palace of Pleasure.

The Amazones.

¶ The hardinesse and conquests of diuers stout and aduenturous women, called AMAZONES, the beginning and continuance of their reigne, and of the greate Iourney of one of their Queenes called THALESTRIS to visit ALEXANDER the great: and the cause of hir trauaile.

The first Nouel.



Here the first boke began with a Combate foughte and tried betwene two mighty cities, for principalitie and gouernment, the one hight Rome after called the heade of the world (as some thinke by reason of a mans head fownd in the place where the *Capitole* did stand) the other Alba. To which Combat sir gentlemen of either citie wer appointed, and the victorie chaunced to the Romaine side: In this second parte, in the forefront and first Nouel of the same, is described the beginning, continuance and

ende of a Womans Common wealth (an Hystorie rare and straunge to the vnlearned, ignorant of the worldes fickle ruled stay) which contended with mighty Princes and puissant Potentates for defense of their kingdome, no lesse than the Carthaginians and Romaines did for theirs. But as it is no wōder to the skilful that a whole Monarche and kingdom should be intierly peopled with that Sere: so to the not wel trained in Hystories, this may seme miraculous. Wherfore not to stay thē from the discourse of those straunge and Aduenturous women, diuers be of diuers opinions for the Etimologie of the word: wherof amonges the Grecians be diuerse iudgementes. These Amazones were moste excellent warriers, very valiant, and without mannes aduise did conquer mighty Countreyes, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuing of long time in one Seigniorie and gouernment. These people occupied and enioyed a great part of Asia. Some writers deuide them into two Prouinces, one in Scithia in ỳ North parte of Asia: other by the hill Imaus, which at this day is called the Tartarian Scithia, different from that which is in Europa: the other sort of the Amazones were in Libia a prouince of Africa. But bicause the common sort of Authors doe vnderstand the Amazones to be those of Asia, I meane to leaue off the differēce. The Scithians were a warlike people, and at the beginning of their kingdome had two kings, by whome they were gouerned. Notwithstanding the nature of dominion being of it self ambicious, cannot abide any companion or equal. Which caused these two Kinges to be at variance, and afterwardes the matter grew to ciuill warres, wherein the one being Victor, two of the principalest chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were banished with a great number of their adherentes, all

which

which did withdraw themselues to the limites of Cappadocia in the lesser Asia, & in despite of the Countrey peasantes, dwelled alonges the riuer of Thermodon, which entreth into the sea Euxinum, otherwise called Pontus. And they being made Lordes of the countrey, & of the places adioyning, raigned for certain yeres vntill the peasantes and their confederates made a conspiracie against them: and assembling by policie, ouercame them and slewe them all. The newes of their deathe knowen to their wiues dwelling in their countrey, caused them to cõceiue great heauinesse and dolor extreme. And although they were wemẽ, yet did they put on mãly courage, and determined to reuenge the death of their husbandes, by putting their handes to weapons wherwithall they did exercise themselues very ofte. And that they might all be equal & their sorow commõ, they murdred certain of their husbands which remained there after the other were banished. Afterward being all together, they made a great army, and forsoke their dwelling places, refusing the mariage of many suters. And arriuing in the land of their enimies (that made smal accõpt therof, although foretolde of their approche) they sodenly came vpon them vnprouided, and put them all to the sword. This being done, the women toke the gouernãce of the Countrey, inhabiting at the beginning along the Riuer of Thermodon, where their husbands wer slain. And although many Authors do differ in the situaciõ of the place where the Amazones did dwel, yet the truth is, that the beginning of their kingdome and of their habitacion was vpon that Riuer. But of their manifolde conquestes, be engendred diuers opinions declared by Strabo and others. They fortified them selues in those places and wanne other countries adioyning, choosing among them two Quenes, the one named Martesia, and

and the other Lampedo. Those two louyngly deuided the armie and men of warre in two parts, either of them defending (with great hardinesse) the Lands which they had conquered: and to make them selues more dreadfull (such was the credite and vanitie of men that time) they fained themselues to be ỹ daughters of Mars. Afterward these miraculous womẽ liuing after this maner in peace & iustice, considered that by succession of time, for want of daughters that might succéde, warres, and time, wold extinguishe their race. For this cause they treated marriage with their neighbors named Gargarians (as *Plinie* sayeth) with condition, that vpon certaine times of the yeare, their husbands shold assemble together in some appointed place, and vse them for certaine dayes vntill they were with childe: which being done and knowen, they shoulde returne home againe to their owne houses. If they brought forth daughters, they nourished and trained them vp in armes, and other manlyke exercises, and to ride great horsse. They taught them to run at base, & to follow the chace. If they were deliuered of males, they sent them to their fathers. And if by chaunce they kept any backe, they murdred them, or else brake their armes and leggs in suche wyse as they had no power to beare weapons, and serued for nothing elle but to spin, twist, and to doe other feminine labour. And for as much as these Amazones defeded themselues so valiantly in the warres with Bowe and Arrowes, and perceiued, that their breasts did verie much impech the vse of that weapon, and other exercises of armes, they seared vp ỹ right breastes of their yong daughters, for which cause they were named Amazones, which signifieth in the Greke tong, without breasts, although that some other do giue vnto that name an other Etimologie. Afterwardes, increasing by course of time in numbre & force, they made

great

great preparation of weapons and other engins for the warres, and leauing their cõtrey (which they thought was very small) in the keping of some, whom they especially trusted, ỹ rest marched abrode, cõquering & subduing all those which they foũd rebellious. And hauing passed the riuer of Tanais, they entred Europa, where they vanquished many countreys, directing their way towardes Thracia, from whence they returned a whyle after, with great spoile and victorie: and comming again into Asia, they brought many prouinces vnder their subiection, proceding euen to Mare Caspium. They edified and peopled an infinite numbre of good cities, amõgs which, according to the opinion of diuers, was the famous Citie of Ephesus, the same being the chiefe of all their Empire, and the principal place that stode vpon Thermodon. They defended them selues in warres with certaine Tergats, made in fashion of a half Moone, and entring into battaile vsed a certaine kinde of flutes to giue the people corage to fight, as the Lacedemoniãs were wont to do. In this wise increased more & more the fame of those women, and so continued vntill the tyme that Hercules, Theseus, and many other valiãt men liued in Græcia. The said Hercules, king Euristeus of Athenes cõmanded, to procede with great force of people against the Amazons, and that he shold bring vnto him the armures of the two Quẽnes, which then wer two sisters, that is to say Antiopa and Oritia. At this cõmandemẽt Hercules incoraged with desire of honor and glorie, accõpanied with Theseus, & other his frends, sailed alongst Pontus, and arriued in most conuenient place vpon the shoare of Thermodon, wher he lãded in such secret maner & with such opportunity of time, as Oritia, one of the two Quenes was gone out of the cõtrey with the greatest part of hir women, to make warre & conquere newe

Countreyes, in so much that he founde Antiopa, which doubted nothing, ne yet knewe of his comming. Upon which occasiõ, Hercules and his people surprising the Amazones vnwares, and although they entred into field and did put them selues in defense with suche diligence as the tyme serued, yet they were ouercome, and put to flight, and many of them slain, & the rest taken: amongst whom were the two sisters of the Quéene, the one named Menalipe which was Hercules prisoner, and the other Hipolita, the prisoner of Theseus. Certain Historiás do say, that they wer vanquished in a pitched field, and appointed battaile. And that afterwards the two sisters wer vanquished in singular Combat. The Quéene Antiopa then séeing this ouerthrow, and the taking of hir sisters, cam to composition with Hercules, to whom she gaue hir armure to carie to Euristeus. Upon charge that he should rendre vnto hir, hir sister Menalipe. But Theseus for no offer that she could make, would deliuer Hipolita, with whom he was so farre in loue, that he caried hir home with him, and afterward toke hir to wife, of whom he had a sonne called Hipolitus. Hercules satisfied of his purpose, returned very ioyfull of his victorie. Oritia certified of these newes, being then out of hir countrey, conceiued no lesse shame than sorrow, who fearing greater damage, returned spedily with hir women, the greter part whereof being of hir opiniõ, persuaded Antiopa to be reuẽged vpon the Grekes. For which purpose they made great preparation of warre. And afterwards leuying so great a numbre of ỹ Amazons as they could, they sent to Sigillus kyng of Scythia for succour: who sent them his sonne Pisagoras, with a great numbre of horsmen, by whose helpe the Amazones passing into Europa, and countrey about Athenes, they greatly anoied their enimie. But Pisagoras entred in quarell against

tha

the Quene and hir women, by meanes wherof, the Scythians could not fight, but withdrew them selues aside, whereby the Amazones (not able to suppoꝛte the foꝛce of the Greekes,) were ouercome and banquished, & the gretest part of thē cut in pieces. Those which did escape, ranne to the Scythians campe, of whome they were defeded. Afterward being returned into their cōutrey, they liued in lesse foꝛce and suretie than befoꝛe. In pꝛocesse of time the Greekes passed into Asia, and made a famous conquest of the Citie of Troy, when Pentheſilea was Quene of the Amazones, who remembꝛing ꝧ iniuries receiued by the Grekes, went with a great armie to help the Troians: Where that Quene did things woꝛthie of remembꝛaunce, but the Troianes banquished, in many skirmishes al the Amazones wer almost slain. And Pentheſilea amongs other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefoꝛe those that remained, returned into their countrey, with so litle power (in respect of that they had befoꝛe) as with great difficultie they sustained and defeded their olde possessions, and so continued till the time that Alexander the great wēt into Asia, to make warre againste the Hircanians. In which tyme one of their Quenes named Thaleſtris, accompanied with a great numbꝛe of the Amazones, went out of hir cōutrey with great desire to sée & knowe Alexander. And apꝛoching the pꝛace where hée was, she sent hir Ambassadour vnto hym to the ende that shée might obtaine safeconducte to sée him, makyng him to vnderstande howe much the renoum of his personage had inflamed hir hart to sée him. Wheresf Alexander béing told, graunted hir his safecōduct. By meanes wherof, after she had chosen out some of hir pꝛincipal womē, leauing the reſt in a certain place in verie good oꝛder, she wente towardes Alexander, of whom she was curteously entertained, & then with very

good

good countenance, she offred vnto him the effect of al hir abilitie. Who prayed hir to tel him, if he were able to do hir pleasure, & promised that hir request shold be accomplished. She answered that hir cõming was not to demand either lands or dominions, (wherof she had sufficient) but rather to knowe and be acquainted with such a famous Prince as he was, of whome shee had heard marueilous and strange report. But the chiefest cause of hir cõming was, to pray him of carnal copulation, that she might be conceiued with childe, and haue an heire begotten of so excellent a prince, telling him that she was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, & that he ought not to disdain hir vse. Promising him that if it pleased the Gods, that she should haue a daughter, she wold nourish it hir selfe, and make it hir vniuersall heire, and if it were a sonne, she woulde sende it vnto him. Alexander asked hir if she woulde go with hym to the warres, and if she woulde, he promised hir his companie. But she excusing hir selfe, answered that she coulde not go with him without great shame and daunger of losse of hir kingdome. Wherfore she prayed him againe to satisfie hir request. Finally she kept company with Alexander by the space of. xiij. dayes in publike and secrete sorte, which being expired, she toke hir leaue, and returned home to hir prouince. But as it is the propertie of time to consume all things: euen so the kingdom & power of the Amazones grew to vtter decay, no one such nation at this day to be foũd. For what monstrous Here was this that durst not onely by many armies encountre with puissant nations, but also by such single Combate, to fight with that terrible personage Hercules, whose vnspeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquitie reported to be such, as none but he, durst euer aduenture the like. Whose nation was comparable to the Greekes, or the

Atheni-

nian cities: and yet these mankynde women for reuenge thronke not to pierce their prouince. What like besieged towne as that of Troy was: and yet Penthesilea one of their Quéenes with hir maynie, woulde goe aboute to raise the Greekes, that so many yeares had lien before the same. What Quéene (nay what Stalant) durste sue for companie of meanest man: and yet one of these presumed to begge the match of the mightiest Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners & qualities of which nation, bicause they were women of no common spirite and boldnesse, be thought good in the front of this second volume to be described: bicause of diuers womens liues plentifull varietie is offered in the sequele. And for that some mencion hath bene made of the greate Alexander, and in what wise from vertue he fell to vice, the seconde Nouell ensuing, shall giue some further aduertisement.

Alexander the great.

¶ The great pitie and cõtinencie of ALEXANDER the great and his louing entertainmẽt of SISIGAMBIS, the wife of the greate Monarch DARIVS, after he was vanquished.

The second Nouel.

GReat Monarches and princes be the Gods and onely rulers vpon earthe, and as they be placed by Gods only prouidence and disposition, to conquere and rule the same, euen so in victorious battailes and honorable exploites, they ought to rule & ouer their conquests

like Gods: that is to say, to vse moderate behauiour to their captiues and slaues, specially to the weaker sorte of feminine kinde, whome like tyrants and barbarous, they ought not to corrupt and abuse, but like Christians and vertuous victors, to cherish and preserue their honour. For what can be safe to a woman (sayd Lucrece, when she was rauished by the Romaine Tarquine) hir chastitie being defiled? Or what can be safe to a man, that giueth him selfe to incontinencie? For when he hath despoiled the virgin, robbed the wife, or abused the widow of their honor and good name, they protrude them selues into many miseries, they be impudent, vnshamefast, aduenturous and careleſſe, how many mischieſes they do. And when a Prince or gouerner doth giue him self to licencious life, what mischieues, what rapes, what murders doth he cõmitte? No frende, no foe, no subiecte, no enimie doth he spare or defende. Contrarywise, the merciſull and continent captaine, by subduing his affections recouereth immortal fame, which this hiſtorie of king Alexãder full well declareth. And bicause before we spake of that great conquerour in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repaire of Quene Thaleſtris for vse of his bodie, at what tyme (as Curtius sayth) he fell from vertue to vice: wee purpose in this, to declare the greate continencie and mercie that he vsed to Siſigambis, the wife of the Perſian Prince Darius, and briefly to touch the time of his abused life, which in this manner doth begin. Alexander the great hauing banquiſhed Darius and his infinite armie, and retiring with his hoſte from the purſute and slaughter of the Perſians, entred into their campe to recreate him selfe. And being with his familiars in the mids of his bãket, they sodenly heard a pitifull crie, with ſtraunge howling and crying out, which did verie much astonne them. The wife and mother of

Darius

Darius with the other noble women newly taken prisoners, wer ꝯ occasiō of that present noise, by lamenting of Darius, whome they beleued to be slaine, which opinion they cōceiued through one of the Eunuches, which standing before their tent dore, sawe a souldier beare a piece of Darius Diademe. For which cause Alexander, pitying their miserie, sent a noble man called Leonatus to signifie vnto them that they were deceyued, for that Darius was liuing. Repairing towards the tent where the women were with certaine armed men, he sent word before, that he was coming to them with message from the king. But when such as stode at the tent dore saw armed men, they thought they had ben sent to murder the Ladies: for whiche cause they ranne in to them, crying that their last houre was come, for the souldiers were at hande to kill them. When Leonatus was entred the pauilion, the Mother and wife of Darius fell downe at his féete, intreating him that before they were slain, he wold suffer them to burie Darius, according to the order and maner of his countrey, after the performance of which obsequies, they were content (they sayd) willingly to suffer death. Leonatus assured them, that both Darius was aliue, and that there was no harme towardes them, but shoulde remaine in the same state they were in before. When Sisigambis heard those wordes, she suffered hir selfe to bée lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue some comfort. The nert day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of suche of his owne men as coulde be founde, and willed the same to be done to the noble men of the Persians, giuing licence to Darius mother to burie so many as she liste, after the custome of hir countrey. She performed the same to a fewe that were nert of hir kinne, according to the habilitie of their présente fortune, for if shée shoulde haue vsed the Persians

pompe therin, the Macedonians might haue enuied it, which being victors, vsed no great curiositie in the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander signified to the women prisoners, that he him selfe would come to visit them, and causing such as came with him to tarie without, he onely with Ephestion entred in amongs them. The same Ephestion of al men was best beloued of Alexander, brought vp in his cõpanie from his youth, and most priuie with him in al things. There was none that had such libertie to speke his mynd plainly to the king as he had, which he vsed after such sorte, that he semed to do it by no authoritie, but by suffrance. And as he was of like yeares vnto him, so in shape and personage he did somwhat excel him. Wherfore the women thinking Ephestion to be the king, did fall downe and worship him (as their countrey maner was to do to kings) till suche time as one of the Eunuches that was taken prisoner, shewed which of them was Alexander. Then Sisigambis fell downe at his féete, requiring pardon of hir ignorance, forsomuch as she did neuer se him before. The King toke hir vp by the hande, and sayde: "Mother you be not deceiued: for this is Alexander also. Then he behaued him self after such a maner, that he exceded in continencie and compassion, al the kings that had ben before his time. He entertained ỹ two Quénes with those virgins that were of excellent beautie, so reuerently, as if they had bene his sisters. He not onely abstained from al violation of Darius wife, which in beautie excelled all the women of hir time, but also toke great care & diligence, that none other should procure hir any dishonor. And to all the women, he commaunded their ornaments and apparel to be restored: so that they wãted nothing of the magnificence of their former estate, sauing only the assured trust that creatures want in misery:

ſerie: which things conſidered by Siſigambis, ſhe ſayd vnto the king: Sir, your gwdneſſe towards vs, doth deſerue, that we ſhould make the ſame prayer for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceiue you worthie to paſſe ſo greate a king as he was, in felicitie and gwd fortune, that abounde ſo in iuſtice and clemencie. It pleaſeth you to terme me by the name of Mother and Quæne: but I confeſſe my ſelfe to be your handmaide. For both I conceyue the greatneſſe of my ſtate paſt, and feele that I can beare this preſent ſeruitude. It lieth only in your handes how we ſhal be delt withall, and whether you will make vs notable to the worlde thorough your clemẽcie or crueltie. The King comforted them all he might, and willing them to be of gwd chéere, toke Darius ſonne in his armes. Therat the child was nothing afraid, haning neuer ſéene him before, but toke & imbraced him about the neck. He was ſo moued with the conſtancie of the childe, as he behelde Epheſtion, and ſayde: Oh, I would ẏ Darius had had ſome part of this childes gentleneſſe. Which mercy, continencie, humilitie and cõſtancie of minde in Alexander, if he had ſtill kept to his latter daies, might haue bene accompted much more fortunate than he was, when hauing ſubdued all Aſia from Helleſpont to the Occean ſea, he did counterfait the triumphes of Bacchus. Or if amongs the reſidue of his cõqueſts, he would haue trauailed to ouercome his pride and wrath, being vices inuincible. Or in his monkennelle abſtained from the ſlaughter of his Nobilitie, and not to haue put to deathe thoſe excellent men of warre without iudgement, which helped him to conquer ſo many Nacions. But at this time the greatneſſe of his Fortune had not yet altered his nature, although afterwards he could not beare his victories with that Vertue, wherwith he wanne them. For when he gaue him ſelf to ſea-

king and banketting, he vsed the companie of harlots. Amonges whome there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir dronkennesse, affirmed to Alexander, ỳ he should wonderfully winne the fauour of the Greekes, if he commaunded the Palace of Persepolis to be set on fire. The destruction wherof (she said) they greatly desired, for so much as the same was the chief seat of the kings of Persia, which in times past had destroyed so many great Cities. When the dronken harlot had giuen hir sentence, there were other present, who being likewise dronken, confirmed hir wordes. Alexander then that had in him "more inclinacion of heat than of pacience, said: Why doe "we not then reuenge Greece, and set this Citie on fire? They were all chafed with drinking, and rose immediatlie vpon those wordes to burne that Citie in their dronkennesse, which the men of warre had spared in their furie. The king himself first, and after his guestes, his seruauntes & his Concubines, set fire in the Pallace, which being builded for the most part of Cedre trées, became sodenly in a flame. When the armie that was encamped néere vnto the Citie, saw the fire, which they thought had ben kindled by some casualtie; they came running to quenche the same againe. But when they saiwe the king there present increasing the fire, they poured downe the water which they brought, and helped likewise the matter forwardes. Thus the palace that was the head of the whole Orient, from whence so many nacions before had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, ỳ seat of so many kings, the only terror sometime of Greece, the same that hath ben the sender forth of. 9000. ships, and of the armies that ouerflowed all Europa, that made bridges ouer the Sea, and vndermined mountaines where the Sea hath nowe his course, was consumed and had his ende, and neuer rose againe in all the age that did ensue. For the kings

of

of Macedon vsed other Cities which be now in the Persians hands. The destruction of this Citie was such, that the foundation therof at this day could not be found, but that the riuer of Araxes doth shew where it stode, which was distant from Persepolis.xx.furlongs, as the inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were ashamed that so noble a Citie was destroyed by their king in his dronkennesse: yet at length it was turned into an earnest matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Citie should haue ben destroyed after that maner. But it is certain, that when Alexander had taken his rest, and was become better aduised, he repented him of his doing. And after he had kept companie with Thalestris aforesaid, which was Quéene of the Amazones, he tourned his continencie and moderation (being the most excellent vertues appearing in any kind of estate) into pride and voluptuousnesse, not estéeming his countrie customes, nor the holsome temperance that was in the vsages and discipline of kyngs of Macedon. For he iudged their ciuill vsage and maner, to be ouer base for his greatnesse, but did counterfaite the height and pompe of the kings of Persia, representing the greatnesse of the Goddes. He was content to suffre mē there to fal down flat vpō the ground & worship him, & accustomed ỹ victorers of so many nacions, by litle & litle to seruile offices, couetingto make thē like vnto his captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of purple, interpaled with white, like as Darius was accustomed: & fashioned his aparell after the maner of the Persians, without scrupulositie of any euil token that is signified, for the victorer to change his habite into the fashion of him whom he had vanquished. And althoughe he vaunted, that he ware the spoyles of his enimies, yet with those spoyles he put vpon him their euil maners, and the insolencie of

the

the mynde, followed the pride of the apparell. Beſides, he ſealed ſuch letters as he ſent into Europa, with his accuſtomed ſeale, but all the letters he ſente abroade into Aſia, were ſealed with Darius ring. So it appered that one minde coulde not beare the greateneſſe that appertained to two. He aparelled alſo his frēds, his captains, and his horſemen in Perſian apparell, whereat though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durſte not refuſe it, for feare of his diſpleaſure. His courte was replenished with Concubines, for he ſtill mainteined three hundred and three ſcore that belonged to Darius, and among them were flocks of Eunuches accuſtomed to performe the vſe of women. The old ſouldiers of Philip naturally abhorring ſuch things, manifeſtly withſtode to be infected with ſuch voluptuouſneſſe and ſtrange cuſtomes. Wherupon there roſe a generall talke and opinion throughoute the Campe, that they had loſte more by the victorie, than they had wonne by the warres. For when they ſawe them ſelues ouercome in ſuche exceſſe, and ſtrain cuſtoms ſo to preuaile, they iudged it a ſimple guerdon of their long being abrode, to returne home in prioners maner. They began to be aſhamed of their king, that was more like to ſuch as wer ſubdued, than to them that wers victorious: and that of a King of Macedon, was become a Prince of Perſia, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble prince from continencie and mercie fel into all kind of diſorder, the originall whereof, he toke by delite in women, which being vſed in ſort lawful, be great comforts and delights, otherwiſe, the very ſpring of all cruelitie and miſchiefe.

Timo-

Timoclia of Thebes.

TIMOCLIA, a Gentlewoman of THEBES, vnderſtanding the couetous deſire of a Thracian knight, that had abuſed hir, and promiſed hir mariage, rather for hir goodes than loue, well acquited hir ſelf from his falſhode.

The third Nouel.

QVintus Curtius, that notable hiſtoriographer remembring the ſtoute facte of this Thebane gentlewoman, amongs other the geſtes and factes of Alexander the great, I haue deemed it not altogether vnfit for this place, to reueale the fine and notable pollicie deuiſed by hir, to rid hir ſelfe from a couetous caitife of the Thracian kinde, who for lucre rather than loue, for gaine than gratitude, promiſed golden hilles to this diſtreſſed poore gentlewoman. But ſhe in the ende paying him his well deſerued hire, was liked and praiſed of Alexander for hir aduẽturous fact, being not one of the leaſt vertues that ſhined in him, before he grewe to exceſſiue abuſe. But bicauſe Plutarch in his treatiſe *De claris mulieribus*, more at large recounteth this hiſtorie, I haue thought good almoſt (*verbatim*) to follow him. Theagenes a gentleman of Thebes, toyning himſelfe

selfe with Epaminondas, and Pelopidas, and with other noble men, for preseruation of their common wealth, in the battaile sought at Cheronæa, for deliuerie of their coûtrey of Greece, was slain in the chace of his enimies, as he pursued one of the chiefe of his aduersaries, ỳ same crying out vnto him: Whether dost thou pursue Theagenes? euen to Macedonia answered he. This gentleman thus slaine had a sister, whose vertue & nérenesse of kin by noble déedes, she well witnessed, although she was not well able to manifest hir vertue, for the aduersitie of the time, but by pacient sufferance of the cómon calamities. For after Alexander had wonne the citie of Thebes, the souldiers grédie of spoile running vp and down the citie, euery of them chancing vpon such bootie as fortune offred them, it chaunced that a captain of the Thracian horsmen, (a barbarous and wicked wretch,) happened vpon the house of Timoclia, who somewhat nére the king both in name and kinne, in maners and conditions was greatly different from him. He neither regarding the noble house, ne yet the chastitie of hir forepassed life, vpon a time after supper, glutted & swelled with abundance of wine, caused Timoclia forcibly to be haled to his dronken couch: and not cótented with the forced wrong, as they were in talke together, diligently demaunded of hir, if she had in no place hidden any gold or siluer, and partly by threates, and partely by promise to kepe hir as his wife, endeuoured to get that he desired. But she being of redy witte, taking that offred occasion of hir aduersarie: I would to God (sayd she) that it had bene my luck to haue died before this night, rather than to liue. For hitherto haue I kept my bodie pure and vntouched from all despite and villanie, vntill vnluckie fate forced me to yeld to thy disordinate lust: but sith my hap is such, why should I conceale those thyngs that be

thine

thyne owne, thou being mine only tutor, lorde, and hus-
band (as thou sayst) when the Gods shal please to bring
the same to passe. For by thy will and pleasure muste I
vnhappie Thebane wench be ruled and gouerned. Eche
vanquished wight must subdue their will and minde to
their lord & victor: I being thy slaue and prisoner, must
nedes by humble meanes, yelde vp my selfe to the vnsa-
ciate hest of thy puissant heart. What shall let me to dis-
close the pray that thou desirest, that we both, if thy mind
be such, may rather ioy the same, than the soilie filth of
stinking earth, shoulde deuoure such spoile, which for
feare and hope of future fortune, I buried in the bowels
of the same. Then marke my wordes, and beare them
well in mynde, sith lot hath wrought me this mishap. I
hauing plentie of coyned siluer, and of fyned gold no litle
store besides such Iewels as belong to the setting forth
of the grace of womans beautie, of valure and price ine-
stimable: when I saw this City brought to such distresse
as vnpossible to be saued frō taking, al the same I threw
away, or more truly to say, I whelmed altogether in a
vy ditch void of water, which my fact fewe or none did
knowe. The pitte is couered with a litle couer aboue,
and thickly round about beset with bushes and thornes.
Those goodes will make thée a welthy personage, none
in all the campe to bée compared to thée, the riches and
value wherof, will witnesse our former fortune, and the
state of our gorgeous and stately house. All those doe I
bequeath to thée, as on whome I thinke them wel bestow-
wed. This grédie Lecher, laughing to him self for this
sodaine praie, and thinking that his Ladie fast holden
within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed
in his filthie couch till the day had discouered ỹ morning
light, then gaping for his hoped gaine, he rose & prayed
hir to tell the place, that he might recouer the same. She

then brought him into hir garden, the doore whereof she commaunded to be shutte, that none might enter. He in his hose and doublet, went downe to the bottome of the pit. When Timoclia perceiued him downe, she beckned for certain of hir maids, & she rolled downe diuers great stones with hir own hãds, which of purpose she had caused to be placed there, and commaunded hir maides to tumble downe the like. By which meanes she killed that lecherous and couetous villaine, that rather carked to satisfie his desire, than coueted to obserue his promysed faith. Which afterwardes being knowen to the Macedonians, they haled his bodie out of the pit. For Alexander had made proclamation, that none should dare to kill any Thebane, and therfore apprehẽding Timoclia, they brought hir to ỹ king, accusing hir for doing of that murder: who by hir countenaunce and stature of bodie, and by hir behauiour and grauitie of maners, beheld in hir the verie Image of gentle kinde. And first of al, he asked hir what she was. To whom boldly with constãt chere, she frontely answered: Theagenes was my brother (sayd she) who beeing a valiant captaine, & fighting against you for the common safegard of the Greekes, was slaine at Chæronea, that we might not sustain and proue ỹ miseries, wherwith we be now oppressed. But I rather than to suffer violence vnworthie of oure race & stock, am in your maiesties presence brought ready to refuse no death: For better it were for me to die, then feele such another night, except thou commaũde the contrary. These wordes were vttered in such rufull plight, as the standers by coulde not forbeare to weepe. But Alexander saying, that he not onely pitied the woman endewed with so noble witte, but much more wondred at hir vertue and wisedome, commaũded the princes of his armie, to forbeare no wrong or violence to be done to the

Gentle-

Gentlewoman. He gaue order also, that Timoclia & all hir kinne, should be garded and defended from slaughter or other wrõgs. What say ye (good Ladies) to the heart of this noble Gentlewomã, that durst be so bold to stone this caitife wretch to death, & for wrong done to hir bodie till that time vntouched, to wrong the corps of him that sauoured of no gentle kinde: who rather for earthly mucke, than for loue of such a pleasant prisoner, exchanged loue for golde? But note hereby what force the puritie of minde vnwilling of beastly lust doth carie in it self: A simple woman voide of helpe, not backed with defence of husbandes aide, doeth bring a mightie captaine, a strong and loftie lubber, to enter into a cane, and when she sawe hir best aduauntage, thacked him with stones, vntill he groned forth his grisly ghoste. Suche is the might and prowesse of chastitie. No charge too burdenous or weightie for such a vertue, no enterprise too harde for a mynde so pure and cleane.

Ariobarzanes.

¶ ARIOBARZANES great Stuarde to ARTAXERXES king of Persia, goth about to excede his soueraine Lord and maister in curtesie: wherin be conteined many notable and pleasaunt chaunces, besides the greate paeience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd ARIOBARZANES.

The fourth Nouell.

A Question is moued many times among learned men and Gentlemen addicted to the seruice of the Courte, whether commendable deede or curteous and gentle fact done by the gentlema or courtier towardes his soueraigne lord, ought to be called Liberalitie & Curtesie, or rather Bãd and Duetie. Which question is not proponed without greate reason. For so much as eche man doth knowe, that a seruant doe what he can for his maister, or lette him imploye the vttermoste of his indeuour, all the labour and trauaile he bestoweth, all trouble and daunger which he sustaineth, is to little, yea, and the same his verie bounden duetie. Haue wee not red of many, and knowen the lyke, that to gratifie their prince and maister, haue into a thousand dangers and like numbre of deaths, aduentured their owne pro-

per

per lines? Marcus Antonius that notable orator being accused of incest, and brought to the iudgement seat, his accusers required that his seruant shoulde be called for, bicause he bare the candell before his maister, when he went to do the dede, who seeing his maisters life & death to depend vpon his euidence, vtterly denied the fact, and notwithstanding that he was whipped, racked, & suffred other cruel torments, would rather haue lost his life than accuse & betray his maister. I could alleage and bryng forth in place, the example of Mycithus, the seruant of one Anaxilaus Messenius, the fidelitie of the seruantes of Plotinus Plancus, the faithful maiden called Pythias, that waited vpon Octauia the chaste Empresse and wife of that Monster Nero, with diuers other: but that I thinke they bée to the learned well knowen, and of the simple the vertue of seruants fidelitie is greatly liked and commended. But if the faithfull seruant knowe that his deserts do gain the grace and fauor of his maister, what trauailes, what pains ought he to suffer to maintain his reputation, and to increase the fauour obtained? For as the common prouerbe and wise saying reporteth, That the vertue is no lesse to conserue Frendship gotten, than the wisedome was great to get and winne the same. Other there be, which do contrarily contend, and with very strong arguments do force to proue, that al which the seruant doth besides his duetie, and beyonde the obligation, wherin he is bounde to his maister, is and ought to be termed *Liberalitie*, whiche is a matter to prouoke his patrone and maister, to deuise new benefites for his seruant. And that at all times when a man doth his duetie and seruice appointed by his mayster, executing the same with all diligence and industrie requisite therunto, that then he deserueth to be rewarded. Which is not to be discommended. For no true and honest seruaunt will

refuse

refuſe any trauaile for commoditie of his maiſter, ne yet diſcrete and wiſe maiſter, will leaue the ſame vnrewarded, according to that portion of abilitie, wherwith he is poſſeſſed. But leauing queſtions and diſputation aſide, proceede we to that which this Nouell purpoſeth. I ſay then, that there was in the kyngdome of Perſia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of moſte noble minde, and of great prowelle in armes. This was he which firſt being a priuate man of armes, not hauing as yet obteined any degree in the field, killed Artabanus the laſt king of the Arſacides whoſe ſouldier he was, & recouered ỳ Perſian kingdom, which was then in the Macedonians ſubiection (by ỳ deth of Darius, which was vanquiſhed by Alexander the great) the ſpace of. 538. yeares. This noble gentleman hauing deliuered al Perſia, & created King, kept a princely court, wherin were many magnificent facts and vertuous deedes exerciſed and done, and he himſelf moſt noble in all his affaires, beſides the titles, which he worthily wanne in many bloudie battels, was eſteemed throughout the eaſt part of the worlde, to be the moſt liberall and magnanimous prince that in any age euer raigned. In feaſtes and bankets he was an other Lucullus, royally intertaining ſtrangers that repaired to his court. This king had in his court, a *Seneſcall* or ſteiwarde, named Ariobarzanes, whoſe office was, that when the king made any pompous or publike feaſt, to mount vpon a white Courſer, with a Mace of golde in his hand, and to ride before the Eſquiers & Sewers for the Kings owne mouthe, and thoſe that bare the Kings meate in veſſell of golde, couered with fine naperie, wrought and purled with moſt beautiful workmanſhip of ſilk & golde. This office of *Seneſcall* was highly eſteemed, and cõmonly wont to be giuen to one of the chiefeſt Barons of the Realme. Wherfore this Ariobarzanes, beſides that he

was

was of moste noble Lignage and incomparable riches, was the moſt curteous and liberall knight that frequented the Court, whoſe immoderate expence was ſuch, as leauing the mean, wherin al vertue conſiſteth, by reaſon of his outrage which many times he vſed, he fell into the vice of prodigalitie. Whereby he ſéemed not only in curteous déedes to compare with the King, but alſo contended to excéede and ſurpaſſe him. One day the King for his diſport and recreation called for the Chéſſebord, requiring Ariobarzanes to kéepe him companie. Which game in thoſe days amongs the Perſians was in greate vſe and eſtimation, in ſuch wiſe as a cunning gamſter at that paſtime was no leſſe commended and honored, than among vs in theſe dayes an excellent Orator, or famous learned man. Yea and the very ſame game in cõmon vſe in the Courte, and noble mens houſes of oure time, no doubt very commendable and mete to be practiſed by all ſtates & degrées. The King and Ariobarzanes being ſet down at a table in the great hall of the Palace, one right againſt an other, accõpanied with a great number of noble perſonages and Gentlemen loking vpon them, and marking their play with great ſilence, they began to encountre one an other with the Cheſſemen. Ariobarzanes, whether it was that he played better than the king, or whether the king toke no héede to his game, or what ſoeuer the occaſion was, he courſed the King to ſuch a narrow ſtraight, as he could not auoide, but within. iij. or. iiij. draughts he muſte be forced to receiue the Checkemate: whiche the King perceiuing, and conſidering the daunger of the mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to be, & imagining howe he might auoide the checkemate, beſides his blushing he ſhaked his head, and fetched diuers ſighes, whereby the ſtanders by that marked the game, perceiued that he was

driuen to his shiftes. The *Seneschall* espying the Kings demeanour, and seeing the honest shamefastnesse of the King, would be not suffer hym to receiue suche foile, but made a draught by mouing his Knight backe, to open a way for the King to passe, as not onely he deliuered him from the daunger of the Mate, but also lefte one of his Rocks for lack of taking heede: wherupon the game rested equall. The King (who knew ȳ good nature & noble minde of his seruant, by experience of the same in other causes) fayning that he had ouerseene the taking of his
" Rock, gaue ouer the game, and rising vp, sayd: No more
" Ariobarzanes, the game is yours, and I confesse my
" selfe ouercome. The King thought that Ariobarzanes did not the same so much for curtesie, as to binde his soueraigne lorde and king by benefite to recompence his subiectes like behauior, which he did not very well like, and therfore would play no more. Notwithstanding the King neither by signe or deede, ne yet in talk, shewed any token of displeasure for that curtesie done. Howbeit the King would that Ariobarzanes in semblable act, should abstaine to shew him selfe curteous or liberall, except it were to his inferiours and equals, because it is not conuenient for a seruaunt to contende with his maister in those qualities.

Not long after the King being at Persepolis (the principall citie of Persia, ordeined a not able day of hunting of diuers beastes of that countrey vpon: And when all things were in readinesse, he with the moste part of his Court repaired to the pastime. When they were come to the place, the King commaunded a wodde to be beset about with nettes and toiles, and appointed eche man where he should stande in most conuenient place, and he him selfe attended with the doggs and hounes, to cause the beastes to isse forth of their dennes and holes. And

behalde,

beholde, they rouſed a wilde beaſt, whiche with greate ſwiftneſſe leapte ouer the nettes, and ranne away with much ſpede. The King ſeing that ſtraunge beaſt, purpoſed to purſue him to death: And making a ſigne to certain of his noble men which he deſired to kepe him companie, he gaue the raine and ſpurre to his horſe, and followed the chace. Ariobarzanes was one of thoſe noble men that purſued the game. It chaunced that day that the King rode vpon a horſſe, that was the ſwifteſt in his ſtable, which he eſteemed better than a thouſand other, as well for his velocitie, as for his readyneſſe in faites of armes. Thus followyng with bridle at will, the flying rather than running beaſt, they were diuided far from their companie, and by reaſon of the Kings ſpeedineſſe, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes, and behind him one of his ſeruants vpon a good horſſe, which alwayes he vſed in hunting matters, which horſſe was counted the beſt in al the Court. And thus folowing the chace with galloping ſpede, Ariobarzanes at length eſpied that the horſſe of his ſoueraigne lorde had loſte his ſhoes before, and that the ſtones had ſurbated his hoofs, wherevpon the King was driuen either to giue ouer the chace, or elſe to marre his horſſe. But there was none of theſe two neceſſities but would haue greatly diſpleaſed the King, that did not perceiue his horſſe to be vnſhodde. The *Seneſcall* did no ſooner eſpie the ſame, but ſodainely diſmounted from his owne, cauſed his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailes (which for ſuch like chaunces, he alwayes caried about him) and toke of two ſhoes from ſ foreſete of his good horſſe, to ſet vpon the Kings, not caring for his owne, rather than the King ſhould forgoe his pleaſure. Wherby hallowing the King which was earneſtly bent vpon the chace, tolde him of the danger wherein his horſſe was for lack of ſhoes. The King

hearing that, lighted from his horſſe, & ſeeing two ſhoes in Ariobarzanes mans hande, thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they wer the ſhoes whiche fell from his owne, taried ſtill vntill his horſſe was ſhodde. But when he ſawe the notable horſſe of his *Seneſcall* vnſhodde before, then he thoughte that to be the curteſie of Ariobarzanes, & ſo did let the matter paſſe, ſtudying by like meanes to requite him with Curteſie, whiche forced him ſelfe to ſurmounte in the ſame. And when his horſſe was ſhod, he gaue the ſame to Ariobarzanes in reward. And ſo the king chose rather to loſe his pleaſure of hunting, than to ſuffer himſelfe by his man to bee excelled in Curteſie, well noting the ſtoutneſſe of Ariobarzanes mynde, which ſemed to haue a will to contende with his Prince in facte renowmed and liberall. The *Seneſcall* thoughte it not conuenient to refuſe the gift of his liege Lorde, but accepted the ſame with like good will as before he ſhodde his horſſe, ſtill expecting occaſion howe he might ſurpaſſe his maſter in curteſie, and ſo to binde him to requite the ſame. They had not taried there lõg, but many of thoſe which came after had ouertaken them. And then the King gote vp vpon a ſpare horſſe, and returned to the citie with all his companie.

Within fewe dayes after, the King by proclamation ſommoned a ſolemne and pompous tilt and triumph at the tilt, to be done vpon the Kalendes of *May* nert enſuing. The reward appointed for the victor and beſt doer in the ſame, was a couragious and goodly Courſer, with a bridle and bitte of fine golde richely wrought, a ſaddle correſpondent of paſſing greate price, the furniture and trappers for the bridle and ſaddle of like coſt and workemanſhip, the raines were two chaines of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horſſe, of

cloth

cloth of golde, vpon golde, fringed round about with like golde, whereat depended certaine belles of golde, ouer which horſſe was placed a fine ſworde, the hiltes & chape wherof together with the ſcaberde were curiouſly beſet with pearles and precious ſtones of ineſtimable value. On the other ſide was placed a very beautifull & ſtrong Mace, very cunningly wrought with damaſkin. The horſſe was placed in fourme of triumph, and beſides the ſame, all the Armures and weapons meete for a combatant Knight, riche and faire without compariſon: The Placart was maruellous and ſtrong, the Launce was guilt and bigge, as none greater in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendants. And al thoſe furnitures were appointed to be giuen to him that ſhould do beſt that day. A great aſſemblie of ſtrangers repaired to that ſolemne feaſt, as wel to do déedes of Armes, as to loke vpon that pompous triumph. Of the Kings ſubiects there was neither Knight nor Baron, but in rich & ſumptuous apparell appeared that day, amongs whome, of chiefeſt fame the kings eldeſt ſonne was the firſte that gaue his name, a Gentleman very valorous, and in déedes of Armes of paſſing eſtimation, brought vp from his very youth, and trained in the field & other warlike exerciſes. The *Seneſcall* alſo cauſed his name to be inrolled. The like did all their knights, as well Perſians as other ſtraungers. For that ỳ Proclamation was generall, with ſafeconduct for all forainers, noble men or other that ſhould make their repaire. The King had elected three auncient Barons to be Iudges and Arbitratours of their déedes, ſuche as in their time, for their owne perſonages had ben very valiant, and in many enterpriſes well exerciſed, men of great diſcretion and iudgement. Their ſtage was placed in the middes of the Liſts, to view and marke the counterbuffes and blowes of the Combatants. We néede not to re-

membre, ne ought̃e to forgette the numbre of Ladies and Gentlewomen assembled out of all partes, to beholde and vievve this triumphe, and peraduenture eche knight that ranne that day, was not without his amorous Ladie to note and beholde his Actiuitie and prowesse, euery of them wearing his Ladies sleeue, glove, or other token, accordyng to the common Custome in suche like cases. At the daye and houre appointed, appeared all the Combatantes in greate Triumphe and pompe, with rich furnitures, as well vpon them selues as vppon their horse. The triumph begonne, and many Launces broken in good order, on either sides, Judgement was giuen generally, that the *Seneschall* Ariobarzanes had wonne the price, and next vnto him, the kings sonne did passe them all, for that none of all the Combatants had broken past.v.staues, and the sayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduersarie broken in pieces nine at the least. This *Seneschall* brought forth eleuen launces, which were courageously and honorably broken, and by breaking of the last staffe which was the twelfthe, he was iudged moste worthie of the price. The condition wherof was, that euery Combatant should run twelue courses with twelue launces, and he which shoulde first breake the same, should without doubt or further controuersie obtaine the reward. What pleasure and delight the King did conceyue to see his sonne behaue him selfe so valiantly that day, I referre to the iudgement of fathers, that haue children indued with like actiuitie. But yet it grieued him, that the *Seneschall* had the greater aduantage, and yet being a matter so wel knowen and discerned by the Iudges, like a wise man he dissembled his countenance. On the other side, the yong Gentleman which did combat before his amorous ladie, was very sorrowful, for that that he was voide of hope of the chiefest

honour.

honour. So that betweene the father and the sonne, was one very thought and desire. But the vertue and valor of the *Seneſcall* did truncate & cut of all their griefe. Now the time was come, that the *Seneſcall* should runne with his last staffe, and mounted vppon the horſe which the King gaue him when he was on hunting. And knowing wel that the King was very desirous that his son should excel all mẽ, perceiuing likewise the inflamed minde of ỹ yong Gentleman for the presence of his lady to aspire to honor, purposed to giue ouer the honor atchieued by himselfe, to leaue it to the sonne and heire of his Lorde and maister. He knew full well that those his curtesies pleased not ỹ King, neuertheleſſe he was determined to perseuer in his opinion, not to beriene the King of his glorie, but onely to acquire fame and honour for him selfe. And yet he thoughte vnkindeneſſe in the King, that he would not accept his gentle deedes in better parte. But fully minded that the honor of the triumph should be attributed to the Kings sonne, he welded the staffe within his rest, and when he was readie to encountre (bicause it was he that should come agaynſt him) he let fall his launce out of his handes, and sayd: Farewel this curteſie of mine, sith it is no better esteemed. The kings sonne gaue a gentle counterbuffe vpon the Placard of the *Seneſcall*, & brake his staffe in many pieces, which was the first course. Many heard ỹ words which the *Seneſcal* spake when his staffe fell out of his handes, and the standers by well perceiued that he was not minded to giue the laſte blowe, bicauſe the kings sonne might haue the honor of the triumph, which he desired so much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the liſtes. And ỹ Prince without any great reſiſtance wan the price & victorie. And so with sounde of diuerſe inſtrumentes the price borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conueyed, & amõg other,

the

the *Seneſcal* ſtil waited vpon him with mery countenãce, greatly prayſing & exalting ỹ valiance of ỹ yong Prince. The King which was a very wiſe mã, who many times had had experience of the Chiualrie of his *Seneſcall*, at other Tourneys, Juſtes, Barriers, and Battels, and alwayes finding him to be prudent, politike, & for his perſon very valiant, knewe to wel that the fall of his launce was not by chaunce but of purpoſe, continued his opinion of his *Seneſcals* liberalitie and courage. And to ſay the trouth, ſuch was his exceding curteſie, as fewe may be founde to imitate the ſame. We daily ſée that many be liberall of Fortunes goodes, inuesting ſome with promotion, ſome with apparell, golde and ſiluer, Jewels, and other things of great value. We ſée alſo noble men, bountifull to their ſeruants, not onely of thoſe mouable things, but alſo of Caſtels, Landes, and Cities. What ſhall we ſpeake of them, which will not ſticke to ſheade their owne bloud, and many times to ſpende their life to do their frendes good? Of theſe and ſuch like examples, all Records be full. But a man that contemneth fame & glorie, or is of his owne honor liberall, is neuer founde. The victorious Captain after the bloody battaile, giueth the ſpoile of his enimies to his ſouldiers, rewardeth thẽ with priſoners, departeth vnto them the whole pray, but the glorie and honour of the battaile he reſerueth vnto him ſelfe. And as diuinely that father of Romaine eloquence doth ſay, Thoſe philoſophers, which write ỹ glorie ought to be deſpiſed by their written bokes, doe ſéke after glorie them ſelues. The King was diſpleaſed with theſe noble déedes and curteſie of his *Seneſcall*, bicauſe he thoughte it not méete or decent, that a ſubiecte and ſeruaunt ſhould compare with his lorde and maiſter: and therefore did not beare him that chéereſull countenance which he was wonte to doe. And in the ende, purpoſed

to let

to let him know, that he spent his braines in very great errour, if he thought to force his maister to be bounde or beneficiall vnto him as hereafter you shall perceine.

There was an ancient and approued custome in Persia, that the kings yerely did solemnize an Anniuersarie of their Coronation, with great feast and triumph, vpon which day all the Barons of the kingdome were bound to repaire to the Courte, where the King by the space of viii. dayes with sumptuous bankets and other sortes of feastes kepte open house. Vpon this Anniuersarie day of Artaxerxes coronation, when all things were disposed in order, the King desirous to accomplishe a certaine conceiued determination, cõmaunded one of his faithfull chamberlains spedily to seke out Ariobarzanes, which the sayde faithfull chamberlaine did, and telling him the kings message, sayd: My lord Ariobarzanes, the King „ hath willed me to say vnto you, that his pleasure is, that „ you in your owne person euen forthwith shall carry your „ white Steede and Courser, the mace of gold, and other en„ signes due to the office of *Senescall*, vnto Darius youre „ mortall enimie, and in his maiesties behalfe to say vnto „ him, that the king hath giuen him that office, and hath „ clearely dispossessed you thereof. Ariobarzanes hearing those heauie newes, was like to die for sorowe, and the greater was his griefe, bicause it was giuen to his greatest enimie. Notwithstanding, like a Gentleman of noble stomacke, would not in open apparance signifie the displeasure which he conceiued within, but with merrie cheare and louing countenance, sayde vnto the chamberlaine: Do my right humble cõmendations vnto the kinges maiestie, and say vnto him, that like as he is the so„ ueraigne lorde of all this lande, and I his faithfull sub„ iect, euen so myne office, my life, landes and goods, be at „ his disposition, and that willingly I will performe his „

heft. When he had spoken those wordes, he rendred by his office to Darius, who at dinner serued in the same. And when the king was set, Ariobarzanes with comely countenaunce sat downe amongs the rest of the Lordes. Which sodaine deposition and depriuation, did maruelloully amaze the whole assemblie, euery man secretly speking their minde either in praise or dispraise of that fact. The king all the dinner time, did marke & note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleasant and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the king did greately maruell: And to attaine to the ende of his purpose, he began with sharpe wordes in presence of the nobilitie to disclose his discontented minde, and the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes. On the other side, the king suborned diuers persons diligently to espie what he sayde & did. Ariobarzanes hearing the kings sharpe wordes of rebuke, and stimulated by the persuasion of diuers flatterers, which were hired for that purpose, after he perceiued that his declared pacience prouailed nothing, that his modeft talke & his long and faithful seruice, which he had done vnto the king, his losse and hinderance sustained, the perill of his life, which so many times he had suffered, at length vanquished with disdaine, he brake the Bridle of Pacience, and forted out of the bounds of his wonted nature, for that in place of honor, he receiued rebuke, & in steede of reward, was depriued of his office, began to rage to complain of ỹ king, terming him to be an vnkind prince, which amongs the Persians was esteemed a worde of great offence to the maiestie: wherefore faine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he coulde not doe without speciall licence from the king, and yet to craue the same at his handes, his heart would not serue him. All these murmures and complaintes which secretly he made, were tolde the king, & there-

fore

fore the king commaunded him one day, to be called be-
fore him, vnto whome he sayde: Ariobarzanes youre
grudging complaints and enuious quarels, which you
disparcle behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and
your continuall rages outragiously pronounced, through
the verie windowes of my Palace haue pierced myne
eares, whereby I vnderstande that thing which hardly
I would haue beleued. But yet being a Prince as wel in-
clined to fauour and quiet hearing of al causes, as to cre-
dite of light reports, would faine know of you, the cause
of your lamentation, and what hath moued you therun-
to. For you be not ignorant, that to murmure at the Per-
sian King, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no lesse of-
fence than to blaspheme the Gods immortall, bicause by
auncient Lawes and Decrées they be honored and wor-
shipped as Gods. And among all the penalties conte-
ned in our lawes, the vice of Ingratitude is moste bit-
terly corrected. But leaning to speake of the threates
and dangers of our lawes, I pray you to tell me wherin
I haue offended you. For albeit that I am a king, yet
reason persuadeth me, not to giue offence to any man,
which if I shoulde doe (and the Gods forbid the same) I
ought rather to be termed a tyrant than a King. Ario-
barzanes hearing the King speake so reasonably, was a-
bashed, but yet with stoute countenaunce he feared not
particularly to remembre the wordes which he had spo-
ken of the King, and the cause wherefore he spake them.
Well (sayd the King) I perceiue that you blushe not at
the words, ne yet fear to reherse the same vnto my face,
wherby I doe perceiue and note in you a certaine kinde
of stoutenesse, which naturally proceedeth from the great-
nesse of your minde. But yet wisedome would that you
shoulde consider the reason and cause why I haue depri-
ued you from your office. Doe you not knowe that it ap-

" pertaineth vnto me in all mine affaires and dedes to be
" liberall, curteous, magnificent, and bounteous? We not
" those the vertues that make the fame of a Prince to gli-
" ster amongs his subiects, as the Sunne beames do vpon
" the circuit of the worlde? Who ought to rewarde well
" doers, and recompence eche wight which for any seruice
" and aduantage haue all the dayes of their life, or else in
" some particuler seruice vsed their painful trauaile, or ad-
" uentured the perill of their life, but I alone being your
" soueraigne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obe-
" dient, to the Captaine and Souldier, to the politike and
" wise, to the lerned and graue: finally to eche well deser-
" uing wight, I know how to vse the noble princely ver-
" tues of Curtesie and Liberalitie. They be the comely
" enfignes of a King. They be the onely ornaments of a
" Prince. They be my particuler vertues. And will you
" Ariobarzanes being a valiant souldier, a graue coun-
" saller, and a politike personage, goe aboute to dispossesse
" me of that which is mine? Will you which are my ser-
" uant and subiect, of whom I make greatest accompt and
" haue in dearest estimation, vpon whome I did bestowe
" the greatest dignitie within the compasse of my whole
" Monarchie, grate benefite at my hands, by abusing those
" vertues which I aboue other do principally regard? You
" do much abuse the credite which I repose in your greate
" wisedome. For he in whome I thought to finde moste
" graue aduise, and deemed to be a receptacle of all good
" counsell, doth seke to take vpon him the personage of his
" Prince, and to vsurpe the kingly state which belongeth
" only vnto him. Shall I be tied by your deserts, or bound
" by curteous dedes, or else be forced to rendre recompence?
" No no, so long as this imperiall crowne shall rest on my
" all head, no subiecte by any curteous dede of his, shall
" straine vnwilling minde, which meant it not before. Ei-

me

me I beſeech you what reiwarde and gift, what honour
and preferment haue I euer beſtowed vpon you, ſithens
my firſt arriuall to this victorious raigne, that euer you
by due deſert did binde me therunto? Which if you did,
then liberall I can not bee termed, but a ſlauiſhe Prince
bounde to do the ſame, by ſubiects merite. High & migh-
tie Kings doe reiwarde and aduaunce their men, hauing
reſpect that their gift or benefite ſhal excede deſert, other-
wiſe that preferment can not bee termed liberall. The
great conquerour Alexander Magnus, wanne a great
and notable Citie for wealth and ſpoile. For the princi-
palitie and gouernment wherof diuers of his noble men
made ſute, alleaging their painefull ſeruice and bloudie
woundes about the getting of the ſame: But what did
that worthie King? was he moued with the bloudſhead
of his Captaines? was he ſtirred with the valiance of
his men of warre? was he prouoked with their earneſt
ſutes? Notruely: But calling vnto him a poore man,
whome by chaunce he founde there, to him he gaue that
riche and wealthie Citie, and the gouernement thereof,
that his magnificence and liberalitie to a perſon ſo poore
and baſe, might receiue greater fame & eſtimation: And
to declare that the cõferred benefit did not proceede of de-
ſert or ductie, but of mere liberalitie, very curteſie, true
munificence, and noble diſpoſition, derined from prince-
ly heart and kingly nature. Howbeit I ſpeake not this
that a faithfull ſeruant ſhoulde be vnreiwarded (a thyng
very requiſite) but to inferre and proue, that reiwarde
ſhould excell the merite and ſeruice of the receiuer. Now
then I ſay, that you going about by large deſert and ma-
nifold curteſie to binde me to recompence the ſame, you
ſeeke next way to cut of the meane, whereby I ſhoulde
be liberall. Doe you not ſee that through your vnadui-
curteſie I am preuented, and letted from mine accuſto-

" med liberalitie, wherwith dayly I was wont to reward
" my kinde, louing and loyall seruants, to whome if they
" deserued one talent of gold, my maner was to giue them
" two or three: If a thousande crownes by the yeare, to
" giue them fiue? Do you not know that when they looked
" for leall rewarde or preferment, the sooner did I honour
" and aduaunce them? Take heede then from henceforth
" Ariobarzanes, that you liue with suche prouidence and
" circumspection, as you may be knowen to be a seruaunt,
" and I reputed (as I am) for your soueraigne Lorde and
" maister. All Princes in mine opinion require .ij. things
" of their seruants, that is to say, Fidelitie & Loue, which
" being had, they care for no more. Therfore he that list to
" contend with me in curtesie, shall finde in the end that I
" make small accompt of him. And he that is my trustie and
" faithfull seruaunt, diligent to execute and doe my com-
" maundements, faithfull in my secrete affaires, and duti-
" full in his vocation, shall trulie witte and most certainly
" feele, that I am both curteous and liberall. Which then
" thy selfe shall well perceiue, and be forced to confesse that
" I am the same man in deede, for curtesie and liberalitie,
" whom thou indeuorest to surmount. Then the king held
his peace and Ariobarzanes very reuerently and stoutly
made answer in this maner.

" Most Noble and victorious Prince: Wel vnderstan-
" ding the conceiued griefe of your inuincible minde, plea-
" seth your sacred maiestie to giue me leaue to answer for
" my selfe, not to aggrauate or heape your wrath and dis-
" pleasure (which the Gods forbid) but to disclose my hum-
" ble excuse before your maiestie, ỹ the same poized with ỹ
" equall balance of your rightful mind, my former attemp-
" tes may neither seme presumptuous, ne yet my wel mea-
" ning minde well measured with iustice, ouerbold or ma-
" lapert. Most humbly then, prostrate vpon my knées, I say

that

that I neuer went about, or elſe did thinke in minde, to »
exceede or compare with your infinite and incomprehen- »
ſible bountie, but indeuored by all poſſible meanes, to let »
your grace perceiue, and the whole worlde to know, that »
there is nothing in the worlde which I regarde ſo much, »
or eſteeme ſo deare, as your good grace and fauour. And »
mightie Ioue graunte that I doe neuer fall into ſo great »
errour to preſume for to contende with the greatneſſe of »
your mind: which fond deſire if my beaſtly minde ſhould »
apprehend, I might be likened to the man that goeth a- »
bout to berieue and take away the clereneſſe of the Sun, »
or brightneſſe of the ſplendant ſtarres. But euer I did »
thinke it to be my bounden duetie not onely of thoſe for- »
tunes goods which by your princely meanes I do inioy, »
to be a diſtributer and large giuer, but alſo bounde for »
the profite and aduauncement of your regal crowne and »
dignitie, and defence of your moſt noble perſon, of mine »
owne life and blonde to be both liberall and prodigall. »
And where your maieſtie thinketh that I haue laboured »
to compare in curteous deede or other liberall behauior, »
no deede that euer I did, or fact, was euer enterpriſed by »
me for other reſpect, but for to get & continue your more »
ample fauour, and dayly to increaſe your loue: for that »
it is the ſeruants part with all his force and might to al- »
pire the grace and fanor of his ſoueraine lord. Howbeit »
(moſt noble Prince) before this time I did neuer beleue, »
nor heard your grace cõfeſſe, that magnanimitie, gentle- »
neſſe and curteſie, wer vertues worthie of blame & cor- »
rection, as your maieſtie hath very manifeſtly done me to »
vnderſtãd by words ſeuere & taunting checks, vnworthy »
for practiſe of ſuch rare and noble vertues. But how ſo e- »
uer it be, whether life or death ſhall depende vpon this »
praiſeworthie & honorable purpoſe, I mean hereafter to »
yelde my dutie to my ſouerain lord, & then it may pleaſe »

him

" him to terme my dedes courteous or liberall, or to think
" of my behauior, what his own princely mind shall deme
" & iudge. The king vpon those wordes rose vp & said: Ari-
" obarzanes nowe it is no time to continue in further dis-
" putation of this argumēt, cōmitting the determination
" and iudgement hereof, to the graue deliberation of my
" Councell, who at conuenient leisure aduisedly shall ac-
" cording to the Persian lawes and customes conclude the
" same. And for this present time I say vnto thée, that I
" I am disposed to accompte the accusation made against
" thée to be true, and confessed by thy selfe. In the meane
" time thou shalte repaire into thy countrey, and come no
" more to the Court, till I commaunde thée. Ariobarza-
nes receiuing this answere of his soueraigne Lorde, de-
parted, and to his greate contentation, went home into
his countrey, merie for that he shoulde be absent out of
the dayly sight of his enimies, yet not well pleased for
that the king had remitted his cause to his Councell.
Neuertheleſſe minded to abide and suffer all fortune, he
gaue him selfe to the pastime of hunting of Déere, run-
ning of the wilde Boare, and flying of the Hauke. This
noble Gentleman had .ij. only daughters of his wife that
was deceassed, the most beautifull Gentlewomen of the
countrey, the eldest of which two was pereleſſe & with-
out comparison, older than the other by one yeare. The
beautie of those fair Ladies was bruted throughout the
whole Region of Persia, to whome the greatest Lordes
and Barons of the countrey wer great and importunate
suters. He was not in his countrey resiant the space of
iiij. monethes, which for salubritie of aire was most hol-
some and pleasant, full of lordelike liberties and gentle-
manlike pastimes, as well to be done by the hounde as
by the spaniell, but one of the kings Haraulds sent from
the Court, appeared before him with message to this ef-
fect,

ſent, ſaying: My lord Ariobarzanes, the King my ſoue- »
raigne Lorde hath commaunded you to ſend with me to »
the Court the faireſt of your two daughters, for that the »
report of their famous beautie hath made him hardly to »
beleue them to be ſuch, as common bruite would fayn do »
him to vnderſtande. Ariobarzanes not wel able to con-
ceiue the meaning of the kings commaundement, reuol-
ued in his minde diuers things touching that demaunde,
and concluding vpon one which fel to his remembrance,
determined to ſend his ponger daughter, which (as we
haue ſayd before) was not in beautie comparable to hir
elder ſiſter, whereupon he cauſed the maiden to be ſent
for, and ſayd vnto hir theſe words: Daughter, the King »
my maiſter and thy ſoueraigne Lorde, hath by his Mef- »
ſanger commaunded me to ſend vnto him the faireſt of »
my daughters, but for a certain reaſonable reſpect which »
at this time I purpoſe not to diſcloſe, my mynde is that »
thou ſhalt goe, praying thee not to ſay but that thou thy »
ſelfe art of the twaine the faireſt, the concealing of which »
mine aduiſe will breede vnto thee (no doubte) thy greate »
aduauncement, beſides the profite and promotion that »
ſhall accrue by that thy ſilence; and the diſcloſing of the »
ſame may happe to engendre to thy dere father his euer- »
laſting hindrance, and perchance the depriuation of his »
life; but if ſo be the King doe beget thee with childe, in »
any wiſe keepe cloſe the ſame: And when thou ſeeſt thy »
belly begin to ſwel, that no longer it can be cloſely kept, »
then in conuenient time, when thou ſeeſt the King moſt »
mercifully diſpoſed, thou ſhalt tell the King that thy ſiſter is »
farre more beautifull than thy ſelf, and that thou art the »
ponger ſiſter. The wiſe maiden well vnderſtanding hir
fathers mynde, and conceiuing the ſumme of his intent,
promiſed to perfourme his charge, & ſo with the Damaſcene
and honorable traine, he cauſed his daughter to be con-

ueyed to the Courte. An easie matter it was to decease the King in the beautie of that maiden. For although the elder daughter was the fairest, yet this Gentlewoman seemed so pereleslle in the Court, that without comparison she appeared the most beautifull that was to be seene either in Courte or countrey: the behauiour and semblance of which two daughters were so like, that hard it was to iudge whether of them was the eldest. For their father had so kept them in, that seldome they were seene within his house, or at no time marked when they walked abroade. The wife of the King was deade the space of one yere before, for which cause he determined to marie the daughter of Ariobarzanes, who although she was not of the royall blond, yet of birthe she was right noble. When the King saw this Gentlewoman, he iudged hir to be the fairest that euer he sawe or heard of by report, whom in the presence of his noble mē he solemnly did marrie, & sent vnto hir father to appoint the dowrie of his married daughter out of hande, and to returne the same by that messanger. When Ariobarzanes herd tell of this vnhoped mariage, right ioyefull for that facte, sent vnto his daughter ỹ dowrie which he had promised to giue to eyther of his daughters. Many of the Courte did maruell, that the King being in aged yeares would marry so yong a maiden, specially the daughter of his subiect, whome he had banished from the Courte. Some praised the Kings disposition for taking hir whom he fancied: Eche man speaking his seuerall minde, according to the diuers customes of men. Notwithstanding there were diuers that moued the King to that mariage, thereby to force him to confesse, that by taking of the goodes of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberall. The mariage being solemnized in very sumptuous and princely guise, Ariobarzanes sente

to the

to the King the like dowrie which before he had sent him for mariage of his daughter, with message to this effect: That for so much as he had assigned to his daughters two certain dowries to marie them to their equal feres, and seing that he which was without exception, was the husbande of the one, his duetie was to bestow vpon his grace, a more greater gift, than to any other which shold haue bene his sonne in lawe. But the King woulde not receiue the increase of his dowrie, deeming him self well satisfied with the beautie and good condicions of his new spouse, whome he entertained & honored as Quéene. In the meane time she was great with childe with a sonne (as afterwardes in the birth it appered) which so wel as she coulde she kept close and secrete, but afterwards perceiuing hir bellie to ware bigge, the greatnesse whereof she was not able to hide, being vpon a time with ỳ King and in familiar disporte, she like a wise and sobre Lady, induced matter of diuers argumẽt, amongs which as occasion serued, she disclosed to the King, that she was not the fairest of hir fathers daughters, but hir elder sister more beautifull than she. The King hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accomplished his commaundement: and albeit he loued well his wife, yet to attaine the effect of his desire, he called his Harauide vnto him, whome he had firste sent to make requeste for his wife, and with him returned again his new maried spouse vnto hir father, cõmaunding him to say these words: That for so much as he knewe him self to be vanquished and ouercome by the Kings humanitie, his grace did maruell, that in place of Curtesie, he would vse such contumacie and disobedience, by sending vnto him, not the fairest of his daughters whiche he required, but such as he himselfe liked to sende. A matter no doubt worthy to be sharpely punished and reuenged.

For which cause the King being not a litle offended, hath sent home his daughter againe, and willed him to sende his eldest daughter, and that he had returned the dowrie which he gaue with his yonger. Ariobarzanes receiued his daughter and the dowrie with willing minde, & sayd
" these wordes to the Harauld: Mine other daughter which
" the King my soueraigne Lord requireth, is not able pre-
" sently to go with thée, bicause in hir bed she lieth sick, as
" thou mayst manifestly perceiue if thou com into hir cha-
" ber: but say vnto the King, ỹ vpon my faith & allegiance
" so sone as she is recouered, I will sende hir to the court.
The Harauld séeing the maiden lie sicke on hir bedde, weake and impotent, not able to trauell, returned to the King, and tolde him of the sicknesse of the eldest daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherwithall being satisfied, he attended the successe of his desired suite. The Gentlewoman no sooner being recouered, but the time of the others childbirth was come, which brought forth a goodly boy, both the mother safely brought to bed, and the childe strong and lusty. Which greately contented and pleased Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his ioy therof, for that he sawe the childe to be like vnto the King his father. And by that time the yong Gentlewoman was risen from hir childbed, the latter was perfectly whole, & had recouered hir former hewe & beautie, both which being richely apparelled, Ariobarzanes with an honourable traine, sent vnto the King, instructing them first what they ought to say and do. When they were arriued at the Courte, one of the priuie chambre aduertised the King that Ariobarzanes had not onely sent one of his daughters, but bothe of them being so many as he had. The King hearing and séeing the liberalitie of Ariobarzanes, accepted the same in gracious part, and determined for that his courtesie, to vse him with like princely liber-

litie,

litie, as he should be forced to confesse him self ouercom. And before the messanger which had brought the yong Gentlewoman did departe, he caused to be called before him his vncle sonne called Cyrus, vnto whom he sayde: Because Cyrus the time of thy yeares be such, as mete they be to matche thee in mariage, for hope I haue to see some progenie procede of thee before I die, my mynde is that thou shalt marie this goodly Gentlewoman here, the sister of my wife. To which his fathers bell, the yong Gentleman willingly assented. Then the King toke againe his sonne, and ordeined a royall feast, for the mariage of his sonne, which was celebrated and done with greate triumph and solemnitie, continuing the space of viij. days. Ariobarzanes hearing these good newes, would not yet acknowledge him selfe to be ouercome, and seing that his purpose was now brought to an extremitie, determined to sende the little childe, a litle before begotten of his daughter, to the King, which so resembled the Kings face and countenaunce, as was possible. And therfore caused a cradle to bee made of the faireſt yuorie that was to be gotten, embossed and garnished with pure golde, adorned and set with moste precious stones and Jewels, wherin he caused the childe to be placed, and couered with rich clothes of tinesse gold and silke, and together with the nourice accompanied with a pompous traine of Gentlemen, he sente him to the King, the very time that the solemne mariage should be celebrated. And the King being in his great Hall, which was hanged with marueilous rich and costly Arras, attended vpon with a great nombre of his Barons and noble men, he that had the charge of the conduction of the childe, vpon his knees presented the same before him, lying in the cradle. The King and the noble men marueilling what that did vnexpected, what the messanger would say, who holding the

" cradle by one of the pomels, sayde these wordes: Your
" renoumed and victorious Prince, in the behalfe of Ario-
" barzanes my Lorde and your subiecte, moste humbly
" I present vnto your Maiestie, with al submission and re-
" uerence, this gift. And my sayde Lorde doth render infi-
" nite thankes vnto your highnesse, for the great curtesie
" it hath pleased you to vse, by vouchsafing to entertaine
" him into your alliance. For which not to seeme vnmind-
" full, this present (and therwithall he opened the cradle)
" by me he hath sent vnto your maiestie. When the cra-
" dle was discouered, there appeared a goodly yong childe,
smiling and laughing vpon his father, the ioyfullest sight
that euer his father sawe, and so like vnto him, as the
halfe Mone is lyke the proportion of the reste. Then
euery of the standers by beganne to say his minde tou-
ching the resemblaunce of the childe to his father, hardi-
ly protesting the same without doubte to be his owne.
The King coulde not be satisfied with the sight of his
childe, by reason of the greate delight he had to loke vp-
pon him, and of the generall opinion whiche all men
notiched touching his likenesse. The childe againe vp-
on the common reioyce made vpon hym, but specially
of his father, with preatie motions and sweete laugh-
ings, representing two smilyng pyttes in his ruddie
cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his father, toying
vp and downe his tender hands. Afterwardes the King
beheld the workmanship of that sumptuous cradle, and
demaunded whereof the substaunce was. Vnto whome
the Pellanger described the historie and whole contents
of that incomparable Jewell. Who hearing that dis-
course, caused the Queene to be called forth, and by hir
was further certified of hir fathers Noble disposition,
with exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he
receiued the little childe, and confirmed hym selfe in ma-

ner

net banquished. Not withstandyng, seemyng to bée thus surmounted, hée thoughte if hée dyd not surpasse this Curtesie, his Noble and Princely myndé should be disgraced. Wherefore hée determined to vse a kynde of Magnanimitie, therby eyther to ouercome Ariobarzanes, or else hauing apparant occasion altogether to fall out and to conceyue a mortall malice against him.

The King had a daughter of the age of. xij. yeares, a very faire and comely Lady (according as hir royall education and princely bringing vp required) whome as yet he had not matched in mariage, meanyng to bestowe hir vpon some King or greate Monarch, with a dowrie of ten hundred thousand Crownes, besides the princely and great costlye apparell and Jewells, which hir owne mother lying vppon hir death bedde did bequeathe hir.

The King then purposing to excell Ariobarzanes, minded by couplyng hym with his daughter, to make hym his sonne in lawe: Which to a Ladie of royall Linage, appeareth some debacing of hir noble blond, to bée matched with a man of inferiour birth. Like to a man howe honorable so euer he bée can not chaunce, if he take a wyfe of degrée neuer so base. For if he bée borne of noble and gentle kinde, hée doth illustrate and aduaunce the woman whome hée taketh, all be it she were of the meanest trampe of the popular sorte, and the children which bée borne of them, by the fathers vertues, shall be noble and of gentle kynde. And a woman, although she bée more Noble, if she bée maryed to hir inferiour, and that hir husbande bée not so noble, the children that shall bée borne of them shall not receyue the honour of the mothers stocke, but the state of the fathers lotte, and so shall be ignoble. Such is the Reuerence and Authoritie of the Sire of Shall; wherevppon doth ryse the comparison of the Moyse, which doth resemble themen

vnto

vnto the Sunne, and the woman to the Moone. For he
sée that the Moone of hir selfe doth not giue light, ne yet
can yelde any brightnesse to the darknesse of the night, if
she did not partake some shining of the Sunne, who with
his liuely flames at times and places, doth brighten the
Starres, and maketh the Moone to shine. Euen so the
woman dependeth of the man, and of him doth take hir
nobilitie. The King therefore thoughte the matche not
mete for Ariobarzanes to marrie his daughter, and fea-
red he shoulde incurre some blemishe of his house. But
for all respect and feare of shame, the emulation whiche
he had to be victorious of his forced curtesie, did surpasse.
Wherefore he sent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the
Court. And he vpon that commaundement came. And as
soone as he was entred the Palace, he repaired to do his
reuerence vnto the king, of whome he was welcomed
with glad and ioyfull entertainement. And after they
had a while debated of diuers matters, the King sayde
"vnto him: Ariobarzanes, for so much as thou art with-
"out a wife, we minde to bestowe vpon thee a Gentlewo-
"man, which not onely we well like and loue, but also is
"suche a one, as thou thy selfe shalt be well contented to
"take. Ariobarzanes answered, that he was at his com-
maundement: And that such choyse as pleased his Ma-
iestie, shoulde very well content and satisfie him. Then
the king caused his daughter, inrich brauerie sumptu-
ously attired to come before him, and there openly in pre-
sence of the whole Courte, commaunded that Ariobar-
zanes shoulde marrie hir. Which with seemely ceremo-
nies being consummate, Ariobarzanes shewed litle ioy
of that parentage, and in apparance made as though he
cared not for his wife. The nobles and Gentlemen of
the Court wondred to see the straunge behauiour of the
Heidegrathe, considering the great humanitie of their

Prince

Prince towards his subiect, by taking him for his father and sonne in lawe: and greatly murmured to see the obstinacie and rudenesse of Ariobarzanes, towardes the King and the faire newe married Spouse, much blaming and rebuking his unkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as though he were beside him selfe, voide of ioy and mirth, where all the rest of the Courte spent the time in sport and triumph, the Ladies and noble women together with the King and Queene them selues, dauncing and masking, untill the time of night did force eche wight to retire to their chambers. Notwithstanding the King did marke the gesture and countenance of Ariobarzanes, and after the banket, the King in solemne guise and greate pompe caused his daughter to bee accompanied with a great traine to the lodging of Ariobarzanes, and to be caried with hir hir princely dowrie, where Ariobarzanes very honourably receyued his wife, and at that instant, in the presence of all the noble men and Barons that waited vpon the Bride, he doubled the dowrie receyued, and the same with the ten hundred thousand crownes, giuen him by the King, he sent backe againe. This vnmeasured Liberalitie seemed passing straunge vnto the King, and bredde in him such disdaine, as doubtfull he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetual banishment. The King thought that the greatnesse of Ariobarzanes minde was inuincible, and was not able paciently to suffer, that a subiect in matters of Curtesie and liberalitie, shoulde compare with his King and maister. Herewithall the King conceiuing malice, coulde not tell what to say or do. An easy matter it was to perceiue the rage and furie of the king, who was so sore displeased, as he bare good looke and countenance to no man. And bicause in those days the Persian kings were honored and reuerenced as Gods, there

was a lawe that when the king was driuen into a furie or had conceiued a iuſt diſpleaſure, he ſhoulde manifeſt vnto his counſellers, the cauſe of his anger, who afterwards by mature diligẽce hauing examined the cauſe, & finding ỹ king to be iuſtly diſpleſed, ſhold ſeke meanes of his appeaſing. But if they founde his anger & diſpleaſure to be iuſtly cõceiued, the cauſe of the ſame, according to the qualitie of the offence, little or great, they ſhoulde puniſhe, either by baniſhment or capital death. The ſentence of whome ſhould paſſe and be pronounced without appeale: Howbeit lawfull it was for the kyng, the pronounced ſentence, either in all, or in part, to diminiſhe the paine, or clearely to abſolue the partie. Wherby it euidently appeared, that the Counſellers ſentence once determined, was very iuſtice, and the kings will if he pardoned, was mere grace and mercy. The king then was conſtrained by ỹ ſtatutes of his kingdom to diſcloſe vnto his Counſell the cauſe of his diſpleaſure, which particularly he recited. The Counſellers when they heard the reaſons of the king, ſent for Ariobarzanes, of whome by due examination, they gathered, that in diuers cauſes he had prouoked the kings offence. Afterwards the lords of the Counſell, vpon the propoſed queſtion began to argue, by inueſtigation & ſerch whereof, in the end they iudged Ariobarzanes worthy to loſe his head. For that he woulde not onely compare, but alſo goe about to ouertroppe him in things vndecent, and to ſhewe himſelf diſcontented with the mariage of his daughter, & vnthankfull of the benefites ſo curteouſly beſtowed vpon him. A cuſtome was obſerued among the Perſians, that in euery act or enterpriſe, wherin the ſeruant endeuored to ſurpaſſe and vanquiſhe his lorde and maiſter (albeit the attempt were commendable and praiſe worthy) for reſpect of want of duetie, or contempt to the royall Maieſtie, he

ſhould

shoulde lose his best ioynt. And for better confirmation of their iudgement, the Counsellers alleaged a certain diffinitiue sentence, registred in their Chronicles, whilom done by the Kings of Persia. The cause was this: One of the Kings of that Region disposed to dispoꝛte with certain of his noble men abroade in the fields, went a hawking, and with the Faucon to flie at diuers game. Within a while they sprang a Hearon, and the King commanded that one of the Faukons which was a notable swift and soaring hauke, shold be cast off to the Hearon: which done, the Hearon began to mount, and the Faucon spedily pursued, and as the hauke after many batings and intercourses, was about to seaze vpon the Hearon, he espied an Egle. The stoute Hauke seeing the Egle, gaue ouer the fearfull Hearon, and with swift flight flewe towards the Egle, and fiercely attempted to seaze vpon hir. But the Egle very stoutly defended hir self, that the Hauke was forced to let go hir hold. In the end ꝑ good Hauke, with hir sharpe talands, againe seazed vpon the Egles neck, & with hir beake strake hir starke dead, wherewithall she fell downe amidde the companie that waited vpon the King. All the Barons and Gentlemen highly cõmended and praised the Hauke, affirming that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the same such praise, as they thought mete. The King for all the acclamations and shoutes of the troupe, spake not a worde, but rode musing with him selfe, and did neither praise nor blame ꝑ Hauke. It was very late in the euening, when the Faucon killed the Egle, and therefore the King commaunded eche man to depart to the Citie. The next day the King caused a Goldsmith to make an exceeding faire crown of Gold, apt and mete for the Falcons head. Afterwards when he saw time conuenient, he ordeined that in the market place of the Citie, a pearche

should be erected, and adorned with tapestrie, Arras, and other costly furnitures, suche as Princes palaces are decked withall. Whither with sound of trumpets he caused the Falcon to be conueyed, where the King commanded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for prise of the excellent pray atchieued vppon the Egle. Then he caused the hangman or common executioner of the Citie, to take the Crowne from the Faucon, and with the trenchant swoorde to cut of his head. Vpon these contrary effectes the beholders of this fight were amazed, and began diuersly to talke thereof. The King which at a window stode to beholde this fact, caused silence to be kepte, and so loude opened his Princely voice, as he was well heard speaking these woordes:

" There ought (good people) none of you all to murmure
" and grudge at the present fact executed vpō the Faucon,
" bicause the same is done vpon good reason and iust cause
" as by processe of my discourse you shall well perceyue. I
" am persuaded that it is the office and duetie of every
" magnanimous prince, to knowe the valor and difference
" betweene vertue and vice, that all vertuous actes & wor-
" thie attempts may be honoured, and the contrary chas-
" sed & punished, otherwise he is not woorthy of the name
" of a King and Prince, but of a cruell and traiterous ty-
" rant. For as the Prince beareth the title by principalitie
" and chief, so ought his life chiefly to excell other, whome
" he gouerneth and ruleth. The bare title and dignitie is
" not sufficient, if his conditions and moderation bee not
" to that supreme state equiualent. Full well I knewe and
" did consider to be in this dead Faucon, a certaine gene-
" rositie and stoutnesse of minde, ioyned with a certaine
" fierce acriuitie and nimblenesse, for which I reco-
" ned and rewarded hir with this golden garland, bicause
" of the stoute slaughter which she made vpon that migh-

tie

tle Egle, worthie for that animositie and prowesse to be
honoured after that solemne guise. But when I consi-
dered how boldly and rashely she assailed and killed the
Egle, which is his Queene and maistresse, I thought it
a part of iustice, that for his bolde and vntemely act, she
shoulde suffer the paine due to his deserte. For vnlaw-
full it is for the seruaunte, and vndutifull for the sub-
iecte, to imbrue his handes in the bloud of his soueraigne
Lord. The Faulcon then hauing slaine his Queene, and
of all other birdes the soueraigne, who can iustly reason
blame me for cutting of the Faulcons head? Doubtlesse
none, that hath respecte to the quiete state betweene the
prince and subiect.

This example the Iudges alleaged against Ariobar-
zanes when they pronounced sentence, And applying the
same to him, ordeined that first Ariobarzanes, for his
Magnanimitie and liberall Curtesie should be crowned
with a Laurel Garland for the generositie of his minde
and exceeding curtesie, but for his great emulation, ear-
nest endeuour, and continuall desire to contende with
his prince, and in Liberalitie to shew him selfe superior,
bicause the murdering speach vttered against him, his hed
ought to be striken of. Ariobarzanes being aduertised
of this seuere condemnation, he purposed to sustain the
venemous darte of Fortune, as he had endured other
bruntes of that enuious inconstant Lady, and in suche
maner behaued and directed his gestes and countenance,
as no signe of choler or dispaire appeared in him, onely
pronouncing this sentence with ioyful cheare in the pre-
sence of many. Glad I am that at length there resteth in
me so much to be liberall, as I employe my life and bloud,
to declare the same to my soueraigne Lorde, which right
willingly I meane to do, that the world may knowe, that
I had rather lose my life, than to faint and giue ouer in

" wine accuſtomed liberalitie. Then calling a Notarie vn-
to him, he made his will (for ſo it was lawful by the Per-
ſian lawes) and to his wife and daughters he increaſed
the dowries, and to his kinſfolk and frends he bequeathed
diuers riche & bountifull legacies. To the King he gaue
a great number of moſt precious Jewels. To Cyrus the
Kings ſonne, and his by mariage (beſides a great maſſe
of money) he bequeathed all his armure and weapons,
with all his inſtrumentes for the warres, and his whole
ſtable of horſſe. Laſt of all he ordeined, that if (perhaps)
his wife ſhoulde be founde with childe, and broughte to
bed of a ſonne, he ſhould be his vniuerſall heire: But if
a woman childe, to haue the like dowrie that his other
daughters had. The reſt of his goods and cattell he gaue
indifferently to all. iij. equally to be deuided. He pro-
uided alſo, that all his ſeruantes according to their de-
gree, ſhould be rewarded. The day before he ſhoulde be
put to death (according to the cuſtome of Perſia) his pra-
ſes and valiant factes, as well by Epitaphes fixed vpon
poaſts, as by proclamation, were generally ſounded tho-
roughout the Realme, in ſuche wiſe as eche wight iud-
ged him to be the moſte liberall and noble perſonage that
lyued in all the Countrey, and in the borders confining
vpon the ſame. And if there had not bene ſome enuious
perſones nére the King, which ſtudied and practiſed his
vtterthrow, all other would haue deemed him vnworthy
of death. Such is the enuie of the maliciouſly diſpoſed,
that rather than they would ſe their equals to be in bet-
ter eſtimation with the Prince than them ſelues, ſtudie
and deuiſe all policie, either by flatterie or falſe ſurmiſe,
to bring them in diſcredite, or to practiſe by falſe accuſa-
tion, their vtter ſubuerſion by death or baniſhement.
But whyles Ariobarzanes was diſpoſing his things in
ſuch order, his wife and daughters with his frends and cou-

anim

ſins,

thus, were affected with great sorow day and night, complaining for the peanie fate of that noble Gentleman. The eight day dieing come (for the same allowed that space to the condemned, for disposition of their things) a skaffolde was made by commaundement of the King, in the middes of the Market place, all covered with blacke cloath, and an other right over against the same with purple and like, where the King (if he list) in the midst of the Judges should sitte, and the inditement redde, indgement (by the Kings owne mouth declared) shoulde be executed, or if it pleased him, discharge and assoile the condemned. And the King unwilling to be present, gave to one of the eldest Judges, his full power and authoritie. But yet sorowfull that a Gentleman so noble and valiant, his father and sonne in lawe, should finishe his life with a death so horrible, would nedes that morning be presente him selfe at that execution, as well to see the continent and stoute ende of Ariobarzanes, as also to take order for his deliverie. When the time was come, Ariobarzanes by the Sergeantes and Garde was brought unto the Skaffolde, and there apparelled in riche Vestures, the Laurell Crowne was set upon his head, and so continuing for a certaine space, the garmentes and Crowne was taken off from his head, together with his other apparel. The Executioner attending for commaundement to doe his office, and lifting up his sworde to do the facte, the King desired to see the countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, who never chaunged colour for all that terrour of death. The King seeing the great constancie and invincible minde of Ariobarzanes, spake alowde that all men might heare hym, these wordes:

» Thou knowest Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, »
» which have wrought thy condemnation, ne yet by en- »
» vious desyre hane soughte thy bloude, to bring thee »

to this

" to this extremitie, but it hath bene thy vil disordred life,
" and the statutes of this Realme, which have found the
" guiltie, and therupon sentence and death pronounced,
" and execution now redie to be done, and the minister re-
" die to aduance his arme, to play the last acte of this tra-
" gedie: And yet for that our holy lawes doe giue libertie
" that I may absolue and deliuer whome I list, and them
" restore to their former state, if now thou wilt acknow-
" ledge thy self vanquished and ouercome, and accept thy
" life in gratefull part, I will pardon thee, and restore the
" to thine offices and promotions. Ariobarzanes hearing
these wordes, kneled downe with his head declined, and
expecting the blow of the swordes, lifted vp himselfe, and
turning his face to the King, perceiuing his malice not
so sore bente against him as the enuie and malice of his
enimies desired, he determined to proue and vse the pi-
tifull liberalitie and fauor of his souereigne Lorde, that
his foes by his death might not triumph, ne yet attaine
the thing, for which so long they aspired. Wherefore in
reuerent wise kneeling before his maiestie, with a stout &
" perfect voice sayd these words: Most victorious & merci-
" full souereine Lorde, in equal worship and honour to the
" immortall Gods, sith of thy abundant grace and mer-
" cie it hath pleased thee to graunt me life, I do most hum-
" bly accept the same, which if I wist should be prolonged
" in thy displeasure and wrath, resolue not be pleasaunt vnto
" me, and therfore do confesse my self altogether surmou-
" ted & ouercome. I most humbly then do giue thee thāks
" for preseruation of the same, hoping hereafter to employ
" the vttermost of mine endeuoure for the benefite and ho-
" nour of thy Crowne and dignitie, as readily and with-
" out supplication made in my behalfe, thou hast vouche-
" safed to restore the same. And sith thy clemencie hath re-
" uiued me thine humble bondman, I beseech thy maiestie to

giue

giue me leaue to say my minde, trusting thereby to doe
thée to vnderstande the effecte and cause of that my for-
mer presumption. The King made signes that he should
rise and boldly speake the summe of his desire. When he
was vpon his féete, silence was proclaimed: who then
began to speake these wordes: Two things there bée,
(most sacred Prince) which doubtlesse doe resemble the
raging waues of surging seas, and the mutabilitie of vn-
stable windes, and yet greate is the follie of an infinite
number, which imploy their whole care and diligence to
séeke the same. These two things wherof I speake, and
be so derely beloued of flattering courtiers, are the grace
and fauour of their soueraine Lord, and the luring loue
of Amorous dames: which two things doe so often be-
guile the Courtly Gentleman, that in the ende they en-
gender nought else but repentance. And to begin with ỹ
loue of Ladies, they, as by common experiẽce is proued,
most commonly do recline to their inferiours. It is dayly
sene by to much vnhappie proofe, that a yong Gentlemã
by birth comely and noble, & otherwise riche, vertuous,
and indued with many godly gifts, shall chose and wor-
ship one for his soueraigne Ladie and maistresse, and hir
shall serue and honour with the same faith and fidelitie
due to the immortall Gods, and shal not sticke to employ
for hir loue and seruice all the possible power and trauell
he is able to doe, and yet thée in despite of all his humble
endeuour, shal loue an other boide of all vertue, making
him possessour of that benefite, after which the other séc-
keth, and she not long cõstant in that minde, afterwards
will attend vnto the first suter, but in such mouable and
disdainfull sort, as the wandring starres (through their
naturall instabilitie) be moued to and fro, and him in the
ende will suffre to fall headlong into the bottomlesse pit
of dispaire: and he that asketh hir the reason of this va-

" rietie, she maketh none other answere but that hir plea-
" sure is such, and wilful will to dallie with hir suters, that
" seldome times a true and perfit louer can fasten his sute
" on certaine holde, but that his life is tossed vp and downe
" like the whirling blastes of the inconstant windes.
" In like maner in the Courts of Kings and Princes, he
" which is in fauour with his soueraigne Lord in al mens
" eyes, so great and neare, as it seemeth the Prince is dis-
" posed to resolue vpon nothing without his aduise & cou-
" sell, when such fauoured person shall employ his whole
" care and industrie to maintaine and increase the cõmen-
" ced grace of his soueraigne Lorde, beholde, vpon the so-
" daine, his mind and daine is changed, and an other with-
" out desert, which neuer carked or laboured to win good
" will, is taken in place, cherished as though he had serued
" him an hundred yeares before: and he that was the first
" minion of the Court in greatest grace and estimation, is
" in a moment despised, and out of all regarde. An other,
" within fewe days after, shall be brought in place of the
" other twaine, very diligent and carefull to serue, trained
" vp in Courtly exercise, whose mindefull minde shall be
" so caring ouer his lordes affaires, as vpon the safegarde
" and preseruation of his owne proper life. But all his la-
" bour is employed in vaine: and when the aged dayes of
" his expired life approch, for the least displeasure he shall
" be thrust out without rewarde for former trauell, that
" right aptly the Common Prouerb may be applied: The
" common Courtiers life is like a golden miserie, and the
" faithfull seruant an Asse perpetuall. I haue séene my self
" the right wel learned man to sterue in Court for want of
" meate, and a blockish beast voide of vertue for lust and
" not for merite, aduaunced and made a Gentleman. But
" this may chaunce bicause his lorde is not disposed to lear-
" ning and vertue, little estéming those that be affected

with.

with good sciences for lacke of carefull trayning vp in
youthfull days, or else for that their mind can not frame
with the gentle spirites of them, the closets of whose
brests be charged and fraught with infinite loades of ler-
ning, and haue not ben noseled in trade of Courtes, ne
yet can vse due courtly speeche, or with vnblushing face
can shuffle them selues in presence of their betters, or
commen with Ladies of dame Venus toyes: or race of
birth not mingled with the noble or gentle Sire. For
these causes perhaps that vertuous wight can not attain
the happe of Fortunes giftes. Which person though in
Court he be not estéemed, in Schoolehouse of good arte
yet déemed famous, and for his worthy skill right wor-
thy to be preferred aboue the heauens. In semblable
wise, how oftentimes and commonly is it séene that the
man perchance which neuer thou sawest before, so soone
as he is séene of thée, sodainly he is detested like a plage,
& the more earnest he is to do thée seruice and pleasure, the
greater is thy wrath bent towards him? Contrarywise,
some other vpon the first view shal so content and please
thée, as if he require the bestowing of thy life, thou hast
no power to denie him, thou art in loue with him, and let
him thwart thy minde and will neuer so much, thou ca-
rest not for it, all is wel he doth. But that these varieties
doe procéede from some certaine temperement of blood
within the body conformed and moued by some inward
celestiall power, who doubteth? And surely the founda-
tion of these Courtly mutations, is the pricking beno-
mous goade of pestiferous Enuie, which continually
holdeth the fauour of Princes in ballance, and in a mo-
ment hoisteth vp him whiche was belowe, and poizeth
downe againe him that was exalted. So that no plague
or poison is more pestiferous in Courtes, than the hurt-
full disease of Enuie. All other vices with little paine

" and leſſe labour may eaſily be cured, and ſo pacified, as
" they ſhal not hurt thée: but roted Enuie by any meanes
" is diſcharged, with no pollicie is expelled, ne yet by any
" drugge or medicine purged. Verily without great dan-
" ger, I know not which way the poinaunt bittes of En-
" uie can be auoided. The proude man in Courte, the ar-
" rogant and ambicious, the loftie minded ſole, more ele-
" uate and luſtie than Pride it ſelfe, if reuerence bée done
" to him, if he be honoured, if place be giuen to him, if he
" be praiſed and glorified aboue the heauens, if thou hum-
" ble thy ſelfe to him, by and by he will take thée to be his
" frende, and will déeme thée to bée a curteous and gentle
" companion. Let the laſciuious and wanton perſon giuen
" to the pleaſures and luſt of women, firing his minde on
" nothing elſe but vpon fugitiue pleaſures, if his loue bée
" not impeached, ne yet his wanton toyes reproued, if he
" be praiſed before his Ladie, he will euer be thy friende.
" The couetous and glattonous carle, if firſt thou make
" him quaffe a money medicine, and afterwardes byd him
" to thy Table, the one and other diſeaſe is ſpédily cured.
" But for the enuious perſon, what phiſicke can be ſought
" to purge his peſtiferous humour? Which if thou go a-
" bout to heale and cure, rather muſte thou remedie the
" ſame by walking the life of him that is ſo poſſeſſed, than
" finde cauſes of recouerie. And who knoweth not (moſt
" ſacred Prince) that in your Courte there bée ſome atta-
" ched with that poiſoned plague, who ſéeing me your ma-
" ieſties humble vaſſall in greater fauor with your grace,
" than they, my ſeruice more acceptable than theirs, my
" prowelle and exerciſe in armes more worthy thã theirs,
" my diligence more induſtrious than theirs: my aduiſe
" and counſell more auaileable than theirs, all mine other
" déedes and doings in better eſtimation than theirs: They
" I ſay, dallied in the lappe of the cancred witch dame En-

uie,

nie, by what meanes are they to be recouered? by what meanes their infection purged? by what meanes their malice cured? If not to see me depriued of your grace, expelled from your court, and cast headlong into the gulfe of death extreme? If I shoulde bribe them with greate rewardes, if I shoulde honour them with humble reuerence, if I shoulde exalt them aboue the skies, if I shold employ the vttermost of my power, to doe them seruice, all is frustrate and caste away. They will not ceasse to bring me into perill, they will not spare to reduce me to miserie, they will not sticke to imagine all deuises for mine anoyance, when they see all other remedies impotent and vnable. This is the poysoned plague which enuenometh all Princes Courtes. This is the mischiefe whiche destroyeth all Kingdomes. This is the monster that deuoureth al vertuous enterprises, & offendeth eche gentle spirit. This is the dimme vaile which so ouershadoweth the clérenesse of the eyes, as the bright beames of veritie can not be séene, and so obscureth the equitie of iustice, as right from falshode can not be discerned. This is the manifest cause that bredeth a thousand errours in the woorks of men. And to draw nere to the effect of this my tedious talke, briefly, there is no vice in the worlde, that more outragiously corrupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfrendly vntwineth Frendships band, that more vnhappily subuerteth noble houses, than the poyson of Enuie. For hée that inclineth his eares to the enuious person, he that attendeth to his malignant deuises, vnpossible it is for him to do any déede that is either good or vertuous. But to finish and ende for auoiding of wearinesse, and not to stay your maiestie from your weightie affaires, I say that the Enuious man reioyceth not so much in his owne good turnes, nor gladdeth him selfe so greatly with his owne commodities, as he doth insulte,

" and laugh at the discõmoditie and hinderance of others,
" at whose profite and gaine he sorroweth and lamenteth,
" and to put out both the eyes of his companion, the enui-
" ous man careth not to pluck out one of his owne. These
" wordes (most inuincible Prince) I purposed to speake in
" the presence of your Maiestie, before your garde & court-
" lyke traine, and in the vniuersall hearing of all the peo-
" ple, that eche wighte may vnderstande, howe I not of
" your maiesties pretenced malice, or mine owne commit-
" ted fault, but through the venomous tongues of the en-
" uious, fell into the lapse of your displeasure. This most true oration of Ariobarzanes greatly pleased the noble Prince, and although he felt him selfe somwhat touched therewith, yet knowing it to bée certaine and true, and that in time to come the same myght profite all sortes of people, he greatly praised him in the presence of al the assemblie. Wherfore Ariobarzanes hauing recouered his life, and confessing himself to be vanquished & ouercome by the King that knew the valour and fealtie of that noble Gentleman, and louing him with heartie affection, he caused him to come downe from the mournyng scaffolde, and to ascende the place where he was hym selfe, whome he imbraced and kissed, in token that all displeasure was remitted. All his auncient offices were restored to hym againe, and for his further aduauncement, he gaue him the citie of Passagarda, where was the olde monument of King Cyrus, and made him Lieuetenant generall of all his Realmes and dominions, commaunding euery of his subiectes to obey him as his owne person. And so the Kingrested the honourable father in lawe to Ariobarzanes, and his louing sonne by Mariage, crauing still in all his enterprises, his graue aduise and counsell. And there was neuer thing of any importance done, but his liking or disliking was first demaun-

ded.

ded. Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and fauour of his ſoueraigne lorde than before, and for his ſinguler vertue, hauing diſperſed and broken the armes and malice of all his enimies, if before he were curteous and liberall, after theſe ſo ſtout aduentures he became more than Princely in his dedes, and if ſomtimes he had done one curteous act, now he doubled the ſame. But ſuch was his Magnanimitie, ſo noble were his indeuours, tempred with ſuch meaſure and equanimitie, as the whole worlde clearely might diſcerne, that not to contende with his ſoueraigne Lorde, but to honour him to erpelle the Maieſtie of his Prince, he imployed the gods and liuing which the King and Fortune had bountifully beſtowed vpon him: Who vntill his dying day famouſly mainteined him ſelfe in the good grace and fauour of his Prince, in ſuch wiſe as the King more clerely than the ſhining Sunnebeames, knew Ariobarzanes to be framed of Nature for a chriſtalline mirrour of curteſie and Liberalitie, and that more eaſie it was to bereue the fire of heate, and the Sunne of light, than deſpoile Ariobarzanes of his glorious dedes. Wherefore he ceaſſed not continually to honour, eralte, and enriche him, that he might vſe the greater liberalitie. And to ſay the truthe, although theſe two vertues of Curteſie and Liberalitie be commendable in all perſons, without the which a man truly is not he whereof he bereth the name yet very fitting and mete it is for euery riche and welthie ſubiect, to beware howe he doth compare in thoſe noble vertues with Princes and great men, whiche being right noble and peereleſſe vpon earth, can abide no compariſons, which according to the Prouerbe be odious and hateful.

Ariſtotimus

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

LVCIVS one of the Garde to ARISTOTIMVS the Tirant of the Citie of ELIS, fell in loue with a faire maiden called MICCA, the daughter of one PHILODEMVS, and his crueltie done vpon hir. The ſtoutneſſe alſo of a noble Matrone named MESISTONA in defence of hir husbande and the common wealth from the tyrannie of the ſayd ARISTOTIMVS: and of other actes done by the ſubiects vpon that Tyrant.

The fifth Nouell.

YOu haue heard, or as it were in a manner, you haue beholden the right images & curteous conditions of two well conditioned perſons mutually eche towards other obſerued. In the one a Princely mind towards a noble Gentlemen his ſubiecte: In the other a dutifull obedience of a louing vaſſall to his ſoueraigne Lorde and Maiſter. In both of them the true figure of Liberalitie in liuely orient colours deſcribed. Now a contrary plotte, yll grounded vpon extreme tyrannie, is offred to the vieawe, done by one Ariſtotimus and his clawbacks, againſt his humble ſubiects of the citie of Elis, ſtanding in Peloponeſſus, a countrey of Achaia (which at this day we call Morea.) This Ariſtotimus

stotimus of nature was fierce and passing cruell, who by fauoure of king Antigonus was made Tyran of that Citie. And like a Tyran governed his Countrie by abuse of his authoritie with newe wrongs and straunge cruelties, vexing and afflicting the poore Citizens and all his people. Which chaunced not so much for that of himselfe he was cruel and tyrannous, as for that his Counsellours and chief about him were barbarous and vitious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kingdom & the guarde of his person. But amongs al his mischiefes wrongfully done by him, which were innumerable, one committed against Philodemus, (the same which afterwardes was the cause of the deprivation of his life and kingdom) is speciallie remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca, that not onelie for hir right chast and honest qualities and condicions which vertuouslie florished in hir, but for hir extreame & godlie beautie, was in that Citie of passing fame and admiration. With this fair maiden one of the Tyrants guard called Lucius fell in loue, if it deserue to be called loue, and not rather, as the end full well declared, a most filthie and beastlie lust. This Lucius was deerelie beloued of Aristotimus, for the slendrie resemblāce and wicked nerenesse of his vile & abhominable condicions: and therefore feared and obeyed as the Tyrants owne person. For which cause this Lucius sent one of the yeomen of the kings chambre, to commaūd Philodemus at an appointed houre al ceremonies set apart, to bring his daughter vnto him. The parents of the maiden hearing this vnruth and fearefull message, constrained by Tyrants force and fatall necessitie, after many teares and pitteous sighes, began to persuade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaring vnto hir the rigour of the magistrate that had sent for hir, the extremitie that would be executed, & that

there was no other remedie but to obey. Alas, how for against their willes, with what trembling gesture, with what horrour the good parents of this tender paire were affected, to consider the purpose of that dreadfull message, all dare fathers, and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle maiden Mecca, which was of nature stout, & vertuously lessoned with sundrie right good and holsome instructions from hir infantes age, was determined rather to die than to suffer hir self to be deflowred. This vertuous maiden fell downe prostrate at hir fathers feete, and clasping him fast about the knées, lowlingly did pray him, and pitifully besought him, not to suffer hir to be haled to so filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged sworde to kill hir, that thereby she might be rid from the violation of those fleshlie and lowdinous varlets, saying, that if hir virginitie were taken from hir, she should line in eternall reprosche and shame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delate, prouoked with the wine of lecherie, made impacient and furious, with curssed speede posted to the house of Philoclemus, and finding the mayden prostrate at hir fathers feete, weeping, hir head in hir lappe, with taunting boles and threatning wordes commaunded presentlie without longer delate she should rise and goe with him. She refusing his hastie request, and crying out for fathers help, who (God wot) durst not resist, stode still and would not goe. Lucius seeing hir refusall, full of furie and proud disdaine, began furiously to hale hir by the garments, upon whose struggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures off hir head and shoulders, that hir alablaster necke and bosome appeared naked, & without compassion tare and whipt hir flesh on every side, as the bloud ranne downe, beating that tender flesh of hirs with manifold and grevous blowes. O vile tyrant, more

hard and sauage than the deiect beast or mountaine Ty-
gre. Could cruelties be so deepely rooted in the hart of man
which by nature is affected with reasons influence, as with
out pitie to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tender
bodie of a harmelesse Mayden? Can such inhumanitie
harbor in any that beareth about him the shape of man?
But what did this martyred maide for al this force? Did
she yeld to violence, or render hir self to the disposition of
this mercilesse man? No surelie. But with so great stout-
nesse of minde, she suffred those imprested woundes, that
no one worde sounding of sorrow, or womanly shriche
was heard to sound from hir delicate mouth. Howbeit the
poore father and miserable mother at that rufull and la-
mentable sight, moued with inward griefe and naturall
pitie, cried out alounde. But when they saw that neither
plaint nor faire speeche could deliuer their daughter out
of the hands of that cruel monster, they began with open
cries and horrible exclamation to implore helpe and suc-
cour at the hands of the immortall Gods, thinking that
they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the
proud and most barbarous wretch, moued and disquieted
by cholers rage and fume of chasing wine, sodainely rat-
ched the most constant virgin by the haire of the hed, and
in hir fathers lappe did cut hir white and tender throte.
O detestable fact right worthie of iust reuenge. But what
did this vnfaithful and cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when
by the blustering bruite of peoples rage he heard of this
vengeable murder, not only he shewed himself contented
with the fact, but had him in greater regard than before,
and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater
cruelties and mischiefs was done and executed. For in open
streat, like beastes in the shambles they were cutte and
hewed in pieces, which serued to maintaine al this bloudy
and vnlawfull acte: the rest were banished and expelled

there was no other remedie but to obey. Alas, how for against their willes, with what trembling gesture, with what horrour the good parents of this tender pulell were affected to consider the purpose of that dreadfull message, all dere fathers, and naturall mothers can tell. But the gētle maiden Mecca, which was of nature stout, & vertuously lessoned with sundrie right good and holsome instructions from hir infantes age, was determined rather to die than to suffer hir self to be deflowred. This vertuous maiden fell downe prostrate at hir fathers fete, and clasping him fast about the knees, lowlingly did pray him, and pitifully besought him, not to suffer hir to be haled to so filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged sword to kill hir, that thereby she might be rid from the violation of those fleshlie and lidinous varlets, saying, that if hir virginitie were taken from hir, she should line in eternall reproche and shame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaie, drenke with the wine of lechery, made impacient and furious, with turbled spede posted to the house of Philoclemus, and finding the vaiden prostrate at hir fathers fete, weping, hir head in hir lappe, with taunting boles and threatning wordes commaunded presentlie without longer delaie she should rise and goe with him. She refusing his lasse request, and crying out for fathers help, who (God wot) durst not resist, stode still and would not goe. Lucius seing hir refusall, full of furie and proud disdaine, began furiously to hale hir by the garments, upon whose struggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures off hir head and shoulders, that hir alablaster necke and bosome appeared naked, & without compassion tare and whipt hir flesh on every side, as the blood ranne downe, beating that tender flesh of hirs with manifold and grevous blowes. O vile tyrant, more

hed and sauage than the deiect beast or mountaine. Ye gre. Could cruelty be so deepely roted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reasons instinct, as without pitie to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tender bodie of a harmelesse Mayden? Can such inhumanitie harbor in any that beareth about him the shape of man? But what did this martyred maide for al this force? Did she yeld to violence, or rendre hir self to the dispoliation of this mercilesse man? No surelie. But with so great stoutnesse of minde, she suffred those imprested woundes, that no one worde sounding of sorrow, or womanly shrieche was heard to sound from hir delicate mouth. Howbeit the poore father and miserable mother at that rufull and lamentable sight, moued with inward griefe and naturall pitie, cried out aloude. But when they saw that neither plaint nor faire speeche could deliuer their daughter out of the hands of that cruel monster, they began with open cries and horrible exclamation to implore helpe and succour at the hands of the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the proud and most barbarous wretch, moued and disquieted by cholers rage and fume of chasing wine, lodainely ratched the most constant virgin by the haire of the hed, and in hir fathers lappe did cut hir white and tender throte. O detestable fact right worthie of full reuenge. But what did this vnfaithful and cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when by the blustering bruite of peoples rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he shewed himself contented with the fact, but had him in greater regard than before, and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater cruelties and mischief was done and executed. For in open streat, like beastes in the shambles they were cutte and heued in pieces, which seemed to murmur at this bloudy and vnlawfull acte: the rest were banished and expelled

the Citie. Eight hundred of these exiled persons fled into Etolia (a prouince adioyning to Epirus, which nowe is called Albania,) Those people so banished out of their countrie, made instant sute to Aristotimus to suffer their wiues & children to repaire to them: but their sute was in vaine, their peticions and supplications seemed to be made to the deafe, and dispersed into the windes. Notwithstanding, within few dayes after, he caused by sound of trumpet to be openly proclaimed, that it should be lawfull for the wiues & children of the banished to passe with their baggage and furniture to their husbands in Etolia. This Proclamation was exceding ioyfull to all the women whose husbands were exiled, which at the leaste by common report were the number of.vj. hundreds. And for more credite of that Proclamation, the wicked tyrant did ordaine, that all the companie should depart vpon a prefixed daie. In the meane time, the ioyfull wiues glad to visite their poore husbands, prepared horse and wagon, to carie their prouisions. The appointed day of their departure out of the Citie being come, all of them assembled at a certaine gate assigned for their repaire, who that time together resorted with their little children in their hands, bearing vpon their heads their garmets and furnitures, some on horsebacke, and some bestowed in the wagons, according as eche of their states required: when al things were in readinesse to depart, and the gate of the Citie opened, they begā to issue forth. They were no soner gone out of the Citie walles, and had left behind them the soile of their nativitie, but the Tyrants gard and Sergeants brake vpon them, and before they were approched, they cried out to stay and goe no further vpon paine of their lives. So the poore amazed women, contrarie to the promise of the Tyrant, were forced to retire. Which sodaine countremaund was sorrowfull and wofull vnto that af-

flicted

flicted flocke. But there was no remedie, for procéede they could not. Then those Termagants and villains caught their horse by the bridles, and drone backe againe their wagons, pricking the poore oxen and beastes with their speares and Jauelyns, that horrible it is to report the tyrannie vsed towards man and beast, in such wise as the poore miserable women (God wot) contrarie to their desires, were forced in dispite of their teeth to retourne. Some (alacke) fell off their horse with their little babes in their lappes, and were miserablie troden vnder horse féete, and ouerrunne with the wheeles of the wagons, their braines and guts gushing out through the weight and comberance of the cariage, and (which was most pitiful) one of them not able to helpe an other, and muche lesse to rescue their yong and tender sucking babes, the vile sergeáts forcing eche wight with their staues & weapons mangre their desirous mindes to réentre the Citie. Many died by that cõstrained meanes out of hand, many were troden vnder the horsefeéte, and many gasping betwéene life and death: but the greatest part of the little infants were slain out of hand, and crusht in pieces: those which remained aliue, were committed to prison, & the goods which they caried with them altogether sealed vp by the Tyrant. This most wicked and cruell fact was most intollerable and greuous vnto the Citizens of Elis, Wherevpon the holy dames consecrated to the God Bacchus, adorned & garnished with their priestly garments, and bearing in their handes the sacred mysteries of their God, as Aristotimus was passing through the strete garded with his Souldiers and men of warre, went in procession to finde him out. The sergeants for the reuerence of those religious women disclosed themselues, and gaue them place to enter in before the Tyrant. Ye séeing those women apparelled in that guise, and bearing in their

hands the sacred Bachanal mysteries, stode stil, and with silence heard what they could say. But when he knew the cause of their approch, & that they wer come to make sute for the poore imprisoned women, sodainly possessed with a diuelish rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly reprehended his garrison for suffering of those women to come so neare him. Then hee commaunded that they should be expelled from that place without respect, and condemned euery of them (for their presuming to intreat for such captiue prisoners) in.v. talets a piece. After these mischiefs committed by the tyrãt, Hellanicus one of the principal & best esteemed persõs of the Citie, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt, what soeuer, so it might extend to the deliuerie of his countrey from the vnspeakable tyrannie of most cruell Aristotimus. To this gray haired person, bicause he was of aged yeares, voide of children which were dead, this tyrant gaue no great heede ne yet employed any care, thinking that he was not able to raise any mutine or tumult in the Citie. In the meane space, the Citizens, which as I haue sayd before, were banished into Etolia, practised amongs them selues to proue their Fortune, and to seeke all meanes for recouerie of their countrey, and the death of Aristotimus. Wherfore hauing leuied and assembled certain bands of Soldiers, they marched forth from their banished seat, and neuer rested till they had gotten a place hard adioyning to their Citie, where they might safely lodge, and with great commoditie and aduantage beliege the same, and expel the tyrant Aristotimus. As the banished were incamped in that place, many citizens of Elis dayly fled forth, and ioyned with them, by reason of which auxiliaries and dayly assemblies, they grew to the full number of an armie. Aristotimus certified hereof by his espials

was

was brought into a great chafe and furie, and euen now began to presage his fall and ruine. But yet meaning to forsee his best aduantage, went vnto the prison, where the wiues of the banished were fast inclosed, and because he was of a troublesome and tyrannicall nature, he concluded with him self rather to vse & intreate those wiues with feare and threates, than with humanitie and fayre wordes. Being entred the prison, he sharpely and with great fiercenesse commaunded them to write vnto their husbandes that besieged him without, earnestly to persuade them to giue ouer their attempted warres: otherwise (said he) if ye do not folow the effect of my commaũdement, in your owne presence I will first cause cruelly to be slaine al your little children, tearing them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwardes I will cause you to bee whipped and scourged, and so to die a most cruel & shamfull death. At which fierce and tyrannicall newes, there was no one womã amõgs them that opened their mouthes to answer him. The most wicked & vile tyrant seing thẽ to be in such silence, charged them vpon their liues to answere what they were disposed to doe. But although they durst not speake a word, yet with silence one beholding eche other in ỹ face, fared as though they cared not for his threates, more readie rather to die thã to obey his commaundement. Megistona then (which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone as well for hir husbands nobilitie as hir owne vertue, in great regard and estimatiõ, and the chiefe amongs all the women, who at his comming in would not rise, but kept hir place, nor vouchsafing to do any reuerence or honor vnto him, and the like she bad the rest: In this wise sitting vpon the ground vnloosed tongue and libertie of speeche, stoutly she answered the tyrants demaunde in this maner: If there were in thee Aristotimus, any manly prudence, wisedome, or good

" good discretion, truly then wouldest not cõmande vs poore
" imprisoned women to write vnto our husbands, but ra-
" ther suffer vs to goe vnto them, and vse more moderate
" wordes and mylde behauiour, than wherewith of late
" thou diddest entertaine vs, by scoffing, mocking, & cruel-
" ly dealing with vs, and oure poore children: and if nowe
" thou beeing voide of all hope, dooest seeke to persuade by
" oure meanes likewise to deceyue oure husbandes that
" bee come hither to put their liues in perill for our delive-
" rãce, I assure thee thou vainely beglest thy self, for wee
" henceforth do purpose neuer to be deceyued of thee: we
" require thee also to thinke and stedfastly beleeue, that our
" husbands heads be not so much bewitched with follie, as
" despising their wiues and children, neglecting their due-
" ties towards them, will beeing in this forwardnesse, a-
" bandon their preseruation and gyue ouer the libertie of
" their coũtrey. Think also that they litle esteeme or wey ỹ
" regard of vs, & their childrẽ, in respect of the great cõten-
" tation they shal attaine by vnyoking the libertie of their
" countrey from thy pride & intollerable bondage, & which
" is worst of all, from that tyrannie whiche neuer people
" felt the like. For if thou were a King as thou arte a ty-
" rant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kinde as
" thou art a slaue, proceding from the deuil, thou wouldest
" neuer execute thy cursed crueltie against a feeble kinde,
" such as women be, & wheresoeuer thou alone ioyned in singu-
" lar cõbat with my valiant & dere beloued husbande, thou
" durst not bande to bande to shewe thy face: for cõmonly it
" is seene, that the Courtely Ruffian backed on wyth such
" mates as he is him selfe, careth not what attempt he ta-
" keth in hande, and stareth with haire vpright, loking as
" though he would kill the deuill, but when he is preast to
" seruice of the fielde, and in order to encountre with his
" Princes foe, vpon the small sway by shocks or push that

chaun-

chanceth in the fight, he is the first that taketh flight, & »
last that standeth to the face of his ennimie. Such kinde »
off man art thou, for so long as our husbands were farre »
of, absent from their Countrie, not able to ridde vs from »
thy thrall, thou wroughtest thy malice then against their »
wiues at home, doing the greatest crueltie towardes thē »
and their sucking babes, that euer deuill could doe vpon »
the damned sorte, and now thou seest them arriued here »
vnder our countrie walles, thou fliest, and seekest helpe at »
womens hands, whose power if it serued them according »
to their willes, would make thée tast the fruit of thy com- »
mitted smart. And as she would haue proceded further in »
hir liberall talke, the Caitife tyrant not able to abide a-
nie further speache, troubled beyond measure, presently
commaunded the little childe of hir to be brought before
him, as though immediatly he woulde haue killed him, &
as his seruaunts sought him out, the mother espied him
playing amōgs other children, not knowing for his small
stature and lesse yeres, where he was become, and calling
him by his name said vnto him: My boy come hither, that »
first of all thou maist lose thy life, to feele the proufe and »
haue experience of the cruell tyrannie wherin we be, for »
more grieuous it is to me to see thée serue against the no- »
bilitie of thy bloud, than dismembred and torne in pieces »
before my face. As Megistona stoutly and vnfearfully »
had spoken those wordes, the furious and angrie tyrant
drew forth his glittering blade out of his sheathe, purpo-
sing to haue slaine the gentlewoman, had not one Cilon
the familiar friend of Aristotimus staid his hand, forbid-
ding him to commit an acte so cruell. This Cilon was a
fained and counterfeit frend of the Tyrant, very conuer-
sant with other his familiar friendes, but hated him with
deadly hatred, & was one of them ỹ with Hellanicus had
conspired against the tirant. This Gentleman then seing

Aristotimus with so greate furie to ware wood against Megistona, imbraced him, and said, that it was not the parte of a gentleman proceeding from a race right honorable, by any meanes to imbrue his handes in womans bloud, but rather the signe & token of a cowardly knight, wherefore he besought him to stay his hands. Aristotimus persuaded by Cilon, appeased his rage, and forsoke the companie of the women. Not long after, a great prodige and wonder appeared in this sort: before supper the tyrant and his wife withdrue themselues into their chaber, and being there, an Egle was seene to soare ouer the tyrants palace, and being aloft, by little and little to descend, and letting fall from hir tallands a huge and great stone vppon the toppe of that chamber, wyth clapping wings and flying noyse soared vp againe, so farre as she was cleane out of sight from them that did behold hir. With the rumor and shouts of those that saw this sight, Aristotimus was appalled, and vnderstanding the circumstance of the chaũce, he sent for his diuine to declare the signification of this Augurie, which greatly troubled his minde. The Southsayer bad him to be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauor and loue which Iupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the Citie whom the Citizens had wel tried and proued to be faithfull and trustie, manifested vnto them the great daũger that hong ouer the tyrants head, such as the like neuer before. The confederats which had conspired with Hellanicus, made great spéde to prosecute their enterprise, and the nexte night to kill the tyrant. The very same night Hellanicus dreamed that he sawe his dead sonne to speake vnto him these words: What meane you father this long time to slepe, I am one of your sonnes whom Aristotimus hath slaine, know you not that the same day you attempt your enterprise, you shalbe captaine & prince of your coũtrie?

By

By this vision Hellanicus confirmed, he rose bytimes in the morning, and exhorted the conspirators that day to execute the benefit of their Countrie. That time Aristotimus was certified how Craterus the tyran of another Citie, with a great armie, was comming to his aide against the banished people of Elis, and that he was arrived at Olympia a Citie betwæne the Mounte Ossa and the mountaine Olympus. With which newes Aristotimus being incouraged, thought alreadie that he had put to flight and takē the banished persons, which made him to aduenture himself abrode without guard or garrison, accompanied only with Cilon and one or two of his familiar frends, the very same time that the conspiratours were assembled to doe the facte. Hellanicus seing the time so cōuenient to deliuer his beloued Countrie by the death of the traiterous Tyrant, not attending any signe to be giuen to his companions (although the same was concluded vpon) the lusty old man lifting vp his handes and eies vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voice cried out to his companions and said: Whie stay ye, O my Citizens and louing country men in the face of your Citie to finishe this good and commendable acte? At which wordes, Cilon was the first which with his brandishing blade killed one of those that waited vpon the Tyrant. Thrasibulus thē and Lampidus assayled Aristotimus, vpon whose sodaine approch, he fled into the Temple of Iupiter, where he was murdred with a thousand woundes vpon his body, accordingly as he deserued. He being thus deseruedly slain, his body was drawen vp & downe the stretes, and proclamation of libertie sounded vnto the people: Wherevnto eche wight assembled, amongs whome the imprisoned women also brake forth, and reioyced with their countrey deliuerers of that egregious enterprise, by fires and bankettes outwardly disclosing

their exceeding great ioye within, and in midde of their mirth the people in great throngs and companies ranne to the Tyrants palace, whose wife hearyng the peoples noyse, and certified of hir husbands death, inclosed hir selfe in a chamber with hir two daughters, and knowing how hatefull she was vnto the Citizens, with a fastned corde vpon a beame she hong hir selfe. The chamber dores being broke opē, the people viewed the horrible sight of the strangled ladie, wherwithall not moued, they toke the two trembling daughters of the tyrant, and caried them away, purposing to rauish & violate the same, firste to saciate their lust with the spoile of their virginitie, and afterwards to kill them (those Gentlewomen were very beautifull and mariageable) and as they were about to do that shamefull dēde, Megistona was tolde therof, who accompanied with other Matrons, sharply rebuked their furie, saying, that vncomely it were for them which sought to establish a ciuile state, to doe such a shameleſſe act as tirants rage wold scarce permit. Vpon that noble matrons authoritie and interception, they ceassed from their filthie fact, and then the woman toke the Virgins oute of the peoples handes, and brought them into the chambre where their strangled mother was. And vnderstandyng that it was decreed that none of the Tyrants bloud shoulde rest on liue, she turned hir face to the two yong Gentlewomen, and sayde: The chiefest pleasure which I can doe to you, resteth in this choise, that it shall be lawfull for either of you to chose what kinde of death you list, by knife or halter, if you will to dispatche your liues from the hedleſſe peoples greater furie, vpon whose two white and tender bodies if they doe seaze, the Gods doe know and we doe feare the crueltie and great abuse which they doe meane to vse, I thinke not for despite of you, but for the iust reuenge of your most cruell fathers

acts,

ates, for the tyrannous life of whom, the Gods do thun-
der downe the boltes of their displeasure, afflicting his
neareſt bloud and beſte beloued wife and children, wyth
vengeance poured from heauens. Vpon the ſentence of
this their fatall ende, the elder maiden of the twaine vn-
loſed a girdle from hir middle, and began to tie the ſame
to hang hir ſelfe, exhortyng hir yonger ſiſter to doe the
like: and in any wiſe to beware by ſparing of hir life, to
incurre the beaſtly rage of the monſtrous people, which
cared not to do eche vile and filthie acte, vnworthie they
eſtate. The yonger ſiſter at thoſe wordes, layed handes
vpon the faſtened corde, and beſought hir right earneſtly
firſt of all to ſuffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder an-
ſwered: So long as it was lawfull for me to liue, and
whiles we led our princely time in our fathers courte, &
both were frée from enimies danger, all things betwene
vs two were common and indifferente: wherefore the
Gods forbidth at now the gates of death be opened for
vs to enter, when with the Ghoſtes of our dere parents
our ſoules amids the infernall fieldes be predeſtined to
raunge and wander) that I ſhoulde make deniall of thy
requeſt. Therfore go to good ſiſter mine, and ſhrink not,
when thou ſeeſt the vgly face of hir, that muſt conſume
vs all. But yet (déere ſiſter) the deadly ſight of thée before
my ſelfe, will bréede to me the woe and ſmart of double
death. When ſhe had ſo ſayd, ſhe yelded the coller to hir
ſiſter, & counſelled hir to place the ſame ſo néere the neck
bone as ſhe could, that the ſoner the halters force might
ſtop hir breath. When the vnfearefull yonger ſiſter was
dead, the trẽbling hands of ỹ dredleſſe elder maid vntied
the girdle from hir neck, couering in comly wiſe hir ſenſ-
leſſe corps. Then turning hir ſelf to Megiſtona, ſhe hũ-
bly prayed hir not to ſuffer their two bodies to bée ſéene
naked, but ſo ſone as ſhe could, to bury them both in one

their exceeding great ioye within, and in midde of their mirth the people in great throngs and companies ranne to the Tyrants palace, whose wife hearyng the peoples noyse, and certified of hir husbands death, inclosed hir selfe in a chamber with hir two daughters, and knowing how hatefull she was vnto the Citizens, with a fastned corde vpon a beame she hong hir selfe. The chamber doores being broke opē, the people viewed the horrible sight of the strangled ladie, wherwithall not moued, they toke the two trembling daughters of the tyrant, and caried them away, purposing to rauish & violate the same, firste to saciate their lust with the spoile of their virginitie, and afterwards to kill them (those Gentlewomen were very beautifull and mariageable) and as they were about to do that shamefull déede, Megistona was tolde therof, who accompanied with other Matrons, sharply rebuked their furie, saying, that vncomely it were for them which sought to establish a ciuile state, to doe such a shameleſſe act as tirants rage wold scarce permit. Vpon that noble matrons authoritie and interception, they ceassed from their filthie fact, and then the woman toke the Virgins oute of the peoples handes, and brought them into the chambre where their strangled mother was. And vnderstandyng that it was decréed that none of the Tyrants bloud shoulde reſt on liue, she turned hir face to the two yong Gentlewomen, and sayde: The chiefeſt pleasure which I can doe to you, resteth in this choise, that it shall be lawfull for either of you to chose what kinde of death you list, by knife or halter, if you will to dispatche your liues from the hedleſſe peoples greater furie, vpon whose two white and tender bodies if they doe seaze, the Gods doe know and we doe feare the crueltie and great abuse which they doe meane to vse, I thinke not for despite of you, but for the iuſt reuenge of your moſt cruell fathers

acts,

actes, for the tyrannous life of whom, the Gods do thun-
der downe the boltes of their displeasure, afflicting his
nearest bloud and beste beloued wife and children, wyth
vengeance poured from heauens. Upon the sentence of
this their fatall ende, the elder maiden of the twaine vn-
loosed a girdle from hir middle, and began to tie the same
to hang hir selfe, exhorting hir yonger sister to doe the
like: and in any wise to beware by sparing of hir life, to
incurre the beastly rage of the monstrous people, which
cared not to do eche vile and filthie acte, vnworthie their
estate. The yonger sister at those wordes, layed handes
vpon the fastened corde, and besought hir right earnestly
first of all to suffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder aun-
swered: So long as it was lawfull for me to liue, and
whiles we led our princely time in our fathers courte, &
both were frée from enimies danger, all things betwene
vs two were common and indifferente: wherefore the
Gods forbidth at now the gates of death be opened for
vs to enter, when with the Ghostes of our dere parents
our soules amids the infernall fieldes be predestined to
raunge and wander) that I shoulde make denial of thy
request. Therfore go to good sister mine, and shrink not,
when thou séest the vgly face of hir, that must consume
vs all. But yet (déere sister) the deadly sight of thée before
my selfe, will bréede to me the woe and smart of double
death. When she had so sayd, she yelded the coller to hir
sister, & counselled hir to place the same so néere the neck
bone as she could, that the sooner the halters force might
stop hir breath. When the vnfearefull yonger sister was
dead, the trẽbling hands of ỹ dredlesse elder maid vntied
the girdle from hir neck, couering in comly wise hir sens-
lesse corps. Then turning hir self to Megistona, she hũ-
bly prayed hir not to suffer their two bodies to bée séene
naked, but so sone as she could, to bury them both in one

earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginitie to the mould wherof they came. When she had spokē those wordes, without any staye or feare at all, with the selfe same corde she strangled hir self, and so finished hir fatall dayes. The guiltlesse death of which two tender maids, there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I suppose) so stonie hearted & voide of Natures force, ne yet so wroth against the tyrant father, but did lament, as well for the constant stoutnesse and maner of their death, as for their maydenlyke behauioure and right honest petitions made to that sobre matrone Megisthona, who afterwardes caused the other dames, to bury those two bodies in one graue.

O how happy & famous had these two sisters ben, if they had not bene the daughters of so wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence on Childrens trespasse, oughte not to deface the vertuous dēdes of their posteritie.

Two Romane Queenes.

¶ The maruellous courage and ambition of a Gentlewoman called TANAQVIL, the Quene & wife of TARQVINVS PRISCVS the fifth Romane King, with hir perſuaſions and pollicie to hir husbande for his aduauncement to the kingdome: hir like encouragement of SERVIVS TVLLIVS, wherin alſo is deſcribed the ambition of one of the. ij. daughters of SERVIVS TVLLIVS the ſixt Romane King, and hir crueltie towards hir owne naturall father: with other accidents chaunced in the newe erected common welth of Rome, ſpecially of the laſt Romane Kyng TARQVINVS SVPERBVS, who with murder atteined the kingdom, with murder mainteined it, and by the murder and inſolent life of his ſonne, was with all his progenie baniſhed.

The ſixt Nouell.

ANcus Marcius being ye fourth King (after Romulus the firſt builder of that Citie) there came to dwell in Rome one Lucumo, a luſtie gentleman, rich, and deſirous of honour, who determined to continewe his habitation there. The ſame Lucumo was the ſonne of one Demarat⁹ a Corinthian, who for ſeditiō fled his owne countrie, & dwelt in Hetruria amongs the ſtock of the Tarquines: and after he was maried he begat

begat two ſonnes, one of them was this Lucumo, and the other was called Arnus. Lucumo was heire to his father, for that Arnus died before, leauing his wife great with childe. The father not knowing that his daughter in lawe was with childe, gaue nothing in his will to his Nephewe: for which cauſe the childe was called Arnus Egerius. Lucumo being the ſole heire of his father, maried a noble woman named Tanaquil, and bicauſe the Thuſcans could not abide to ſée a ſtraunger growe to abundance of welth and authoritie, ſhe deſpiſed hir owne country rather than ſhe would ſuffer hir huſband in any wiſe to be diſhonoured. Wherfore ſhe deuiſed to forſake the Tarquinians, & to dwel at Rome, where ſhe thought among that honorable ſorte and newe rerected ſtate, that hir huſband being ſtout and valiant, ſhould attaine ſome place of reſiance. For ſhe called to remembraunce that Tatius ỹ Sabine, Numa borne of ỹ ſtock of Curetes and Ancus brought forth by a Sabine woman, all ſtrangers, did raigne and became noble and mightie. Thus ambition and deſire of honour eaſily doeth perſuade any deuiſe. Wherfore, carrying with thẽ al their ſubſtance, they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Ianiculum, as he and his wife were ſitting in a Wagon, an Eagle houering hir wings ouer Lucumo, ſodenly toke away his cappe, which done, ſhe ſoared ouer the wagon with great force, then ſhe retourned againe, as though ſhe had bene commaunded by ſome celeſtiall prouidence, & aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then ſoared away vp into the element. Tanaquil conceiuing this act to be ſome Augurie or Prophecie, being cunning in that knowledge (as commonly all the people of Hetruria be) imbraced hir huſband and willed him to be of good chere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymagining and conſulting vpon theſe

euents,

euents, they entred the Citie, and when they had gotten a house for him and his familie, he was called Tarquinius Priscus. His riches and great wealth made him a noble man amongs the Romanes, and through his gentle entertainement and curteous behauiour, he wanne the good willes of many, in so much as his fame and good report was hyred throughout the palace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the King him selfe, who seeing his liberall demeanor and ductifull seruice, esteemed him as one of his familiar and nere frends, and both in his warres and also at home he imparted to him the secrets of his counsell, and hauing good experience of his wisedom, by his last will and testament appointed him to be tutour of his children. Ancus raigned.xxiiij.yeres, a man in peace and warre, in policie and valiance with any of his predecessours comparable. His children were very yong, and for that cause Tarquinius was more instant to summon a parliament for creation of a king. When the day was come he sente the yong children abroade a hunting, and then ambitiously presumed to demaunde the kingdome, being the first that euer attempted the like. For the better conciation and obteining of the peoples good will, he uttered this Oration: I doe not presume to require a straunge or newe thyng, that was neuer before put in practise, nor yet am the first, but the third strãger and forraine borne that affected and aspired to this gouernmẽt. For which consideration there is no cause why any man ought to muse or maruell more than behoueth. It is euidently knowen that Tatius, not onely being a stranger, but also an ennimie, was made King. Numa also was made King, being altogether a forraine & straunger borne, not through his owne request, but rather voluntarily accited and called thereunto by the Romanes: but for my parte, after I was able to gouerne my self, I repaired to

" dwell at Rome with my wyfe, my children, and all my
" substance, where I haue spent the chiefest porcion of my
" life, specially after it was mature and able to execute ci-
" uile magistrerie, which I chose rather to bestow at Rome
" than at home in myne owne countrey. I haue lerned the
" Romane rites and lawes, as wel such as be mete to serue
" abroade in the warres, as also necessarie to bee practised
" at home, at the hands of mine olde maister Ancus Mar-
" tius your late king, a maister right worthie and famous
" in all pointes to bee followed. I shewed my selfe an hum-
" ble and obedient subiecte to the King and in friendeship
" and familiaritie towarde others, I contended with the
" King him selfe. When hee had spoken those wordes,
which in deede were very true, with the whole consent
of the people, hee was saluted King. And as all things
succeeded his Noble requeste, euen so after hee was set-
tled in his Kyngdome, hee gaue hym selfe to amplifie the
common wealth. Hee chose an hundred graue persons,
whiche he called the Fathers of the lesser countries. He
warred firste with the Latines, and wanne the Citie of
Appiolas, who bringyng from thence a greater spoyle
and bootie than was loked for, ordeined richer and more
gorgeous Playes than any of hys predecessoures. He
builded certayne Galleries and other places of assem-
blie aboute the *Forum*, hee walled the Citie rounde a-
bout with stone. And as he was doing these things, the
Sabines interuented him vpon the sodaine, in so much
as they were passed the Ryuer of Anienes before the
Romane hoste was in a redinesse. Whiche was an oc-
casion of greate feare and stirre at Rome. In the ende
after the battailes were ioyned betweene them bothe, a
cruell and bloudie slaughter was committed, the victo-
rie fallyng to neyther parte. Then the Romanes
sought meanes to renue their force, by addyng to their

army

armie a further bande of horſmen. Wherefore Tarquinius ſente to the Rammenſes, Titienſes, Luceres: To the bandes that Romulus had conſcribed, hée added other new troupes of horſemen, purpoſing that the ſame ſhould continue in memorie of him after his death. And bicauſe Romulus dyd the ſame without aduiſe of the Southſayers, one Accius Nauius the notableſt Prophecier in thoſe daies, withſtode that conſtitution, affirming that it was not lawfull for him eyther to appoint a newe order, or to alter the olde, except the birdes and auguries did aſſent therunto. Wherwith the king was diſpleaſed, & deluding that ſcience, ſaid: Goto Southſayer, tell me now (quod he) is it poſſible to bring that to paſſe which I haue now conceiued in my minde? Yea quod the Southſayer if you tel me what it is. Then quod Tarquinius, I haue deuiſed that thou ſhalt pare thine owne ſkin with a Raſer. Therfore take this knife & doe as thy birdes doe portend and ſignifie. And as it was reported he pared his own ſkin in deede. In memory wherof an Image of Accius was erected, with his head couered. After that time there was nothing attempted without thoſe auguries. Notwithſtanding, Tarquinius proceded in his conſtitution, and added to the Centurias another number, for that 1800. horſemen were conteined in the three Centuriæ. The later addition was called alſo by the ſame name, which afterward were doubled into vj. Centurias. Whē his numbre was thus increaſed, once againe he ioyned battel with the Sabines, who by a notable policie recouered a great victorie. And bicauſe the Sabines doubled a freſhe onſet without any order of battell or good aduiſement, they were ouerthrowen, and then conſtrained to make petition for peace. The citie of Collatia, and the Coūtrie confining vpon the ſame, was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres being in

this ſo:tended, Tarquinius in triumphant maner retor-
ned to Rome. At that time a p:odige and miraculous wo-
der chanced to be ſéne in the Palace. The head of a
childe whoſe name was Seruius Tullius lying a ſléepe in
the palace, was ſéene to burne. The king was b:ought to
ſée that miracle. And as one of his ſeruants was going to
fetch water to quéch the fire, he was ſtaid by the Queene,
who commaunded that the childe ſhould not once be tou-
ched vntill he awaked of himſelfe. And ſo ſone as he roſe
from ſléepe, the fire vaniſhed. Then ſhe toke hir husband
" aſide, and ſaid: doe you ſée this childe whom we haue be-
" rie baſely and negligently b:ought vp? I aſſure you ſir
" (ſaid ſhe) he wil be the only ſafegard and defender of this
" our doubtfull ſtate, and will be the p:eſeruer of our hou-
" hold when it is afflicted. Wh:ereſo:e let vs make much of
" him, that is like to be the o:nament and a wo:thie ſtay
" to all our familie. After that they had accompted him a-
mongs the number of their child:en, & traded him vp in
thoſe Arts, which excite all good diſpoſitions to aſpire vn-
to honoure, the pleaſure of the Gods appeared in ſho:t
time: Fo: the child grew to a royal behauio:, in ſo much,
as among all the Romane youth, there was none mo:e
méete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius
Tullius was the ſonne of one Seruius Tullius that was a
Captain of a towne called Corniculum, at the app:ehen-
ſion wh:ereof, it chaunced that the ſayd Tullius the father
was ſlain, leauing his wife great with child: the mother
being a captiue and bonde woman was deliuered of hir
childe at Rome, in the houſe of Priſcus Tarquinius. After
Tarquinius had raigned.xxxviij.yeres, the yong man be-
gan to growe to great hono: and eſtimation, aſwell with
the king himſelf, as alſo with the Fathers. Then the Ro-
manes conceiued a hateful indignation againſt the king,
fo: that he being put in truſt to be the Tuto: & gouerno:

of

of Ancus children, displaced them from their right inheritance, and specially for that he himself was a stranger, fearing also that the kingdom should not return againe to the election of themselues, but degenerat and grow into seruile bondage. They also called to remembrãce, that the Citie continewed one hundred yeres after the subiation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one Citie, and that it was a shame for them to suffer a bondman, borne of seruile kind, to possesse the same, and would rebound to their perpetual ignominie, hauing the progenie of Ancus aliue, to suffer the same to be open to straungers and bõdmen. Wherfore they determined to defend the griefe of that iniurie, and to be reuenged rather vpon Tarquinius, than vpon Seruius. In fine, they committed the execution of that fact to two shepherds chosen out for that purpose. Who deuised this pollicie. Before the entrie into the Palace they fell togither by the eares, vpon which fray all the kings officers assembled and repaired thither to know the cause of their falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with such exclamation, as they were heard to the Palace. Being called before the king, both of them fell to brawling, and one of thẽ strined of purpose to hinder the tale of the other. The kings sergeant rebuked them, commaunding them to tel their tales in order. When they were a litle quieted, one of thẽ begimneth to discourse the tale. And as the king was attentife to heare the plaintif, the other toke vp a hatchet & threw it at the king, and leauing the weapon sticking in the wound, they conueied themselues out of the doores. Those that waited vpon the King, made hast to relieue him, and the sergeants followed to apprehende the malefactors. With that a hurlie burlie rose amõgs the people, euery man maruelling what the matter shoulde be. Tarquil commaunded the palace gates to be shut, and se-

heth remedie to cure hir husbande, as though some hope of life had bene remaining. When hope failed of his recouerie, shée called Seruius before hir (which maried hir daughter) and shewed vnto him hir dead husbande, holding him fast by the right hande, shée intreated him that he would not suffer the death of his father in laiwe to be vnreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to
" the traitours, saying to him further these wordes: If thou
" be a man of thy hands (O Seruius) the kingdom is thine
" and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the hands of other
" haue committed this abhominable facte. Wherefore put
" forth thy selfe, and the Gods be thy guide: For they did
" portende this noble head to be the Gouernour of this ci-
" tie, at such time as they circumfused the same with a fire
" descendyng from aboue. Let that heauenly flame excite
" thy courage. Be throughly awaked. We being straun-
" gers sometime haue raigned. Thinke and consider what
" thou art, & not from whence thou camest. If the strange-
" nesse of the case doe affray thée, my counsel from time to
" time shall relieue thée. The crie and stirre of the people
being vnmesurable, that one could scarse heare an other, Tanaquill opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the King dwelt at the temple of Iu-
" piter Stator) and then spake to them in this wise: Be
" of good chéere (good people) the King is but amazed with
" the sodainesse of the stroke, the wound is not very depe,
" for euen nowe he is come againe to him selfe, and the
" wounde being opened and dressed, there is good hope of
" life: I trust within these fewe days you shall sée him. In
" the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obedience to
" Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes,
" and to doe all other affaires in the absence of my hus-
" bande. Seruius occupying the state and Authoritie of the King, executed the lawes in some cases, & in other some

made

made the people beleue that he would consult with the King him self. The death of the King was concealed and kept close a certaine space, till such tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the King was disclosed, Seruius being garded with a strong Garrison, toke vpon him to be King, not by the consent of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderstanding that the King was aliue, and that Seruius power and force was greate, conueyed them selues in exile to Suessa Pometia. And least the children of Tarquinius should attempt like enterprise against him, as the children of Ancus did against Tarquinius, he maried. ij. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns, the children of Tarquinius. But yet the deuise of man could not breake the necessitie of fate and constellation, for the hatred conceiued in desire of Ambicious gouernment, made all things vnstable and vnfaithfull amongs domestical frends. But yet to quiet and pacifie the present time, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cities of Hetruria: wherein the fortune and daliace of Tullius excelled. For when he had giuen an ouerthrow to the enimie, least the peoples and fathers good will should be withdrawne, he retourned to Rome: who then attempted and brought to passe a notable worke in the common wealth. He instituted a certen yerely tare & renenew, to satisfie and discharge all charges sustained in the time of peace and warre, with sundrie other notable lawes and deuises for the defense of the publique state. After that he had mustered the whole numbre of the Citizens in the field called Martius, the same amounted to lxxx.M. And as Fabius Pictor saith, there were so many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles of Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliæ, were added to the citie. He compassed the towne round about with a bamure, enuiro-

heth remedie to cure hir husbande, as though some hope of life had bene remaining. When hope failed of his recouerie, shée called Seruius before hir (which maried hir daughter) and shewed vnto him hir dead husbande, holding him fast by the right hande, shée intreated him that he would not suffer the death of his father in lawe to be vnreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to
" the traitours, saying to him further these words: If thou
" be a man of thy hands (O Seruius) the kingdom is thine
" and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the hands of other
" haue committed this abhominable facte. Wherefore put
" forth thy selfe, and the Gods be thy guide: For they did
" portende this noble head to be the Gouernour of this ci-
" tie, at such time as they circumfused the same with a fire
" descendyng from aboue. Let that heauenly flame excite
" thy courage. Be throughly awaked. We being straun-
" gers sometime haue raigned. Thinke and consider what
" thou art, & not from whence thou camest. If the strange-
" nesse of the case doe affray thée, my counsel from time to
" time shall relieue thée. The crie and stirre of the people
being vnmesurable, that one could scarse heare an other, Tanaquill opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the King dwelt at the temple of Iu-
" piter Stator) and then spake to them in this wise: Be
" of good chéere (good people) the King is but amazed with
" the sodaineste of the stroke, the wound is not very depe,
" for euen nowe he is come againe to him selfe, and the
" wounde being opened and dressed, there is good hope of
" life: I trust within these fiue days you shall sée him. In
" the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obedience to
" Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes,
" and to doe all other affaires in the absence of my hus-
" bande. Seruius occupying the state and Authoritie of the King, executed the lawes in some cases, & in other some

made

made the people beleue that he would consult with the King him self. The death of the King was concealed and kept close a certaine space, till such tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the King was disclosed, Seruius being garded with a strong Garrison, toke vpon him to be King, not by the consent of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderstanding that the King was aliue, and that Seruius power and force was greate, conueyed them selues in exile to Suessa Pometia. And least the children of Tarquinius shold attempt like enterprise against him, as the children of Ancus did against Tarquinius, he maried. ij. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns, the children of Tarquinius. But yet the deuise of man could not breake the necessitie of fate and constellation, for the hatred conceiued in desire of Ambicious gouernment, made all things vnstable and vnfaithfull amongs domestical frends. But yet to quiet and pacifie the present time, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cities of Hetruria: wherein the fortune and daliace of Tullius excelled. For when he had giuen an ouerthrow to the ennimie, least the peoples and fathers good will should be withdrawne, he returned to Rome: who then attempted and brought to passe a notable worke in the common wealth. He instituted a certen yerely tare & renewe, to satisfie and discharge all charges sustained in the time of peace and warre, with sundrie other notable lawes and deuises for the defense of the publique state. After that he had mustered the whole numbre of the Citizens in the field called Martius, the same amounted to lxxv.M. And as Fabius Pictor saith, there were so many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles of Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliæ, were added to the citie. He compalled the towne round about with a vanure, enuiro-

wroning the same with a double trench. He deuided the Romanes into .v. bands called Classes, and into Centurias, which be bandes of an hundred men. He also builded a Temple to Diana, with the helpe and assistance of the Latine people. Amongs the Sabines there chaunced an Oxe in the house of an husbande man to be brought forth, of an huge bignesse and marueilous shape (the hornes wherof were placed at the porche of Dianas temple for a monument long time after.) The Soothsayers prophecied, that where the same Oxe shoulde be first sacrificed to Diana, there the chief Empire and principall gouernement should remain: which prophecie came to the knowledge of the chiefe minister of Diana hir Temple. One of ỳ Sabins expecting for a day mete to be employed in that sacrifice, brought the sayde Oxe to Rome to the Temple of Diana, placing the same before the Altar.

The chiefe Minister calling to remembrance the oracle, and saw that the greatnesse of that sacrifice should be famous, spake to the Sabine these words. What dost thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare sacrifice to Diana, before thou bee purified and clensed in the liuely Riuer of Tyber? Here beloiwe in thys valley the sayde riuer doth runne. Goe get thou hence and wash thée. The Sabine attached with a religious feare, goeth doiwne to ỳ Riuer, and while he is washing of himselfe a Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right acceptable both to the king and his countrie. The king although that of long time he had raigned, yet vnderstode that the elder Tarquinius which was maried to one of his daughters, did bragge and report eftsones that his father in law obteined the gouernmẽt and kingdom without the consent of the people: wherfore the king through his liberalitie by diuiding the conquest atchieued of the enimy amõgs the common people, conciliated their fauor and good wils.

In

In so much as he affirmed that he would raigne in despite of them all, and that there was no King at any time that raigned with a more generall consent: All which did nothing diminish the hope and desire of Tarquinius. He had a brother whose name was Aruns, being of a quiete & gentle disposition. Both they maried two of the kings daughters, which were of maners and conditions verie vnlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns, the sharper shrewe, and fiercer of nature, seeing that hir husband was nothing giuen or pliant to match with hir vngracious deuice or ambicious stomack, attempted hir brother, whose condition was correspondent to hirs, and sayd vnto him, that he was a man in deede, and one worthie to be accompted to be borne and procede of the blood royall. Then she began to contemne hir sister: for that she hauing such a man to hir husband, would suffer him to neglecte so mete and inst occasion for recouerie of the kingdome. Their natures being of one disposition, as commonly one mischief procureth an other, at things begun to be disquieted through the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be shorte, they two deuised meanes, that Aruns his brother, and the Elder Tullia hir sister were slain: which done, they two maried together. The wicked woman ceased not dayly to animate and prouoke hir husband from one patricide to an other. And amongs all hir wicked talke and cruel instigations, she vsed these words: If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am maried, then I wil cal thee both husband and King: But if thou be not he, then the alteration is chaunged to the worse, and cruelrie is matched with cowardise. But why doest thou not put thy selfe in a readinesse? Wil thy selfe comest not newe from Corinth, or from the Hetrurian Tarquines, to atchieue and conquere newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods, and the Gods of thy

" countrey, the nobilitie of thy father, and thy royal blood,
" thy stately seate within thine owne house, and thy name
" Tarquinius, doe create and make thée Kyng. But if in
" all these occasions thou dost wante stomacke, why dost
" thou make the whole Citie conceyue a false opinion of
" thée? Why dost thou not shewe thy selfe to be the sonne
" of a King? Auoide hence I say, and goe to the Tarqui-
" nians, or to Corinth, retire again to thy first linage: thou
" dost rather resemble thy brothers effeminate heart, than
" the valiant stomacke of thy father. With these wordes
and such like, she pricked forward hir husbande, and shée
hir selfe coulde in no wise bée quiet. Then Tarquinius
went forth to the fathers of the lesser countries, and cal-
led to their remembrance the benefites vnto them by his
father extended, desiring the like to bée shewed and ren-
dred vnto him: he allured the yonger sort of the Citie by
gifts and other liberall rewardes, promising them, if hée
atteined to his purpose, more frankly to recompence them.
By this meanes the King became odious and offensiue
to the people. Tarquinius séeing his time, guarded with
a bande of armed men, entred the market place, where-
with the common people were greatly abashed, then hée
mounted into the palace, and placed him selfe in the royal
seate of the same, causing the Fathers to be cited before
hym by the Haraulde, vnto whome he repeted the peti-
gré of Seruius, and his first entrance into the kingdom.
" As he was speaking these wordes, Seruius in great hast
" repaired to the Palace, and finding Tarquinius sitting in
" his place, sayd to him these wordes. Why? what is the
" matter Tarquinius (quod he?) howe dareste thou bée so
" bolde so long as I am liuing to call the Fathers, or yet
" presume to sit in my seate? whereunto Tarquinius fierce-
ly replied, That hée possessed but the rowme of his fa-
ther, which was more mete for a Kings sonne and heire,

than

heire, than for such a bondeman as he was, and that he had long enough abused his Lordes and maisters: wherwithall a great hurly burly and tumult began to rise by the fautors of both parts, so that he was like to attain ỹ garland, which best could daunce for it. Tarquinius forced to giue the last aduenture, being more lustie & stronger than the other, toke Seruius by the middle, and carying him out of the Courte, threw him downe the staires, whiche done, hée caused the *Senate* to retourne into the Palace. Then the King with all his traine of Officers, and other his seruaunts came away, and as they were flying, he was slain by those that Tarquinius sent after to pursue him, in the strete called Cyprius. Tullia understanding ỹ Seruius hir father was slaine, she bashed not in hir wagon to come into the market place before al the assemblie there, called hir husband out of the Court, and boldly was the first that called him King. But being rebuked & commaunded by him to auoid out of that great throng of people, shé retired home again, & when she was past ỹ vpper end of the said strete called Cyprius, the wagoner driuing toward the right hãd to the hill called Exquiliæ, he stayed the wagon, and shewed his ladie the bodie of hir father, lying starke dead in the strete. In memory of which shamefull and vnnatural fact, long time after there continued a Monument. For the same strete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that she caused the wagõ to be driuen ouer the dead corps of hir father, with the blood of whom & hir husband, hir wagon being contaminated, she presented the same to hir Gods. After which abhominable beginnings, like end ensued. This Seruius Tullius raigned .xliij. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raign, vnto whom Superbus was added for his surname. This wicked sonne in law would not suffer the dead bodie of Seruius to be buried. His conscience being pricked

with the abhominable gaine of his kingdom, fearing also least other might conceiue like example, he guarded his person with a band of armed men, executing all things by force and Tirannie, contrarie to the aduise and consents of the Senate and people. He caused the fautors & frends of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the number of the Fathers was diminished, whose places he suffered none other to supplie, of purpose to bring that honorable order to contempt. He gouerned the common welth by his own domesticall and priuate Counsell. Warre, peace, truce, societie of the Cities adioyning, he vsed as he list, without any further assent. The Latines he specially regarded, to the intēt y through forrein aide he might raigne in more suretie at home, with the chiefe of which countrie he ioyned affinitie. One Octauius Manilius a Tusculan born, was the prince and chiefe ruler of that countrie, descēding from the stocke of Vlisses, and the Goddesse Circes, if the fame be true, vnto whome Tarquinius gaue his daughter in mariage: By reason whereof he conciliated great alliance and frendes. Tarquinius being of great authoritie amongs the Latines, appointed them vpon a day to assemble at a wood called Ferentina, there to intreate of matters concerning both the states. To which place the Latines repaired vpon the breake of the day. But Tarquinius came not thither til the Sunne was set. During which time many things were in talke. There was one amongs them called Turnus Herdonius, which in Tarquinius absence had inueyed vehemently against hym, affirming that it was no maruell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what prouder mock could be inforced to the Latines, than to make thē wait a whole day for his pleasure. Diuers princes and noble mē (quod he) that dwell a far of, be come according to the appointment, and he which lieth hard by the day, is not present.

Hereby it moſt euidently appeareth in what ſort he will
vſe vs if he might once atteine the ſouerauntie. And who
can doubt in ſo manifeſt apparance, but that he went not
about to affecte and aſpire the dominion of the Latines?
If the Romanes haue had iuſt cauſe to beleeue him, and
if their kingdom had ben but gotten & not violently rapt
and ſtolne by parricide, then the Latines might alſo be-
leeue him, who being but a ſtraūger to them, had no great
cauſe to beleeue him. His owne ſubiects do repent the time
that euer he bare rule: For ſome be ſlain and heaped vp-
on the dead bodies of other, ſome be banished, ſome haue
loſt their goodes: what other fruites than theſe may the
Latine people expect and loke for? Therfore if they wold
be ruled, he required euery man to retourne home to his
owne houſe, and giue no more attendaunce for the day of
the Counſel, than he doth which firſt appointed the ſame.
This and ſuch like, this ſeditious and deſperate man de-
clared: Whoſe talke Tarquinius interrupted, and vpon
his comming euery man conuerted himſelf to ſaiute him.
Then Tarquinius began to excuſe himſelfe of his long
tariāce, for that he was appointed an arbitrator betweene
the father and the ſonne, for whoſe reconciliation he was
forced to ſtay that lōg ſpace, and to ſpend the time of that
day. Wherfore he appoynted the next day. The concept
of which excuſe Turnus could not kepe ſecrete, but ſaid:
that a matter betweene the father and the ſonne might
be ended in few words: for if the childe would not be o-
bedient to his father, ſome miſchief muſt nedes light vp-
on him. Tarquinius vnderſtanding theſe inuections made
againſt him by Turnus, immediatly deuiſeth meanes to
kil him, to the intent he might inculcate like terror to the
Latines, that he did to his owne ſubiects. And becauſe he
was not able to fort his purpoſe and effect, by ſecrete ma-
lice, he attempted to accuſe him of treaſon, and ſuborned

(by meanes of diuers of the Citie of Aricia,) his owne man whom with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accusation, which was, that his maister had prepared in one night a number of men with Munition and weapon to distroy the Nobilitie of the Latines, of purpose to recouer the principalitie of the same. This matter began to be suspicious, by reason of the Tumult made the day before against Tarquinius, and therefore the people the soner did credite the case. In fine, Turnus was condemned, and therefore a new kind of death deuised. Who being laide vpon a Hurdle, his face vpward, was throwen into the water of Ferrentina. This execution being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counsell, wherein he praised them for their Iustice extended vpon Turnus, and then he spake these words: I may by an old order and constitution iustlie say thus much vnto you. The whole Nation of the Latines descending from the Citie of Alba are bound to obserue that truce, which the Albanes with all their colonies annexing themselues to the Romane Empire in the time of Tullius Hostilius were firmely obliged to accomplishe. The renouation whereof will nowe conduce more aduauntage and vtilitie to them all, than euer it did before. For throughe this Truce the Latines shall possede and participate parte of the prosperous successe of the Romane people. Better it were in this sort to ioyne themselues together, than to see Destruction of either Cities, Depopulacions, and spoiles of their Countries, which in the time of Ancus (my Father then raigning) ye suffred. The like also (if you doe forsake this offer) ye may still expect and suffer. The Latines hereunto were some perswaded, a day was appointed when the iustiest sort of their Countrie should be redy armed at the wood called Ferrentina. Being ioynes in order of battell, they marched towards the Volsci-

ens,

ens, and wanne the Citie of Suessa Pometia, the spoile wherof Tarquinius solde for.xl. Talents, imploying the same vpon the Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he assaulted the Gabinians, and whē he saw he could not by force obteine the same, he surmised a pollicie. Who seming to bend him selfe wholly vpon the building of the *Capitole*, and to set aside the affaires of his warres, deuised with his sonne Sextus, which was the yōgest of the three, that he should runne to the Gabinians, and complaine of his fathers intollerable cruelties, which accordingly he did. Who shewing himselfe as a voluntarie exile, said, that his father had conuerted his tyrannie from other, and began to execute the same vpon his owne frends: And that he was also weary of the presence of his owne children, going about to remoue his domesticall conuersants out of his house, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent he would leaue no offspring or heire behind him to possesse his kingdome: adding further, that he was escaped euen through the midde of his fathers weapons and fury, thincking no place better for his safegard and refuge, than to seeke succour amongs his enimies. And bicause (quod he) ye shal not be deceiued, he is euen now preparing of warres against you, and purposeth vpon the sodain to set vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble suppliant amōgs you, I must needes wander through Italie, and first I will attempt the Volscians, afterwardes the Æquians and Hernicians, till such tyme as I finde some nation willing to defend the poore orphide from the cruell and wicked furie of the Father. And perchaunce (quod he) ye shall winne him that may be an Instrument and courage vnto you all, to represse that proude king and cruell Nation.

The Gabinians deliberating what was best to be done in this case, the yong man seemed as though he were offended,

fended, and would in all hast depart: and seeke refuge at others, then they curteously interteined him. This young man being had in great estimatiō amongs them, through craftie and vaine persuasions, making them beleue that he would conduct their armie euen vnder the walles of Rome, with sundrie other fained inuigations to bring him self the more in credit. At length he was chosen captaine of their warres, and recouered sundry victories for the Gabinians. Wherby the foolishe nation both of the lower and chiefest sorte, beleued that their captaine was sent vnto them by the prouidence of the Gods. He suffered perill and paine in like sort as the common souldier did, liberally deuiding his spoyles and booties amongs them. He was so well beloued, that his father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authoritie than he was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recouered force enough to answere his fathers expectation, he sent a post to Rome, to know his fathers pleasure, although the Gods had giuen him sufficient authorities amongs the Gabinians. And because Tarquinius was doubtfull of the truth and fidelitie of the Messanger, he would answere nothing by worde of mouth, but carrying the Messanger into a garden, harde adioyning his house, with a wand which he carried in his hande, he cut of the heads of the highest poppies that were in the garden: meanyng therby that he should dispatche the heads of the chiefest and principal in the Citie. Wherupon the messanger without answere by mouth returned. But by declaring those signes & circumstances which his father vsed, Sextus conceiued his meaning. Then like a natural sonne, following the steppes of his father, he cut of the heades of the Gabinian nobilitie, wherupon some ranne away, vpon whose departure the goodes as well of them as of other that were put to death were deuided. The

state

state of the Gabinians being in this doubtful case, voide of all counsell and succour, at length was surrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquinius concluded peace with the Æquians, and renued a truce with the Thuscanes, and wholly bent him selfe to the affaires of the Citie. This Tarquinius was the father of hym, that rauished the noble Ladie Lucretia: the lamentable historie wherof, is recited in my former Tome, by the ende of whiche stocke, remembred in that historie, and beginning of the same described in this Nouell, may bee gathered, what fruits Ambition and lothsome lust bring forth. For Tarquinius Priscus repairing out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambicious will of his wife aspired and atchieued the Kingdome, which was by the sundrie deuice of Tullia, the daughter of Seruius Tullius mainteined, and by the libidinous desire of Sextus Tarquinius, the sonne of Superbus the.vj. Romane King ended, and the whole race expelled & euerlastingly banished out of that Citie. So mete an example for those, that wrath & long after the rights, titles, & Kingdomes of other, as may bee read in any Author. For although the Spring appeare very fresh and lustie, of some degenerate grifft planted vpon some ancient stock, yet the fruite mosse commonly in taste eateth somewhat sower, and the rellishe in mouthe not altogether so pleasaunt, as that which bothe in soile and stocke, is duely planted.

***

Sopho-

Sophonisba.

¶ The vnhappie end and ſucceſſe of the loue of king MASSINISSA, and of Queene SOPHONISBA his wife.

The ſeuenth Nouell.



IF men would haue a more conſideration of their owne things & doings, before they doe attempt the ſame, or elſe premeditate and ſtudie the ſcope and ſucceſſe therof, I doe verely beleue that a number would not caſt themſelues headlong into ſo many gulfs of miſeries & calamities as they doe, ſpecially noble men & Princes, who oftentimes doe excell in temeritie & raſhneſſe, by letting the raines of their owne luſts, to farre to range at large, wherin they doe plunge and ouerwhelme themſelues to their great preiudice & dishonor, as teacheth this goodly Hiſtory enſuing, which affirmeth that there was a prince called Maſsiniſsa, the ſonne of Gala king of Maſſęzali, a people of Numidia, and warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spaine againſt the Romanes, hauing firſt foughte honorably againſt king Syphax in Numidia, it chaunced that Gala his father died, vpon whoſe death his kingdom was inuaded and occupied by other, wherfore ſuſteining lonely the ſurges of aduerſitie, and diuerſly combating with

with his enimies, sometimes getting parte of his kingdome, and sometimes losing, and many times molesting both Syphax & the Carthaginians, was in diuers cõflicts like to be taken or slaine. With these his trauels, impatient of no pain and trouble, he became very famous and renowned, that amõgs the people of Affrica he acquired the name and title of a valiant and puissant souldier, and of a politique and prouident Captẽ. Afterwards he was generally wel beloued of the Souldiers, because not like the kings sonne or a prince, but as a priuate souldier and companion, his conuersation and vsuall trade of life was amongs them, calling euery mã by his proper name, cherishing and esteeming them according to their desert, obseruing neuertheless a certaine comelinesse of a Superiour. This Masiniſſa by means of one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance & familiaritie with that Scipio which afterwardes was surnamed Affricanus, and who in those dayes with the authoritie of *Proconsul* in that prouince, victoriously subdued the Carthaginians. The same Masiniſſa entred league with the Romanes, and inuiolably so long as he liued obserued amitie with the Romane people, and left the same to his children and posteritie as an inheritance. When the Romanes began warres in Affrica, spedily with that power he was able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio. within a while after Syphax being ouerthrown in battel & takẽ, Masiniſſa & Lælius was sent to take the chief citie of ỹ kingdom, which somtimes wer king Syphax owne, called Cirta. In that Citie remained Sophonisba ỹ wife of Syphax & daughter to Hasdrubal of Giscon, who had alienated hir husband from the Romanes, with whome he was in league, and by hir persuasions he went to aide and defend the Carthaginians. Sophonisba perceiuing that the enimies were entred the Citie of Cirta: and

that Maſsiniſſa was going towards the Palace, determined to méete him, to proue his gentlenesse and curtesie, whereupon in the middes of the ſouldiers throng, which were alredy entred the Palace, she ſtoutly thruſt, & boldly loked round about, to proue if she could eſpy by ſome ſignes and tokens the perſonage of Maſsiniſſa. She amõgs that preaſe perceiued one, whoſe apparel and armure and the reuerence done vnto him, ſéemed vnto hir that without doubt the ſame was the king. And therefore incontinently knéeled downe before him, and pitiouſly began to

" ſpeake in this maner: For ſo much (O puiſſant Prince)
" as felicitie and good fortune, but ſpecially the fauor of the
" Gods immortall haue permitted, that thou ſhouldeſt recou-
" ner thine auncient kingdom deſcended vnto thée by right
" and lawfull inheritaunce, and therwithall haſt taken and
" banquiſhed thine enimie, and now haſt me at thy will &
" pleaſure to ſaue or ſpil, I poore wretched miſerable wom̃
" brought into bõdage from Queénelike ſtate, whilom lea-
" ding a delicate life in Princely court, accompanied with a
" royall traine of beautifull dames, and now at thy merci-
" full diſpoſition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercie & good-
" neſſe, whoſe Princely maieſtie & comfortable aſpect, che-
" reth vp my woful heart to loke for grace, and therfore am
" bolde thus to preſume with moſt hũble voice to implore
" and crie out, beſéeching thée to reach me hither thy victo-
" rious hãds to kiſſe and ſalute. This Lady was a paſſing faire gentlewoman, of flouriſhing age and comely behauiour, none cõparable vnto hir within the whole region of Affrica. And ſo much the more as hir pleaſant grace by amiable geſture of complaint did increaſe, ſo much the heart of Maſsiniſſa was delited, who being luſty and of youthly age (according to the nature of the Numides,) was eaſily intrapped and tangled in the nettes of Loue. Whoſe glutting eyes were neuer ful, nor fiery hart was

ſatiſfied

ſatisfied in beholding and wondring at hir moſt excellent beautie: not foreſeeing therefore, or takyng heede of the daungerous effect of beauties ſnares, his hearte was ſo fiercely kindled, with the ſwinging flames of loue, that cauſing hir to riſe, he exhorted hir to proſecute hir ſupplication, who then began to procede as followeth: If it may be lawful for me thy priſoner and bondwoman (O my ſoueraigne Lord) to make requeſt and petition, I moſt humbly do beſeech thée, by thy royal maieſtie, wherin no long time paſt we were magnificently placed in ſo kinglike guiſe as thou art nowe, and by that Numidicall name, common vnto thée and my huſbande Syphax, and by the ſauing Gods and patrons of this Citie, who with better fortune and more ioyfull ſucceſſe do receyue thée into the ſame, thã expelled Syphax out frõ thence: it may pleaſe thy ſacred ſtate, to haue pitie on me. I require no hard and difficult thing at thy handes, vſe thine imperiall gouernement ouer me, ſuch as lawe of armes and reaſon of warre require. Cauſe me if thou wilt, to pine in cruel priſon, or do me to ſuch death, vñ tormentes, as thou liſt to diſe. The ſharp fierce and cruell death that any wight can ſuffre, or Perillus Bull ſhall not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare and acceptable than wonted life in pleaſures led. For no death ſhalbe refuſed of me, rather than to be rendred into the proud handes of the moſt cruel Romanes. Rather had I taſt the truſt of a native Numide, borne vñ me in Affricke ſoile, than the faith of ſtraungers kinde. I know ful well ẏ thou doſt know what curteſie a Carthaginian & daughter of Haſdrubal, ſhal ſurely loke for at ẏ Romans hãds: whoſe mind is fearful of nothing more thã of their pride & glory intollerable. If thou (my Lord) haddeſt ſiſters of thine owne, or daughters of thy royal blood brought forth, think ẏ they may chaũce (if fortune frowne) to ſlide into the pit of aduerſe lucke, ſo well as I am now.

"Of that dame Fortunes wheele is made, which we doe
"iplie to be vnstable, turning and diuers, that now peace,
"and now warre it promiseth, now good, now euill it threa-
"neth, now mirth, now sorow it bringeth, nowe aduanc-
"cing aloft, now tumbling downe the clymbers vp. Lett
"Syphax be a cleare & liuely example to thée, which could
"neuer finde any stedfast stay vnder the Romes globe. He
"was the mightiest and the richest King that raigned in
"Affrica, and now is the most miserable & vnluckie wight
"that lineth on lande. The Gods graunt that I be no pro-
"phete or diuiner of future euill, whose omnipotencie I
"deuoutlye beseech to suffer thée and thy posteritie in Nu-
"midie, and most happily to raigne. Vouchsafe then to de-
"liuer me from the Romanes thraldome, which if thou be
"not able safely to bring to passe, death vnto me shall be
"most hartily welcome. In speaking those words, she tooke
the Kings right hand, and many times sweetly kissed the
same. And then hir teares turned into pleasant cheare,
in such wise as not onely the minde of the armed and vi-
ctorious Prince was moued to mercie, but straungely
wrapped in the amorous nets of the Ladie, whereby the
victour was subdued by the vanquished, and the Lorde
surprised of his captiue, vnto whom with trembling voice
"thus he answered: Make an end O Sophonisba, of thy
"large complaint, abandon thy conceyued feare, for I will
"not onely ridde thée from the Romanes handes, but also
"take thée to my lawful wife (if thou therwith shalte be con-
"tent) whereby thou shalte not leade a prisoners life, but
"passe thy youthfull dayes and hoarie age (if Gods doe
"graunt thée life so long) as Queene vnto a King, & wife
"vnto a Romane frende. When he had sayd so with wee-
ping teares, he kissed and embraced hir. She by the coun-
tenance, signes, gestes, and interrupted words, compre-
hending that the mind of the Numide King was kindled

with

with feruent loue: the more to inflame the same, she behaued hir selfe in such pitiful plight, as the deadly hearts of the Hircane Tigres would haue bene made gentle, and dispoiled of all fierceneſſe. For againe she fel downe at his feete, and kiſſed the armed ſabbatons vpon ỳ ſame, bedewing them with hir warme teares. And after many ſobbes and infinite ſighes, comforted by him, ſhe ſayd: O the glorie and honor of all the Kings that euer were, bee, or ſhall be hereafter. O the ſafeſt aide of Carthage mine vnhappie countrey without deſert, and now the preſent and moſt terrible aſtoniſhment: If my hard fortune and great diſtreſſe after ſo greate ruine might haue bene relieued, what greater fauoure, what thing in all my life, could chaunce more and fortunate vnto me, than to bee called wife of thee? O I bleſſed aboue all other women to haue a man ſo noble and famous to huſband. O mine aduenturous and moſt happie ruine. O my moſte fortunate miſerie, that ſuch a glorious and incomparable marriage was prepared for me. But becauſe the Gods be contrary vnto me, and the due ende of my life approcheth, I doe call from henceforth (my deare ſoueraigne Lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, or rather conſumed and ſpent, becauſe I ſee my ſelfe wrapped in a ſnare, that in vaine againſt the pleaſures of the Gods, I go about to moleſt thee. A great gift (alſo to ſay the truthe) a right great guiftrue, I make account to haue receiued of thee, if more ſtone death I ſhould procure, that dying by thy meanes or with thy handes, which were more acceptable, I ſhould eſcape the feare of the Romanes, thrall and ſubiection, and this ſoule deliuered all the ſame, ſhould ſtreight way paſſe into the Elyſian fieldes. The ſmalleſt hope of this my humble plight, is to ryd me from the handes of the Romanes, whoſe thraldome to ſuffer I had rather die. The other benefite which thou doſt

« frankly offer to me poore wretche, I dare not desire, much « lesse require the same, bicause the present state of my mis« happe dareth not presume so high. But this thy pitie and « compassion ioyned with louing regard and mind toward « me, mightie Ioua with all the other Gods reward and « blesse thy gotten kingdome with long raigne, enlarging « the same with more ample boundes, to thine eternall re« noume and praise. And I do not only render humble thank« kes for this thy kinde and louing entertainmēt, but also « yelde my selfe thine owne, so long as life gouerneth this « caitife corps of myne. These wordes were pronounced « with such effecte, as Masinissa was not able for pitie to « hold his teares, which watred so his comely forme, as the « deawe therof soaked into his tender heart, and not able a « long time to speake, at last thus he sayd: Giue ouer (O « my Quéene) these cares and thoughts, drie vp thy cries & « plaints, make an ende of all these dolorous sutes, and re« ioyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the « Gods no doubt with better successe, will performe the « rest of thy liuing dayes. Thou shalt hereforth remain my « Quéene & wife, for pledge whereof the sacred Godheads « I call to witnesse. But if perchaūce (which the thūdring « mightie God aboue forbid) that I shall bée forced to ren« der the the Romanes prisoner, be well assured, that ali« liue they shal not possesse thée. For credit and accomplish« ment of this promisse, and in signe of his assured faith, he « reached his right hād to Sophonisba, and led hir into the « inner lodging of the Kynges Palace, where afterwards « Masinissa with him self considering how he might per« forme his promised faith, vexed and troubled with a thou« sande cogitations, seeing in a manner his manifest ouer« throwe and ruine at hande, prouoked with mad and tem« rarious loue, the very same day in open presence he tooke « hir to wife, solemnizing that mariage, which afterward«

bred vnto him great veration & trouble, meaning by the same to haue discharged Sophonisba frō the Romanes rule & order. But when Lælius was come and heard tell therof, he fretted and chafed, & with threatnyng wordes cōmaunded Masiniſsa to send his new maried wife (as the bootie and praie of the Romanes) together with Syphax, to their Captaine Scipio. Notwithſtanding vanquiſhed with the ſupplications and teares of Maſsiniſsa, referring the matter wholly to the iudgement of Scipio, he diſpatched Syphax with the other priſoners and bootie, to the Romane campe, and he himſelf remained with Maſsiniſsa for the recouerie of other places of the Kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane ſubiection. In ỹ meane time Lælius gaue intelligēce vnto Scipio, of the ſucceſſe of Maſsiniſſa his mariage. Who knowing the ſame to be ſo haſtily celebrated, was maruellouſly offended & troubled in minde, much maruellyng, that Maſsiniſſa would make ſuch poſthaſt before the comming of Lælius. Yea & vpon the very firſt day of his entrie into Cirta, that hee would conſummate that vnaduiſed wedding: & the greater was Scipio his diſpleaſure towards Maſsiniſſa, for ỹ the loue which he had conceiued of that woman, was vnſemely and diſhoneſt, wondering not a little that he could not finde out ſome Ladie within the region of Spaine, of ſemblable beautie and comelineſſe, to pleaſe and content his honeſt and commendable intent: wherfore he iudged Maſsiniſsa his fact to be done out of time, to the preiudice and great decay of his honor & eſtimation. Howbeit like a wiſe and prudent perſonage he diſſembled his conceyued griefe, expecting occaſion for remedie of the ſame. Now the time was come that Lælius and Maſsniſsa were ſent for to the campe. But to declare the teares & lamentable talke, the great mone and ſighes, vttered betweene

this newe maried couple, time would want, and tedious nesse wold ensue to the reader of the same. He had scarce lyen with his beloued two or three nights, but that Lælius (to their great grief and sorow) claimed hir to be his prisoner. Wherfore very sorowful and pensiue he departed, and retourned to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wise receiued him, and openly before his Captaines and men of warre, gaue thanks to Lælius & him, for their prowesse and notable exploites. Afterwards sending for him into his Tent, he said vnto him: I do suppose (my dere frend Massiniſſa) that the vertue and beneuolence, you saw in me did first of all prouoke you, to transtrete the straites, to visite me in Spaine, wherin the goodwill of my valiant friend Syllanus did not a little anaile, to sollicite and procure amitie betweene vs both, which afterwards induced your constant minde, to retire into Affrica, & to commit both your self and all your goods into my hands and keping. But I well pondering the qualitie of that vertue which moued you therunto, you being of Affrica, and I of Europa, you a Numidian borne, and I a Latine and Romane, of diuers customes & language differēt, thought that the temperance and abstinence from veneriall pleasures which you haue seene to be in me, and experience therof well tried and proued, (for the which I render vnto the immortal Gods most hūble thanks) wold or ought to haue moued you to follow mine example, being these vertues which aboue al other I doe most esteme and cherish, which vertues should haue allured you (being a man of great prowesse and discretion) to haue imitated and followed the same. For he that well marketh the rare giftes and excellent benefits wherwith dame nature hath arrayed you, would thinke that there should be no lacke of diligence and trauell to subdue and ouercome the carnall appetites of temporal beautie: which had it beue applied to

the.

the rare giftes of nature planted in you, had made you a »
personage to the posteritie very famous and renowmed. »
Consider wel my present time of youth, full of courage & »
youthly lust, which contrary to that naturall race I stay »
and prohibite. No delicate beautie, no voluptuous delec- »
tation, no feminine flatterie, can intice the same to the pe- »
rils and daungers wherevnto that heedelesse age is most »
prone and subiect, by which prohibition of amorous passi- »
ons, temperatly raigned and gouerned the tamer and sub- »
duer of those passions, closing his breast from lasciuious »
imaginations, and stopping his eares from the Syrenes & »
Parmaides, of that sexe and kinde, getteth greater glory »
and fame, than that which we haue gotten by our victory »
had against Syphax. Hannibal the greatest ennimie that »
euer we Romanes felt, the stoutest gentleman & captain »
without pere, through the delites and imbracements of »
women effeminated, is no more that málike and notable »
Emperor which he was wont to be. The great exploits & »
enterprises which valiantly you haue done in Numidia, »
when I was farre from you, your care, redinesse, animo- »
sitie, your strength and valor, your expedition and bolde »
attepts, with all the rest of your noble vertues worthy of »
immortall praise, I might & could particulerly recite, but »
to commend and extol them, my heart and minde shal ne- »
uer be satisfied, by renouacio wherof I should rather giue »
occasion of blushing, than my selfe could be contented to »
let them slepe in silence. Syphax as you know is taken »
prisoner by the valiaunce of our men of warre, by reason »
wherof, him self, his wife, his kingdom, his campe, lands, »
cities, and inhabitants, and briefly all that which was »
king Syphax, is the pray and spoile to the Romane peo- »
ple, and the king and his wife, albeit she was no Citizen »
of Carthage, and hir father, although no captaine of our »
ennimies, yet we must send them to Rome, there to leane »

" them at the pleasure and disposition of the Romane Do-
" nate and people. Doe you not know that Sophonisba
" with hir toyes & flatteries did alienat and withdraw king
" Syphax from our amitie and friendship, and made him to
" enter forze of armes against vs? Be you ignorant that
" she, ful of rancor and malice against the Romane people,
" endeuored to set al Affrica against vs, & now by hir faire
" intizements hath gained and wonne you, not I say our
" enmitie, but an ennimie so farre as she can, with hir cru-
" ell inchauntmēts? What damage and hurt haue lighted
" vpō diuers Monarches and Princes through sugred lips
" and venemous words, I will not spend time to recite.
" With what prouocations and cōiured charmes she hath
" already bewitched your good nature, I wil not now ima-
" gine, but referre the same to the depe consideration of
" your wisdome. Wherefore Massinissa, as you haue bene
" a Conquerer ouer great nations and prouinces, be now
" a conquerer ouer your owne mind and appetites, the vic-
" torie whereof deserueth greater praise than the conquest
" of the whole world. Take hede I say, that you blot not
" your good qualities and conditions, with the spots of dis-
" honor and pusillanimitie. Obscure not that fame which
" hitherto is aduaunced aboue the Region of the glittering
" starres. Let not this vice of Feminine flatterie spoile the
" deserts of Noble chiualrie, & vtterly defate those merites
" with greater ignominie than the cause of that offence is
" worthie of dispraise.

Massinissa hearing these egre & sharp rebukes, not on-
ly blushed for shame, but bitterly weeping, said ỳ his pore
prisoner and wife was at the commaundemēt of Scipio.
Notwithstanding, so instantly as teares would suffer
him to speake, he besought hym, that if it were possible,
he would giue him leaue to obserue his faith wholly as-
sured, because he had made an othe to Sophonisba that

with

with like she should not be delivered to the handes of the Romanes. And after other talke betwene them, Masinissa departed to his pauilion, where alone with manifold sighes, with most bitter teares and plaintes, vttered with such houlings and outcries, as they were heard by those which stode about the same, he rested al the day bewailing his present state: the most part of the night also he spent with like heauinesse, and debating in his minde vpon diuers thoughts and deuises, more confused and amased than before, he could by no meanes take any rest: sometimes he thought to flee and passe the straights commonly called the pillers of Hercules, from thence to saile to the Fortunate Ilandes with his wife: then again he thought with hir to escape to Carthage, & in ayde of that Citie to serue against the Romans, somtimes he purposed by sword, poison, halter, or som such means to end his life and finish his dolorous days: many times he was at point by prepared knife & sworde to pierce his heart, & yet stayed the same, not for feare of death, but for preseruatiō of his fame & honor. Thus this wretched & miserable louer burned & consumed with love, tolling and tumbling him selfe vpon his bedde, not able to find comfort to ease his paine, thus began to say: O Sophonisba, my deare beloued wife, O the life and comforte of my life, O the deyntie repast of my ioy and quiet, more amiable than the balles of myne vnhappie eyes, what shall become of vs? Alas, & out alas I crie, that I shall see no more that incōparable beautie of thine, that thy surpassyng comely face, those golden lockes, those glistering eyes which a thousandes times haue darkned and obscured the rayes & beames of the Sunne it selfe: Alas I say, that I can no longer be suffred to heare the plesant harmonie of thy voice, whose swetnesse is able to force Iupiter himselfe to mitigate his rage, when with lightning thunderbolles and

" stormie claps in his greatest furie he meaneth to plague
" earth. Ah that it is not lawfull any more for me to throw
" these vnhappie armes about thy sweet neck, whose white-
" nesse of face entermingled with seemely ruddes, excelleth
" the morning roses, which by the sweete nightly dewes do
" sprout and budde. The Gods graunt that I do not long
" remaine on liue without thy sweete haunt and company,
" which can no longer draw forth this breathing ghoste of
" mine, than can a bodie liue without like breathe in it.
" Graunt (O mightie Iupiter) that one graue may close
" vs twaine to liue among the ghostes and shadowes that
" be alreadie past this worlde for like right louing fittes, if
" intent of life be ment to mée without thy fellowship e de-
" lectable presẽce. And who (O good God) shal be more blis-
" full amongs the Elysian fields, wandring amids the spi-
" rites and ghostes of departed soules, than I, if there we
" two may iette and stalke among the shadowed friths and
" forrests huge, besette with Myrtle trées, odoriferous and
" sweete: that there we may at large recount and sing the
" sweete e sower pangs of those our e passed loues without
" any stay or let at all: that there I say we may remembre
" things alreadie done, reioycing for delightes and sighing
" for the paines. There shall no harde hearted Scipio bée
" founde, there shall no marble minded captain rest, which
" haue not had regarde of Loues toyes, ne yet haue pitied
" my bitter pains, by hauing no experiẽce what is the force
" of Loue. Ye then with ouer cruell wordes shall not goe
" about to persuade me to forsake thée, or to deliuer thée in-
" to the Romanes handes, to incurre miserable and moste
" cruell bondage: he shal there neuer checke me for the fer-
" uent loue I beare thée: we shall there abide without sus-
" pition of him or any other: they can not separate vs, they
" be not able to diuide our sweetest companie. I would the
" Gods aboue had graunted me the benefite, that hée had

neuer

neuer arriued into Affrica, but had still remained in Si-
cilia, in Italie or Spayne. But what stand I vpon these
termes, O I sole and beast? what meanes my drouslie
head to dreme such fansies? if he had not passed ouer into
Affrica, & made warre against king Syphax, howe should
I haue euer sene my faire Sophonisba, whose beautie
farre surmounteth eche other wight, whose comlinesse is
without pere, whose grace inspeakeable, whose maners
rare and incomparable, and whose other qualities gene-
rally dispersed throughout dame Natures mould by spe-
che of mã can not be described? If Scipio had not trans-
praited the seas to arriue in Affrike soyle, howe should I,
(O onely hope and last refuge of my desires) haue kno-
wen thée, neither should I haue bene thy fere, ne yet my
wife thou shouldst haue ben, but great had ben thy gaine
and lolle not much, neuer shouldst thou haue felt the pre-
sent painfull state, wherin thou art thy life (whereof most
worthie no doubt thou art) shold not haue lien in ballãce
poize, or rested in doubtful plight, which now in choice of
enimies thrall thou maist prolong, or else in Romanes
hands a praie or spoil by captiue state. But I beseech the
Gods to preuent the choice to be a Romane prisoner.
And who can thinke that Scipio euer ment to graunt me
the life of one, & goeth about to spoil me of the same? Did
not he giue me the pardon of one, when he sent me to be-
siege the Citie of Cirta, where I found fair Sophonisba
which is my life? A straũge kind of pardõ, by giuing me a
pardon to dispossesse me of ẏ same. Who euer hard tel of
such a pardon? So much as if he said to me, thus: Masi-
nissa,) go take the paine to raise ẏ Citie yeld, or ransack
the same by force, & I wil pardon thée thy life, & not with
ẏ only benefit, but wt Crœsus goods wil inrich thée, & make
thée owner of the happy soile of Arrabia, & when I haue
so done & raised the walles by mine indeuor, wherin mine

only

" only life and ioy did reſt, at my retourne for guerdone of
" my noble fact, in ſtede of life he choppeth of my head, and
" for faire promiſe of golden mountes, he ſtrips me naked,
" and makes me a Romane ſlaue. According to which caſe
" and ſtate he deales with me. For what auailes my life, if
" in griefe and ſorrowes guiſſe I drown the pleaſures of the
" ſame? Doth not he bereue my life and bréedes my death
" by diuiding me from my faire Sophonisba? Ah Caitiffe
" wretch what lacke haue I, that neither ſtorm nor whirle
" winde could ſend him home to Italian ſhore, or ſet him
" packing to Sicile land? What ment cruell Scipio, when
" ſo ſone as Syphax was take, he did not ſtreight way diſ-
" patche him to Rome, to preſent the glorious ſight of the
" Numidian king to ẏ Romane people? If Scipio had not
" bene here, thou Sophonisba frankly hadſt bene mine: for
" at Lælius hãds I could haue found ſome grace. But ſure-
" ly if Scipio did once ſée Sophonisba, & reclined his eies
" to view hir pereleſſe beautie, I doubt not but he would be
" moued to haue compaſſion vpon hir and me, and would
" haue iudged hir worthy not only to be Quéene of Numi-
" dia but of all the prouince beſides. But what do I make
" this good accompt? The common prouerbe ſaith, that he
" which counteth without his hoſte, muſt recken twice: and
" ſo perhaps may be my lot. For what know I if Scipio did
" wel view hir, whether he himſelfe would be inamored of
" hir or not, & ſo vtterly depriue me of that Jewel? He is a
" man no doubt as others be, and it is impoſſible me think,
" but that the hardneſſe of his heart muſt bowe to the view
" of ſuch a noble beautie. But (beaſt as I am) what mean
" theſe words? What follies doe I vaunt by ſinging to
" the deafe, and teaching of the blinde? O wretch, wretch,
" nay more than miſerable wretch. Marke the words of
" Scipio, he demaundeth Sophonisba, as a thing belõging
" vnto him, for which cauſe he ſayeth that ſhe is the pray &

parte

parte of the Romane spoile. But what shall I doe? shall I giue hir vnto him? he will haue hir, he constraines me, he threates me, he prayes me, but I know full well wherevnto all those intreaties tende, & vnder the grasse what lurking serpent lieth. Shal I then put into his hands mine owne Sophonisba? But before I so doe, the almyghtie God abouue, with his flashing fires & burning brands shall thunder me downe into the depths of hell. The gaping ground receyue my corps, before I yelde to that requeste, the trampling stepes of sauage kinde go teare my members in thousand gobbets, the desert beastes consume my flesh, the rauening gripes and carrain kites picke out my tongue and eyes, before I glutte his rauenous mind with that demaunde to breake the Faith which by holy othe I haue promised to persuade. Why cruell caitife, but what shall I doe then? It behoueth to obey, & in despite of my teeth to doe that which the Romane Emperour commaundeth. Alas, by thinking vpon that straight and needefull lot, I die a thousand deathes: wherefore of euils to chose the leaste of twaine, and to preserue my plighted faith, O sweete Sophonisba, thou must die, and by meanes of thy beloued fere, shalt void the yoke of Romanes thrall: for so it pleaseth vnmindefull Ioue to appoynt. The wretched heauens by cruell fate haue throwen their lot, that I of mine owne mischiefe shal be the minister. And so (O lyfe most dere) I shal perfourm the effect to kepe the faith which last of al before thy face I did confirme. By this spech and maner of talke, the good Prince bewailed his case, excogitating by what meanes he myght doe to death the thing which aboue all the world he loued best. At length it came vnto his minde to send hir a draught of poisoned drinke, which deuise he had no sooner inuented, but he was driue into a new kinde of fury, and kindled with disdaine, his braines were on fire with extreme madnesse, & as though

Sophonisba had bene before him, he talked and raued in
Bedlem wise, sometimes with teares he checked hir to hir
teeth, sometimes lamented hir vnfortunate state, sometimes
with paines displayed, he seemed to rampe into hir lappe, &
then againe into amorous toyes his passions drowe him
forth. When I doe thinke what kinde of man Massinissa
was, who in deede was a crowned and truelle noble king, &
who with such wonderous gouernment his meere conquests
recouered kingdoms, & so constantly persecuted the amitie
of ỳ Romane people, I pray to God to graunt my friends
& my selfe also, not to enter into so intricat and loneſome
Labyrinth, wherin this noble Prince was tangled, and
with more temperance to gouerne our beloued things.

But returning againe to this afflicted gentleman
Massinissa. He sent vnto his beloued wife and Quene a
potte of poyson to rid hir of hir life: but yet staying his
messanger, he cried out these wordes: God forbid that I
should commit this infamous murder vpon hir whome I
most derely loue, I would rather conuey hir into the vt-
treme parts of the vnknowen and sandy coaſt of Lybia,
where ỳ Countrie is ful of venemous beastes & crawling
poysoned serpents, in which place we shalbe safe and sure
from the daunger of cruell & inexorable Scipio, by which
meanes he shall neuer see ỳ rare & diuine beautie, which
the Serpents once beholding, will mitigate & asswage
their bitter poyson, & for whose sake they will not annoy
ne yet hurt me hir louing husband & companion. Where-
fore let vs make haſt to flee thither, to auoid the bondage
and death prepared for vs. And if so be we be not able to
cary with vs golde and siluer, yet shall we not want there
some relief, to maintein our liues: for better it is to liue
on bread and water, then to liue in perpetual thraldome.
And liuing with thee (sweete wife) what pouertie & beg-
gery am not I able to sustein? The flames of fire and

penury

penurie, I haue alreadie suffred. For being driuen out of my kingdome many times, I haue repaired to obscure dennes and caues, where I haue hidden my selfe, and liued in the wildernesse among the sauage beastes. But what meane I thus to say of my selfe, whome no misaduenture can affray or millike: but thou deare wife which hast ben trained vp and nourished amongs the delicacies & bankets of the Court, accompanied with traines of many faire & noble ladies, liuing like a Quene in al kind of pleasures & delights: what shall I doe with thee? I know thy heart will not suffer thee to follow me, and yet if the same would serue thee, frō whence shal I procure conuenient shipping? Vpon the sea the Roman fleet beares the swinge, vpon the land Scipio with his armie occupieth euery coast, & is generall lord of the field. What then shall I most miserable and infortunate caitife do? For whilest I am thus making my bitter complaints, the night is past away, daylight approcheth, and the bright shining morning beginneth to clear the earth. And behold, yonder commeth the Generalls messanger for Sophonisba, whome I must either deliuer into his handes, or else commit hir to present slaughter, being assured that she had rather make choise to die, than fall into the lappes of the cruell Romanes.

Wherupon he determined to sende hir the poison, and for very sorrow fell downe vpon the grounde like a man halfe deade. Afterwards being come againe to him selfe, he cursed the earth, the aire, the fyre, heauen, hell, and all the Gods of the same, and exclaming in lamentable wise he called vnto him one of his moste faithfull seruaunts, who according to the custome of those days, always kept poison in store, and sayd vnto him: Receiue this cuppe of golde, and deliuer the same with the poison therin, to the Quene Sophonisba nowe abiding within the Citie of Cirta, and tell hir that I with greatest good will would

" fain haue kept the mariage knot, and the firſt faith which
" I plighted vnto hir, but the lorde of the fielde, in whoſe
" power I am, hath vtterly forbidden the ſame. I haue aſ-
" ſayed all poſſible meanes to preſerue hir my wyfe and
" Quéene at libertie, but he which commaundeth me, hath
" pronounced ſuch hard & cruell ſentence, as I am forced to
" offende my ſelf, and to be the miniſter of mine owne mi-
" chiefe. This poyſon I ſend hir with ſo doleſull meſſage,
" as my poore heart God knoweth) doth only feele the ſmart
" being the moſt ſorowfull preſent that euer was offred to
" any faire Ladie. This is the way alone to ſaue hir from
" the Romanes handes. Pray hir to conſider the worthi-
" neſſe of hir father, the dignitie of hir countrey, & the ro-
" all maieſtie of the .ij. kings hir huſbands, and to do as hir
" minde and will ſhall fantſie beſt. Get thée hence with all
" poſſible ſpede, and loſe no time in doing this thy meſſage.
" For thou ſhalt cary the bane and preſent death of the fai-
" reſt Ladie that euer Nature framed within hir faireſt
" moulde. The ſeruant with this commaundement did de-
part, and Maſsiniſsa like a childe beaten with the rodde,
wept and cried behind. The meſſanger being come to the
Quéene, and giuing hir the cuppe with the poiſon, decla-
red his cruell ambaſſage. The Quéene toke the poyſoned
" cuppe, and ſaid vnto the meſſanger: Giue the king thy
" maiſter right humble thankes in my behalfe, and ſay vn-
" to him, that I receiue and drinke this poyſon with a will
" ſo good, as if he had commaunded me to enter in triumph
" with Laurell garlande ouer mine enimies. For a better
" gift a huſband can not giue to wife, than accompliſhment
" of aſſured faith, the funeralls whereof ſhall be done with
preſent obſequie. And ſaying nothing elſe vnto the Meſ-
ſanger, ſhe toke the cuppe, and myngling well together
the poyſon within, ſhe vnfearfully quaſſt it vp. And whē
ſhe had dronke the ſame, ſhe delinered the meſſanger his

cuppe

eppe againe, and layed hir selfe vpon hir bed, commaũding hir Gentlewomen in comely wise to couer hir with clothes, and without lamentation or signe of Feminine minde, shee stoutly waighted for approching death. The Gentlewomen which waited vpon hir, bewaited the rufull state of their maistresse, whose plaints and schriches were heard throughout the palace, wherof the brute and rumor was great. But the good Queene vanquished with the strong force of the poyson, remained not long before she died. The Messanger returned these heauie newes vnto Massinissa, who sorowfully complained the losse of his beloued wife, in such wise, as many tymes hee was like to kill him selfe, that his soule might haue accompanied the ghost of hir, which was beloued of hym aboue all the deerest things of the worlde. The valiaunt and wise captaine Scipio vnderstanding hereof, to the intent Massinissa shoulde not commit any crueltie against himselfe, or perpetrate other vncomely deede, called hym before him, and comforted him with the sweetest wordes he could deuise, and friendly reproued him for the little faith and trust that he had in him. The next day in the presẽce of all the armie he highly commended him, and rewarded him with the Kingdome of Numidia, giuing hym many rich iewels and treasures, and brought him in great estimation amõgs ꝑ Romans, which the Senate and people of Rome, very well approued and cõfirmed with most ample priuileges, attributing vnto him the title of King of Numidia, and frend of the Romanes. Such was the ende of the vnhappie loue of kyng Massinissa, and the faire and vnluckie Queene Sophonisba.

Poris and Theoxena

¶ The crueltie of a King of MACEDONIE, who forced a Gentlewomã called THEOXENA, to perſuade hir children to kill and poiſon them ſelues: after which facte, ſhe and hir husband PORIS, ended their life by drowning.

The. viij. Nouell.



Wt ſith wée haue begon to treat of the ſtoutneſſe of certaine noble Quenes, I will not let alſo to recite the Hiſtorie of a like vnfeareſull dame of Theſſalian lande, called Theoxena, of right noble race, the daughter of Herodicus prince of that cõtrey in the time that Philip the ſonne of Demetrius was king of Macedone, tolde alſo by Titus Liuius, as two of the former be. This lady Theoxena, firſt was a notable exãple of pietie & vertue, & afterwardes of rigorous crueltie. For the ſaid King Philip, hauing through his wickednelle firſt murdred Herodicus, and by ſucceſſion of time cruelly done to death alſo, the husbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir natural ſiſter, vnto either of them being widowes remaining a ſonne: afterwardes Archo beyng maried againe to one of the principall of their countrey named Poris, of him

him she had many childꝛē. But when she was dead, ỹ sayd ladie Theoxena hir sister, who was of heart moꝛe cõstant and stoute than the other, still refused the second mariage, although sued vnto by many great loꝛdes and pꝛinces, at length pitying hir nephewes state, foꝛ feare they shold fal into the handes of some cruell stepdame, oꝛ that their father would not bꝛing them vp with such diligence, as till that time they were, was contented to be espoused again to Poris, (no lawe that time knowen to defend the same) to the intent she might traine vp hir sisters childꝛen as hir owne. That done she began (as if they wer hir own) to intreate and vse them louingly, with great care and industrie: wherby it manifestly appeared, that she was not maried againe to Poris foꝛ hir own commoditie and pleasure, but rather foꝛ the welth and gouernement of those hir sisters childꝛen. Afterwards Philip king of Macedon, an vnquiete pꝛince, determining to make new warres vpon the Romanes (then throughout the woꝛlde famous and renowned foꝛ their good fortune) exiled not onely the chief and noble men, but almost all the auncient inhabitants of the Cities along the sea coast of Thessalia, and their whole and entier families into Peonia afterwards called Emathia, a countrey farre distant from the sea: giuing their voided cities foꝛ the Thracians to inhabite, as most pꝛoper and faithfull foꝛ the Romains warres, which he intended to make: and hearing also the curses & maledictions pꝛonounced against him by the banished people, and vniuersally by all other, thoughte hee was in no good suretie, if he caused not likewise all the sonnes of them, whome a little before he had slaine, to be put to death. Wherfoꝛe he commaunded them to be taken and holden vnder good garde in pꝛison, not to do them all to be slain at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occasion serued. Theoxena vnderstanding the Edicte of this

wicked and cruell King, and well remembring the death of hir husband, and of him that was husband to hir sister, knew wel that hir sonne and nephew incontinently shold be demaunded, and greatly fearing the Kings wrath, and the rigour of his Guarde, if once they fell into their handes, to defende them from shame and crueltie, sodeinly applied hir minde vnto a straunge deuice. For shee durst to say vnto hir husband their fathers face, that sooner she would kill them with hir owne handes, if otherwise she coulde not warraunt them, than suffer them to bee at the will and power of King Philip. By reason wherof Poris abhorring so execrable crueltie, to comforte his wife and to saue his children, promised hir secretely to transporte them from thence, and caried them himselfe to certain of his faithful friends at Athenes, which done without long delay, he made as though he would go from Thessalonica to Ænias, to be at the solemnitie of certaine sacrifices, which yearely at an appointed time was done with great ceremonies to the honour of Æneas the founder of that citie, where spending the time amongs other in solemne bankets, the.iij. watch of the night when euery mã was a slepe, as though he woulde haue returned home to his countrey with his wife & children, priuily he embarketh him selfe and them, in a shyppe hired of purpose to passe into Euboea, and not to returne to Thessalonica. But his entent was cleane altered & chaunged: for his shippe was no sooner vnder saile, but at that instant a contrarie winde and tempest rose, that brought him backe againe, in despite of their labour, and all the endeuour they were able to doe. And when daye light appeared, the Kyngs garrison descried that shippe, and manned out a boate, to bring in the same, which secretely they thought was about to escape away, giuing them straight charge, that by no meanes they shoulde returne without hir. When the

boate

boate drew neare the shippe, Poris bent him self to encou-
rage the mariners to hoyse vp saile againe, and to make
way with their oares into the sea, if it were possible, to
auoide the imminent and present danger, to saue the life
of him selfe, his wife & children: then he erected his han-
des vp vnto the heauens to implore the healpe and succor
of the Gods, which the stoute Gentlewoman Theoxe-
na perceiuing, and manifestly seeing the daunger where-
in they were, callyng to hir mynde hir former determi-
nate vengeance which she ment to do, and beholding Po-
ris in his prayers, she prosecuted hir intente, preparing a
poysoned drinke in a cuppe, and made redie naked swor-
des: All which bringyng forth before the childrens face,
she spake these words: Death alone must bee the reuẽge ,,
of your sielv lines, whervnto there be two wayes, poison ,,
or the sworde. Euery of you chose which ye lift to haue: ,,
or of whether of them your heart shall make the frankest ,,
choyse. The Kings crueltie and pride you must auoyde. ,,
Wherfore dere children be of good chere, raise vp your no ,,
ble courage: ye ẏ elder aged boyes, shew now your selues ,,
like men, and take the sword into your handes to pierce ,,
your tender hearts: but if the bloudie smart of that most ,,
dreadfull death, shal feare and fright your grẽne and vn- ,,
ripe age, then take the venomed cuppe, and gulpe by sun- ,,
drie draughts, this poisoned drinke. Be franke and lustie ,,
in this your destenied death, sith the violence of Fortune ,,
by sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this ,,
request of choise, and let not the same rebound with fear ,,
full refuse of this my craued helt. Your mother after war- ,,
des shal passe that straight, whereof she prayeth hir babes ,,
to bee the pooles: yẽ the daunt currours, and shẽ, with ,,
your louing fire, shall ende and finithe Philips rage bent ,,
agaynst vs. When shẽ had spoken these words, and ,,
saw the enimies at hand, this couragious dame, the de- ,,

uiſer of the death, egged & prouoked theſe yong trẽbling childrẽ (not yet wel reſolued what to do) with hir enchar-
med words in ſuch wiſe, as in the ende, ſome dranke the poiſon, and other ſtrake them ſelues into the bodie, and by hir commaundement were throwen ouer boorde, not altogether dead, and ſo ſhe ſet them at libertie by death, whom tenderly ſhe had brought vp. Then ſhe imbracing hir huſbande the companion of hir death, both did volun-
tarily throw them ſelues alſo into the ſea: And when the Kings eſpials were come aboorde the ſhip, they found the ſame abandoned of their praye. The crueltie of which fact, did ſo moue the cõmon people to deteſtation and ha-
tred of the king, as a generall curſe was pronounced a-
gainſt him & his children, which heard of the Gods above was afterwardes terribly reuenged vpon his ſtock & pro-
genie. This was the end of good Poris and his ſtout wife Theoxena, who rather than ſhe would fall into the lapſe of the Kings furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other huſbande did, choſe violently to die with hir owne han-
des, and to cauſe hir huſbands children and hir owne, to berieue them ſelues of life, which although againſt the louing order of naturall courſe, and therefore that kinde of violence to be abhorred, as horrible in it ſelfe, yet a de-
claration of a ſtoute minde, if otherwiſe ſhe had ben able to reuenge the ſame. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon ſuch extremitie, whẽ it ſeeth the mercileſſe enmmie at hand, with ſhining blade redie bent, to ſtrike the blowe, that without remedie muſte ridde the ſame of breath, ſpecially when it ſeeth the trembling babe, natu-
rally begotten by his owne kinde and nature, before the face imploring fathers reſcue, what daſtarde heart dare not to offer himſelf, by ſingular fight (though one to twẽ-
tie) either by deſperate hardineſſe to auoide the ſame, or other anoyance, aduenture what he can? which in Chri-

ſtians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than with that Pagane dame to doe the death it ſelfe.

But now returne we to deſcribe a facte that paſſeth all other forced dedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a maner thus to do of mere conſtraint to eſchue the greater torments of a tyrants rage, and thought it better by choſen death to chaunge hir life, than by violent hands of bloudie butchers to be haled to the ſlaughter. But this Hidruſian dame was wearie of hir life, not for that ſhe feared loſſe of life, but deſperate to think of Fortunes fickle ſtaye: which if Fortunes darlings would regarde in time, they would foreſee their ſlippery hold.

A Gentlewoman of Hidruſa.

¶ A Straunge and maruellous vſe, which in olde time was obſerued in HIDRVSA, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a Magiſtrate ordeined for that purpoſe, for euery man and woman that liſt, to kill them ſelues.

The nynth Nouell.

BAndello amongs the company of his Nouels, telleth this Hiſtorie: and in his owne perſon ſpeaketh theſe wordes. If I ſhould begin to tell thoſe things which I ſawe in the time that I ſailed alõgs the leuãt ſeas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, becauſe I ſaw and

heard things right worthy to be remembred. Notwithstanding, for satisfaction of diuers that be my frendes, I will not sticke to reherse some of them. But first of all one straunge custom, which in the Romans time was vsed in one of the Ilandes of the sea Ægeum, called Hidrusa, in these dayes by the trauailers called Cea or Zea, and is one of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whilome full of populous and goodly Cities, as the ruines thereof at this day do declare. Ther was in old time in that Iland a very strange lawe and ordinaunce, which many hundred yeares was very well and perfectly kepte and obserued. The Lawe was, that euery person inhabitant within the sayde Isle, of what sexe and condition so euer, being thorough age, infirmitie, or other accidents, wearie of their life, might chose that kinde of death which liked them best: howbeit it was prouided that the partie, before the doing of the same, shoulde manifest the cause that moued hym thereunto, before the Magistrate elected by the people for that speciall purpose, which they ordeyned bycause they sawe that diuers persons had volũtarily killed themselues, vpon trifling occasions and matters of little importance: according vnto whiche lawe very many men and women, hardily with somery chere went to their death, as if they had gone to some banckette or mariage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus that dreadfull Romane, betwene whõ and Iulius Cæsar were foughte the greatest battailes for superioritie that euer were. Pompeius (I say) sailing by the sea Ægeum, arriued at Hidrusa, and there goyng a land vnderstode of the inhabitants the maner of that lawe and how the same day a woman of great worship had obteined licence of the Magistrate to poison hir selfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, was driuen into great admiration, and thought it very straunge, that a woman which al the days of hir life had liued in greate honour and estimation

mation

mation, shold vpon light cause or occasion poison hir self, sith it was naturally giuen to eche breathyng wyght, to prolong their liuing dayes with the longest threde that Atropos could draw out of dame Natures webbe. Wher vpon he commaunded the sayd matrone to be brought before hym, whose death for hir vertue was generally lamented by the whole countrey. When the Gentlewoma was before him, and had vnderstãding that she was fully resolued and determined to die, he began by greate persuasions to exhort hir, that she should not wilfully cast hir selfe away, vpon consideration that she was of lusty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole countrey: & how greate pitie it were but shée shoulde remue hir minde and giue hir selfe still to liue and remayne, til naturall course did ende and finish hir life: howbeit his graue and earnest persuasion could not diuert hir from hir intẽded purpose. But Pompeius loth to haue hir die, ceassed not still to prosecute his former talke with newe reasons and stronger argumentes. All which she paciently heard with fixed countenance, til at length with clere voice and smiling cheare she answered him in this maner.

» Yoube greatly deceiued (my lord Pompeius) if you do
» beleue that I without very great prouidence and mature
» aduise goe about to end my days: for I do know and am
» fully persuaded, that eche creature naturally craueth the
» prolongation and lengthning of life, & so much abhorreth
» to die, as the desirous to liue, detesteth the poison whiche
» I haue prepared for consummation of my life. Wher vp-
» on I haue diuers times thought, considered and discour-
» sed with my selfe, and amongs many considerations ab-
» sentimies debated in my minde, there came into the same
» the instabilitie and fickle change of Fortune, whose whir
» ling whéele, neuer ceasseth, ne yet remaineth stedfast. It
» is dayly séene how she doth exalt and aduance some man

" from the lowest and bottomlesse pitte, euen to the toppe
" of the hygh Heauens, endowyng hym wyth so much
" substaunce as he can desire. An other that was moste
" happie, honoured in this worlde lyke a God, vnto whom
" no goodes and welfare were wantyng, who myghte
" well haue bene called in his lyfe, a thrée tymes happie
" and blessed wyght, sodaynly from his honoure and state
" depryued and made a verie poore man and begger.
" Some man also, that is bothe riche and lustie, accompa-
" nied wyth a faire wife and goodlye children, lyuyng in
" greate myrth and iolytie, this wicked Ladie Fortune,
" the deuourer of all oure contentations, depriueth from
" the inestimable treasure of health, causeth the fayre wife
" to loue an other better than hir husbande, and with hir
" venomous toth, biteth the children, that in shorte space
" myserable deathe catcheth them all within hys dread-
" full clouches, whereby hée is defrauded of those chil-
" dren, whome after his deathe hée purposed to leaue to
" his heires.
" But what meane I to consume tyme and wordes in de-
" claration of fortunes vnsteady state, which is more clere
" than the beames of the Sunne, of whome dayly a thou-
" sande thousande examples bée manifest. All histories be
" full of them. The myghtie countrey of Græcia doeth
" render ample witnesse wherein so many excellent men
" were bredde and brought vp. Who desirous with their
" fynger to touche the highest heauen, were in a moment
" throwen downe: And so many famous Cities, whiche
" governed numbers of people, nowe at this presente day
" wée sée to bée thrall and obedient to thy Citie of Rome.
" Of these hurtefull and perillous mutations (O noble
" Pompeius) thy Romane Citie may bée a moste cleare
" glasse and spectacle, and a multitude of thy noble Ci-
" tizens

tizens in tyme paſte and preſent, may gyue plentyfull »
witnelle. »

But to come to the cauſe of this my death, I ſay, that »
fyndyng my ſelfe to haue lyued theſe many yeares (by »
what chaunce I can not tell) in verie greate proſperi- »
tie, in all whiche tyme I neuer dyd ſuffer any one myſſe- »
happe, but ſtyll from good to better, haue paſſed my time »
until thys daye: Wolue feayng the frownyng of Lady »
Fortunes face, and that ſhée will repente hir long con- »
tinued fauoure, I feare, I ſaye, leaſte the ſame For- »
tune ſhoulde chaunge hir ſtile, and beggynne in the mid- »
deſt of my pleaſaunt life to ſprinckle hir poyſoned bitter- »
neſſe, and make mée the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir »
ſharpe and noyſome arrowes. Wherefore I am nowe »
determined by good aduyſe, to ridde my ſelf from the cap- »
tiuitie of hir force, from all hir miſfortunes, and from the »
noyſam and grieuous infirmities, which miſerably be in- »
cident to vs mortall Creatures: And beleue me (Pom- »
peius) that many in theyr aged dayes haue left their life »
with litle honour, who had they ben gone in their youth »
had died famous for euer. »

Wherefore (my Lorde Pompeius) that I may not be »
tedious vnto thée, or hinder thyne affaires by long diſ- »
courſe, I beſéeche thée to gyue me leaue to follow my de- »
liberate diſpoſition, that frankely and fréely I may bée »
vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the life doth »
growe, to the greater diſcommodities it is ſubiect. »

When ſhée had ſo sayde, to the greate admiration and compaſſion of all thoſe whiche were preſent, with trembling handes and fearefull cheare, ſhée quaffed a greate cuppe of poyſoned drynke, the whyche ſhée brought wyth hir for that purpoſe, and within a while after dyed.

This

This was the strange vse and order obserued in Hidrusa. Whiche good counsell of that dame had the noble and valiaunt captaine followed, no doubt he would haue ben contented to haue ben brought to order: And then he had not lost that bloudie battell atchieued against him by Iulius Cęsar at Pharsalia, in Egypt: Then he had not sustained so many ouerthrowes as he did: then had he not ben forsaken of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death so miserable. And for somuch as for the most part hitherto we haue intreated of many tragical and bloudie chaunces, respiring nowe from those, lette vs a little touche some medicinable remedies for loue, some lessons for gouernement and obediēce, some treaties of amorous dames, and hautie gestes of Princes, Quēnes and other persons, to variate the chaungeable diet, wherewith dyuers bē affected, rellishyng their stomackes with some more pleasant digestions than they haue tasted.

Faustina the Empresse.

¶ The dishoneſt Loue of FAVSTINA the Empreſſe, and with what remedie the ſame loue was remoued and taken away.

The tenth Nouell.

TRue and moſte holie is the ſentence, that the ladie, gentlewoman, or other wighte of Female kinde, of what degree or condition ſoeuer ſhe bee, be ſhe faire, fowle, or vnfauoured, can not be endewed with a more precious Pearle or Jewell, than is the neate & pure vertue of honeſty: which is of ſuch valour, that it alone without other vertue, is able to render hir that glittereth in hir attire, moſte famous and excellent. Be ſhe more beautifull than Helena, be ſhe mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, richer than Flora, more louing than Quéene Dido, or more noble than the beſt Empreſſe and Quéene of the worlde, or be ſhe full of any other vertue, if ſhe want the name of chaſt, ſhe is not worthie ſo much as to beare the title of honour, nor to be entertained in honeſt company. We ſhall peruſe hereafter

an hiſtorie of a Countesse of Celant, that was a passing faire dame, singularly adorned with Natures gifts. She was faire, pleasant, amiable, comely, and perchance not altogether barraine of good erudition and learning: she could play vpon the instruments, sing, daunce, make and compose wittie and amorous Sonets, and the more hir companie was frequented, the more amiable and gracious the same was esteemed. But because she was vnshamefast and lesse chast, she was of no regard and estimation. Such as be dishonest, do not onely hurt themselues, but giue cause to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their husbandes gouernement and institution of their children, causing them most cõmonly to leade a discontẽted and heauy life. Think you that Augustus Cæsar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raigne) lined a contented life when he saw the two Iuliæ, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vse themselues like cõmon strumpets constrained through their shameful acts, to pin and close vp himselfe, and to shunne the conuersation of men, and once in minde to cut his daughters vaynes to let out hir luſtie blood? Was not he wõt the teeres trickling down his Princely face to say, that better it was neuer to haue children & to be dead without them, than to haue a frutefull wife & children so disordred? He termed his daughter to be a carrion lumpe of flesh, full of stench & filthinesse. But if I list to speake of women of this age, from noble to vnnoble, from an Emperors daughter to a plough mans modder, whose liues do frame after Iulia hir lore, my pen to the strumpes would weare, and my hande be wearied with writing. And so likewise it would of mumbers now no doubt, that folowe the trace of Lucrece line, that huswifely and chastly contriue the day and nightes in pure and godly exercise. But of the naughtie lore to speake,

(leauing

(leaning to boide offence, ſuch as do flouriſh in our time) I will not concele the Empreſſe Meſſalina, that was wife to the Emperour Claudius, not onely vnworthie of Empreſſe degrée, but of the title of woman: who being abuſed by many, at length arriued to ſuche abhominable luſt, that not contented with daily adulterous life, would reſort to the cõmon ſtewes, where the ruffians and publike harlots haunted, for litle hire, and there for vileſt price with eche ſlaue would humble hir ſelfe: and at night not ſatiſfied, but wearied, would returne home to hir Pa'ace, not aſhamed to diſcloſe hir ſelfe to any that luſt to looke vpon hir: And for victorie of that beaſtly game, cõtended with hir like. But not to ſay ſo much of hir as I finde in Plinie his naturall hiſtorie, in Suetonius, and Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue hir to hir ſelfe, becauſe I haue made promiſe to remember the diſhoneſt loue for example ſake, which I reade of Fauſtina, whoſe beautie of all Writers is vouched to bée moſte excellent, if excellencie of good life had therevnto bene coupled. She was the daughter and wife of two holie and vertuous Emperours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius. This M. Antonius in all vertuous workes was perfecte and godly, and ſingularly loued his wife Fauſtina, and although ſhe was infamous to the worlde, and a Fable to the people, yet cared not for the ſame, ſuche was the paſſyng loue hée bare vnto hir. Leaue we to ſpeake of hir beaſtly behauiour with the noble ſort, without regard vnto hir moſt noble huſbande, and come wee to treate of a certain ſauage kind of luſt ſhe had with one of the Gladiatores, which were a certain ſort of Gamſters in Rome, which we terme to be maiſters of Defenſe. She was ſo far in loue with this Gladiator, that ſhe could not eat, drink, or ſlepe, ne take any kind of reſt. And albeit Fauſtina was thus vnſhamfaſt ſhe thought that the ſame diſordinate loue deſerued re-

buke, and ingendred shame vnto the noble house, wher of she came, that she being the daughter and wife of two famous Emperours, would subdue hir state to a man so base: and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauen of Campania, to ioyne hir selfe with the Gallie slaues there. Hir husbande which loued hir dearely, comforting his wife so well as he could, caused the best Physicians he could finde, to repaire vnto hir for recouerie of hir health. But all the deuised Physike of the world was not able to cure hir, she was so louesick. In the end knowing by long experience the fauour and loue hir husbande bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothyng could withdraw his continued minde, she tolde him, that al the torment and paine shee sustained, was for the loue of a Gladiator, towards whom hir loue was so miserable, that except she had his company, death was the nert medicine for hir disease. The good husband which beyond measure loued his wife, comforted hir with so louing words as he could deuise, and bad hir to be of good cheare, promising he would prouide remedie. Afterwards consulting with a wise mā, a Chaldee born, opened vnto him the effect of his wiues disease, & how she was louesick with such a person one of ỳ Gamsters of the Citie, promising great rewards if he could by his secretes, serche out redresse to saue hir life. The Chaldee could tell him none other remedie, but that he must cause the Gladiator to be slaine, and with the blood of him to anoint the body of the Empresse, not beknowing vnto hir what it was: which done, that he must goe to naked bed to hir, and doe the acte of matrimonie. Some Hystoriographers do write, that the Chaldee gaue him counsel, that Faustina should drinke the blood of the Gladiator, but the most part, that hir body was bathed in the same. But how so euer it was, it would haue cooled the hottest Gentlewomās stomack in the world, to be anoint-

ted

led with like laine. To conclude the Gladiator was ſlain and the medicine made and applied to the pacient, and the Emperour lay with the Empreſſe, and begatte hir with childe. And immediatly ſhe forgot the Gladiator, and neuer after that time remẽbred him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louing dames (which God defend) they would not onely folowe Fauſtine in forgetfulneſſe, but alſo would miſlike ſuch Phyſike: and not greatly regarde the counſell of ſuch doctours. By meanes of this medicine and copulation was the emperour Commodus borne, who rather reſembled the Gladiator than his father: In whoſe breaſt reſted a ſtorehouſe of miſchief and vice, as Herodian and other writers plentifully do write.

Two Maydens of Carthage.

CHERA hid a treſure ELISA going about to hang hir ſelfe, and tyeng the halter about a beame, founde that treaſure, and in place thereof left the halter. PHILENE the daughter of CHERA goyng for that treaſure, and buſily ſerching for theſame, found the halter, wherwithal for deſpaire ſhe woulde haue hanged hir ſelfe, but forbidden by ELISA, who by chaunce eſpied hir, ſhe was reſtored to parte of hir loſſe, leading afterwards a happie and proſperous life.

The xj. Nouell.

FOrtune the ladie Regent & gouernelle of mans life, ſo altreth and chaungeth the ſtate thereof as many times we ſe the noble borne from that great mightie port, wherin they be debaſed ſo

farre, as either infamously their life is spent in the hun-
grie lappe of dame penurie, or else contrived in the vgly
lothsom house of Wantonnesse, the step-dame of all hone-
stie and vertue. Sometimes we make the vnnoble lasse
that was nosseled in the homely countrey caban, or rude
ciuile shoppe, attaine to that whiche the onely honorable
and gentle do aspire: and he againe that is ambitious in
climbing vp the turning wheele, throwen downe beneth
the brinke of aduerse lucke, whelmed in the ditche & pit
of blacke despaire. We note also sumtimes that the care-
lesse wyght of Fortunes giftes, hath (vnlooked for) his
mouthe and throte crammed full of promotion and worl-
des delights. Such is the maner of hir fickle stay. Wher-
of this Hystorie ensuing, giueth some intelligence, by re-
membring the destenied lucks of .ij. powre sorie girles that
were left destitute of desired things, both like to fall into
despaire, and yet both holpen with that thei most desired:
which in this sort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Af-
fricanus had besieged the Citie of Carthage, Chera that
was a widow (dwelling there) seing the daunger at hand
wherin the Citie stode, and doubting the losse and ouer-
throwe of the same, and that the honor of the dames and
womankinde, coulde vneths be safe and harmelesse, de-
termined not to abide the vttermoste: and hauing a god
quantitie of golde and precious stones, she bestowed the
same in a casquet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of
hir house, purposing when the stirre and daunger was
past, to retourne to hir house againe for those hir hidden
things. Which done in the habite of a powre womā with
hir onely daughter in hir hand that was aboute .v. or .vj.
yeares of age, she went out of Carthage, and passed ouer
the seas into Scicilia, where falling sick, after she had ben
there thre or foure yeares, at length died. But before she
dep arted, she called hir daughter before hir, then about .x.

yeares

yeares of age, and tolde hir the place where she had layed hir casket. And by reason of the victorie gotten by Scipio, the citie was marueilously chaunged, and amongs other things, the house of Chera was giuen to a Roman souldiour that was so enriched with nobilitie of mynde, as he was poore of Fortunes goods. Which Chera vnderstanding, was sorowfull, and doubted of hir things secretly bestowed vpon the beame. Wherupon she sayd vnto hir daughter, that for so much as their house was in the possession of an other, she ought to be wise and circumspect in the recouerie of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more sorowfull vnto hir, bicause she must leaue hir (so yong a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet she incouraged hir and sayd: that sith necessitie approched, she must in childishe age, put on a graue and auncient mind, and beware how she bewrayed that casket to any person, for that of purpose she reserued the knowledge thereof, to hir self, that it might serue for hir preferment, and procure hir a husbande worthie of hir selfe. And the maiden demaunding the value of the same, she told hir that it was worth. CC. Talentes, and giue hir in writyng the particulers inclosed within the Caskette, and sayde, that the lyke bill shée shoulde finde within the same, written with hir owne hande. And so the good woman wythin a while after dyed, leauing behynde hir the yong mayden hir Daughter, that marueilously lamented the death of hir mother, accordingly as Nature taught hir, and eche other reasonable wyght deprined from their dearest friends. The maiden for hir yeres was very wise, and would disclose to none what hir mother had sayd, képing the writing very carefully and diligently. Not long after Philene (which was the maidens name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Scicilia of greate reputation and authoritie, who all bée it he saiue

hir

hir to be very faire and comely, yet cared not for hir loue in respecte of mariage, for that he knewe hir to be poore, and without dowrie mete for a Gentleman, iesting and mocking to see hir fire hir mind on him, for desire to haue him to hir husbande, that was a personage so noble and rich: which refusall pierced the heart of that tender maiden, bicause she saw hir self forsaken for nothing else, but for want of goods: which made hir to think and consider, howe shée myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed vp in Carthage. It chaunced as shée was in this thought, that the daughter of him to whome the house of Chera was giuen, called Elisa, was likewise enamoured of a noble yong gentleman in Carthage, who bicause Elisa was the daughter of a souldiour, and not very rich, in like manner laughed & iested at hir loue, no lesse than the other did at Philene. Notwithstanding Elisa attempted all meanes possible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practise and attemptes tended to none effect. And last of all, desirous to haue a resolute answere, and thereby vnderstode, that he woulde rather die than take hir to wife, she fell into despaire, and cursed fortune, and hir fate, that she was not borne riche enough to match with hir chosen Gentleman, and that she being poore, must fal in loue with such a personage: wherupon she miserably tormented hir selfe, still bewayling hir vnhappie lucke, that she could not win him to be hir husbande, for which only intent and purpose she loued him. And this amorous passion incredibly growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the restlesse humor of melancholie, and wanting all hope and comforte to slay that ranke and rámishe wéede, it so increased in hir, as shée franticke in raging loue, gaue hir self ouer to the spoile of hir self: And to rid hir from that griefe, she determined to kill hir selfe, imagining which waye she might doe the same. At length she

was

wed reſolued, with hir fathers ſword to pierce hir body: But hir heart not ſeruing hir thereunto, deuiſed by the halter to ende hir life, ſaying thus to hir ſelf: that at leſt wiſe my death ſhall doe me good, becauſe that cruel man ſhall know that for his ſake I haue done this facte, and ſhall performe my funerals with ſome teares or ſighes: And if his heart be not of yron or ſteele, he can not chuſe but ſorowe and lament, that one which loued him better than hir owne life, hath made ſuch wretched ende onely for his crueltie. Eliſa concluding vpon this intent, prepared a halter: And being alone in hir houſe, in the chamber where the Caſket lay vpon the beame, placed a ſtole vnder the ſame, and beganne to tie the halter aboute the beame: In doing wherof, ſhe eſpied the caſket, and reached the ſame vnto hir, who feling it to be beauie and weightie, immediatly did open it, and found the bil within, which Chera had written with hir owne hand, agreable to that which ſhe had deliuered to hir daughter, wherin were particularly remembred the Jewels and other riches inclоſed within the caſket. And diſcloſing the bagges wherein the golde and Jewels were bounde vp, and ſeing the great value of the ſame, wondred therat, and ioyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which ſhe had prepared for hir death, in the place where ſhee found the caſket, and with great gladneſſe and mirth ſhet vnto hir father, and ſhewed him what ſhe had found, wherat the father reioyced no leſſe, than his daughter: Eliſa did, becauſe he ſawe himſelfe thereby to be diſcharged of his former pore life, and like to proue a man of ineſtimable wealthe and ſubſtance: and ſaw likewiſe that the pore wench his daughter, by the addition of thoſe riches, was like to attaine the partie whome ſhe loued. When hee had taken forth thoſe bagges and well ſurueyed the value, to the intent no man might ſuſpect the ſodeine mutation of his ſtate,

toke his daughter with hym, and went to Rome, where after he had remained certaine monethes, he returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himselfe, and to kepe a bountifull and liberall house. His table and port was very delicate and sumptuous, and his stable stored with many faire horse, in all points shewing him selfe very noble and rich: By which sodein chaunge and mutation of state, the whole Citie deemed, that he had brought those riches from Rome. And bicause it is the common opinion of the vulgar people, that where there is no riches, there is no nobilitie, and that they alone make the noble and Gentleman (a foulishe opinion in deede, proceeding from heades that be rash and light) the people seing such a port and charge kepte by the Souldier, conceived and thought that he was of some noble house. And throughout the whole Citie greate and solemne honour was done vnto him: wherevpon the yong Gentleman, with whome Elisa was in loue, began to be ashamed of himselfe, that he had disdained such a maiden. And then the yong maiden seing hir fathers house to be in such reputation, made sute to hir father, that he would procure the Gentleman to be hir husband. But hir father willed hir in any wise to kepe secrete hir desire, and not to seme hir selfe to be in loue, and wisely told hir, that more meete it was, that she shoulde be solicited by hym, than she to make sute or request for marriage: alleaging that the lesse desirous the Gentleman had bene of hir, the more deare and better beloued she was to him. And many times whe his daughter was demaunded to wife, he made answere that Matrimonie was a state of no little importance, as enduring the whole course of life, and therefore ought wel to be considered and waied, before any conclusion were made. But for all these demaundes and answers, and all these stops and stayes, the maiden was involved with

all

an honeſt dowrie, and in the ende bir louer and ſhe were maried, with ſo great pleaſure and ſatiſfaction of them both, as they dāmed them ſelues happie. In the meane time while theſe things were done at Carthage, Philene in Sicilia toke thought how ſhe might recouer hir goodes giuen to hir by hir mother, deſirous by their meanes alſo to ſorte hir earneſt and ardent loue to happie ſucceſſe: And debating with hir ſelf (as we haue ſayd before) how ſhe might obteine them, bicauſe the houſe was in poſſeſſion of an other, thought it to bée againſt reaſon and order, that although ſhe had loſt hir houſe, yet that hir goodes ought to be reckoned vnto hir, whiche were hir onely maintenance and reputation, and the fitteſt inſtruments that ſhould conduct hir loue to happie ende. And hearing tell that the father of Eliſa the poſſeſſour of hir mothers houſe liued at Carthage with greate royaltie and magnificence, thought that if by ſome ſleight & policie ſhe found not meanes to enter the houſe without ſuſpicion, hir attempt would be in vaine: determined therfore to goe to Carthage, and to ſéeke ſeruice in that houſe, counterfaiting the kinde and habite of a Page. For ſhe conſidered, that if ſhe went thither in order and apparell of a maiden ſhe ſhould incurre the perill of hir virginitie, and fall into the lapſe of diuers other daungers: purpoſed then to goe thither in maner of a page and lackie. And when ſhe had in that ſort furniſhed hir ſelf, ſhe paſſed the ſeas, and arriued at Carthage. And ſéeking ſeruice about the citie, at length chaūced to be retained in a houſe that was next neighbour to the Souldier, and bicauſe this wench was gentle and of good diſpoſition, was well beloued of hir maiſter, who being the friend of Eliſa, hir father, many times ſent vnto him diuers preſēts and gifts by Philene, wherevpon ſhée began to be acquainted & familiar with the ſeruants of the houſe, and by hir oft repaire thither,

viewed & marked euery corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber, wherin hir mother Chera tolde hir, that she had bestowed hir goods, and loking vpon the beames espied by certaine signes and tokens, one of them to be the same where the casket lay. And therwithal well satisfied and contented, verily beleued that the casket still remained there, and without further business for that time, expected some other season for recouerie of the same. In the ende, the good behauiour and diligence of Philene, was so liked of Elisa, as hir father and she made sute to hir master to giue hir leaue to serue them: who bycause they were his friends, preferred Philene vnto them, and became the page of that house. And one day secretly repayring into the chamber, where she thoughte the treasure lay, mounted vpon a stoole, and sought the beame for the casket: where she founde no casket, but in place wher that lay, the halter, wherwithal Elisa woulde haue strangled hir self: And searching all the parts of the chamber and the beames, and finding nothing els but the halter, she was surprised with such incredible sorow, as she seemed like a stocke, without spirite, voice or life. After wardes, being come againe to hir selfe, she began pitifully to lament and complaine in this maner: Ah wretched Philene, vnder what vnluckie signe and planet was thou begotten and borne? with what offense were the heauens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mothers wombe? Coulde I poore creature when I was framed within the moulde of nature, and fed of my mothers substance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit such crime, as to prouoke the celestiall impressions to conspire againſt my Natiuitie, to bring mine increased age into such wretched state and plighte, wherein it is nowe wrapped and intangled? No no, my faulte was nothing, it was parents offense, if any were at all:

at all: For many times we se the innocent babe afflicted and cruciated for the fathers guilt. The Gods do punish the posteritie, for some sacrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors. Their maner is not to suffer heynous faultes vnreuenged. Their Iustice can not abide such mischief vncorrected for example sake. So fareth it by me. First my father died, afterwardes my mother a widow was driuen to abandon native soile, and seke releefe in forain land: And leauing that wherwith we were possessed in enimies keping, were forced a simple life to leade among straungers. And my mother, yeldyng forth hir ghost, made me beleue that she had hidden great treasures here: And I vnhappie wench thinking to obteine the pray, haue wandred in counterfait kinde, and fetched many a bitter sigh, vntil I came into this place: And the thing I hoped for, which myght haue bene the meanes and ende of all my care, is turned to nothyng: A casket transformed into a halter, golde and Iewels into a piece of rope: Is this the mariage power thou art like to haue to matche with him whom thou so dercly louest? Is this the knot that shall conioyne you both in yoke of man and wife? Ah wretche and miserable caitife, the goodes thy mother laide by for thee, for maintenance of thy reste, and safegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble house wherof thou camest, as nowe bereaued from thee. They that keepe this noble house, and beare their loftie port amid the best, haue despoiled thee poore wench of that after which thou diddest vainly trauaile. But what remedie now? Sith thy wicked lot doth thus fall out, sith thy cruell fate is loth thou shouldest atteine the thing on which thy mind is bent, and sith thy paynful life can take no ende, make spede to rid thy selfe from miserie by that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy goods: who sering his good aduenture to be thy bane,

" his happie pray to be thy spoile, hath left in lieu of that
" fire, a halter, that therwith thou mightest dispatche thy
" selfe from all thy griefes, and in their vnhappie company
" to cease thy life, that the lothsome lengthning of the same
" might not increase thy further plaints, sorowes, anguish
" and affliction. And in the place where infortunate Phile-
" ne toke hir beginning, there the miserable wretche must
" finish that, which without hir desired gaine no longer can
" be maynteined. Peraduenture it may come to passe as
" when thy soule is losed from this mortall charge, it shall
" stalke by him, by whom it liueth, and by him also whom
" she thought to ioy in greatest cõtentation, that euer mor-
" tall woman did. And thus plaining and sighing hir ill for-
" tune, when she had ended those wordes, she tied the hal-
" ter about the beame, where sometimes hir treasure lay,
" which being done she put the same about hir necke, say-
" ing: O crooked Ladie Fortune that hast thus vnfriendly
" dealt with thyne humble client: Ah dispaire, thou vgly
" wretch and companion of those that be ill disseruing, that
" is vnwilling to leaue my haunt vntil thou play the hang-
" man. Ah diuel incarnate that goest about to hale & pluck
" the innocent into thy hellishe caue. Out vpon thee thou
" deformed hellish dogge, that waitest at the fierie gate to
" lette them in, which faine woulde passe an other porte.
And as she was grinding forth these spitefull wordes, re-
die to remoue the stole to fetche hir swynge, the Gods
which would not giue consent, that the innocent wench
should enter that vile and opprobrious death, moued the
heart of Elisa, to passe by the place where she was in wor-
kyng on hir self that desperate ende: who hearing those
mornefull plaints vttred after such terrible manner, ope-
ned the chamber doore, and saw that myserable sight: and
ignorant of the occasion, moued with pitie, ranne and
staied hir from the facte, saying thus vnto hir: Ah Phi-

lous

lade, (which was the name that she had giuen to his ſelf) what folie hath bewitched thy mind? what phrenſie hath inchanted thy braine? what harde aduenture hath moued thee in this miſerable wiſe, to ende thy life? Ah (ſayd Philene) ſuffer me Eliſa, to finiſhe my tormented life, giue me libertie to vnburden my ſelfe from the harde of cares that do aſſaile me on euery ſide: Lette theſe hellhoundes that ſtande here rounde aboute me, haue their praye for which they gape. Thou moued by compaſſion, art come hither to ſtay me from the halter: but in doyng ſo, thou doeſt me greater wrong, than doeth diſpaire, which egeth me thervnto. Suffer I ſay, that mine afflictiõs may take ſome end, ſith cruel fortune willeth it to be ſo, or rather vnhappie fate: For ſhorte death is ſweeter in my conceite, than bitter life continued in sharper ſauſe than gall or wormwood. Eliſa hearing hir ſpeake theſe wordes, ſayd: For ſo much as thy myſhap is ſuch, as onely death is the neareſt remedie to depriue thy paine, what wicked chaūce hath induced thee, in this houſe to finiſhe thoſe thy miſeries? What hath prouoked thee to giue ſuche augurie to this our moſte happy and ioyfull familie? Feared is the partie (ſayd Philene) ſo to do, when deſtenie hath ſo appointed. What deſtenie is that demaūded Eliſa? Tell me I beſeech thee, perchaunce thou maiſt preuent the ſame by other remedie than that whereabout thou goeſt. No (anſwered Philene) that is impoſſible, but to ſatiſfie thy requeſt which ſo inſtantly thou craueſt of me, I will tel thee the ſumme of al my miſerie. In ſaying ſo, the teares guſhed forth hir eyes, & hir voice brake out into complaints, & thus began to ſay: Ah Eliſa, why ſhould I ſeke to prolõg my wretched life in this vale of wretchednelle, wherin I haue ben ſo miſerably afflicted? my mother pitieng mine eſtate, and ſeing me voide of frends, & a fatherleſſe child, vpon hir death bed, diſcloſed vnto me a treſure which ſhe had

had hidden vpon the beame, whereunto this halter (the best remedie of my misorie) is tied, and I minding secretly for the same, in place of that treasure founde this halter, ordeined as I suppose (by what misfortune I know not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the most happie, I see my self amongs al vnluckie women to be the most vnfortunate. Elisa hearing hir saye, greatly marueiled & sayd: Why then I perceyue thou art a woman and not a man. Yea truly answered the vnhappie maiden: A singuler example of extreme misorie to all sortes of women. And why so: demaunded Elisa. Bicause (answered Philene) that the pestilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be so: and then she tolde hir all that which had chaunced from the time of hir mothers departure out of Carthage, and how she went into Scicilia and retounted vnto hir the loue that she bare to a Scicilian Gentleman, and howe that he disdayning hir for hir pouertie, refused to be hir husband: wherupon to atchieue hir desire, as loth to forgoe him, was come in maner of a page to Carthage, to recouer the riches which hir mother had hidden there, to thintent she might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with some rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to husband whome she so derely loued. And then renforcing hir complaint, she said, that sith Fortune had despoiled hir of that which might haue accomplished hir desire, resting no cause why she shoulde any longer liue, the halter was prepared for hir to ende hir dayes, and to rid hir life from troubles. And therfore she prayed hir to be cõtented, that she might make that end which hir misaduenture and wicked fortune had predestinate. I doubt not but there be many, which vnderstãding that the treasure did belong to Philene, if they had founde the like as Elisa did, would not only not haue forbidden hir the death, but also by speedie meanes haue hastened the same, for so

much

much as by that occasion the hidden treasure should haue bene out of strife and contention: so great is the force of Couetousnesse in the minde of man. But god Elisa knew full well the mutabilitie of Fortune in humaine things, for so much as she by seeking death, had founde the thing which not onely deliuered hir from the same, but made hir the best contented woman of the worlde. And Philene seeking hir contentation, in place therof, and by like occasion, found the thing that would haue ben the instrumēt of hir death. And moued with very greate compassion of the mayden, desired to haue better aduertisement howe that treasure could belong to hir. Then Philene shewing forth hir mothers writing, which particularly remēbred the parcels within the casket: and Elisa seeing the same to be agreable to the hand wherwith the other was writen, that was founde in the casket, was assured that all the gold and Jewels which she had found, did belong vnto Philene, and sayde vnto hir selfe: The Gods defende „ that I should prepare the halter for the death of this inno- „ cent wench, whose substance hath yelded vnto me so gret „ contentation. And comforting the maiden, in the end she „ sayd: Be contented Philene, and giue ouer this thy des- „ perate determination, for both thy life shal be prolonged, „ and thy discontented minde appeased, hoping thou shalte „ receyue the comforte thou desirest. And with those words „ she losed the halter from hir neck, and taking hir by the hande, brought hir to the place where hir father and husbande were, and did them to vnderstand the force & terms whervnto the fier of loue and desperation had broughte that amorous maiden, telling them that all the treasure and Jewels which she had found (where she left the halter, and wherwith Philene was minded to hang hir self) did by good right and reason belong to hir: then shée did let them sée the counterpaine of that bil which was in the

casket, in all pointes agreable therunto, declaring moreouer, that very mete and reasonable it were, like curtesie should be vsed vnto hir, as [illegible] home they had receyued so great honor & contentation. [illegible] nd which was a Carthaginian borne, very churlish and couetous, albeit by conferring the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true and that Philene ought to be the possessor therof, yet by no meanes wold agree vnto his wines request, but fell into a rage, calling hir fole and ideot, and saying that he had rather that she had ben a thousand times hanged, than he would giue hir one peny: and although she had saued hir life, yet she ought to be banished the Citie, forsomuch as the same and all the iurisdiction therof was brought into the Romanes handes, and amongs the same hir mothers house, and all hir goodes in possession of the victors, and euery part therof at their disposition & pleasure. And moreouer, for so much as hir mother and she had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazarde and extremitie of their countrey as other Citizens did, and hauyng concealed and hidden those Riches which ought to haue ben brought forth for the common defense of their countrey, and gone out of the citie as though she had ben a poore simple woman, poorely therfore she ought to liue in Scicilia, whither she was fled. Wherfore he was of opinion, that she in this maner being departed when the citie had greatest nede of hir helpe, was disfranchised of all the rightes and customes of the countrey, and that like as a straunger can recouer nothing in that citie, except he haue the priuiledge and freedom of the same, euen so Philene (for the considerations before sayde) ought to be compted for a stranger, & not to participate any thing within the citie, accordingly as the lawes forbid. When he had so sayd, he was like by force to expell the sorowful maiden out of the house. These wordes greatly grieued

Philene.

Philene, who doubted leaſt his father in law would haue toyned wyth him, and agree vnto hys alleaged reaſons, which ſeemed to be of great importaunce and effect: and therfore thought newly to returne to the halter for remedie of hir griefs: but it otherwiſe chaunced, for the father of Elisa, whiche was a Romane borne, and affected with a Romane minde, and therfore of a gentle and well diſpoſed nature, knew full well, that although the houſe was giuen vnto him by the cõſent of Scipio, and other the captains, yet he knew that their pleaſure was not to beſtowe on him the treaſure hidden in the ſame, and therefore ought to be reſtored to the true owner, or elſe confiſcate and properly due to the Romane Eſcheker, or cõmon treaſure houſe of the ſame. And albeit that it was true that hir mother went out of Carthage, in the time of the ſiege, and therfore had forfaited the ſame, yet he determined to ſhew ſome curteſie vnto the yong mayden, and to be thankful to fortune, for the benefite which by hir meanes he had receyued, thynkyng that ſhe would be diſpleaſed with him, if he with vngratefull minde or diſhonourable intent ſhould receiue hir giftes. For in thoſe dayes the Romanes highly reuerenced lady Fortune, and in hir honor had directed Temples, and dedicated Aultars, and in proſperous time and happy aduentures, they conſecrated vowes, and did ſacrifices vnto hir, thinking although ſuperſticiouſly) that like as from God there proceded none euill, euen ſo from him all goodneſſe was deriued that all felicitie and other good happes, which chaunced vpon the Romane common wealth, proceded from Fortune, as the fountaine and moſte principall occaſion, and that they which would not confeſſe hir force, and be thankfull vnto hir godhead, incurred in the ende hir diſpleaſure and daungers very great and heinous. This Romane then hauing this opinion, being (as I ſayd before) of a gentle

T.ij. diſpo-

disposition would at one instant both render thankes to Fortune, and vse curtesie vnto that maiden, by whose riches and goodes from lowe degrée he was aduaunced to honourable state. Wherefore turning his face vnto hir, with louing countenance he spake these wordes: Right
" gentle damosel, albeit by the reasons alleged by my sonne
" in lawe, none of the treasure hidden by thy mother, and
" founde by my daughter in this house, of right doth appertaine to thée, yet I will that thou shalte vnderstande my
" curtesie, and that thou sée howe the Romanes doe more
" esteme the nobilitie of their minde, than all the riches of
" the worlde. Therfore that thou mayst enioy thy loue, I
" referre vnto thée and to thy disposition all the goodes and
" Iewels that were in the Caskette, and conteyned in thy
" writyng. Beholde therefore (causing the Casket to be
" brought vnto him) all the Iewels and other parcels that
" were in the same when they were founde, take so muche
" therof as thou wilte, and if so bée thou desire the whole,
" willingly I render the same vnto thée, sithens by meanes
" of those riches, and the industrie of my traffique, I haue
" gained so muche, as hauyng gyuen a conuenient dowrie
" vnto my daughter, I can honorably liue without it. Philene séeing the curtesie of this valiant Gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, and then sayd vnto him: Sir, I for
" my part dare aske nothing, wel knowing that if you giue
" me nothing, there is no cause why I should complaine of
" you, but of my hard and wicked fortune, which hath offered and giuē that to you, which ought to haue ben mine.
" Wherefore, sith your curtesie is such, as you referre the
" whole to me, I purpose to take nothing, but will that the
" whole shalbe in your disposition: and giue me what you
" list, & that so giuen of your liberalitie, I shal more thankfully receiue, than if dette or dutie did constraine it: And
" if it shall please you to giue me nothing, my heart shal be

so well

ſo well appeaſed, for that your curteſie, as rather wouldе
I choſe to liue in the poore eſtate wherein I am, than be
rich with your diſpleſure. Howbeit, the Roman intreated
Philene to take therof what ſhe thought good: And Phile-
ne craued no more than it pleaſed hym to gyue. Eyther of
them ſtandyng vpon theſe termes, Eliſa brake the ſtrife,
who knowing the force of loue, and the griefs incident to
his clietes, of hir own harmes, moued to haue compaſſion
vpon the afflicted, turned towardes hir father, and ſayde
vnto him: Right louing father, the contencion betweene
Philene and you, is riſen of a matter which came by me.
The treaſure for which you ſtriue, and cõmit to the will
of Philene, was found by me, wherof if it pleaſe you both,
I will take ſuch order, as both you ſhall be ſatiſfied. I am
contented ſayd hir father: and I likewiſe anſwered Phi-
lene. Then ſayd Eliſa: You father hitherto haue had but
one daughter, which am I, vnto whom like a childe and
louing daughter I haue bene obedient, and ſhalbe all the
dayes of my life: And I againe haue receiued from you
ſuch fatherly education, as your abilitie and ſtate requi-
red. This treaſure I found, and gaue to you for eaſe and
comfort of vs both. To me it yelded the only delectation
of my heart in choiſe of huſband, to you honour and eſti-
mation within this citie. Wherefore, ſith the principall
came from me, and the right reſteth in this carefull mai-
den, my deſire is this, that where before you had but one
daughter, you will adopte this maiden for an other, and
think that you haue twaine, and that you will intreate
Philene in like ſort as if ſhe were my ſiſter: And where
this inheritance and renenue wherwith now you be poſ-
ſeſſed, and this caſket alſo ought to be onely mine after
your deceaſe, for that you haue no ſonnes, nor other iſ-
ſue, my deſire is that you giue vnto hir the halfe, and that
you accept hir for your daughter, as I doe meane to take

" hir for my sister: and accordingly to vse hir during lyfe.
With these wordes Elisa imbraced Philene, and louingly
dyd kisse hir, saying vnto hir: For my sister I entertain
thee Philene, and then she toke hir by the hand, and gaue
" hir vnto hir father with these wordes: Beholde father,
" your new daughter, whome I beseech you so heartily to
" loue, as you doe Elisa youre naturall chylde. The father
praised the curtesie of Elisa, and receiued Philene for his
daughter: And was contented with the arbitrement of
his daughter. But Elisa perceyuing hir husbande to be
somewhat offended therewith, specially for that the same
shoulde bee deuided into two partes, whiche was like to
haue bene his wholly before, persuaded hym by gentle
meanes to be content with that agrement: and although
at the first he coulde not well brooke the liberalitie of his
wife, yet at length viewing the good behauiour and gen-
tle disposition of Philene, and the contented minde of his
father in lawe, together with the noble nature of hys
wife, and hir wise aduertisement of Fortunes fickle as-
surance, yelded, and acknowledged Philene for his kins
woman. And so Philene put in possession of the halfe of
those goodes, wherof she was altogether out of hope, was
well satisfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Elisa
for hir sister, and hir husband for hir kinsman. That vali-
ant Roman was so carefull ouer Philene, as if she had ben
his owne daughter, and so indeuored, as he brought to
passe that she obteined hir beloued Scicilian to husbande:
who also sente for him to Carthage, where he continued
with his wife in the Romans house, and loued them both
so dearely as though he had ben father to the one, and fa-
ther in lawe to the other.

In this maner these two poore wenches attained their
two husbands, for hauing of whome, their only care was
for Riches, and for lacke therof were dryuen to despaire.

And

And in the ende both (though diuerſly, and the one more fortunate than the other) recouered riches, and with the ſame their huſbandes, to their heartes ſingular ioye and contentation. Whiche lucke I wyſhe to all other poore Girles (but not hanging ripe, or louing in deſpaire) that bende their myndes on Mariage, and ſeeke to people by that eſtate, their countrey common wealth.

But leauyng for a tyme theſe Tragicall Nouels and heauie chaunces, wée purpoſe to remember ſome morall matters right worthie of remembrance, Letters they bée from a godly Pagane clerk, the famous philoſopher Plutarch, Schoolemaiſter to an Emperour of no leſſe vertue, than his maiſters ſchoole and minde was fraught with diuine precepts. Wherfore procéede (good reader) to continue thy paines vpon the reading of theſe, ſo well as thou haſt vouchſafed to employ thy time before. They ſhal no leſſe delite thée, if vertue moue thée, they ſhall no leſſe content thée, if duetie pleaſe thée, than any delightſome thing, whereupon (at any time) thou haſt employed thy vacant time.

Letters of the Emperour Traiane.

¶ Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the sayd Emperour to Plutarch: the like also from the said Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be contained godly rules for gouernement of Princes, obedience of Subiectes, and their duelies to Common wealth.

The. xiij. Nouell.

BEcause these Letters ensuing (proceding from the infallible schole of wisdome, and practised by an apt Scholer of the same, by a noble Emperor that was well trained vp by a famous Philosopher) in myne opinion deserue a place of Record among our Englishe Volumes, and for the wholsom erudition, ought to Englishmē in English shape to be described, I haue thought good in this place to introduce the same. And although to some it shal not peraduenture seeme fit and conuenient to mingle holie with prophane (according to the prouerbe) to intermedle amongs pleasant histories, ernest epistles, amid amorous Nouels, lerned Letters: yet not to care for report or thought of such vndeserued, I iudge them not vnseemely, the course of those histories. For amidde the diuine workes of Philosophers and Oratours, amongs the

pleasant

pleasant paines of ancient Poets, and the Nouel writers of our time, merrie verses so well as morall matters be mingled, wanton bankets so wel as wels disputatiõs celebrated, lasting & iocund orations so well as effectuall declamations & perfuasions pronounced. These Letters conteine many graue & wholesom documents, sundry vertuous and chosen Institutiõs for Princes & noble men, yea and for such as beare office & preferment in cõmon wealth, frõ highest title to meanest degree. These letters do touch the reioyce of a schoolemaster, for bringing vp a scholer of capacitie and aptnesse, to imbrace & fire in memorie such lessons as he taught him. These letters do gratulate and remẽbre the ioy of the disciple for hauing such a maister. These Letters doe pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towards his subiects for choise of him to the Empire, & for that they had respecte rather to the vertue and cõdition, than to the nobilitie or other extreme accident. To be short, these letters speake and pronounce the very hũblenesse & fealtie that ought to rest in subiects hearts: with a thousand other excellent sentences of dueties. So that if the Emperor Nerua had ben alme again to peruse these letters and Epistles of congratulation betwene the scholemaister and scholer, he wold no lesse haue reioyced in Plutarch, that King Philip of Macedon did of Aristotle, whẽ he affirmed himself to be happie, not so much for hauing such a sonne as Alexander was, as for that he was borne in such a time, as had brought Aristotle to be his maister. That good emperor Nerua, shewed a patern to his successor by his good vertuous lyfe & godly gouernement, which made a successor & a people of no lesse consequence than they were trained, accordingly as Herodian worthely, That for the most part the people be wont to imitate the life of their Prince & soueraine Lorde. If Philip deemed himself happie & blessed for hauing such a son and maister, then might Nerua terme him self thrise blessed.

more happie for such a nephew & suche a notable scholemaster as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine, but by practise proued a passyng good scholer. Alexander was a good scholer, & for the time wel practised his maisters lessons, but afterwards as glory & good hap accompanied his noble disposition, so did he degenerate from former lyfe, and had quite forgottē what he had lerned, as the seconde Nouel of this boke more at large declareth. But Traian of a toward scholer, proued such an Emperor and victor ouer him selfe, as scholing and rulyng were in hym miraculous, a surmounting Paragon of pietie and vertue: wherfore not to stay thée from the perusing of those Letters, the right image of himself: thus beginneth Plutarch to write vnto his famous scholer Traiane.

A Letter of the philosopher Plutarch to the Emperor Traiane, wherein is touched how gouerners of Comon welths ought to be prodigal in dedes & spare in words.

MY most dread and soueraigne Lord, albeit of long time I haue knowne the modestie of your minde, yet neither I nor other liuing man did euer know that you aspired to that, which many men desire, whiche is to be Emperour of Rome: That man shoulde withdrawe him selfe from honour, it were cleane without the bounds of wisedome: but not to licence the heart to desire the same, that truely is a worke diuine, and not proceeding of humaine nature. For he doeth indifferently wel, that rehearseth the workes which his handes be able to do, without stayng vpon his own desires, and for good consideration we may terme thine Empire to be very happie, sith thou hast so nobly demeaned thy selfe to deserue the same without searche and seekyng

industrious

industrious policie to attaine therunto. I haue knowne within the citie of Rome many great personages, which were not so much honored for the offices which they had as they were for the meanes & deuises which they sought and endeuored to be aduanced to the same. May it please you to vnderstand (most excellent Prince) that the honor of a vertuous man doth not consist in the office, which he presently hath, but rather in the merites which he had before: In such wise, as it is the office that honoreth the partie, & to the officer there resteth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remember that I was your gouerner from your youth, and instructed your vertuous minde in letters, I can not chose but very much reioyce, so well for your soueraigne vertue, as for your maiesties good fortune, deming it to be a great happinesse vnto me, that in my tyme Rome had hym to be their soueraigne lorde, whome I had in times past to be my scholler. The principalities of kyngdomes some winne by force, and mainteine them by armes, which you ought not to doe, nor yet conceiue such opinion of your selfe, but rather to thinke that the Empire which you gouerne by vniuersal consent, ye oughte to entertaine and rule with generall iustice. And therfore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you be pacient in trauels, ware in daungers, curteous to your people, gentle to straungers, and not couetous of treasure, nor louer of your owne desires: you shal make your fame immortall, and gouerne the common wealthe in soueraign peace. That you be not a louer of your own desires, I speake it not withoute cause. For there is no worse gouernement than that which is ruled by selfe will and priuate opinion. For as he that gouerneth a cõmen wealth ought to lyue in feare of all men, euen so muche more in feare of him selfe: in so much as he may commit greater errour, by doing that which his owne luste com-

maundeth, than if he were ruled by the counsell of other. Allure you sir, that you can not hurt your selfe, and much lesse prejudice vs your subiects, if you do correct your selfe before you chastise others, esteemyng that to be a right good gouernement, to be prodigal in workes, and spare of speech. Allay then to be such a one now, that you do commaunde, as you were when you were commaunded. For otherwise it wold little auaile to do things for deseruing of ỹ empire, if afterwards your dedes be cõtrary to your desertes. To come to honour it is a humane worke, but to conserue honour it is a thing diuine. Take hede then, (most excellent Traiane) that you do remembre and still reuolue in minde, that as you be a Prince supreme, so to applie your selfe to be a passing ruler. For there is no authoritie amongs men so high, but that the Gods aboue be iudges of their thoughtes, and men beneth beholders of their dedes. Wherfore sith presently you are a mighty Prince, your duetie is the greater to be good, and leis sure lesse to be wicked, than when you were a priuate man. For hauing gotten authoritie to commaunde, your libertie is the lesse to be idle: so that if you be not such a one as the common people haue opinion, & such againe as your maister Plutarch desireth, you shall put your selfe in great daunger, and mine enimies will seeke meanes to be reuenged on me, knowing wel that for the scholers fault, the maister daily suffreth wrong, by slaunderous checke imputed vnto hym (although wrongfull) for the same. And for so much as I haue bene thy maister, and thou my scholer, thou must indeuour by well doyng, to render me some honour. And likewise if thou do euill, great infamie shalt lyghte on me, euen as it did to Seneca for Nero his cause, whose cruelties done in Rome were imputed to his maister Seneca. The like wrong was done to the Philosopher Chilo, by being burdened with the negligent

gligent nouriture of his Scholler Leander: They truely were famous personages and greate learned men, in whome the gouernement of myghtie Princes was repoſed. Notwithſtandyng, for not correctyng them in their youth, nor teachyng them with carefull diligence, they blotted for euermore their renoume, as the cauſe of the deſtruction of diuers common wealthes. And forſomuch as my penne ſpared none in times paſſe, be well aſſured Traiane, that the ſame will pardon neither thee nor me, in tyme to come. For as we be confederate in the fault, euen ſo we ſhall bee heires of the paine. Thou knoweſt well what leſſons I haue taught thee in thy youth, what counſell I haue gyuen thee, beyng come to the ſtate of man, and what I haue written to thee, ſithens thou haſt bene Prince, and thou thy ſelfe art recorde of the woordes ſayde vnto thee in ſecrete. In all whiche I neuer perſuaded thyng but tended to the ſeruice of the Gods, profite of the common wealthe, and increaſe of thy renoume. Wherfore, I am right ſure, that for any thing whiche I haue written, ſayd, or perſuaded, I feare not the puniſhment of the Gods, and much leſſe the reprochfull ſhame of men, verily beleuing that all that which I coulde ſaye in ſecrete, might without reproch be openly publiſhed in Rome. Now before I take my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my life, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I did or ſayde in thy preſence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill example. And truely (vnmete for me to ſay it) vpon that ſearch of my forepaſſed life, I neuer found my ſelfe guiltie of fact vnmete a Romane Citizen, nor euer ſpake woorde vnſemely for a Philoſopher. By meanes whereof I do right heartily wiſh, thou woldeſt remember the good education and inſtruction which thou diddeſt learne of me. I ſpeake not this, that thou ſhouldeſt gratifie me againe with any be-

nesse, but to the ende that thou mightest serue thy selfe, estéeming that no greater pleasure can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thée. Be then well assured, that if an Empire be bestowed vpon thée, it was not for that thou were a Citizen of Rome, or a couragious person descended of noble house, rich and mightie, but only bicause vertues did plentifully abounde in thée. I dedicated vnto thée certaine bookes of olde and auncient common welth, which if it please thée to vse, and as at other times I haue sayd vnto thée, thou shalte finde me to be a proclaimer of thy famous workes, & a chronicler of all thy noble faicts of armes: but if perchance thou followe thine owne aduise, and chaunge thy selfe to be other than hitherto thou hast ben, presently I inuocate and crie out vpon the immortall Gods, and this Letter shall bée witnesse, that if any hurte do chaunce to thée, or to thine Empire, it is not thorough the counsell or meanes of thy maister Plutarch. And so farewell most noble Prince.

The answere of the Emperour Traiane to his maister Plutarch.

CEccius Traiane Emperour of Rome, to thée the Philosopher Plutarch sometymes my maister, salutation and consolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuered vnto me a letter frō thée, which so soone as I opened, knewe to be written with thine owne hande, and endited with thy wisedome. So flowing was the same with goodly words, and accompanied with graue sentences, an occasion that made me reade the same twice or thrice, thynking that I saw thée write, and heard thée speake, & so welcome was the same

to me,

to me, that at that very instãt, I caused it to be red at my table, yea and made the same to be fixed at my beds head, that thy well meaning vnto me might be generally knowen, how much I am bounde vnto thée. I estéemed for a good presage ỳ cõgratulation that the *Consul* Rutulus did vnto me from thée, touching my cõming to the Empire. I hope through thy merites, that I shall be a good Emperoure. Thou sayest in thy letter, that thou canste by no meanes beléeue, that I haue giuen bribes, and vsed other endeuors to redeme mine Empire, as other haue done. For answere therevnto I say, that as a man I haue desired it, but neuer by solicitation or other meanes attempted it. For I neuer saw within the Citie of Rome, any man to bribe for honour, but for the same; some notable infamie chaunced vnto hym, as for example we may learne of the good olde man Menander, my friende & thy neighbour, who to bée *Consul*, procured the same by vnlawful meanes, and therfore in the end was banished and died desperately. The great Caius Cæsar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius, Nero, Galba, Otho, Vitellius, and Domitian, some for vsurpyng the Empire, some for tiranie, some for gettyng the same by bribes; and some by other meanes procurying the same, lost (by the sufferance of the righteous Gods (not onely their honor and goodes, but also died miserably. When thou dyddest reade in thy schole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times heardest thée say, that we ought to trauell to deserue honour, rather than procure the same, estéeming it vnlawful to get honour by meanes vnlawful. He that is without credite, ought to assay to procure credite. He that is without honour, ought to séeke honour. But the vertuous man hath no nede of noblenesse, ne he himself, ne yet any other person can bereue hym of due honour. Thou knowest wel Plutarch, that the yere past, the office

of *Consul* was gyuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorship to Fabritius, who were so vertuous and so little ambitious, as not desirous to receyue suche charges, absented themselues, although that in Rome, they might haue ben in great estimation, by reason of those offices, and yet nerthelesse without them they be presently esteemed, loued, and honoured. And therefore I conceiue greater delight in Quintius Lincinatus, in Scipio Affricanus, & god Marcus Portius, for contemning of their offices, than for the victories which they atchieued. For victories many times consist in Fortune, and the not caryng for honorable charge in onely wisedome. Semblably, thou thy selfe art witnesse, that when myne vncle Coccius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more visited, and better serued, than when he was at Rome. Whereby may be inferred, that a vertuous man maye bée exiled or banished, but honour he shall neuer want. The Emperour Domitian (if you doe remember) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and thé many faire promisses, to entertain thée in his house, & to send me into Almayne, which thou couldest not abide, and much lesse consent, deming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than of Domitian to be fauored. I sweare by the Gods immortall, that when the god olde man Nerua sent me the ensigne of the Empire, I was vtterly ignorant therof, and voide of hope to attéine the same: For I was aduertised from the *Senate*, that Fuluius sued for it, and that Pamphilus went about to bate it. I knew also, that the *Consul* Dolobella, attempted to enioy the same. Then sith the gods did permit, that I should be Emperour, and shoulde gouerne the Empire, and that myne vncle Nerua did commaunde the same, the *Senate* approued it, and the Common wealth would haue it to bée so. And sith it was the generall consent of all men, and specially your aduise, I

haue

haue greate hope that the Gods will be fauourable vnto me, and Fortune no enimie at all, assuring you, that like hope which you doe saye you haue by teaching me, and seing me to bee Emperour, the lyke I haue to thynke that I was youre Scholler. And sith that you will not call me from henceforth any other but Souereigne Lorde, I wyll terme you by none other name, than Louyng father. And albeit that I haue bene visited and counselled by many men, since my commyng to the Empire, and by thē aboue the reste, whome aboue all other I will beleue, considering that the intent of those which counsell me, is to drawe my minde to theirs, where your letters purporte nothyng else but mine aduauntage. I doe remember amongs other wordes, which once you spake to Maxentius the Secretarie of Domitian, thus saying: that they which doe presume to gyue counsell vnto Princes, ought to bee free from all passions and affections: for in counsell, where the will is more enclined, the mynde is more prompte and readie. That a Prince in all thynge doe his will, I praise not. That he take aduise and counsell of euery man, I lesse allowe. That which he ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by counsell, fayleing for all that to what counsell hee applieth his mynde. For counsell ought not to be taken of hym whome I do well loue, but of hym of whome I am beloued. All thys I haue written (my Maister Plutarch) to aduertise you, that from henceforth I desire nothyng else at your handes, but to bee holpen with your aduise in mine affaires, and to tell me of my committed faultes. For yf Rome doe thinke me to bee a defender of their common wealth, I make accompte of you to bee an ouerseer of my lyfe. And bycause that I seeme to you sometymes not to bee very thankefull, thorough the defaulte of that whereof you haue sayd your minde, I pray you maister not to bee displea-

displeased therwith. For in such case no griefe can rise in me, for telling me my fault, but rather for shame ỳ I have committed the same. The bringing of me vp in the house the hearing of thy lectures, the following of thy doctrine, and liuing vnder thy discipline, haue bene truly the principall causes that I am cõmen to this Empire. This I say (Maister) thinking that it were an vnnaturall part, not to assist me to beare that thing, which thou hast holpen me to gaine and winne. And although that Vespasian was by nature good, yet greate profite redounded to him by entertayning of the Philosopher Appolonius. For truely it is to be counted a greater felicitie, when a Prince hath chaunced vpon a good and faithfull man, to be neare about him, than if he had atchieued a great Realme and Kingdome: Thou sayest (Plutarch) that thou shalt receiue great contentation, from henceforth, if I be such a one as I was before, vpon condition that I waxe no worse. I beleue that which thou dost say, because the Emperour Nero, was the first fiue yeares of his Empire good, and the other nine yeares ensuyng euyll, in such wise as he grew to be greatest in wickednesse, than in dignitie. Notwithstanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero, so may happen vnto Traiane, I beseeche the immortall Gods rather to depriue me of life, than to suffer me to raigne in Rome. For tirants be they, which procure dignities and promotions, to vse them for delight and filthy lust: and good Rulers be they which seke them for profite of cõmon wealth. And therfore to them (which before they came to those degrees) were good, and afterwardes waxed wicked, greater pitie than enuie ought to be attributed, considering specially, that Fortune doth not adaunce them to honour, but to shame and villanie. Beleue me then (good maister) that sith hitherto I haue bin reputed for true, I will alway by Gods assistance to

aspire

aſpire the better, rather than to the worſſe. And ſo the Gods preſerue thee.

The Letter of the Emperoure Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein is conteined, that Honour ought rather to be deſerued than procured.

CAeceius Traiane Emperoure of the Romanes, euer Auguſtus, to our ſacred *Senate* health and conſolation in the Gods of comfort. We being aduertiſed here at Agrippina, of the death of the Emperour Nerua, your ſoueraigne Lorde and my predeceſſour, and knowing it to be true, that you haue wept and bewailed the loſſe of a Prince ſo noble & righteous, as we likewiſe haue felt like ſorow, for the death of ſo notable a father. When children loſe a good father, & ſubiects a good prince, eyther they muſte dye wyth them, or elſe by teares they thinke to raiſe them vp againe, for ſo much as good princes be in a common wealth ſo rare, as the Phœnix in Arabia. My lord Nerua brought me out of Spayne to Rome, nouriſhed me vp in youth, cauſed me to be trained in letters & adopted me for his ſonne in mine old age. Which graces and benefits truly I can not forget, knowing that the ingrate man prouoketh the Gods to anger, and men to hatred. The death of a vertuous mã ought to be lamẽted of all men, but the death of a good Prince ought to be extremely mourned. For if a cõmon perſon die, there is but one dead, but if a good Prince die, together with him dieth a whole realme. I ſpeake this (O ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in mine vncle Nerua: For if the Gods were diſpoſed to ſell vs the liues of good Princes alreadie departed, it were but a ſmall ranſome to re-

deme them with teares. For what golde or ſiluer may be ſufficient to buie the life of a vertuous mã? Truly there woulde be a great maſſe of money giuen by the Aſyriãs to redeme the life of Belus, by the Perſiãs for Artaxerxes, by the Troians for Hector, by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians for Lycurgus, by the Romanes for Auguſtus, and by the Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knowe the Gods haue made all thyngs mortall, hauing reſerued onely themſelues to bée immortall. Howe eminent and paſſing the vertue of the good is, and what priuiledge the godly haue, it may eaſily bée knowne: for ſo much, as honour is caried euen to the very graues of the deade, but ſo it is not to the greate Palaces of the wicked. The good and vertuous man, without ſighte or knowledge we loue, ſerue, and aunſwer for him: where the wicked wée can not beleue that which he ſayeth, and leſſe accepte in good parte the thyng whiche hée doeth for vs. Touchyng the election of the Empire, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. Wherefore I praye the immortall Goddes that it may bée lyked of their godheades. For to ſmall purpoſe auayleth the election of Princes, if the Gods doe not confirme it: and therefore a man may knowe hym whiche is choſen by the Gods, or elected by men, for the one ſhall decline and fall, the other vpholden and preſerued. The choyſe of man ſodaynely exalted doeth decline and fall, but that whiche is planted by the Gods, although it be toſſed to and fro with ſeuerall windes, & receiueth great aduerſitie, and boweth a little, yet he ſhal be neuer ſene to fal. We know right wel (moſt honorable Fathers) that I neuer demaunded the Empire of Nerua my Soueraigne Lorde, although hée brought me vp and was his nephew, hauing heard and well remembryng of my Maiſter Plutarch, that honour

ought

ought rather to be deserued than procured. Notwithstanding I will not denie that ioyfull I was when my lorde Nerua sent me the ensigne of that greate and high dignitie: but I will also confesse that hauing begon to tast the trauailes and cares which that Imperiall state bringeth, I did repent more than a thousande times for taking vpon me the same. For Empire and gouernemẽt is of such qualitie, that although the honour bee great, yet the gouernour sustaineth very great paine and miserable trauaile. O how greatly doeth he bynde himselfe, which by gouernement byndeth others? for if it be iuste, they call it cruell, if it bee pitifull, it is contemned, if liberall, it is esteemed prodigall, if he keepe or gather togyther, hee is counted couetous, if he be peaceable and quiet, they deme him for a coward, if he be corragious, he is reputed a quareller, if graue, they will say he is proude, if he be easie to be spoken to, he is thought to be light or simple, if solitarie, they will esteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be ioyfull, they will terme hym dissolute: In suche wise as they will be contented, and vse more better termes to all others what soeuer, than towards him, which gouerneth a cõmon wealth. For to suche a one they recken the morsels whiche he eateth, they measure his pases, they note his wordes, they take heede to his companies, and iudge of his workes (many tymes wrongfully,) they examine and murmure of his passymes, and attempte to coniecture of his thoughtes. Consyder then the trauailes whiche bee in Gouernement, and the Enuie whyche many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may saye, that there is no state more sure than to be in that which is furthest off from Enuie. And if a man can not but with greate paine gouerne the wife which he hath chosen, the children which he hath begotten, nor the seruant which he hath brought vp, hauing them altogether

in one house: how is it possible that he can still conserue in peace a whole common wealth? I pray you tell me, in whom shall a poore Prince repose his trust? sith that many times he is most slaundered by them whome he fauoureth best? Princes and great lords can not eate without a garde, can not slepe without a watche, can not speake without espiall, nor walke without some safetie, in suche wise as they beyng lordes of all, they bee as it were, prisoners of their owne people. And if we will beholde somwhat nearely, and consider the seruitude of Princes, and the libertie of subiects, we shall finde that he whiche hath most to doe in the realme, or beareth greatest swinge, is most subiect to thraldom: Insomuch as if Princes haue authoritie to giue libertie, they haue no meanes to be free them selues. The Gods haue created vs so free, and euery man desireth to haue his libertie so much at will, that a man be he neuer so familiar a friend, or so neare of kin, we had rather haue him to be our subiect, than our lorde and maister. One man alone commaundeth all, and yet it semeth to him but little. Ought we then to maruell, if many be wearie to obey one? We loue and esteeme our selues so much, as I neuer sawe any which of his owne good will woulde be subiect, ne yet against his will was made a lorde, which we see to bee very true. For the quarells and warres that bee amongs men, are not so much for obedience sake, as to rule and cõmaunde. I say moreouer, that in drinking, eating, clothing, speaking, and louing, al men be of diuers qualities: but to procure libertie, they bee all conformable. I haue spoken all this (O Fathers conscript) vpon occasion of mine owne Empire, which I haue taken with good will, albeit afterwardes I was sorie for that great charge. For the waltering seas and troublesome gouernement be two things agreable to beholde, and daungerous to proue. Notwithstanding

sith it

ſith it hath pleaſed the Gods that I ſhould be your lord, and you my ſubiectes, I beſeech you heartily to vſe your obedience, as to your ſoueraigne lord, in that which ſhall be right and méete, and to aduertiſe me like a father, in things that ſhall ſéeme vnreaſonable. The *Conſul* Rutulus hath tolde me much in your behalfe, and hath ſaluted me for the people, he himſelfe ſhal bring anſwere and ſalute you all in my name. The Allobrogians and the inhabitants about the riuer of Rhene, bée at controuerſie for the limittes of their countrey, and haue prayed me to be their arbitratour, which will ſtay me a little there. I require that this Letter may bée redde within the *Senate* houſe, and manifeſted to the whole people. The Goddes preſerue you.

An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romane Senate, conteining how gouerners of cõmon wealthes ought to be friendes rather to thoſe whiche vſe traficke, than to them that gather and heape together.

CEccius Traiane Emperor of the Romanes to our holy *Senate* health and conſolation in the Gods of comforte. The affaires be ſo manifold, and buſineſſe ſo greue and weightie, which we haue to doe with diuers countreyes, that ſcarce wée haue time to eate, and ſpace to take any reſt, the Roman Princes hauing ſtill by auncient cuſtome both lacke of tyme, and commonly wante of money. And bicauſe that they which haue charge of common wealths, to the vttermoſt of their power ought to be frends to traficke of marchandiſe, and enimies of heaping treaſure togethers, Prin-

ces haue so many people to please, and so greate numbre of crauers, that if they kepe any thing for them, the same shall rather seeme a spice of theft than of prouidence. To take away an other mans goodes, truly is a wicked part: but if it bee permitted to accumulate treasure and money together, better it were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people. For the one is consecrated to the immortall Gods, and the other to the poore Commons. I speake this (right honorable Fathers) to put you in remembraunce, and also to aduise you, that you take good heede to the goodes of the Common welthe, howe they be dispended, howe gathered together, howe they be kept and how they be employed. For ye ought to vnderstande, that the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in truste, not to the ende ye shoulde enioy them, but rather by good gouernement to vse them. We do heare that the walles be readie to fall, the towers in decay, and the temples be come to great ruine: wherof we be not a little offended, and you ought also to be ashamed, for so much as the damages and detrimentes of the Cõmon welth, we ought either to remedie, or else to lament. Ye haue written vnto me to know my pleasure, whether the *Censors*, *Pretors*, & *Ediles*, shold be yerely chosen, and not perpetuall, as hitherto they haue bene: and specially you say, that the state of the *Dictator* (which is the greatest and highest dignitie in Rome) is onely but fiue moneths. To that I answere, that we are well contented with that aduise: For not without cause and iust reason our predecessours did abolishe the firste Kings of Rome, and ordeined, that the *Consuls* shoulde yerely bee chosen in the common wealth. Which was done, in consideration that he whiche had perpetuall gouernement, many times became insolent and proude. And therefore that the charges and offices of the *Senate*, should be yere-

ly, to

ly, to auoide daunger, which if they should be perpetuall there might ensue great hurte and damage to the Common wealth. For if the Officers being yerely chosen, be good, they may be continued. And if they bee euill, they may be chaunged. And truely the officer, which knoweth that vpon the ende of euery yeare he must be chaunged, and examined of his charge, he wil take good hede to that which he speaketh, and first of all will wel consider what he taketh in hande. The good Marcus Portius was the fyrst that caused the Officers of the Romane Common wealthe to bee thus visited and corrected. And bycause that these Almayne warres doe still increase, by reason that the Kyng Deceball wyll not as yet bee brought to obedience of the Romanes, but rather goth about to occupie and winne the Kingdomes of Dacia and Polonia, I shall be forced through the businesse of the warrs, so long continuing) to deuise and consult here vpon the affaires cõcerning the gouernemẽt of the cõmon welth of Rome. For a lesse euill it is for a Prince to be negligent in matters of warre, than in the gouernement of the common wealth. A prince also ought to thinke, that he is chosen, not to make warres, but to gouerne, not to kill the enimies, but to rote out vices, not that he go in person to inuade or defend his foes, but that he reside and be in the cõmon welth, & not to take away other mens goodes, but to do iustice to euery mã, for somuch as the prince in ỹ warres can fight but for one, and in the publike wealth he cõmitteth faults against a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of Captains men be aduaũced to be Emperors, but I thinke it not good, that Emperours do descend to be Captains, considering that the realme shal neuer be in quiet, whẽ the Prince is to great a warriour. This haue I spokẽ (Fathers cõscript) to the intẽt ye may beleue, that I for my part, if these warres of Almayne

were

were to begin, I beyng at Rome, it were impossible that I should be brought vnto the same, for that my principall intent, is to be estemed rather a good gouerner of a common wealth, than a forward Captain in the field. Now then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the Temples, and honor of the Gods, bicause Kings neuer liue in suretie, if the Gods be not honored, and the Temples serued. The last words which my good Lorde Nerua wrote vnto mée were these: *Honour the Temples, feare the Gods, maynteine Iustice in thy Common wealth, and defende the poore, in so doing thou shalte not bee forgotten of thy friende, nor vanquished by thy ennimies.* I do greatly recommende vnto you the vertues of Amitie and Fraternitie, for that you know that in great cõmon wealthes, greater hurt and damage do ciuile and neighborly warres bring vnto the same, than those attempted by the enimies. If parents against parentes, and neighbours againste neighbours had not begon their mutuall hatred & contencion, neuer had Demetrius ouerthrowen the Rhodes, neuer had Alexander conquered Thyr, Marcellus Syracusa, Scipio Numantia. I recõmende vnto you also the powre people, loue the Orphanes and fatherlesse children, support and help the widowes, beware of quarels and debates amongs you, and the causes of the helpless sée that ye maintaine and defende: bicause the gods did neuer wreake more cruell vengeance vpon any, than vpon those which did ill intreat and vse the powre and nedie. And many times I haue heard my lorde Nerua say: that the Gods neuer shewed them selues so rigorous, as against a mercilesse and vnpitiful people. Semblably, we pray you to be modest of wordes, pacient to suffer, & ware in your forme of life. For a great fault it is, and no lesse shame to a gouerner, that he praise the people of his cõmon wealthe, and gyue them occasion to speake euill of

hym.

him. And therfore they which haue charge of the cõmon welth, ought rather to repose trust in their workes, than in their words, for so much as the citizens or cõmon people, do rather fire their iudgement vpon that which they see, than on that which they heare. I woulde wishe that (touchyng the affaires appertinent to the *Senate*) they might not know in you any sparke of ambicion, malice, deceipt, or envie: to the intent that the iust men might not so much complaine of the commaunding of the common wealth, as vpon the entertainement and profite of the same. The Empire of the Grekes, and that of the Romanes, were euer contrary, as well in armes and lawes, as in opinions: The Grekes putting their felicitie in eloquence, and we in well doing. I speake this (right honorable Fathers) to counsell and exhorte ye, that when ye bee assembled in *Senate*, ye doe not consume tyme in disputing & holdyng opinions for the verification of anything. For if you will iudge without partialitie and affection, without greate disputation, ye may come to reason. I do remember that being at a lesson of Appolonius Thyaneus, I heard hym say that it was not so expedient that Senators and Emperors shold be skilful & wise, as if they suffred themselues to be gouerned by those that were of greate skill and knowledge: and verely he sayde truthe. For by that meanes he prohibited & forbad them, not to arrest and stande vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times suspicious. Likewise we recommende vnto you the *Censores*, who haue charge of iudgement, and the *Tribunes*, whose office is to attende the affaires of Common wealth, that they bee wise and learned in the lawes, expert in the Customes, prouident in Iudgementes, and ware in their trade of life. For I say vnto you, that a wise man is more auaileable in gouernement of a common welth, than a man of ouermuch

skill and experience. The forme then which ye shall obserue in matters of iudgement, shal be thus: That in ciuile processe you kepe the law, and in criminall causes to moderate the same, bicause hainous, cruel, and rigorous lawes be rather made to amase and feare, than to be obserued and kept. When you giue any sentence, ye ought to consider the age of the offendãt, when, how, wherfore, with whome, in whose presence, in what time, and how long ago, for somuch as euery of these things may either excuse or condemne: whiche you ought to beare and bie towards them in like sort as the Gods towards vs, who giue vs better helpe and succour, and correct vs lesse than we deserue. That cõsideration the iudges ought to haue, bicause the offenders doe rather trespasse the Gods than men. If then they be forgiuen of the Gods for offences which they commit, reason it is that wée pardon those faultes done vnto others, & not vnto our selues. In like maner we commaunde you, ỳ if your enimies do you any anoiance or iniurie, not incontinẽtly to take reuenge, but rather to dissemble ỳ same, bicause many wrõgs be done in the world, which were better to be dissẽbled than reuenged. Wherin ye shall haue like regard, touching ỳ offices the *Senate* and Common wealth, that they be not giuen to ambicious or couetous persons. For there is no beast in the world so pestiferous and venemous, as that kinde of man is to the Common wealth, the ambicious I say in cõmaunding, and the couetous in gathering together. Other things we let passe for this time, vntil we haue intelligence, how these our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter shall be red in the chiefest place within the *Senate*, and afterwards pronoũced to the people, that they may both know what ye commaunde, and see also what ye doe. The Gods kepe you, whome we pray to preserue our mother the Citie of Rome, and to sende vs good successe in these our warres.

Ano-

A notable Letter ſent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, wherin is declared how ſometimes the region of Spayne did furniſh Rome with golde from their mines, and nowe doe adorne and garniſh the ſame with Emperours to gouerne their Common wealth.

THe ſacred Roman *Senate*, to thée the great Cocceius Traiane newe Emperor Auguſtus, health in thy Gods and ours, graces euerlaſtyng wée render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, whiche we deſire and pray may be perpetual. We ſignified vnto thy maieſtie the death of Nerua Cocceius, our ſouereigne Lorde, and thy predeceſſor, a man of ſincere life, a friende of his common wealth, and a zealous louer of Juſtice, wherin alſo we aduertiſed, that like as Rome did weepe for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, ſo much the more bitterly doth ſhe bewaile the death of thine vncle Nerua, whoſe councell (although hée was very olde and diſeaſed) which he gaue vs lying on his bedde, we loued better, and imbraced with greater comforte, then all the enterpriſes and dedes done by his predeceſſors, when they were in health and luſtie. And beſides the ordinarie mourning vſed to be done in Rome for princes, we haue cauſed all recreation and paſſetime to ceaſe, ſo well in the common wealth, as with euery of vs particularly. We haue ſhut vp the Temples and made the Senat to ceaſe to doe the Gods to vnderſtand, how diſpleaſantly we accept the death of good men. The good old gentleman Nerua died in his houſe, and was buried in the fielde of Mars;

he died in debt, & we haue paid his debts. He died calling vpon the Gods, & we haue canonized him amongs their numbre, and that which is moſt to be noted, he died commending vnto vs the Common wealth, and the Cõmon wealth recommending it ſelfe vnto him. And a little before his latter gaſpe, the principal of the holy *Senate*, and many other of the people, ſtanding about his bedſide, he ſayde: O ye Fathers, I committe vnto you the cõmon wealth and my ſelfe alſo vnto the Gods: vnto whome I render infinite thankes, becauſe they haue taken from me my children, to bée mine heires, and haue lefte mée Traiane to ſucceéde. You do remembre (moſt dread ſouereigne Lorde) that the good Emperour Nerua had other ſucceſſours than your maieſtie, of nerer alliance, of greater frendſhip, more bound by ſeruice, and of greter proſe in warfare: Notwithſtandyng amongs other noble perſonages, vpon you alone he caſt his eyes, repoſing in you ſuch opinion and confidence, as to reuiue the prowes and valiant faicts of the good Emperor Auguſtus, by ſuppreſſing in oblition the inſolent faicts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto the Crowne, he found the treaſure pilled, the *Senate* in diſſention, the people in commotion, iuſtice not obſerued, and the Common welth ouerthrowen: which you likewiſe preſently ſhall finde, although otherwiſe quiet and wholly reformed. Wherfore we ſhall bée right glad, that you conſerue the common wealth in the ſtate wherin your vncle Nerua left it, conſidering ſpecially that newe Princes vnder colour to introduce new cuſtomes, do ouerthrow their common wealths. Fourtene Princes your predeceſſours in the empire wer naturally borne in Rome, and you are the firſt ſtraunger Prince. Wherefore we pray the immortall Gods, (ſith that the ſtocke of our auncient Cæſars is dead) to ſende thée good Fortune. Out of the countrey of Spayne was wont to

come

coune to this our Romane Citie great abundance of gold siluer, steele, leade, tinne, from their mines: but now in place therof, she giueth vs Emperours to gouerne oure common wealths. Sith then that thou cõmest of so good a countrey as Spayne is, from so good a Prouince as is Vandolosia, and from so excellent a citie as Cales is, of so noble and fortunate a linage as is Cocceius, and aduaunced to so noble an Empire, It is to be supposed that thou wilt proue good, and not euill. For the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men. Moreouer (most excellent Prince) sith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to do: reason it is that we write to you againe what you ought to forsee. And sith you haue told vs, and taught vs to obey you, mete it is that we may know what your pleasure is to commaunde. For that (it maye come to passe) that as you haue ben brought vp in Spayn, and of long time ben absent from Rome, through following the warres, that not knowing the lawes whereunto we are sworne, and the customes which we haue in Rome, Ye commaunde some thing that may redound to our damage and to your dishonor. And therefore we accompte it reason that your Maiestie bee aduertised herof, and the same prevented, for so much as Princes oftentimes be negligent of many things, not for that they will not forsee the same, but rather for want of one that dare tel them what they ought to doe. And therfore we humbly beseech your most excellent maiestie, to extende and shewe forth your wisedome and prudence, for that the Romanes heartes ben drawen and made pliant rather by fauourable diligence, than by prouoked force. Touching the vertue, Iustice, may it please you, to remembre the same. For your olde vncle Nerua was wont to say, that a prince for all his magnanimitie, valiance, and felicitie, if he do not vse and main-

taine iuſtice, ought not for any other merite to be praiſed and commended. Semblably we make our humble petition, that thoſe commaundements which you ſhal ſend and require to be put in execution, be throughly eſtabliſhed and obſerued. For the godneſſe of the law doth not conſiſt in the ordinance, but in the fulfillyng and accompliſhement of the ſame. We will not alſo omitte to ſay vnto you (moſt famous Prince) that you muſt haue patience to ſuffer the importunate, & to diſſemble with the offenders. For that it is the deede of a Prince to chaſtiſe and puniſhe the wrongs of the common wealth, and to pardon the diſobedience done vnto hym. You ſende vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntill you haue finiſhed the Germaine warres. Whiche ſeemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble emperor, for ſo much as good Princes ſuch as you be, ought not to deſire & chooſe places of delite & recreatiõ, but rather aſpire to ſeke & win renome & fame. You cõmaunde vs alſo to haue regard to the veneration of the Temples, and to the ſeruice of the Gods. Which requeſt is iuſt, but very iuſt it were and mete that your ſelf ſhold do the ſame. For our ſeruice would litle prevaile, if you ſhould diſpleaſe them. You will vs alſo one to loue an other, which is the counſel of a holy and peaceable prince: but know ye, that we ſhal not be able to do the ſame, if you will not loue and intreate vs all in equall and indifferent ſorte. For princes cheriſhyng and louing ſome aboue the reſt, do raiſe ſlanders and grudges amongs the people. You likewiſe recommend vnto vs, the poore and the widowes: wherin we thinke that you ought to commaunde the Collecters of your tributes, that they do not grieue the ſame, when they gather your rightes & reuenues. For greater ſinne it is to ſpoile & pill the nedie ſort, than meritorious to ſuccour and relieue them. Likewiſe

you

you do persuade vs to be quiet & circumspect in our affai-
res, which is a persuasion worthie of a prince, not onely y
is iust, but also of a pitiful father. In semblable maner you
require vs not to be opinionatiues wilfull in the *Senate*,
ye affectionate to self wil, which shal be done accordingly
as you cõmaunde, & accept it as you say. But therwithall
you ought to think that in graue & weighty matters, the
more depely things be debated, y better they shal be pro-
uided & decreed. You bid vs also to beware, y the (*Censores*
be honest of life and rightful in doing iustice: To that we
aunswere that in the same we will haue good respect, but
it is expedient that you take hede to them whome you
shall name and appoint to those affaires. For if you doe
chose them such as they ought to be, no cause shal rise to
reprehende them. Item where you say that we ought to
take hede, that our children committe no offences to the
people, wherein the aduise of the *Senate* is, that you doe
draw them away from vs, and call them to the Almayne
warres, for as you do know (right soueraine prince) that
when the publike welth is exempt, and voide of enimies,
then the same wil begin to be replenished with youthful
vices. Notwithstanding when the warres bee farre off
from Rome, then the same to them is profitable, because
there is nothing which better cleanseth common wealths
from wicked people, than warres in countrey straunge.
Cõcerning other things which you write vnto vs, nede-
full it is not nowe to recite them, but onely to see them
kepte. For truely they seeme rather to bee the lawes of
God Apollo him selfe, than Counsels of a mortall man.
The Gods preserue your Maiestie, and graunt you good
successe in those your warres.

These Letters and Epistles, although besides the
scope and Nature of a Nouell, yet so worthie to be read
and practised, as no Hystorie or other Morall Precepte
more:

more: expecting the great care of a maister towardes his scholer, that he should proue no worse being an Emperor, than he shewed hym selfe diligent when he was a Scholer: fearing that if he shoulde gouerne contrary to his expectation, & degenerate from the good institution, whiche in his yong yeares he imbraced, that the blame and slaunder shoulde rest in hymselfe, that was his tutour and bringer vp. O carefull Plutarch, O most happy maister, as well for thine owne industrie, as for the good successe of suche a scholer. And O most fortunate and vertuous Emperor, that could so well digest the diuine persuasions of such a maister, and whose minde with the blast of promotion was not so swolne & puffed, but that it vouchsafed to cal him Father and Maister, stil craming for an instigation of reprofe, when he slid or slipped from the pathe of reason and duetie. And O happie Counsel & Senate, that could so well like and practise the documentes of such an Emperour.

Of this

Of three Amorous Dames.

¶ A notable Hiſtorie of three Amorous Gentlewomen, called LAMIA, FLORA, and LAIS: conteinyng the ſuites of noble Princes and other great perſonages made vnto them, with their anſweres to diuers demaundes: and the maner of their death and funerals.

The. xiiij. Nouel.

LEauyng nowe our morall diſcourſe of a carefull Pailler, a prouident Scholer, of a vertuous Emperor, of a ſacred *Senate*, and vniforme magiſterie, returne wee to the ſetting forth and deſcription of. iij. arrant honeſt women, which for lewdneſſe wer famous, and for wicked lyfe worthie to bee noted with a black coale, or rather their memorie raked vp in the duſt and cinders of the corpſes vnpure. But as all hiſtories be full of leſſons of vertue and vice, as bokes ſacred & prophane deſcribe the liues of good and bad for exrample ſake to yelde meanes to ỹ poſteritie, to enſue the one & eſchue the other, ſo haue I thought to intermingle amongeſt theſe Nouels the ſeuerall ſortes of either, that eche fere and kinde may pike out like the Bee of eche floure, honie, to ſtore & furniſhe with delightes their well diſpoſed minde. I purpoſe then to vnlace the diſſolute liues of

thrée amorouſe dames, that with their graces allured the greateſt princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and ſometimes procured the wiſeſt and beſt learned to craue their acquaintance, as by the ſequele hereof ſhall well appere. Theſe thrée famous women, (as writers doe witneſſe) were furniſhed with many goodly graces and giftes of nature, that is to ſay, great beautie of face, goodly proportion of bodie, large and high foreheads, their breſtes placed in comly order, ſmall waſted, fayre hands, of paſſing cunning to play vpon Inſtruments, a heauenlie voice to faine and ſing: briefliе, their qualities and beautie were more famous, than euer any ỹ were borne within the coũtries of Aſia and Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prince which did forſake them, nor yet they made requeſt of any thing which was denied them. They neuer mocked or flouted man (a thing rare in women of their cõdition) ne yet were mocked of any: But their ſpeciall properties were to allure men to loue thẽ: Lamia with hir pleaſant loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Lais with the grace & ſweteneſſe of hir ſinging voyce. A ſtraunge thing that he wich once was ſurpriſed with the loue of any of thoſe thrée, eyther too late or neuer was deliuered of the ſame. They were the richeſt Courtizans that euer lined in the worlde, ſo long as their life did laſt, & after their deceaſe, great monumentes were erected for their remembraunce, in place where they dyed. The moſt auncient of theſe thrée amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of king Antigonus, that warfared in the ſeruice of Alexander the great, a baliant gentleman, although not fauored by Fortune. This king Antigonus leſte behinde hym a ſonne and heire called Demetrius, who was leſſe baliant, but more fortunate than his father, and had bene a Prince of greate eſtimation, if in his youth he had acquired

quired frendes, and kept the same, and in his age had not bene giuen to so many vices. This king Demetrius was in lone with Lamia, and presented hir with riche giftes and rewardes, and loued hir to affectionatly, and in such sort, as in the loue of his Lamia, he semed rather a sole than a true louer: for forgetting the grauitie and authoritie of his person, he did not onelie gyue hir all such things as she demaunded, but bysides ꝑ he vsed no more the companie of his wife Euxonia. On a time king Demetrius asking Lamia, what was the thing wherewith a woman was soneſt wonne. Ther is nothing (answered she,) which soner ouercommeth a woman, than whē she seeth a man to loue hir with all his hart, & to sustaine for hir sake great paines and passions with long continuance and entier affection: for to loue men by collusion, causeth afterwards that they be mocked againe. Demetrius asked hir further, tell me Lamia, why doe diuerse women rather hate than loue men: wherunto shē answered: The greateſt cause why a woman doth hate a man, is, when the man dothe vaunte & boaste himselfe of that which he doth not, and performeth not the thing which he promiseth. Demetrius demaunded of hir. Tell me Lamia what is the thing wherwith men doe content you beſt: when we see him (sayde she) to be discrete in wordes, & secrete in his dedes. Demetrius asked hir further. Tell me Lamia how chanceth it ꝑ men be ill matched: bicause answered Lamia, It is impossible that they be well maried, when the wife is in nede, & the husband vndiscrete. Demetrius asked hir what was ꝑ cause, that amity betwene two louers, was broke? Ther is nothing answered she, that soner maketh colde the lone betwene two louers, than when one of them doth straye in lone, and the woman loner to importunate to crane. He demaunded further. Tell me Lamia, what is the thing that

moſt tormenteth the louing man? Not to attaine the thing which he deſireth anſwered ſhe, and thinketh to loſe the thing which he hopeth to enioy. Demetrius yet once againe aſked hir this queſtion. What is that Lamia which moſt troubleth a womans hart? Ther is nothing (anſwered Lamia) wherwith a woman is more grieued, and maketh hir more ſad, than to be called yll fauored, or that ſhe hath no good grace, or to vnderſtand that ſhe is diſſolute of life. This ladie Lamia, was of iudgement delicate and ſubtill, although yll employed in hir: & therby made all the world in loue with hir: and drew all men to hir through hir faire ſpæch. Now before ſhe loſt the heart of king Demetrius, ſhe haunted of long time the Vniuerſities of Athenes, where ſhe gained great ſtore of money, and brought to deſtruction many yong men. Plutarch in the life of Demetrius ſaith, ỹ the Athenians hauing preſented vnto him. xij. C. talents of money for a ſubſidie to pay his men of warre, he gaue all that ſume to his woman Lamia. By meanes wherof, the Athenians grudged, & were offended with the king, not for the loſſe of their gift, but for ỹ it was ſo euill employed. When the king Demetrius would aſſure any thing by oth, he ſwore not by his Gods, ne yet by his predeceſſors, but in this ſort: As I may be ſtill in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir life & mine may ende together, ſo true is this which I ſay & doe, in this & this ſort. One yere & two monethes before the death of king Demetrius, his friend Lamia died, ſo ſo forwed ſo much hir death, as for the abſence & death of hir, he cauſed the Philoſophers of Athenes to entre diſputation: Whether the teares and ſorow, which he ſhed and and toke, were more to be eſteemed, than the rites which he ſpent in hir obſequies & funerall pompes. This amorous gentlewoman Lamia was borne in Argos, a citie of Peloponneſus, beſides

Athenes,

nes, of base parentage, who in hir first yeres haunted the countrie of Asia maior, of very wild & dissolute life, & in ỳ end came into Phœnicia. And when ỳ king Demetrius, had caused hir to be buried before a wyndow ioyning to his house, his chiefest frendes asked him, wherfore he had entombed hir in that place. His answere was this: I loued hir so well, & she likewise me so hartily, as I knowe not which way to satisfie ỳ loue wich she bare me, & the duetie I haue to loue hir againe, if not to put hir in such place, as myne eyes may wepe euery daye, & mine hart still lament. Truely this loue was straunge, which so mightie a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto such a notable Curtizan, a woman vtterly voyde of grace, barren of good workes, & without any zeale or sparke of vertue as it should appere. But sith we reade & know ỳ none are more giuen or bent to vnreasonable loue, than mightie princes, what shuld it be demed straunge and maruellous, if Demetrius amongs the rest doe come in place for the loue of that most famous woman, yt fame may stretch to eyther sorts both good and euill? But let vs come to ỳ second sort, of this infamous gentle woman called Lais. She was of the Ile of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Græcia, & was the daughter of ỳ great Sacrificer of Appollo his tẽple at Delphos, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophecied the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lais was in triumph in the time of the renowmed king Pirrhus, a prince very ambitious to acquire honor, but not very happie to kepe the same, who being yong of sixtene or sowentene yeres, came into Italie to make warres against the Romains. He was the first (as some say) that aranged a campe in order, and made the Phalanx, the maine square and battell. For before hys time, when they came to entre battell, they assailed con-

fusedly, and out of array gaue the onset. This amorous Lais, continued long time in the campe of King Pyrrhus, and went wyth hym into Italie, and wyth hym retorned from warre againe. Notwythstanding hir nature was such, as she would neuer bée maintened with one man alone. The same Lais was so amorous in hir conuersation, so excellent faire, and of so comely grace, that if she would haue kept hir selfe to one, and bene faithfull to one lord or gentleman, there was no prince in the world but would haue yelded himselfe and all that he had at hir commaundement. Lais from hir retourne out of Italia into Grece, repaired to the citie of Corinth to make hir abode there, where she was pursued by many kings, lordes, and princes. Aulus Gellius saith (which I haue recited in my former part of the Palace of pleasure the fiftenth Nouell) that the good Philosopher Demosthenes, went from Athenes to Corinth, in disguised apparell, to sée Lais, and to haue hir company. But before the dore was opened, she sent one to demaunde.xty.C. Sestercos of siluer: wherunto Demosthenes answered: I bye not repentance so dere. And I beleue that Demosthenes spake those wordes by following the sentence of Diogenes, who sayth, that euerie beast after such acte is heauie and sad. Some writers affirme of this amorous Lais, that thing which I neuer reade or heard of woman: which is, that she neuer shewed signe or token of loue to that man which was desirous to doe hir seruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew hir. Wherby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous woman. She neuer shewed semblance of great loue to any person, and yet she was beloued of all. If the amorous Lamia had a good spirite and mynde, Lais truely had no lesse. For in the art of loue, she exceded all other women of hir

detestable

detestable art and science, as well in knowledge of loue, as to profite in the same. Upon a day a yong man of Corinth demaunding of hir, what hée should say to a woman whome hée long tyme had loued, and made so great suite, that therby he was like to fall into dispaire. Thou shalt say (sayd Lais) vnto hir, that sith she will not graunt thy request, yet at least wise it might please hir to suffer thée to bée hir seruant, and that she would take in good parte the seruice that thou shalt doe vnto hir. Which request if she doe graunt, then hope to atteine the ende of thy attempt, bycause that we women bée of such nature, as opening the mouth to gyue some mylde and pleasant answere to the amorous person, it is to bée thought that we haue gyuen our heart vnto the firste suter. An other daye in the presence of Lais, one praised the Philosophers of Athenes, saying that they were very honest personages, and of greate skyll and knowledge. Whereunto Lais answered: I cannot tell what greate knowledge they haue, nor what science they studie, ne yet what bookes your Philosophers doe reade, bycause that I being a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I see them repaire hither, and of Philosophers become amorous persons. A Theban knight demaunded of Lais, what he might doe to enioy a ladie wyth whose loue hée should bée surprised: She answered thus. A man that is desirous of a woman, muste followe hys suite, serue hir and suffer hir, and sometimes to seeme as though hée had forgotten hir. For after that a womans heart is moued to loue, she regardeth more the forgetfulnesse and negligence vsed towardes hir, than she doth the seruice beefore time done vnto hir. An other Gentleman of Achaia asked hir what hée shoulde doe to a woman, whome hée suspected that she hadde falsified hir fayth. Lais answered, make

hir beleue that thou thinkeſt ſhe is very faythfull, and take from hir the occaſions wherby ſhe hath god cauſe to doe the ſame: For if ſhe doe perceiue that thou knoweſt it, and diſſembleſt the matter, ſhe will ſoner dye than amēd. A gētleman of Paleſtine at another time inquired of hir what he ſhould doe to a woman which he ſerued, and did not eſteme the ſeruice done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thankes for the loue which he bare hir. Lais ſayed vnto him: If thou be diſpoſed to ſerue hir no longer, let hir not perceiue that thou haſt gyuen hir ouer: For naturallie we women be tender to loue, and hard to hate. Being demaunded by one of hir neighbours what ſhe ſhould doe to make hir daughter very wyſe. She (ſaide Lais) that will haue hir daughter to be god and honeſt, ſhe muſt from hir youth lerne hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunte litle companie, and that ſhe be ſhamefaſt and moderate in hir talke. An other of hir neighbors inquiring of hir what ſhe might doe to hir daughter which began to haue delight to rome in the fielde & wander abrode. The remedy (ſaide Lais) that I finde for your daughter diſpoſed to that condition, is, not to ſuffer hir to be yole, ne yet to be braue and ſumptuous in apparell. This amorous gentlewoman Lais dyed in the citie of Corinth, of the age of.lxxij. yeares, whoſe death was of many Matrones deſired, and of a great numbre of amorous perſons lamented.

The third amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not ſo auncient, ne yet of ſo great renoume as Lamia & Lais wer, whoſe coūtrie alſo was not ſo famous, For ſhe was of Italie, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia & Lais exceded Flora in antiquitie, yet Flora ſurmounted them in lineage & generoſitie. For Flora was of noble houſe, although in life leſſe than chaſt. She was of the countrie of Nola in Campania, iſſued of certain

certein Romans, knights very famous in facts of armes and of great industrie and gouernement in the common wealth. When the father and mother of this Flora deceased, she was of the age of .xv. yeares, indued with great riches and singular beautie, and the very orphane of all hir kynne. For she had neyther brother left with whom she might soiourne, ne yet vncle to gyue hir good councell. In such wise that like as this yong maistres Flora had youth, riches, liberty and beautie, euen so ther wanted neither bauds nor Pandores to entice hir to fal, and allure hir to follie. Flora seing hir selfe beset in this wise, she determined to goe into the *Affrick* warres, where she hazarded both hir person and hir honor. This dame florished and triumphed in the tyme of the first *Punique* warres, when the Consul Mamillus was sent to *Carthage*, who dispended more money vpon the loue of Flora, than hée did vpon the chase and pursute of his enimies. This amorous ladie Flora had a writing and tytle fixed vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was thys: *King, Prince, Dictator, Consul, Censor, high Bishop, and Questor may knocke and come in.* In that writing Flora named neither Emperor nor *Cesar*, bycause those two most noble names were long tyme after created by the Romanes. This amorous Flora would neuer abandon hir person, but with gentlemen of great house, or of great dignitie and riches. For she was wont to say, that a woman of passing beauty should bée so much esteemed as she doth esteme and sette by hir selfe. Lais and Flora were of contrary maners & conditions. For Lais would first hir paide, before she yelded the vse of hir bodie: but Flora without any semblance of desire eyther of golde or siluer was contented to bée ruled by those with whom she committed the fact. Wherof vpon a day being demaunded the question, she answered: I gyue my body

to Princes and noble Barons, that they may deale with me like gentlemen. For I sweare vnto you by the Goddesse Venus, that neuer man gaue me so little, but that I had more than I loked for, and the double of that which I could demaund. This amorous lady Flora was wont many tymes to saye, that a wise woman (or more aptlie to terme hir a subtill wench) ought not to demaund reward of hir louer for the acceptable pleasure which she doth hym, but rather for the loue which she beareth him, bicause that all things in the world haue a certain price, except loue, which cannot be paide or recompenced but with loue. All the Ambassadors of the worlde, which had accesse into *Italie*, made so great report of the beauty and generositie of Flora, as they did of the Romane common wealth, bycause it semed to be a monstrous thinge to see the riches of hir house, hir trayne, hir beautie, the princes & great lordes by whom she was required, and the presents and giftes that were gyuen vnto hir. This amorous Flora had a continuall regard to the noble house whereof she came, touching the magnificense and state of hir seruice. For albeit that she was but a common woman, yet she was serued & honored like a great ladie. That day wherin she rode about the citie of Rome, she gaue occasion to be spoken of a whole month after, one inquiring of an other what great Romane lordes they were that kept hir company? Whose men they were that waighted vpon hir? And whose liuery they ware? What ladies they were that rode in hir traine? the bravery of hir apparell? hir great beautie & port, and the wordes spoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not vnremembred. When this malstres Flora mared olde, a yong and beautifull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded hir to wife, to whome she answered: I know well that thou wilt not marie, the thre

score

score yeares which Flora hath, but rather thou desirest to haue ỹ twelue hundred thousand Sestercias which she hath in hir house. Content thy selfe therfore my frende, and get thee home againe to Corinth from whence thou comest. For to such as bee of myne age, great honor is borne, & reuerence done for the riches and wealth they haue, rather than for mariage. There was neuer in the Romane Empire, the like amorous woman that Flora was, indued with so many graces and queenelike qualities, for she was of noble house, of singuler beautie, of comly personage, discrete in hir affaires, and besides all other comly qualities, very liberall. This maistres Flora spent the most part of hir youth in *Africa, Alemaine* and *Gallia Transalpina*. And albeit that she would not suffre any other but great lords to haue possession of hir body, yet she applied hir selfe to the spoile of those that were in place, and to the praie of those that came from the warrs. This amorous Flora died when she was of the age of lxxv. yeares. She left for the principall heire of all hir goods and Juells, the Romaine people, which was esteemed sufficiẽt & able to make newe the walles of *Rome*, and to raunsome and redeme the common welth of the same. And bicause that she was a Romaine, & had made the state thereof hir heire, the Romanes buylded in hir honor a sumptuous Temple, which in memorie of Flora, was called Florianum: and euery yeare in the memorie of hir, they celebrated hir feast vpon the daye of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus saieth, that the first feaste which the Emperour Galba the second celebrated within *Rome*, was ỹ feast of the amorous Flora, vpon which day it was lawfull for men & women, to doe what kinde of dishonestie they could deuise. And she was esteemed to be the greater saint which that day shewed hir selfe most dissolute and wanton. And bicause that the temple Flori-

annum, was dedicated to amorous Flora, the Romãs had an opinion, that all women which vpon the same day repaired to the Temple in whorish apparell, should haue the graces and gifts that Flora had. These were the fond opinions and maners of the auncient, which after their owne making & deuises framed Gods and Goddesses, and because she proued vnshamefast and rich, a Temple must bée erected, and sacrifices ordeined for hir whorish triumphes. But that noble men and Kings haue bene rapt and transported with the lurements of such notorious strumpets, is and hath bene common in all ages. And commonly such infamous women bée indewed with greatest giftes and graces, the rather to nosell & dandle their fansyers in the lappes of their fading pleasures. But euery of them a most speciall grace, aboue the rest. As of a king not long agoe we reade that kept three, one the holiest, another the craftiest, & the third the merriest. Two of which properties méte for honest women: although the third so incident to that kinde, as beat to a liuing bodie. Cease we then of this kinde, and let vs steppe forth to be acquainted with a ladie & a Queene the Godliest & stoutest, that is remembred in any auncient monument or history.

Zenobia

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres.

¶ The life and gestes of the most famous Queene Zenobia, with the letters of the Emperour AVRELIANVS to the sayd Queene, and hir stoute answere therunto.

The. xv. Nouel.



ENOBIA Quéene of Palmyres, was a right fameus gentlewoman, as diuerse historiographers largely do repoꝛte & write. Who although she was a gẽtle quéne, yet a chꝛistian pꝛincesse so woꝛthie of imitation, as she was foꝛ hir vertues & heroical facts of immoꝛtal pꝛaise. She by hir wisdoume & stoutnesse, subdued all the empire of the Oꝛient, & resisted the inuincible Romãs. And foꝛ that it is méete and requisite to alleage and abouche reasones by weight, & woꝛdes by measure, I will oꝛderly beginne to recite the histoꝛie of that most famous Quéne. Wherefoꝛe I say, that about the. 284. Olimpiade, no long time after the death of the vnhappie Emperour Decius, Valerian was chosen Emperour by the *Senat*, and (as Trebellius Pollio his histoꝛian doth describe) hée was a well learned pꝛince, indued with manifolde vertues, that foꝛ his speciall pꝛaise,

these wordes be recorded. *If all the world had bene assembled to chose a good Prince, they would not haue chosen any other but good* Valerian. It is also written of hym that in liberalitie hée was noble, in words true, in talke warie, in promise constant, to his frendes familiar, and to his enimies seuere, and which is more to bée esteemed, he could not forgette seruice, nor yet reuenge wrong. It came to passe that in the. xiiij. yeare of his raigne, there rose such cruell warres in *Asia*, that forced hée was to goe thither in his owne persō, to resist Sapor king of the *Persians*, a very valiant man of warre and fortunate in his enterprises, which happinesse of his not long time after the arriuall of Valerian into *Asia*, hée manifested and shewed. For being betwene them such hot & cruell warres, in a skyrmish, throughe the greate faulte of the Generall, (which had the conduct of the armie) the Emperour Valerian was taken, and brought into the puissance of King Sapor his enimie, which curssed tyrant so wickedly vsed that victorie, as hée would by no meanes put ỳ Emperour to raunsome, towardes whom hée vsed such crueltie, that so ofte and so many tymes, as hée was disposed to gette vp on horsebacke, hée vsed the bodie of olde Valerian to serue him for aduantage, setting his féete vppon the throate of that aged gentleman. In that miserable office and vnhappie captiuitie serued and dyed the good Emperour Valerian, not without the greate sorrowe of them that knewe him, and the ruefull compassion of those that saw him: which the Romans considering, and that neyther by offre of golde, siluer or other meanes, they were able to redéme Valerian, they determined to chose for Emperour his owne sonne called Galienus: which they did more for respect of the father, than for any mynde or corage they knewe to bée in the sonne. Who afterwardes shewed him selfe

to bée.

to bée farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian, being in his entreprises a coward, in his promises a lyer, in correction cruell, towardes them that serued him vnthanckfull, (and which is worse,) hée gaue himselfe to his desires, and yealded place to sensualitie. By meanes whereof, in his time the Romaine Empire, more than in any other raigne, lost most prouinces and receiued greatest shame. In factes of warre hée was a coward, and in gouernement of common wealth, a verie weake and feeble man. Galienus not caring for the state of the Empire, became so miserable, as the Gouernors of the same gaue ouer their obedience, and in the time of his raigne, there rose vp thirtie tirantes, which vsurped the same. Whose names doe followe, Cyriades, Posthumus ỹ ponger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenuus, Regilianus, Aureolus, Macrianus, Machianus the ponger, Quietus, Odenatus, Herodes, Mœnius, Ballista, Valens, Piso, Emilianus, Saturninus, Tetricis, Tetricus the ponger, Trobellianus, Heremianus, Timolaus, Celsus, Titus, Censorinus, Claudius, Aurelius, and Quintillus, of whom eightene, were captens and seruiters vnder the good Emperour Valerian. Such delights had the Romanes, in that auncient worlde, to haue good Captens, as were able to bée preferred to bée Emperours. Now in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captein generall, a knight called Odenatus, the prince of Palmerines, a man truelie of greate vertue, and of passing industrie & hardinesse in factes of warre. This Captain Odenatus maried a woman that descended of the auncient linage of the Ptolomes, sometimes kings of *Egipte*, named Zenobia, which (if the historians doe not deceiue vs) was one of the most famous Women of the worlde. She hadde the hearte of Alexander the greate, she possessed the riches of Croesus, the

 diligence

diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauell of Haniball, the warie foresight of Marcellus, & the iustice of Traiane. When Zenobia was maried to Odenatus, she had by hir other husband, a sonne called Herodes, & by Odenatus she had two other, whereof the one was called Hieronianus, and the other Ptolomeus. And when the Emperour Valerian was banquished and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had bene ther, they had not receued so great an ouerthrow. So sone as good Odenatus was aduertized of ỹ defaite of Valerian, in great haste he marched to ỹ Romain Campe, that then was in great disorder. Which with greate diligence he reassembled, and reduced the same to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) within xxx. dayes after he recouered all that which Valerian had losse, making ỹ Persian king to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the armie, he wanne amonges the Romains great reputation, & truely not without cause: For if in that good time he had not receiued the charge, the name and glorie of the Romans had taken ende in *Asia*. During all this time Galienus lined in his delightes at *Millan*, without care or thought of the common wealth, consuming in his wilfull vices, the money that was leuied for the men of warre. Which was ỹ cause that the gouernours of the prouinces, and Capteins generall, seing him to be so vicious and negligent, vsurped the prouintes and armies which they had in charge. Galienus voide of all obedience hauing of the *Italians* & *Lombards*, the first that rose vp against him were Posthumus in *Fraunce*, Lollianus in *Spaine*, Victorinus in *Affrica*, Marius in *Britaine*, Ingenuus in *Germanie*, Regillianus in *Denmark*, Aureolus in *Hungarie*, Macrianus in *Mesopotamia* & Odenatus in *Syria*. Before Odenatus rose against Valerian, Macrianus enioyed *Mesopotamia*, & the greatest part

teſt part of *Syria*, wher of Odenatus hauing intelligence, he marched with his power againſt him and killed him, and diſcomfited all his armie. The death of the Tyran Macrian being knowen, and that Galienus was ſo vicious, the armies in *Aſia* aſſembled and choſe Odenatus Emperour: which election although the *Senate* publickly durſt not agree vpon, yet ſecretlie they allowed it, bycauſe they receiued dailie newes, of the great exploites and dedes of armes done by Odenatus, and ſawe on the other ſyde the great cõtinued follies of Galienus. Almoſt three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and lorde of all the *Orient*, during which time hee recouered all the landes and prouinces loſt by Galienus, and paide the Romane army all the arrerages of their wages due vnto them. But Fortune full of inconſtancie, ſuffred not this good Prince very long to raigne. For hauing in hys houſe a kinſman of his, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he ſawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although ignorant of his enuie and couetouſneſſe: it chaunced vpon a daye as they two rode on hunting, & galloping after the purſute of a wilde Beaſt, with the verie ſame boye ſpeare which Meonius caried to ſtrike the beaſt, hee killed by treaſon his good couſin Odenatus. But that murdre was not long time vnreuenged. For the boyeſpeare wherwith he had ſo cruelly killed ỹ Emperor his couſin, was incõtinently knowne by the hunters which followed Odenatus: wherupon that daye the heade of Meonius was ſtriken off. And Galienus vnderſtanding the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes & preſents to them that brought him the newes, being ſo ioyfull as the Romans were angrie to vnderſtand thoſe pitifull tydings, bycauſe through the good order which Odenatus vſed in *Aſia*, they had great trã-

quillitie & peace throughout *Europa*. Now after the death of this good Emperour Odenatus, the Armies chose one of his two sonnes to be Emperour of the *Orient*: But for that hée was yong, they chose Zenobia to bée Protector of hir sonne, and gouerner ouer the said *Orient* Empire. Who seeing that vpon the decease of Odenatus certain of the East Cuntries began to reuolt, she determined to open hir Treasure, reassemble hir men of warre, and in hir owne person to march into the fielde: where she did such notable enterprises, as shée appalled hir enimies, and made the whole worlde to wonder. About the age of.xxv.yeares Zenobia was widow, being the Tutrix of hir children, Regent of an Empire, and Captain general of the armie. In which weighty charge she vsed hir selfe so wiselie and well, as she acquired no lesse noble name in *Asia*, than Quéene Semiramis did in *India*. Zenobia was constant in that which she toke in hande, true in wordes, liberall, mylde, & seuere where she ought to be, discrete, graue, and secrete in hir enterprises, albeit she was ambicious. For, not content with hir title of Gouernelle or Regent, she wrote and caused hir selfe to bée called Empresse, she loued not to ride vpon a Mule, or in a litter, but greatlie esteemed to haue greate horse in hir stable, and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to sée the order and gouernement of hir Campe, she continually did put on hir Armure, and was well guarded with a bande of men, so that of a woman, she cared but onely for the name, and in the facts of Armes she craued the title of valiant. The Captains of hir Armie, neuer gaue battell, or made assault, they neuer skyrmished or did other enterprise of warre, but she was présent in hir owne person, and attempted to shewe hir selfe more hardie than any of all

the

the troupe, a thing almoſt incredible in that weake and feble kynde. The ſayde noble Quéene was of ſtature, bigge and well proporcioned, hir eyes black and quicke, hir forehedde large, hir ſtomake and breaſtes fayre & vpright, hir face white and ruddy, a litle mouth, hir teeth ſo white, as they ſemed like a ranche of white pearles, but aboue all things ſhe was of ſuch excellent ſpirit and corage, as ſhe was feared for hir ſtoutneſſe, & beloued for hir beautie. And although Zenobia was indued with ſo great beautie, liberalitie, riches, & puiſſance, yet ſhe was neuer ſtayned with the blemiſhe of vnchaſte life, or with other vanitie: and as hir huſband Odenatus was wont to ſay, that after ſhe felt hir ſelfe with childe, ſhe neuer ſuffred him to come nere hir, (ſuch was hir great chaſtitie) ſaying that women ought to marie rather for children than for pleaſure. She was alſo excellently well learned in the Greeke and Latine tong. She did neuer eate but one meale a day. Hir talke was verie litle and rare. The meate which ſhe vſed for hir repaſte, was eyther ỹ hanch of a wilde Boze, or elſe the ſyde of a déere. She could drinke no wine, nor abyde the ſcent thereof. But ſhe was ſo curious in good and perfect waters, as ſhe would gyue ſo great a price for that, as is ordinarilie gyuen for wyne: bée it neuer ſo excellent. So ſone as the Kings of *Egipte* of *Perſia*, and the *Greekes*, were aduertized of the death of Odenatus, they ſent their Ambaſſadours to Zenobia, aſwell to viſite and comforte hir, as to bée hir confederats and frendes. So much was ſhe feared and redoubted for rare vertues ſake. The affaires of Zenobia being in ſuch eſtate in *Aſia*, the Emperour Galienus died in *Lombardie*, and the Romanes choſe Aurelianus to bée Emperour, who although bée was of baſe & obſcure lineage, yet bée was of greate valiance

in fastes of armes. When Aurelianus was chosen Emperour, he made great preparacion into *Asia*, to inferre warres vpon Quéene Zenobia, and in all his tyme hée neuer attempted greater enterprise for the Romanes. When hée was arriued in *Asia*, the Emperour proceded against the Quéene, and she as valiantlie defended hir selfe, continually being betwene them greate alarms and skirmishes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of lesse trauell and of better skyll in knowledge of the Cõtrie, so they did greater harme & more anoiáce vnto their enimie, and therof receiued lesser damage. The Emperour seing that hée should haue much adoe to vanquishe Zenobia by armes, determined to ouercome hir by gentle wordes and faire promisses: for which cause he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor wherof ensueth.

Aurelianus Emperour of Rome & lord of al *Asia*, to thée ỳ right honorable Zenobia sẽdeth greting. Although to such rebellious women as thou art, it should séeme vncomely and not decent to make requeſt, yet if thou wilt seeke ayde of my mercie, and render thy selfe vnder mine obedience, bée assured that I will doe thée honor, & gyue pardone to thy people. The golde, siluer, and all other riches, within thy Pallace I am content thou shalt enioye, together with the kingdome of Palmyres, which thou maiest kepe during thy life, & leaue after thy death to whom thou shalt think good, vpon condition notwithstanding, that thou abandone all thine other Realmes and Cuntries which thou hast in *Asia*, and acknowledge Rome to bée thy superior. Of thy vassalls and subiectes of Palmyres, we demaund none other obedience, but to bée confederats and frendes, so that thou breake vp thy Campe, wherwith thou maiest warre in *Asia*, & disobeyest the citie of Rome, we wil suffer thée to haue a

certain

certain number of men of warre, so wel for the tuicion of thy person, as for the defense of thy kyngdome. And thy two children which thou haddest by thy husband Odenatus: He whom thou louest best shal remaine with thée in *Asia*, and the other I will carrie with me to Rome, not as prisoner, but as hostage & pledge from thée. The prisoners which thou haste of ours, shal bée rendred in exchange for those which we haue of thyne, without ransome of eyther parts. And by théese meanes thou shalt remaine honored in *Asia*, and I contented, will retorne to Rome. The Gods bée thy defense, & preserue our mother the citie of Rome from all vnhappie fortune.

The Quéene Zenobia hauing reade the letter of the Emperour Aurelianus, without feare of the contentes, incontinently made such answere as followeth.

Zenobia Quéene of Palmyres, and Ladie of all Asia, and the kingdomes thereof, to thée Aurelianus the Emperour, helth and consolation &c. That thou doe intitle thy selfe with the Emperour of the Romanes I do agrée, but to presume to name thy selfe lorde of the East kingdomes, I saye therein thou doest offende. For thou knowest well, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, & the onely dame & maistres of ỹ same. The one part wherof descended vnto me by lawfull inheritaunce from my predecessors, and the other part I haue wonne by my prowesse and dedes of armes. Thou sayest that if I rendre obedience vnto thée, thou wilt doe me greate honor: To that I answere, that it were a dishonest part of me, and a dárde mótte vnluste, that the Gods hauing created Zenobia to comaunde all Asia, she should nowe begyn to be slaue & thrall vnto the citie of Rome. Semblablie, thou sayest that thou wilt gyue and leaue me all the golde, siluer, and other riches which I haue: Wher-

vnto I answer, that it is a wicked and fonde request, to dispose the godes of another as they were thine owne. But thine eyes shall neuer sée it, ne yet thy handes shal touch it, but rather I hope in the Gods aboue to bestow and crye a larges of that which thou hast at *Rome*, before thou finger that which I haue & possesse in *Asia*. Truely Aurelianus, the warres which thou makest against me, and thy quarell, bée most vniust before the supernall Gods, and verie vnreasonable before men, and I for my part if I haue entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my selfe and myne. Thy comming then into *Asia* is for none other purpose, but to spoyle & make hauocke of that which an other hath. And thinke not that I am greatly afrayde of ỳ name of Roman Prince, nor yet of the power of thyne huge armie. For if it bée in thy handes to gyue battell, it belongeth onely to the gods to giue eyther to thée or me the victory. That I remaine in field it is to me greate fame, but thou to fight with a widowe, oughtest truely to bée ashamed.

Ther be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Persians, the Medes, the Agamēnonians, the Irenees, & the Syrians, and with them all the Gods immortall, who bée wont to chastice such proude princes as thou arte, and to helpe poore widowes as I am. And if it so come to passe, that the Gods doe permit & suffre my lucke to bée such, as thou doe bereue me of life and dispoile me of gods, yet it wil be bruted at *Rome*, and published in *Asia*, that the woefull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and slaine, in defense of hir patrimonie, and for the conseruation of hir husbandes honor. Labor no more then Aurelianus, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to threaten me: require me no more to yelde and become thy prisoner, nor yet to surrender that which I haue: for by doing that I can, I accomplish

compliſh that I ought. For it will be ſaide and noyſed through the worlde, (may it ſo come to paſſe as Fortune doe not fauor me) that if the Empreſſe Zenobia bée captiue, ſhe was not yet vanquiſhed. The ſonne which thou demaundeſt to carie with thée to Rome, truely that requeſt I cannot abide, and much leſſe doe meane to graūt the ſame, knowing full well that thy houſe is ſtored full of manyfolde vices, where myne is garniſhed with many notable Philoſophers: Wherby if I leaue vnto my children no great heapes of gwdes, yet they ſhalbe well taught and inſtructed: For the one halfe of the day they ſpende in Learnyng, and the other halfe in exerciſe of Armes.

For concluſion of thy demaunde, and ſhall anſwer therevnto, I pray thée trauell no more by letters to write vnto me, ne yet by ambaſſage to ſpende any further talke, but attend vntill our controuerſie bée decided rather by force of armes than by vttered wordes. The Gods preſerue thée.

It is ſaid that Aurelianus, receiuing that anſwere, did reioyce, but when he had redde it, hée was greatly offended, which incontinently hée made to bée knowne, by gathering together his Campe, and beſieging the Citie wherin Zenobia was. And Aurelianus, wroth and outraged with that anſwere, although his armie was werie and halfe in diſpaire (by reaſon of the long warres,) yet hée vſed ſuche diligence and expedition in the ſiege of that place, as the Quéene was taken and the citie raſed: which done, the Emperour Aurelianus retourned to Rome, carying wyth hym Zenobia, not to doe hir to death, but to tryumphe ouer hir. At what tyme to ſée that noble Ladie goe on foote, and marche before the triumphing Chariot bare foted, charged wyth ỹ burden of heauie

beanie chaſtice, and hir two childzen by hir ſide: truly it made the Roman Patrons to conceiue great pitie, being well knowen to all the Romanes, that neither in valorous dedes, noz yet in vertue oz chaſtitie, any mã oz woman of hir time did excel hir. The dayes of the triumph being done, al the noble Ladies of Rome aſſembled and repaired to Zenobia, and vſed vnto hir greate and honorable enterteinement, giuing hir many goodly preſents and rewardes. And Zenobia liued in the companie of thoſe noble matrones the ſpace of. x. yeares before ſhe dyed, in eſtimation like a Lucrecia, and in honor lyke a Cornelia. And if Fortune had accompanied hir perſonage, ſo well as vertue and magnanimitie, Rome had felt the egreneſſe of hir diſpleaſure, and the whole world taſted the ſwetenelle of hir regiment.

(·.·)

Euphimia of Corinth.

EVPHIMIA the King of CORINTHS daughter fell in loue with ACHARISTO, the seruant of hir father, and beside others which required hir to mariage, she disdained PHILON the king of PELOPONESVS, that loued hir verie feruentlie. ACHARISTO conspiring against the king, was discouered, tormented, and put in prison, & by meanes of EVPHIMIA deliuered. The king promised his daughter and kingdome, to him that presented the heade of ACHARISTO. EVPHIMIA so wrought, as he was presented to the King. The King gaue him his daughter to wyfe, and when he dyed made him his heyre. ACHARISTO began to hate his wyfe, and condemned hir to death as an adulteresse. PHILON deliuered hir: & vpon the sute of hir subiects, she is cõtented to marie him, & therby he is made king of Corinth.

The. xv. Nouel.

Dultancie in honeste loue, (beyng a perfect vertue, and a precious ornament to the beloued, eschewing sythes, bendes top and contemnation, loyth immortall fame & glorie,) hath in it self these only marks and properties to be knowne by, Chastitie & toleration of aduersitie: For as the mynd

is constant in loue, not variable, as giuen to chaunge, so is the bodie continent, comely, honest and patient of Fortunes plagues. A true cõstant mynd is moued with no sugred persuasions of friendes, is diuerted with no eloquence, terrified with no threates, is quiet in all motions. The bluttering blastes of parents wrath, can not remoue the constant mayde from that which she hath peculiarly chosen to hir selfe. The rigorous rage of friendes, doth not dismay the louing mate from the embracement of hir, whom he hath amongs the rest selected for his vnchanged fere. A godly exãple of constant & noble loue this history ensuing describeth, although not like in both, yet in both a semblable cõstancie. For Euphimia a Kings daughter, abandoneth the great loue borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong Prince, to loue a seruant of hir fathers, with whome she persewered in greate constancie, for all his false and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon seyng his loue despised, neuer maried vntill he maried hir, whome afterwardes he deliuered from the false surmised treason of hir cancred and malicious husbande. Euphimia fondly maried against hir fathers will, and there for deseruedly afterwardes bare the penaunce of hir fault: And albeit she declared hir selfe to be constant, yet dutie to louing father ought to haue withdrawen hir rashe and headie loue. What daungers doe ensue such like cases, examples be rife, and experience teacheth. A great dishonour it is for the Ladie and Gentlewoma to disparage hir noble house with mariage of hir inferior. Yea and great grief to the parents to see their children obstinate & wilfull in careless loue. And albeit the Poete Propertius describeth the vehemente loue of those that be noble, and haue wherwith in loue to be liberall, in these verses:

Great

Great is the faith of Loue,
the constant mynde doth much auaile:
And he that is well fraught with wealth,
in Loue doth much preuaile.

Yet the tender damoſell or louing childe, be they neuer ſo noble or riche, ought to attende the fathers time and choiſe, and naturally encline to their will e liking, otherwiſe great harme and detrimente enſue: For when the parents ſee ỹ diſobediẽce or rather rebellious mindes of their childe, their conceiued ſorowe for the ſame, ſo gnaweth the rooted plante of naturall loue, as either it haſteneth their vntimely death, or elſe ingendreth a heape of melancholie humors: which force them to pretende defiance and bitter curſſe againſt their proper fruite, vpon whome (if by due regarde they had bene ruled) they wouldbe haue pronounced the ſweete bleſſyng that Iſaac gaue to Iacob, the mothers beſt beloued hope: yea and that diſpleaſure may chaunce to diſpoſſeſſe them of that, which ſhould haue bene the only comfort and ſtay of the future age. So that negligence of parents heſt, and careleſſe heede of youthful head, breedeth double woe, but ſpecially in the not aduiſed childe: who tumbleth him ſelfe firſt into the breach of diuine lawes, to the curſſes of the ſame, to parents wrath, to orphans ſtate, to beggers life, and into a ſea of manifold miſeries. In whome had obedience ruled, and reaſon taken place, the hearte might haue bene ſatiſfied, the parent well pleaſed, the life ioyfully ſpent, and the poſteritie ſucceſſiuely taſt the fruits that elders haue prepared. What care and ſorrow, nay what extremities the forenayde noble Gentlewoman ſteined, for not yelding to hir fathers minde, the ſequele ſhal at large declare.

There was ſometimes in *Corinth*, a Citie of *Greece*, a King, which had a daughter called Euphimia, very tender

Tender ly derly

derly beloued of hir father, and being arriued to the age of mariage, many noble men of *Greece* made sute to haue hir to wife. But amongs all, Philon the yong king of *Peloponesus*, so fiercely fell in loue with hir, as he thought he coulde no longer liue, if he were maried to any other. For which cause hir father knowing him to be a King, and of singular beautie, and that he was far in loue with his daughter, woulde gladly haue chosen him to be his sonne in law, perswading hir that she shold liue with him a life so happie as was possible for any noble lady matched with Gentleman, were he neuer so honorable. But the daughter by no meanes woulde consent vnto hir fathers will, alleaging vnto him diuers & sundry considerations, wherby hir nature by no means woulde agree, nor heart consent to ioyne with Philon.

The king aboue al worldly things loued his fair daughter: and albeit he woulde faine haue brought to passe, that she should haue taken him to husband, yet he wold not vse the fathers authoritie, but desired that Loue rather than force, should match his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was contented to agree vnto hir will.

There was in the Court a yong mã, borne of hir fathers bondman, which hight Achariſto, and was manumised by the King, who made him one of the Esquiers for his bodie, and vsed his seruice in sundry enterprises of the warres, and bicause he was in those affaires very skilfull, of bolde personage, in conflictes and battailes verie hardie, the King did very much fauor him, aswell for that he had defended him from manifold daungers, as also bycause he had deliuered him from the treason pretended against him by the king of the Lacedemonians. Whose helpe and valiance, the king vsed for the murder and destruction of the sayde Lacedemonian King. For which valiant enterprise, he bountifully recompenced

him

him with honorable preferments and stately reuenues. Vpon this yong man, Euphimia fixed hir amorous eyes, and fell so farre in loue, as vpon him alone she bent hir thoughtes, and all hir louing cogitations: Wherof Acharisto being certified, and well espying and marking hir amorous lokes, nourished with like flames the fire, wherewith she burned. Notwithstanding his loue was not so feruently bent vpon hir personage, as his desire was ambicious for that she shoulde be hir fathers onely heire, and therfore thought that he shold be a most happie man, aboue all other of mortall kynde, if hée might possesse that inheritance. The king perceiuing that loue, told his daughter, that she had placed hir mynde in place so straunge, as hée had thought hir wisdome wold haue more warely forseen, and better waied hir estate & birth, as come of a princely race, and would haue deemed such loue, farre vnworthie hir degrée: requiring hir with fatherly words, to withdraw hir settled mynde & to ioyne with him in choise of husbande, for that he had none other worldly heire but hir, and tolde hir howe he meant highly to bestowe hir vpon such a personage, as a moste happie life she should leade, so long as the destenies were disposed to weane the webbe of hir predestined life: And therefore was resolued to espouse hir vnto that noble Gentleman Philon. Euphimia hearkned to this vnliked tale, & with vnliked words refused hir fathers helk, protesting vnto him such reasons to like effect as she did before, therby to draw him frō his cōceiued purpose. whervnto the wise King hauing made replie, continuing his intended mynde, at length in ragyng wordes and stormed mind, he sayd vnto Euphimia: How much the sweeter is the wine, the sharper is the egred sawe thereof. I speake this parable, for that thou not knowyng or greatly regarding the gentle disposition of thy fathers

" nature, in the ende mayst so abuse the same, as where
" hitherto he hath bene curteous and benigne, he may be-
" come through thy disordered dedes, ryghte soure and
sharpe: and without vtterance of further talke, depar-
ted. Who resting euil content with that fond fixed loue,
thought that the next way to remedie the same, was to
tel Achariſto, how greuously he toke his presumed fault,
and in what heinous part he conceiued his ingratitude,
and how for the benefites which liberally hée had bestow-
wed vpon him, he had wrought and enticed his daughter
to loue him, that was farre vnagreable hir estate. And
therfore he called hym before him, and with reasons first
declared the duetie of a faithfull seruant to his souerain
" Lord, and afterwards he sayd: That if the receyued be-
" nefits were not able to lette him know what were con-
" uenient and seemely for his degrée, but would perseuere
" in that which he had begonne, he would make him fele
" the iuſt displeasure of a displeased Prince: whereby hé
" shoulde repent the tyme that euer hé was borne of wo-
" mans wombe. These wordes of the King seemed grie-
uous to Achariſto, & not to moue him to further anger
hé séemed as though that (being fearfull of the kinges
displeasure) hé did not loue his daughter at all, but sayd
" vnto hym, that hé deserued not to bée so rebuked, for
" that it lay not in his power to withſtande hir loue, the
" same proceding of hir owne good will and libertie. And
" that hé for his part neuer required loue: if she did bend
" hir mynde to loue him, hé could not remedie that affec-
" tion, for that the freewill of such vnbridled appetite re-
" sted not in him to reforme. Notwithſtading, bycause hé
" vnderſtode his vnwilling mynd, he from that time forth
" would so indeuor himselfe, as hé shoulde well perceyue
" that the vnstayde mynde of the yong gentlewoman Eu-
" phimia, was not incensed by him, but voluntarily con-

repued

reiued of hir selfe. You shall bee well (sayde the King) if
the effect proceds according to the premise. And the more
acceptable shall the same bee vnto me, for that I desire it
should so come to passe. The king liked wel these words,
although that Acharisto had conceiued within ꝑ plat of
his intended minde, some other treason. For albeit that
hée affirmed before the kings owne face, that hée would
not loue his daughter, yet knowing the assured will of
the louing gentlewoman, hée practised the mariage, and
like an vnkind & wretched man, deuised cõuenient tyme
to kill him. And fully bent to execute that cruell enter-
prise, hée attempted to corrupt the chiefest men about
him, promising promocions vnto some, to some hée assu-
red restitucion of reuenewe, which by fathers fault they
had lost before, and to other golden hilles, so that hée
might attaine by slaughter of the King, to wynne a
kingly state and kingdome. Which the sooner he perswa-
ded himselfe to acquire, if in secrete silence, they could
put vp that which by generall voice they hadde agréed.
And although they thought themselues in good assuráce,
that their enterprise could take no yll successe, by rea-
son of their sounde and good discourse debated amon-
ges them selues for the accomplishement thereof, yet it
fortuned that one of the conspiracie (as commonly in
suche lyke traiterous attemptes it chaunceth) béeing
with his beloued ladie, and she making mone that little
commoditie succéeded of hir loue for hir aduancement,
brake out into these wordes: Holde thy peace (sayde
hée:) for the time will not bée long, before thou shalt
bée one of the chiefest Ladies of this lande. How can
that be (sayde his woman?) No more adoe (quod the
Gentleman:) Cease from further questions, and
bée merrie: for wée shall enioye together, a verie ho-
nourable and a quiete lyfe. When hir Louer was

depar-

departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir gof-
sips very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir louer had sayd:
and she then not able to kepe counsell, went and told an
other: In such wise as in the ende it came to the eares
of the Kings stewards wife, and she imparted the same
vnto hir husband, who marking those words, like a ma
of great wisedome & experience, did verily beleeue that
the same touched the daunger of the Kings person: And
as a faithfull seruant to his lorde and maister, diligently
harkned to the muttering talke murmured in the court,
by him which had tolde the same to his beloued ladie: &
knowing that it proceded from Acharisto, which was an
obstinate and seditious varlet, and that he with three or
foure other his familiars, kept secrete companie in cor-
ners, iudged that which he first coniectured, to be most
certaine and true. Wherefore determined to move the
King therof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he sayde
vnto him, that the fidelitie and good will wherwith he
serued him, and the desire which he had to see him line in
long and prosperous estate, made him to attende to the
safegarde of his person, & to hearken vnto such as shold
attempt to daūger the same. For which cause, marking
and espying the doings of certain of his chamber (whose
common assemblies and priuie whisperings misliking)
he feared least they conspiring with Acharisto, shoulde
worke treason, for beriewyng of his life: and to the in-
tent their endeuors might be prevented, and his safetie
foreséene, he thought good to reueale the same to his ma-
iestie. Then he tolde the King the words that were spo-
ken by the first Gentlewomā, to one or two of hir com-
panions, and disclosed the presumptions which he had
séene and perceyued touching the same. Amongs the yll
conditions of men, there is nothing more common than
poyson, conspiracies, and treason of Princes and great
lordes,

lordes: and therefore euery little suspicion presumyng such perill, is a great demonstration of like mischiefe. Which made the kyng to giue credite to the wordes of his Steward, hauing for his long experience knowen him to be faithfull and truelie. And sodainly he thought that Achariſto attempted the same, that after his death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the inheritour of his kingdome. The beliefe wherof, and the singular credite which he reposed in his Steward beſides other thinges, caused him to cõmaunde the captaine of his Guard to apprehend thoſe .iiij. of whom his Steward told him, and Achariſto, cõmitting them to ſeuerall priſons. Then he ſent his officers to examine them, and founde vpon their confeſſions, the accuſation of his Stewarde to be true. But Achariſto, although the whole effect of the treaſon was confeſſed by thoſe foure conſpirators that were apprehẽded, and auouched to his face, and for all the tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet ſtill denied, that either he was authour of the enterpriſe, or partaker of a treaſon ſo wicked. Then the kyng incontinently cauſed the foure Gentlemen of his chamber, to be rewarded, according to the worthineſſe of their offenſe, and wer put to death, and Achariſto to be reprined in ſharpe and cruell priſon, vntill with tormentes he ſhould be forced to confeſſe that which he knew to be moſt certain and true, by the euidẽce of thoſe that were borne to death. Euphimia for the impriſonment of Achariſto, conceiued incredible ſorrow, and vneths could bee perſuaded, that he would imagine, much leſſe conſpire that abhominable fact, as well for the loue which Achariſto ſeemed to beare vnto hir, as for the greate good will wherewith he was aſſured that ſhee bare vnto him, and therfore the death of the kyng to bee no leſſe griefe vnto him, than the ſame would be to hir ſelf, the king being

hir naturall and louyng father. Acharisto thoughte on the other side, that if he might speake with Euphimia, a way woulde be founde eyther for his escape, or else for his deliuerie. Wherupon Acharisto being in this deliberation, founde meanes to talke with the Jailors wife, & intreated hir to shewe him so much fauor, as to procure Euphimia to come vnto him. She accordingly brought to passe, that the yong gentlewoman in secret wise came to speake with this traiterous varlet, who so sone as he sawe hir, shedding from his eyes store of teares, pitifully complaining, sayde vnto hir: I knowe Euphimia, that the King your father doth not inclose me in this cruell prison, ne yet afflicteth me with these miserable torments, for any suspicion hee conceiueth of me for any intended facte, but onely for the loue which I beare you, and for the like, (for which I render humble thankes) that you do beare to me: & bicause that I am weerie of this wretched state, & knowe that nothing else can ridde me from this painfull life, but onely death, I am determined with mine owne proper hands to cut the threede of lyfe wherwith the destinies hitherto haue prolonged the same, that this my breathing ghost, which breatheth forth these dolefull plaintes, maie flie into the skies, to rest it selfe amonges the restfull spirites aboue, or wander into the pleasant hellish fieldes, amongs the shadowes of Creusa, Æneas wife, or else with the ghost of complaining Dido. But ere I did the same, I made myne humble prayer to the maiestie diuine, that hee would vouchsafe to shewe me so much grace, as before I dye, I might fulfyl my couetous eyes with sight of you, whose image still appereth before those greedie Gates, and sadlie represented vnto my myndefull heart. Which great desired thing, sith God aboue hath graunted, I yelde him infinit thanks, and sith my destenie is such, that suth must be the end of

long

loue, I doe reioyce that I muſt dye for your ſake, which
only is the cauſe that the King your father ſo laboureth
for my death. I neede not to moleſt you with the falſe e-
uidence giuen againſt me, by thoſe malicious villaines,
that be alreadie dead: which onely hath thus incenſed
the Kings wrath and beaſtie rage againſt me: where-
of I am ſo free, as worthily they bée executed for the-
ſame. For if it were ſo, then true it is, (and as lightly
you might beleue) ꝑ I neuer knewe the loue you beare
me, and you likewiſe did neuer know, what loue I bare
to you: and therfore you maye thinke that ſo impoſſible
is the one, as I did euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any
harme or perill to your fathers perſon. To bée ſhort, I
humbly doe beſech you to beleue, that ſo faithfully as
man is able to loue a woma, ſo haue I loued you: & that
it may pleaſe you to bée ſo myndfull of me in this fading
life, as I ſhal be of you in that life to com. And in ſaying
ſo, with face all bathed in teares, he clypped hir about the
myddle, and faſt imbracing hir ſaid: Thus taking my
laſt farewell of you (myne onely life and ioye) I com-
mende you to the gouernment of the ſupernall God, &
my ſelfe to death, to be diſpoſed as pleaſeth him. Euphi-
mia, which before was not perſuaded ꝑ Achariſto was
guiltie of that deuiſed treaſon, now gaue ful beliefe and
credite to his wordes, and weping with him for compa-
ny, comforted him ſo wel as ſhe coulde, and bidding him
to bée of good chere, ſhe ſayde, that ſhe would ſeke ſuch
meanes, as for hir ſake and loue he ſhould not dye. And
that before long time did paſſe, ſhe would help him out
of priſon. Achariſto although he vttered by ruful voice
that lamētable talke, for remedie to ridde him ſelfe from
priſon, yet he vtter but faine all that he ſpake, adoyng
further: Alas Euphimia, doe not incurre your fathers
wrath to pleaſe my minde, ſuffer me quietly to take that
death,

" death, which sinister Fortune and cruell fate hath prou-
" ded to abridge my daies. Euphimia vanquished with in-
" speakable griefe and burning passion of loue, saide: Ah
" Acharisto, the onely ioye and comfort of my lyfe, doe not
" perce my heart with such displeasant wordes. For what
" should I doe in this wretched worlde, yf you for my sake
" shold suffre death? wherefore put awaie ỹ cruel thought,
" and be content to saue your life, that hereafter in ioye ỹ
" myrth you may spend ỹ same. Trusting that yf meanes
" maye be founde for your dispatche from hence, we shall
" line the rest of our prolonged life together, in swete and
" happie daies. For my father is not made of stone of
" flint, nor yet was nourced of Hircan Tigre, he is not so
" malicious but that in tyme to come, hée may bée made to
" knowe the true discourse of thyne innocent life, and hope
" thou shalt atteyne his fauour more than euer thou didst
" before, the care wherof onely leaue to me, and take no
" thought thy self, for I make promise vpon mine assured
" faith to bring the same to passe: Wherefore giue ouer
" thy conceiued griefe, and bende thy selfe to line so merie
" a life, as euer gentleman did, trained vp in court as thou
" hast bene. I am content sayd Acharisto thus to doe, the
" Gods forbid that I should declyne my heart and mynde
" from thy behest, who of thy wonted grace dost seke con-
" tinuance of my life, but rather swete Euphimia, than
" thou shouldest suffre any daunger to performe thy pro-
" mise, I make request (for the common loue betwene vs
" both) to leaue me in this present dangerous state. Ra-
" ther wold I lose my life than thou shouldest hazard the
" least heare of thy heade for my reliefe. We shal be both
" safe ynough (answered Euphimia) for my deuise proce-
" ding from a womans heade, hath already drawen the
" platte of thy deliuerance, and with those wordes they
" both did ende their talke, whose trickling teares did ra-

ther

ther finiſhe the ſame, than willing minded: and either
of them gyuing a kyſſe vnto the Ladies walle, where-
in Achariſto was ſafe ſhutte, Euphimia departed, tur-
moiled with a thouſand amorous pricks, and ceaſed not
but firſt of all to corrupte and ſtayne the Jaylers wife,
whoſe huſband was ſent forth on buſineſſe of the kings.
The concluſion of which practiſe was, that when ſhe
caried meate to Achariſto, according to the order appoin-
ted, ſhe ſhould faine hir ſelfe to be violently diſpoyled
of ye priſon-key by Achariſto, who taking the ſame from
hir, ſhould ſhut hir in the priſon and eſcape, and ſhe hir
huſband did returne, ſhe ſhould make complaint of the
violence done vnto hir: according to which deuiſe, the
practiſe was accompliſhed. And when hir huſbande re-
turned home, hearing his wife crie out within the Tu-
ret, was meruailouſly amazed, and vnderſtanding that
Achariſto was fledde, ſignifiant of the pollice betweene
his wyfe and Euphimia, he fell into great rage, & ſpe-
dely repaired to the king, and tolde him what had chan-
ced. The king thinking that the breache of priſon was
rather through the womans ſimplicitie than purpoſed
malice, did mytigate his diſpleaſure, howbeit ſuſpecting
he ſent out ſcoutes to ſpie and watche in to what place
Achariſto was gone, whoſe ſecrete flight, made all their
trauell to be in vaine. Then the king when he ſaw that
he coulde not be found, made proclamation throughout
his realme, that who ſo ſhould bring vnto him the hed of
Achariſto, ſhould haue to wife his onely daughter, and
after his deceaſe ſhould poſſeſſe his kingdome for dow-
rie of that mariage. Many knightes did put themſelues
in readineſſe to atchiene that enterpriſe, & aboue al, Phi-
lon was the chiefe, not for greedineſſe of the kingdome,
but for loue which he bare vnto the Gentlewoman.
Wherof Achariſto hauing intelligence, and perceiuing

That in no place of Europe he coulde be safe and sure frō
daunger, for the multitude of them which pursued hym
vnto deth, caused Euphimia to vnderstand the miserable
estate wherein he was, Euphimia which bent hir mind, &
employed hir studie for his safegarde, imparted hir loue
which she bare to Achariſto, to an aged Gentlewoman,
which was hir nurſe & gouernelle, & beſought hir þ she
wold intreat hir ſonne called Sinapus, (one very wel be-
loued of the King) to reach his help vnto hir deſire, that
Achariſto might return to the court again. The Nurſe
like a wiſe woman, lefte no perſuaſion vnſpoken, nor
counſell vnremembred, which she thought was able to
diſſuade the yong gentlewoman frō hir conceiued loue:
but the wounde was ſo deepely made, and hir hearte ſo
grieuouſly wounded with the three fethered arrowes of the
litle blinde archer Cupide, that deſpiſing all the reaſons
of hir beloued nurſe, ſhe ſayde, howe ſhe was firmely
bente eyther to runne from hir father, and to ſeeke out
Achariſto, to ſuſtaine with hym one equall fortune, or
elſe with hir owne handes to procure death, if ſome re-
medie were not founde to recouer the Kynges good
grace for the returne of Achariſto. The Nurſe van-
quiſhed with pitie of the yong mayden, fearyng bothe
the one and the other daunger that might enſue, ſent
for Sinapus, and vpon their talke together, Euphimia
and he concluded, that Achariſto ſhoulde be brought
againe vnto the Courte, and that ſhe hir ſelfe ſhould
preſent him to the King: wherin ſhould want no kinde
of diligence vntill the King did entertayne him againe
for his faithfull ſeruaunt, as he was wont to doe. Vp-
on which reſolution, Achariſto was ſente for, and be-
ing come, Sinapus and Euphimia together with the
Nurſe tolde hym in what ſorte they three had concluded
touching his health and ſafegarde. Which of him being

well

well lyked, dis gaue hym humble thankes: And then
Sinapus went vnto the kyng, and tolde hym, that there
was one newely arrined at *Corinth*, to make a present
vnto his grace of the hed of Achariſto. At which newes
the kyng ſhewed him ſelfe ſo ioyful, as if he had gotten
an other kingdoms: and being placed vnder his cloath
of ſtate, with his Counſell and princely trayne about
him, telling them the cauſe of that aſſemblie, comaunded
hym that brought thoſe newes, to bring the partie forth
newely come vnto the Citie to preſente the head of A-
chariſto. Then Sinapus broughte Achariſto before the
preſence of the kyng, who no ſooner loked vpon hym,
but fell into ſuch a rage, as the fire ſeemed to flame out
of his angrie eyes, and commaunded hym preſentlye
to be taken and put to death. But Achariſto falling
downe vpon his knees, humbly beſoughte his Ma-
ſtie to gyue hym leaue to ſpeake: But the kyng not
ſufferyng hym to vtter one worde, commaunded him
away. Then the Counſellours and other Lordes of
the Courte, intreated his grace to heare him: At whoſe
requeſtes and ſupplications he ſeemed to be contente.
Then Achariſto began to ſay: Moſt ſacred Prince, and
redoubted Soueraigne Lord, the cauſe of thys my pre-
ſumptious repaire before your Maieſtie, is not to ſhew
my ſelfe guiltie of the late deuiſed conſpiracie, ne yet to
craue pardon for the ſame, but to ſatiſfie your Maieſtie
with that contented deſire, whiche by proclamation ye
haue pronounced through your highneſſe Realmes and
dominions: whiche is, to offer this heade for reuenge
of the fault vntruelly laid vnto my charge by thoſe feare,
which worthily haue taſted the deſerued paine of their
offence. Wherefore I am come hither of mine owne ac-
corde, to ſhewe the loue and greate deſire, whiche euer
I had to ſerue and pleaſe your Maieſtie: And for that

I would

" I would not cõsume my life in your displeasure, I make
" offer of the same to your merciful will and disposition,
" chosing rather to die, and leaue your maiestie satisfied &
" contented, than to lyue in happie state, your princely
" minde displeased. But desirous that your maiestie should
" know myne innocencie, I humbly beseech your grace to
" heare what I can say, that my fidelitie may be through-
" ly vnderstanded, & the wickednesse of the Veriets myne
" accusers wel waied and considered. Then hee began to
" rehearse all the things done by him for the seruice of his
" crowne and maiestie, and finally into what daunger he
" did put himself, when he killed the Lacedemonian king,
" that went about by treason to murder him: which en-
" terprise might appere vnto him to be a sure and euident
" testimonie, that he ment nothing hurtfull or preiudicial
" to his highnesse. And that hee esteemed not his life, when
" he aduentured for his seruice & sauegarde to employ the
" same, & after these alleaged causes, he added briefly, that
" the loue which his maiestie knew to be betweene him &
" Euphimia his daughter, ought to haue persuaded him,
" that he had rather haue suffered death himselfe, than
" commit a thing displeasant to Euphimia. And knowing
" that a more offensiue thing could not chance to him, than
" the violent death of his father, he might wel thinke ẏ he
" wold haue denised the death of a thousand other, rather
" than that horrible & abhominable deede, such as his grea-
" test enimie would neuer haue done, much lesse he which
" was bounde vnto him by so many receiued benefits, for
" whose seruice & preseruacion he had dedicated & vowed
" his life and soule. But if so be his maiesties rancor and
" displeasure could not bee mitigated but by doing him to
" death, hee desired ẏ none of his alleaged reasons should
" be accepted, and therfore was there redie to sacrifice his
" life at his maiesties disposition and pleasure. Achaikis

by na-

by nature, coulde tell his tale exceedyngly well, and the more his tongue stode him in seruice, the greater appered his eloquence: Whiche so pierced the minde of the King, and persuaded the Counsellers, and other of the Court, as he was demed giltlesse of the treason: and the matter was so debated, and the King intreated to graūt him pardon, as he was accompted most worthie of his fauour. Then the Kyng, by the aduise of his Counsell, was persuaded, that by force of hys proclamation, his daughter should be giuen to Achariſto in mariage, and his Kingdome for a dowrie, bicause hée had offered his owne head, accordyng to the effecte of the same. So the King repenting him selfe that he had offended Achariſto, in the ende agréed to the aduise of his counsel, and gaue him his daughter to wife. Whereof Euphimia was so ioyful, as they bée that atteine the summe of their hartes desire. The father lined one whole yeare after this mariage, and Euphimia so pleasant a life for a certaine time, as was possible for any Gentlewoman. Hir father was no sooner dead, but the vnkind mā, nay rather brute beaſte, had forgotten all the benefites receyued of his kinde and louing wife: and hauing by hir only meanes gotten a Kingdom, began to hate hir so straungely, as he could not abide hir sight, (Such is the propertie of cancred oblivion, which after it creepeth into ambicious heades, neuer hath minde of passed amitie, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monſter and deadly enimie to humane nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomleſſe gulfe all pietie and kindenesſe) and determined in the ende for recompence of such great good turnes, to despoile hir of hir life. Howe thinke you faire Ladies, was not thys a faire reward for the loue, the trauailes and sorrowes sustained for this ingrate and villainous man, by that royal ladie, to saue his life, and to take him to husband?

Here is manifeſt (probatum) that in a vile and ſeruile minde, no vertue, no ductie, no receiued benefites can be harboured. Here is a leſſon for yong Gentlewomen to beware how they contemne and deſpiſe the graue aduiſe of their auncient fathers. Here they maye ſée the damage and hurt that vnaduiſed youth incurreth, when neglecting their parentes holeſome admonitions, they giue them ſelues to the loue of ſuche as bée vnworthie their eſtate and calling. For what ſhould aile the gentle puceil borne of gentle blood, but to match hir ſelf in like affinitie, & not to care for curriſh kind, or race of churle. Bée there no Gentlemen to be founde of perſonage and beautie worthie to ioyne in loue with them? Bée they ſo precious in nature, or tẽder in education as their like can not be vouchſafed to couple in mariage yoke? Compare the gliſtering golde to drooſie durte, and ſuch is the difference betwéene gentle and vngentle. But perhaps bringing vp may alter nature, and cuſtome tranſforme defect of birth: As Licurgus the lawemaker dyd trie betwene the Curriſh whelpe and the Spaniell kinde, both by training vp running to their contraries, the Spaniel not vſed to hunte eigre vpon the potage diſhe, the other nouſeled in that paſtyme purſuing his game. But that Metamorphoſis is ſeldome ſéene amongs humane ſort, and therfore I aduiſe the gentle kind, to match them ſelues in equall lotte, and not to truſt ſir Cuſtomes curteſie in choiſe of féere. Returne we then to vnkind Acharisto, who now in full poſſeſſion of his deſired praie, reuerting to his puddle of carliſh will and cancred nature, after many thouſande wrongs done to this moſte noble and gentle Quéene, accuſed hir to be an adultereſſe, and as one in déede, (although moſt innocent) ſhe was condemned to the mercileſſe fire. Philon, King of Peloponeſſus which (as we haue ſaid before) loued Euphimia as

he did

did the balles of his owne eyes, vnderstanding the cruelty that this wicked mã vsed towards hir, to whom both his life & kingdome did belong, moued with nobilitie of minde, determined to declare to Euphimia the inwarde feruent loue which he bare hir, and to chastise Acharisto for his ingratitude with due correction. Wherfore depely debatyng with hym selfe of this aduenture, thus he sayde: Nowe is the time Euphimia, that Philon shewe what faithful loue he hath euer born vnto thée, and that he deliuer thée bothe from the present daunger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that vnkynde wretche, that is farre vnworthie of such a wife. For if thou haddest agréed to thy fathers will, and yelded to the pursute of him that loued thée best, thou haddest no néede of rescue nowe, ne yet bene in perill of the wastful flames of fire, which be readie to consume thy nesh and tender corps, full tenderly sometymes beloued of thy deare father, and of thy louing friend Philon. When he had spoken those wordes, he earnestly disposed him selfe vpon that enterprise. There was in those days a custome in *Corinth*, that they which were condemned to death, were caried .iij. miles forth of the Citie, and there the sentence pronounced against them, wer put to execution. Philon hauyng intelligence hereof, did put in readinesse a good troupe of horsemen, and being secretely imbarked, arriued at *Corinth*, and closely the nyght before Euphimia shoulde be brought to the fire, harde by the place where the miserable Ladie should be burnt, into a wood he conueyed his people: and so sone as the Sergeants and officers were approched nere the place with the ladie, he issued forth, and did set vpon the throng, not suffering one of them to remaine aliue, to carie newes. When he had deliuered Euphimia from that present daunger of hir life, & the companie dispersed, he said to the Quene:

"Now thou mayst see (faire Quéene,) the diuersitie, be-
"twene the disloyaltie and vnkindnesse of Achariſto, and
"the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane not
"to leaue hys ingratitude vnreuenged, thou ſhalte ſtaye
"here, vntill thou heare newes of the due chaſtiſement
"whiche I ſhall giue him. Thoſe dire and cruell wordes
foretolde of hir huſbandes death, moued hir honeſt and
Princely hearte, which by no meanes coulde be altered
from the gentle nature, which it had firſt taſted and re-
ceiued: And although ſhe had ſuffred mortall & ſolemne
iniurie of hir vnkinde huſband for manifolde benefites,
yet (ſhe good Gentlewoman) woulde permit no duetie
of a truſtie and faithfull wife vnperformed. Wherfore
ſhe beſoughte Philon vpon hir knées, not to procéede to
further reuenge of Achariſto, telling him, that enough
it was for hir to haue eſcaped that preſente perill, from
which he like a Princely Gentleman had deliuered hir,
and therfore during hir life was moſt bounde vnto him.
Philon greately wondred at the goodneſſe of this Ladie,
howbeit the ingratitude of that Varlet by no meanes he
woulde ſuffer to bée vnpuniſhed. And béeing aduertiſed
that Achariſto remained in his Palace without any ſuſ-
picion of this aduenture, banded neither with Guarde
or other aſſurance, committed Euphimia to ſafe cuſtodie,
and ſodainly aſſailed the Palace of Achariſto: And find-
ing the Gates open, he entred the citie, crying out vp-
on the wickednesse and treaſon of Achariſto. At which
words the whole Citie began to riſe, to helpe Philon in
his enterpriſe. For there was no ſtate or degrée, but ab-
horred the vnkind order of that varlet, towards the no-
ble woman their Quéene. Philon aided with the people,
aſſaulted the Palace, and in ſhort ſpace inuaded ỳ ſame:
and the Varlet béeing apprehended, was put to death.
The *Corinthians* ſéeing the noble minde of Philon, and

the loue

the loue which he bare to Euphimia, and knowing that their late kyng was disposed to haue matched hir with Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their king, and that Euphimia shold be his wife, supposing that vnder the gouernement of a Prince so gentle and valiant, they might liue very happily and ioyefully. Execution done vpon that moste vnkinde varlet, Philon caused the Ladie to be conueyed home into hir royall Pallace. And the people with humble submission, began to perswade hir to marie with that yong Prince Philon. But shée which had lodged hir thoughts and fired hir minde vpon that caytife, who vnnaturally had abused hir, would by no meanes consent to take a new husband, saying, that the seconde mariage was not to bée allowed in any woman. And albeit that she knew howe greately she was bounde to Philon, as during life not able to recompence his louing kindnesse and valiant exployte performed for hir safegarde, yet for all hir vnhappie fortune, shée was minded still to remayne a widowe, and well contented that Philon shoulde possesse hir whole dompnion and kingdome, and she pleased to liue his subiecte: Whiche state she sayd, did like hir best. Philon, that not for desire of the kingdome, but for loue of the ladie had attempted that worthie and honourable enterprise, sayd vnto hir: Euphimia, it was onely for youre sake that I aduentured this dangerous indeuor, to ridde you from the slander that might haue ensued youre innocent death, and out of the cruell hands of him, whome vnworthily you did so dearely loue. No desire of kingdome or worldely glorie induced me herevnto: No care that I had to enlarge the bounds of my countrey soile pricked the courage of my minde (that is altogether emptie of ambition) but the passion of careless loue, whiche this long time I haue borne you in your happie fathers dayes, to

" whome I made incessant sute: and to your selfe I was
" so long a suter, vntil I receiued extreme repulse. For
" which I vowed a perpetuall single life, vntill this occa-
" sion was offred: the vrute wherof when I heard first, so
" stirred the minde of your most louing knight, that vn-
" sie sléepe or grédie hunger, could not force this restlesse
" bodie to tarrie at home, vntill I reuenged my self vpon
" that vilaine borne, which went about with roasting fla-
" mes to consume the innocent flesh of hir whom I loued
" best. And therfore mustred together my men of armes,
" and in secret sort imbarked our selues and arriued here.
" Where wée haue accomplished the thyng we came for,
" and haue settled you in quiet raigne, frée from perill of
" traiterous mindes, craving for this my fact nought else
" of you but willing minde to be my wife: which sith you
" do refuse, I passe not for rule of your kyngdome, ne yet
" for abode in *Corinth*, but meane to leaue you to youre
" choise. For satisfied am I, that I haue manifested to the
" world the greatnesse of my loue, which was so ample as
" euer King could beare to vertuous Quéene. And so fare
" well. At which wordes he made a signe to his people,
that they should shippe them selues for returne to Pelo-
ponessus. But the *Senatours* and al the people of *Corinth*
seing the curtesie of Philon, & how greatly their Quéne
was bound vnto him, fel downe vpon their knées, and
with ioyned hands besought hir to take him to husband
neuer ceasing from teares and supplication, vntill
shée had consented to their request. Then the
mariage was solemnised with great ioy
and triumphe, and the whole Ci-
tie after that time, lyued in
great felicitie & quiet,
so long as nature lengthened the dayes
of those two noble Princes.

The

The Marchioniſſe of Monferrato.

¶ The Marchioniſſe of MONFERRATO, with a banket of hennes, and certaine pleaſant wordes, repreſſed the fonde loue of PHILIP the French King.

The. xvj. Nouel.

GOod Euphimia (as you haue heard) did fondly applie hir loue vpon a ſeruile mã, who though bꝛed vp in Court, wher trayuyng and vſe doth cõmonly alter the rude condicions of ſuche as bee interteyned there, yet voyde of all gentleneſſe, and fruſtrate of natures ſweeteneſſe in that curteous kinde, as not exchaungyng natiue fierceneſſe foꝛ noble aduaunce-ment, returned to his boggiſh ſoile, and walowed in the durtie filthe of Inhumanitie, whoſe *nature myght well with Forke or Staffe bee expelled, but home againe it would haue come*, as Horace pleadeth in his Epiſtles. O noble Gentlewoman, that mildly ſuffred the diſpleaſure of the good King hir father, who woulde faine haue diſſuaded hir from that vnſeemely matche, to ioyne with a yong Pꝛince, a King, a Gentleman of great perfection: And O peſtilent Carle, being beloued of ſo honourable a pu-cell, that foꝛ treaſon diſcharged thy head frõ the block, &

of a

of a donghill slaue preferred thée to be a King, wouldest for those deserts in the ende frame fained matter to consume hir. With iust hatred then did the noble Emperor Claudius Cæsar prosecute those of bonde & seruile kinde that were matched with the frée and noble. Right well knew he that some tast of egrenelle wold rest in such sauage frute, & therfore made a law, that the issue of them shold not haue like libertie and preheminence, as other had, which agréably did couple. What harme such mariage hath inferred to dyuers states and persons (to auoide other exãples) the former Nouel teacheth. Wherfore to ende the same, with bewailing of Euphimia for hir vnluckie lot, begin we now to glad our selues with the wise and stoute aunswere of a chaste Marquesse, a Gentlewoman of singular beautie and discretion, made to the fond demaunde of a mightie Monarch, that fondly fell in loue with hir, and made a reckenyng of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This King by louing hir whome he neuer saw, fared like the man that in his slépe dreamed that hée had in holde, the thing furthest from him. For the King neuer saw hir, before he heard hir praised, and when he hearde hir praised, for purpose to winne hir, he trauailed out of his way, so sure to enioy hir, as if he had neuer séene hir. This history, although briefe, yet sheweth light to noble dames that be pursued by Princes, & teacheth them with what regard they ought to interteine such suters.

The Marquesse then of Monferrato, a citie in *Italie*, beyng a Gentlemã of great prowesse and valiance, was appointed to transsrete the Seas in a generall passage made by the christians, with an huge Armie and great furniture. And as it chaunced, vpon a day greate talke was had in the court of King Philip surnamed Luscus, (bicause he was poreblinde) who likewise was making

prepa-

preparation to depart out of *Fraunce* in the sayd iorney. Reporte was made by a Knight whiche knewe the sayd Marquize, that in all the worlde there was not the like maried couple, as the Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicause the Marquize had the fame to bee an excellent Gentleman, as also for that his wyfe amonges all the troupe of Ladies, that lined in the world that time, was the fairest and most vertuous: which words so entred the French Kings head, as sodainely (neuer seeing hir in all his life) he began to loue hir. And for that purpose determined to imbarke him selfe at *Genoua*, that by trauailing that way by lande, he might haue good occasion to see the Marchioniſſe, thinking that hir husbande being absent, he might easily obtein that he desired. And as he had deuised, he began his enterprise: who sending al his power before, toke his iorney with a meane train of Gentlemen: and being within a days iourney of the Ladies house, he sente hir worde that the next daye hee would visite hir at dinner. The sage and discrete Ladie ioyfully answered the Messanger, that she would accõpt his comming for a greate and singular pleasure, & sayde that his grace shuld be most heartily welcom. Afterwardes she marueled why such a King as he was, would in hir husbãds absence, come to hir house. And in ỹ maruel & consideration she was no whit deceiued, coniecturyng that the fame of hir beautie was the cause of his comming. Neuertheleſſe, like a wise Lady and honest Gentlewoman, she determined to do him honor, & caused the worshipful of hir countrey such as remained behinde, to be assẽbled, for aduise in all things that were necessarie for his intertainement: but the feast & varietie of meats that should be serued, she alone toke vpon hir to dispose and order. Wherfore spedily sending about, and making prouision for al the hennes that might be gottẽ throughout

out the countrey, cõmaunded hir cookes, of thoſe hennes without other thing what ſo euer, to prepare diuers ſeruices. The kyng failed not the nert day to come accordingly as he had ſent worde, and was with great honor receiued of the lady: and in beholding hir, ſhe ſemed vnto him (beſides his imagination comprehended by the former wordes of the knight) to be farre more faire, honeſt and vertuous, than hée thought, attributing vnto hir, ſingular praiſe and commendation. And ſo much the more his deſire was kindled, as ſhe paſſed the eſtimation hruted of hir. And after that the kyng had withdrawen him ſelfe into the chamber ordeined and made ready for him, as appertained to a Prince ſo greate, & that dinner time was come, the kyng & Madame the Marchioniſſe ſat together at one borde, and other according to their degrées were placed at ſeueral tables. The king ſerued with many diſhes and excellent wines, beholding ſometimes the ladie Marchioniſſe, conceiued greate delight and pleaſure. But vieuing the ſeruice and meates (although dreſſed in diuers ſortes) to be but hennes, he began to wonder, ſpecially knowing the ſoile wherin they were to be ſo rich & plentiful, as by litle trauaile, great abundance of foule & veneſon might haue ben prouided, and thought that ſhe had indifferent leiſure to chaſe and hunt, after that he had ſent hir worde of his cõming. Notwithſtanding he woulde not take occaſion to entre into talke of thoſe wants of better chere (hir hennes only excepted) who loking vpon hir, with merry countenance he
" ſaid vnto hir: Madame wer al theſe hennes bred in this
" countrey without a cock? The Marchioniſſe which full wel vnderſtode the cauſe of his demaund, thinking that God had ſent hir an apt time for anſwere as ſhe deſired,
" boldly anſwered the king: No and it pleaſe your grace,
" but of women, albeit in honour and apparell there is

some difference, yet they be al made in this countrey as they be else where. The King hearing hir answer, right well did know the occasion of the banket of Hennes, and whervnto hir wordes did tende: and considred that to bestow any further talke to so wise a ladie, it were in vaine, and that force there could take no place. Like as vnaduisedly he fell in loue, so it behoued him of necessitie wisely to staunch the fire for his honour sake, & without any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thing of hir. And when he had done, to the intent by his sodaine departure, he might couer his dishonest commyng, thankyng hir for the honour which he had receiued, and she recõmending him to God, he departed to *Genoua*.

Here may be proued the great difference betwene wisedom and follie, betwene vertue and vice.

The King more by lust, than other desire, by circumstances indeuoured to sounde the deapth of the ladies minde.

She by comely aunswer payde hym home for his follie. A liuely representation of a noble creature, so well becked with vertue as with beautie.

Fly. Mistresse

Miſtreſſe Dianora.

¶Miſtreſſe DIANORA demaunded of Maiſter ANSALDO a Garden ſo faire in Ianuarie, as in the moneth of May. Maiſter ANSALDO (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Necromancer) cauſed the ſame to be done. The husband agreed with the Gentlewoman that ſhe ſhould do the pleaſure which maiſter ANSALDO required, who hearing the liberalitie of the husband, acquited hir of hir promiſe, and the Necromancer likewiſe diſcharged maiſter ANSALDO.

The xvij. Nouell.



OF all things commonly accompanying the maner and trade of mans lyfe, nothyng is more circumſpectly to bee attended & prouided for, than regarde & eſtimation of honeſtie: which attire, as it is moſte excellent and comely, ſo aboue all other vain toyes of outward apparell to be preferred. And as honeſtie hath al other good cõditions included in it ſelf, as the ſame by any meanes can not ſtraye oute of that tract, troden before by the ſteppes of that moſt excellent vertue: Euen ſo, impoſſible it is for the partie adorned with the ſame, to wander one foote from that foretroden path. Wherefore letts eche wight that traceth this

worldly

worldly life, forese the due obseruation of all things incident to that which is honest. Nothing in this life (saith Tullie in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is so much to be desired as Honestie, for the getting wherof all tormentes of bodie, all perilles and daungers of death bee not to bee regarded. Honestie then beyng a treasure so precious, what care not only for the atchieuing, but for the conseruation ought to be employed? In the practise wherof, one special thing ought to be attended, whiche is, how a bowe or promise ought to be made, or how the estimation of honestie oughte to bee hazarded for any thing seeme it neuer so impossible. For what is it that loue and money hath not brought to passe? What hard aduentures by Iason, what sleight by Alexander the son of King Priamus, what monsters slaine and labours susteined by Hercules, what daungers and exploites some haue incurred & other attempted by diuers? To be short,

Nihil est quod non effreno captus amore, ausit.

As Ouide the Poet sayth:

Nothing there is, but that the louing man doth dare,
Surprised with frantike fitte, eche dede he doth not spare.

Wherfore let euery wight beware how they gage their honestie for any enterprise (seme it neuer so impossible.) Maistresse Dianora derely beloued of a gentleman, and earnestly assailed, in the ende yelded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought to passe (which she thought impossible) was content to surrender to his loue. Who cõsulting with a Magitian, performed hir request: then what followed, and what counsell hir husband gaue hir, after she had broken the effect of hir promise to him, and what Curtesie was vsed on all sides, the sequele hereof discloseth.

The countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleasaunt by reason of many faire mountaines, riuers,

and cléere springs that are in the same: where there is a Citie called Vdina, & in the same somtime dwelling a faire gentlewomá called Mistresse Dianora, the wife of Gilberto, a notable rich má, a verie curteous personage, and of good behauiour. This Ladie, for hir graces and vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentlemá and great lorde, called maister Ansaldo Grandese, who for his liberalitie and valiáce in armes, was famous and well knowen. And albeit that he loued hir feruently, sékyng all meanes possible to bée beloued of hir, soliciting hir many tymes by Ambassadours, yet his labour was in vain. And the Ladie béeing offended for his dayly suite, and trauaile, bée for all hir refusall and disagréement to his desire, woulde not abstéine from louyng hir, but styll mainteine his importunate suite. She deuising with hir selfe how to ridde hym away, made a requeſt vnto him, so straunge and impossible, (in hir iudgement) as hée was not able to bryng the same to passe. And vpon a daye shée sayde vnto an olde woman, (the whyche came often tymes to sue vnto hir in hys behalfe) these
" wordes: Good wyfe, thou hast many tymes assured
" me, that Maister Ansaldo doeth loue mée aboue all o-
" ther, and thou hasse offered vnto mée marueilous gif-
" tes and presentes in hys name: All which I haue re-
" fused, vpon consideration, that I myndе not to fauour
" or loue him for his gooddes: but if thou canst iustifie by
" warrantize, or other probable argumente, that hée lo-
" ueth me so much as thou sayest, I will condescend with-
" out faile to loue hym againe, and to doe the thing that
" it shall please hym to commaunde mée. Therfore if hée
" will assure mée to doe that thyng which I shall require
" him to doe, tell him that I am at his commaundement.
" What is that madame (sayd the olde woman) that you
" desire? The thing which I demaunde (aunswered the

Gentle-

Gentlewoman) is, that he ſhould cauſe to be made here „
without the Citie, during the moneth of Ianuarie next „
comming, a Garden full of gréene herbes, floures, and „
trées, beſpred with leaues, euen as it were in the mo- „
neth of May: And if ſo be that he do it not, then let him „
neuer ſend thée or any other vnto me again: for if after- „
wards he be importunat vpon me, like as I haue hither- „
to kept it cloſe from my huſbande and parentes, euen ſo „
complaining vnto them, I will aſſaye to bée diſpatched „
from his long and tedious ſute. When the Knight vn- „
derſtode that requeſt, and the offer that his Miſtreſſe
made him (although it ſéemed a thing very difficult and
almoſt impoſſible to bée done) knowyng very well that
ſhe did the ſame for none other purpoſe, but onely to put
him out of hope that euer he ſhold enioy hir, he determi-
ned notwithſtanding, to proue what he was able to do.
And for that purpoſe ſent to ſéeke in many places of the
worlde, if there were any man that could aſſiſt him and
giue him counſel therin. In the end there was one found
that offred to do it (if he were well waged therunto) by
the arte of Necromancie, with whom maiſter Anſaldo
bargained for a great ſumme of money. Thē he erpected
the moneth of Ianuarie with great deuotion, which be-
ing come, euen whē the coldeſt wether was, and that all
places were full of ſnow & yce, this Necromancer vſed
his art in ſuch ſort, as in the night after the holy days of
Chriſtmaſſe, in a faire medow adioyning to ỹ citie, there
appered in the morning (as they can teſtifie that ſaw the
ſame) one of the faireſt gardens that euer any mā ſaw,
full of herbes, trées, and fruites of al ſorts: which when
maiſter Anſaldo had ſéen, God knoweth if he wer glad
or not: & incontinently cauſed to be gathered the faireſt
fruites & floures that wer there, & ſecretly ſent the ſame
to his friende, inuiting hir to come and ſée the Garden

which

which she had procured him to make, to the intent therby she might know the love that hée bare hir, & to remẽber the promise which she had made him, and confirmed by othe, that he might from that time forth, esteéme hir a woman so good as hir promise. When the Gentlewoman sawe the floures and frutes and hearing tell by report of the straunge things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir selfe of the promise whiche shée had made: but for all hir repentaunce, she like one desirous to sée straunge things, wente with many other women to sée the same: and hauing praised it, not without great admiration, she returned home, the angriest womã that euer was, when she had considered in what sort she had abused hir self by meanes of that Garden. And hir rage was so greate, that shée coulde by no meanes kéepe the same so secrete or close, but that hir husbande must perceiue the same, who woulde néedes knowe of hir all the whole matter. The Gentlewoman a long time kepte it secrete: in the ende shée was constrained to declare vnto him the whole matter in order. Hir husbande hearing the same was sodainely verye angrie: afterwardes considering the pure intente of his wife, hée wisely appeased hir, and sayde: Dianora, it is not the acte of a
" wise and honest wife to encline hir eare to suche messa-
" ges as those be, and lesse honest to make any marte or
" bargaine of hir honestie with any person, vnder what
" condition soeuer it be. Words which the hart receiueth
" by the eares, haue greater force than many doe esteéme,
" and there is nothing so difficulte, but by the amorous is
" brought to passe. First therfore thou hast done euill to
" giue eare vnto such ambassage, and afterwardes for a-
" grement to the bargaine. For the weight of chastitie is
" so ponderous, as by no meanes it oughte to be layde in
" balance, eyther by impossibilities to bo asse and bragge

therof,

therof, or else by assurance of their conceiued thought to
bring it into question, least in all places the same may
be disputed vpon, and blemishe with the note of light-
nesse, the person till that tyme vnspotted: but bicause I
know the puritie of thy heart, I wil agrée vnto thée for
discharge of thy promise, which peraduenture some o-
ther would not do, moued therunto for the feare I haue
of the Necromancer, who if he sée Maister Ansaldo to
be offended bicause thou haste deluded him, may doe vs
some displeasure: wherfore I will that thou go to mai-
ster Ansaldo: and if thou canst by any meanes so vse thy
selfe (as thyne honour saued) thou mayst discharge thy
promise, I shall commende thy witte: but if there be no
remedie otherwise, for that onely time then lende forth
thy body and not thy wil. The Gentlewoman hearing
hir husband so wisely speake, coulde doe nought else but
wéepe, and sayd, that she would not agrée to his request.
Notwithstanding, it pleased the husband (for al the de-
niall which his wife did make) that it shoulde be so: by
meanes wherof, the nert morning vpon the point of day
the Gentlewoman in the honestest attire she had, with
two of hir seruants before, and hir maide behinde, went
to the lodging of maister Ansaldo, who when he hearde
tel that his louer was come to sée him, marueiled much,
and rising vp, called the Necromancer, and sayde vnto
him: My wil is, that thou sée how much thine arte hath
prenailed, and going vnto hir, without any disordinate
lust, he saluted hir with reuerence, and honestly receiued
hir. Then they entred into a faire chamber, and sitting
downe before a great fire, he sayd vnto hir these words:
Madame, I humbly beséeche you, if the loue whiche I
haue borne you of longtime, and yet do beare, deserue
some recompence, that it please you to tel me vnfained-
ly the cause whiche hath made you to come hither thus

early, and with such a companie. The shamefast Gentle
" woman, hir eyes full of teares made answere: Sir, the
" loue whiche I beare you, nor any promised faith haue
" brought me hither, but rather the onely cõmaundement
" of my husbande, who hath greater respecte to the paine
" and trauails of your disordinate loue, than to his owne
" honour or my reputation, who hath caused me to come
hither, and by his commaundement am readye for this
once to satisfie youre pleasure. If Maister Anfaldo
were abashed at the beginning, he much more did mar-
uell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus to speake,
and moued with the liberalitie of hir husbande, hee be-
gan to chaunge his heate into compassion, and sayd: Mi-
" stresse God defend if it be true that you doe say, that I
" should soyle the honour of him, whiche hath pitie vpon
" my loue: and therfore you may tarrie here so long as it
" shall please you, with such assurance of your honestie, as
" if you were my naturall sister, and frankly may depart
" when you be disposed, vpon such condition, that you ren-
" der in my behalf those thanks vnto your husband which
" you shal think cõuenient, for the great liberalitie which
" he hath imployed vpon me, deeming my selfe henceforth
" somuch bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or ser-
" uant. The Gentlewoman hearing those words, the best
contented that euer was, sayd vnto him: All the worlde
" coulde neuer make me beleue (your great honestie con-
" sidered) that other thing coulde happen vnto me by my
" comming hither, than that which presently I see: For
" which I reckon my selfe perpetually bounde vnto you.
" And taking hir leaue, honorably returned in the afore-
" companie home to hir husband, and tolde him what had
" chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and amitie be-
" tweene him and maister Anfaldo. The Nigromancer to
whome maister Anfaldo determined to giue the price,

coue-

couenanted betweene them, seyng the liberalitie which the husbande had vsed towardes maister Ansaldo, and the like of maister Ansaldo towardes the Gentlewoman ſ ayd : God defende, that sith I haue sene the husbande liberall of his honour, and you bountifull of your loue and curteſie, but that I be likewiſe ſrake in my reward. For knowyng that it is well employed of you, I purpoſe that you ſhall keepe it ſtill. The Knight was ashamed, and woulde haue forced hym to take the whole, or parte : but in offering the ſame, he loſt his labour. And the Necromancer the thirde day after, hauing vndone hys Garden, and deſirous to departe, take his leaue.

Thus Ansaldo extinguiſhing the diſhoneſt loue kindled in his hearte, for inioying of his ladie, vpon conſideration of honeſt charitie, and regarde of Curteſie, repreſſed his wanton minde, and abſteined frō that, which God graunte that others by like example may refraine.

Mithridanes and Nathan.

¶ MITHRIDANES enuious of the liberalitie of NATHAN, and going aboute to kill him, ſpake vnto hym vnknowne, and beyng informed by him ſelfe by what meanes he myght doe the ſame, he founde hym in a little woodde accordingly as he had tolde hims, who knowyng him, was aſhamed, and became his friende.

The. xviij. Nouel.



Strange may ſeeme this folowing Hiſtorie, and rare amonges thoſe, in whome the vertue of liberalitie euer floriſhed. Many we reade of, that haue kepte Noble and bountiful houſes, entertainyng gueſtes, both forreine and free borne, plentifully feaſting them with varietie of cheare, but to entertain a gueſt that aſpireth the death of his hoſt, and to cheriſh him after he knewe of it, or liberally to offer his life, ſeldome or neuer we reade, or by experience knowe. But what moued the conſpirator to frowne at the ſtate and life of Nathan? Euen that froward peſtilent paſſion Enuie, the conſumer and deadly monſter of all humanitie: who. [illegible] and poſt of his deuout hoſte Nathan

ſhan, and ſeking after equall glorie and fame, was thorough enuies force for not atteinyng to the like, driuen to imagine how to kil a good & innocent man. For enuie commonly waiteth vpon the vertuous, euen as the shadow doeth the bodie. And as the Cantharides (which ſimilitude Plutarche vſeth) delight in ripe and proſperous wheate, & crawle in ſpreding roſes, ſo enuie chiefly them which in vertue & richeſſe doe abound. For had not Nathan bene famous for his goodneſſe, & glorious for liberalitie, Mithridanes would neuer haue proſecuted him by enuie, nor gone about to berieue his life. He that enuieth the vertuous and induſtrious perſon, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets faine to murder Telon his apprentice for deuiſyng of the Potters wheele. And Mithridanes diſdainefull of Nathans hoſpitalitie, would haue ſlayne him. But howe liberall the good olde man was of his life, and how aſhamed Mithridanes was of his practiſe, this example at large diſcourſeth.

Very true it is (at leſt wiſe if credite may be gyuen to the words of certaine *Genoua* merchantes, and of others which haue trauailed that coūtrey) that in *Cataia*, there was ſometimes a riche Gentleman without comparison, named Nathan, who hauyng a place or pallace ioyning vpon the high way, by whiche the trauailers to and from the Weſt and Eaſt, were conſtrained to paſſe, and hauing a noble and liberall heart, deſirous by experience to haue the fame to be knowne, and with what nature and qualitie, it was affected, he aſſembled diuers maiſter Maſons & Carpenters, and in a ſhort time erected there one of the ſtatelieſt palaces for greatneſſe and riches that euer was ſeene in that countrey, which afterwards he cauſed to be furniſhed with all things neceſſarie, honourably to entertaine eche Gentleman that paſſed that way: and with a greate traine of ſeruauntes he-

welcomed and accepted ſuche as iourneyed to and fro. And in this commendable cuſtome he perſeuered ſo long, as bothe in the Eaſt and Weſt parts, report was buted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient yeres, not for all that weary of his liberalitie, it chaunced that his fame ſtewe to the eares of a yong Gentleman called Mithridanes, who in a Countrie not farre from his, had his abode and reſiance. Mithridanes knowing himſelf to be ſo rich as Nathan, enuious of his vertue and liberalitie, purpoſed by ſome meanes or other to defame and obſcure the ſame. And hauing builded a Palace like to that which Nathan did poſſeſſe, began to vſe curteſies to thoſe which paſſed to and fro, in outragious and diſordered ſort: in ſuch wiſe as in little time he purchaſed great fame. Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the courte of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates of the ſame, craued almes, and had it, and ſo ſucceſſiuely euen to the twelfth and thirtenth time alſo ſhe retourned againe, which Mithridanes perceiuing, ſaid vnto hir: Good wife you come hither very often. And yet he denied not hir almes. The old woman hearing thoſe wordes, ſaid: O how marueilous is the liberalitie of Nathan, whoſe Palace hath.xxvj. entries by ſeuerall gates, ſo greate as this, and daily begging almes there, neuer made ſemblance as though he knew me, and yet the ſame was neuer denied me: and being come hither but vij. times, I haue bene perceiued and reproued: and ſaying ſo, ſhe went hir way, and neuer after came thither againe. Mithridanes hearing theſe wordes to proceede from the olde woman, fell into a great rage, deeming the fame reported of Nathan to be a diminution of his owne, & ſaid: Ah wretch, when ſhal I be able to attaine the liberalitie of Nathans greateſt things? And why then goe I about

to.

to excell him, when in little matters I am not able to come neare him: Verily I labour all in vaine, if I my self do not rid him out of this world, sithe croked age is not disposed to dispatch him, I must therfore do the same with mine own hands. And in that fury making no ma-ryny to his intent, he rode forth with a small traine, and in thre daies arrived where Nathan dwelt, and then cō-maunded his men in any wise not to be knowen that they came with him, and likewise that they kneine him not; but to prouide lodging for themselues, vntill suche time as they had further neiues from him. Mithridanes then being arrived about euening, all alone, found Na-than walking vp and downe before his faire Palace, without other companie then himself, who in simple at-tire and garment went forth to méte him. Of whome Mithridanes, because he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleasant-ly made him answere: My sonne, there is no man in these quarters that can better tell thé than I, and there-fore if thou please, I will bring thé thither. Mithridanes said, that he should doe him a very great pleasure: but he would not if it were possible be séene or knowen of Na-than. And that can I very well doe said Nathan, notwe that I know your minde. Being then lighted of from his horse, he went with Nathan, who by and by inter-teined him with diuersitie of talke, to his faire Palace. And Nathan incontinently caused one of his seruaunts to take Mithridanes horse, and saide vnto him in his eare, that he should wyth all spéede giue order to his houshoide, that none should tell the yong man that he was Nathan, which accordingly was done. But after they were in the Palace, Nathan brought Mithridanes into a verye faire chambre, that none might sée him, excepte suche as he hadde appoynted to serue hym:

and

and causing great honour to be done vnto him, he hym-
selfe kepte him companie. As they two were together,
Mithridanes asked him (to whom he vsed conuenable re-
uerence as to his father) what he was? whome Nathan
" answered: I am one of Nathans poore seruants, that frō
" the tīme of my youth haue bene brought vp with him,
" and neuer aduaunced me to any thing but to that which
" you sée. Wherefore, although euery man greately prai-
" seth him, yet haue I no cause to commende hym. These
wordes gaue some hope to Mithridanes, by better aduise
and suretie to execute his wicked intente. And Nathan
asked him very curteously what hée was, and for what
businesse he was come thither, offering him helpe and
counsel in that he was able to do. Mithridanes then pau-
sed a while before he would make him answere: and in
the ende purposing to put his trust in him, required with
great circumstance of wordes his faith, and after that his
counsell and ayde. Then hée wholy discouered what
hée was, wherfore he was come, and the cause that mo-
ued hym. Nathan hearyng those wordes, and the mis-
cheuous determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged
and troubled in mynde, notwithstandyng without ma-
king any countenance of displesure, answered him with
" bold countenance: Mithridanes, thy father was a Gen-
" tleman, and of stoute stomacke, from whome so farre as
" I sée, thou wilt not degenerate, by attempting so great
" an enterprise as thou hast done. I intende to be liberall
" to eche man, and praise greately the enuie whiche thou
" beareste to the vertue of Nathan, bycause if there were
" many suche, the worlde whyche is nowe myserable,
" would shortly become prosperous and happie: and dos
" make thée promise, that the intent thou goest about, shal
" be kept secreate, wherunto I can sooner gyue counsell,
" than any great helpe, and mine aduise is this: You may

sée from

ſée from the place where we now be a little wodde, about »
a quartér of a mile hence, whervnto Nathan in a maner »
walketh euery morning, and tarieth there a long time: »
there you may eaſily finde him, and doe your pleaſure. »
And if you kill him, you may goe, (to the intent without »
daunger you may returne home to your owne houſe) »
not that way you came, but by that you ſée on the left »
hand leade out of the wodde, which although it be not ſo »
common as the other, yet is the neareſt way home, and »
ſafeſt for you to paſſe. »

When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he cauſed worde ſecretely to be ſent to his men, which likewiſe lodged there, in what place they ſhold waight for him the next day. And when the day was come, Nathan not altering from the coũſell he gaue to Mithridanes, ne chaunging any parte of the ſame, went all alone into a little wodde, to receiue his death. When Mithridanes was vp, and taken his boawe and ſweard, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horſe, and rode to the little wodde, where a farre of he eſpied Nathan, cõming thitherward all alone, and determining before he wold ſet vpon him to ſée him and heare him ſpeake, made toward him, and catching him by ẏ hand vpon his head, ſaid vnto him: Old chorle, » thou art dead. Wherevnto Nathan made none other an- » ſwere, but: I haue then deſerued it. When Mithridanes heard his voyce, and loked him in the face, he knewe by e by that it was he, which had courteouſly receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had giuen him counſel. Wherupon, his fury allwaged, and his anger conuerted to ſhame: By meanes wherof, throwing downe his ſweard which he had drawne to ſtrike him, he lighted of from his horſe, and did proſtrate himſelfe at Nathan his fathers féete, & ſayd vnto him weeping: Ima- »

" nifeſſly perceiue right louing father your great liberal-
" tie, and by what policie, you be come hyther to render to
" me your life. Whereunto I hauing no right, declared my
" ſelf deſirous to haue the ſame. But our Lord God, more
" carefull of my deuoir than my ſelf, hath euen at the very
" point, when it was moſte needefull, opened the eyes of
" mine vnderſtanding, which curſſed ſpite and cancred en-
" uie had cloſed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready
" to gratifie my deſire, the greater punishmēt I knowledge
" my ſelfe to deſerue for my fault. Take then of me if it
" pleaſe you, ſuch vengance as you thynke meete for mine
" offence.

Nathan cauſed Mithridanes to riſe vp, kiſſing and
" imbracing him tenderly, then he ſayde vnto him: My
" ſonne, thou needeſt not to demaund pardon, for the enter-
" priſe done, good or euill as thou liſt to name it. For thou
" diddeſt not goe about to rid me of my life for any hatred
" thou didſt beare me, but only to be accompted the better.
" Be aſſured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is
" no liuing man, that I loue better than thy ſelfe, conſide-
" ring the greatneſſe of thine heart not inclyned to hoorde
" or gather togither the droſſie mucke of Syluer, as the
" myſerable doe, but to ſpende that whych is gathered.
" Be not aſhamed for hauing a will to kill me, thereby to
" gette renowme: For Emperoures and greateſt kings,
" neuer ſtreatched forthe their power, and racked their
" Realmes, and conſequently aſpired fame, for other pur-
" poſe but to kill, not by murdering one man as thou didſt
" meane, but of an infinite number, beſides the burning
" of Countries, and raſing of Cities. Wherefore, if to
" make thy ſelfe more famous, thou wouldeſt haue killed
" me alone, thyne enterpriſe was not new to be wondred
" at, but a thing in daily practiſe. Mithridanes no more ex-
cuſing his wicked intent, but praiſing the honeſt excuſe,

which

which Nathan had deuised, drewe neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wyth him, which was, howe he greatly marueiled, that he durst approche the place, with so little rescue, where hys deathe was sworne, and what he meant him selfe to tell the waye and meanes: wherein he required him to lay his minde, for disclosing of the cause.

Whereunto Nathan replied: maruell not Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpose, for sithens I was at age disposed to mine owne free will, and determined to doe that which thou hast gone about to doe, neuer any came to me, but I haue contented them (so farre as I was hable) of that they did demaunde. Thou art come hyther with desire to haue my life, wherefore seeing that thou diddest craue it, I forthwith did meane to giue it, that thou alone mightest not be the man that shoulde departe from hence wythout atchieuing thy requeste: and to bring to passe that thou myghtest haue the same, I gaue thée the best Counsell I coulde, aswell for preseruing of my life, as for enioying of thine owne. And therefore I saye to thée againe, and praye thée for to take it, thereby to content thy selfe, if thou haue anie pleasure therein. I doe not knowe whiche way better to imploye it. I haue all readye kepte it foure score yeares, and haue consumed the same in pleasures and delyghtes, and doe knowe by course of nature in other men, and generallye in all things, that long it can not reast in breathyng dayes. Wherefore I thinke good, that better it is to giue, as I haue daiye done, and departe with my Treasures, than kéepe it till nature carye it awaye in despite of my téethe, and maugre that I haue. It is a little gifte to giue one hundred yeares, howe much lesse is it then to giue fiue or eighte of those I haue to liue?

" Take it then if it please thée, I thée beséeche. For neuer
" yet found I má that did desire the same, ne yet do know
" when I shall finde such one, if that thy selfe which didst
" desire it, doe not take it. And if it chaunce that I do finde
" some one, I know ful well that so much the longer as I
" shall kepe the same, the lesse esteemed it shal be, and the
" fore before the same be vile and of little price, take it I
" beséeche thée. Mithridanes fore ashamed, sayd: God for-
" bid, that by separating so dere a thing as is thy life, that
" I should take it, or only to desire the same, as I did erst,
" from which I would not diminish yeares, but willingly
" would of mine owne adde therto if I could. Wherevnto
" Nathan by and by replied. And if thou couldest, wouldest
" thou giue them? And woldest thou cause me doe to thé
" that which I neuer did to any má, that is to say, to take
" of thy things which neuer I did of any liuing person?
" Yea verily answered Mithridanes. Then sayd Nathan:
" Thou shouldest do then that which I wil tell thée. Thou
" shouldest remaine here in my house so yong as thou art,
" and shouldest haue the name of Nathan, and I wold goe
" to thine, and still be called Mithridanes. Then Mithrida-
" nes answered: If I had also so great experience as thou
" hast, I would not refuse that which thou dost offer: but
" bicause I am assured, that my dedes would diminish the
" renoume of Nathan, I will not marre that in another,
" which I can not redresse in my self: and therefore I will
" not take it. After this talke a great deale more betweene
them, they repaired to the Palace, vpon the request of
Nathan, wher many dayes he did great honor to Mithri-
danes, incouraging & counselling him, so wel as he could:
daily to perseuere in his high & great indeuor. And Mi-
thridanes desirous to returne home with his company,
Nathan (after ý he had let him wel to know, that he was
not able to surpasse him in liberalitie) gaue him leaue.

Mistresse

Mistresse Katherine of Bologna

Master GENTIL of CARISENDI being come from MODENA, toke a woman out of hir graue that was buried for deade, who after she was come againe, broughte forth a sonne, which Master GENTIL rendred afterwardes with the mother to master NICHOLAS CHABANNES his husband.

The.xix.Nouel.

READING this Hiſtorie, I conſider two ſtraunge & rare chaunces: the one a liberall and courteous acte of an earneſt louer towardes his beloued & hir husband, in leauing hir vnſourthed, and not dishonored, although in full puiſſance to doe his pleaſure: to hir husband & preſenting him with hir whome he deerely loued, and a newe borne childe: bothe ſuppoſed to be dead by hir friendes, and therefore intombed in graue. The other chaunce a ſingular deſire of a gentlewoman, by dubie ſute for conſeruation of hir honour, although long time purſued by a gentleman that reuiued hir almoſt frō death, and thought vtterly to be bride of life. To praiſe the one, and to leaue the other not magnified, it were a part of diſcurteſie: but to extoll bothe with ſhoutes and

acclamations of infinite praise, no dout but very commendable. If comparisons may be made with princes of elder yeres, and not to note those of later, truely maister Gentil by that his fact, seemeth not much inferior to Scipio Affricanus for sparing the wife of Indibilis, ne yet to king Cyrus for Panthea the wife of Abradatas: although both of them not in equal state of loue, (as wholy estranged from that passion) like to maister Gentil, who in dede for subduing that grieke and motion, deserueth greater praise. For sooner is that torment auoided at the first assault and pinche, than when it is suffred long to flame & raigne in that yelding portion of man, the heart, which once fed with the bait of loue, is seldome or neuer losed. To do at large to vnderstand ỹ prowe of those most vertuous persones, thus beginneth the historie.

At *Bologna* a very notable Citie of *Lombardie*, there was a Knight of very great respect for his vertue, named maister Gentil Carisendi, who in his youthe fell in loue with a gentlewoman called mistresse Katherine, the wife of one maister Nicholas Chasennemie. And bicause during that loue, he receiued a very yll counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto that gentlewoman, he went away (like one desperate) to be the iudge & potestate of Modena, wherunto he was called. About ỹ time the husband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at his farm or in the country, about a mile & a halfe from the Citie (whither she went to remaine, bicause she was with childe) it chaunced that she was sodenly surprised with a sickenesse, which was such and of so great force, as there was no token of life in hir, but rather iudged by all Phisitians to be a dead woman. And bicause that hir nearest friends sayd that they heard hir say, that she could not be so long time with childe, but that the infant must be perfect and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affec-

ted

ted with some other sikenes and griefe that should bring
hir to hir end, as a Timpanie or other swelling, rising of
grosse humors, they thought hir a dead woman, and past
recouerie: wherfore vpō a time she falling into a traūce,
was verily supposed and left for dead. Who after they
had mourned hir death, & bewailed the solemn exportation
of hir soul, caused hir to be buried wout hope of recouery
(euen as she was in that extasie) in a graue of a church
adioyning harde by the house where she dwelt. Which
thing incontinētly was aduertised maister Gentil by one
of his frēds, who although he was not likely, as he thou-
ght, to attaine hir fauor, & in vtter dispaire therof, yet it
grieued him very muche that no better heede was taken
vnto hir, thinking by diligence and time she would haue
come to hir self againe, saying thus in the end vnto him
self: Now now madame Katherin, ỹ death hath wrought
his will with you, and I could neuer obtein during your
life one simple looke frō those your glistering eies, which
lately I beheld to my great ouerthrow and decay: wher-
fore now when you cānot defend your self, I may be bold
(you being dead) to steale from you some desired kisse.
When he had said so, being already night, and hauing
taken order that none should knowe of his departure, be-
gat vpon his horse, accompanied with one only seruāt,
& without tarying any where, arriued at the place wher
his Lady was buried, and opening the graue, forthwith
he entred in, and laying him self downe beside hir, he ap-
proched neere hir face, and many times killed hir, pow-
ring forthe great abundance of teares. But as we se the
appetite of man not to be content except it procede fur-
ther (specially of such as be in loue) being determined to
tarye no longer there, and to departe, he sayd: Ah God
why should I goe no further, why should I not touche
hir, why shold I not proue whither she be alme or dead?

vanquished then with that motion, he felt hir breste, and holding his hand there for a certeine time, perceiued hir heart as it were to pant, & thereby some life remaining in hir. Wherefore so softly as he could, with the helpe of his man, he raised hir out of the graue: and setting hir vpon his horse before him, secretely caried hir home to his house at Bologna. The mother of maister Gentil dwelled there, which was a graue and vertuous gentlewoman, who vnderstanding by hir sonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued with compassion, vnknowne to any man, placing hir before a great fire, and cõforting hir with bathe prepared for the purpose, she recouered life in the gentlewoman that was supposed to be deade, who so soone as she was come to hir selfe, threwe forth a
" great sigh, and said: Alas, where am I now? To whom
" the good olde woman sayd: Be of good chere swete hart,
" ye be in a good place. The gentlewoman hauing wholly recouered hir senses, and loking rounde about hir, not yet well knowing where she was, and seing maister Gentil before hir, prayed his mother to tell hir howe she came thither. To whome maister Gentil declared in order, what he had done for hir, and what meanes he vsed to bring hir thither. Whereof making hir complaint, and lamenting the little regard and negligence of hir frends, she rendred vnto hym innumerable thankes. Then she prayed him for the loue which at other times he bare hir, and for his courtesie, that she might not receiue in hys house any thing that should be dishonorable to hir person, ne yet to hir husband, but so soone as it was daye to suffer hir to goe home to hir owne house. Whereunto maister Gentil answered: Madame, what so euer I haue desired in time past, nowe I purpose neuer to demaunde of
" you any thing, or to do here in this place or in any other
" else, but that I would to mine owne sister, sith it hath

pleased

pleased God to doe me suche pleasure, as from deathe to
life to render you to me, in consideration of the loue that
I haue borne you heretofore.) But this good worke,
which this nyght I haue done for you, well deserueth
some recompence. Wherfore my desire is, that you deny
me not the pleasure which I shall demaund: whome the
gentlewoman curteously answered, that she was very re-
dy, so the same were honest & in dir power to doe. Then
said maister Gentil: My sistresse, all your kin and all they
of *Bologna*, doe beleue for a trouthe that you be deade,
wherfore there is none that loketh for you at home: and
the pleasure then which I demaund, is, that you will
vouchsafe secretely to tary here with my mother, vntill
I returne from *Modena*, which shall be with so great ex-
pedition as I can: and the cause why I desire the same,
is, for that I intend to make a faire and acceptable pre-
sent of you vnto your husband in the presence of ỹ prin-
cipal of this Citie. The gentlewoman knowing hir self
to be greatly bound to the Knight, and that his requeste
was honest, disposed hir self to doe what he demaunded.
Albeit she desired earnestly to reioyce hir frendes for hir
recouered life, and so promised vpon hir faith. And vn-
nethes had she ended hir talke, but she felt the payne of
childbirth: wherfore with the aide of the mother of ma-
ster Gentil, she taried not long before she was deliuered
of a faire sonne, which greatly augmēted the ioy of ma-
ster Gentil and hir. Maister Gentil commaunded that she
should haue all things that were necessary ministred vn-
to hir, and that she should be vsed as though she wer his
owne wife. Then he priuily returned to *Modena*, where
when he had a while supplied his office, he returned to
Bologna, and prepared a great feaste at his house, the same
morning that he arrined, for diuers gentlemen of the ci-
tie, amongs whome Nicholas Chalennemie was one.

Ii.j. When

When the cõpany of the hidden guests were come, (the gentlewoman in so good helth & liking as euer she was, and hir childe wel and lusty,) he sate downe amongst the, doing vnto them incomparable mirthe and pastime, and serued them bountifully with diuerse sortes of meates. When dinner was almost done, hauing before told the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner she should behaue hir selfe, he began thus to saye.

"My maisters, I do remember that whilom I haue heard "tell that in the Countrie of *Persia*, there was a goodly cu- "stome (as me seemeth) that when some one was disposed "to doe great honoure vnto his friend, he had hym home "to his house, and there shewed him the thyng which he "loued best, were it wyfe, woman, daughter, or what so "euer it were: affirming that like as he disdained not to "shewe the same, which outwardly he loued best, euen so "he wold if it were possible, willingly discouer his owne "heart: which custome I purpose to obserue in this citie. "Ye of your curtesie haue vouchsafed to doe me so greate "honor, as to repair vnto this my simple feast, which bem- "fit I will recompẽce after the *Persian* maner, by shewing "vnto you the thing which I loue most dearely aboue any "in this world, or hereafter shal be able to loue so long as "my life endureth: but before I do the same, I pray you to "tell me your opinion in a doubt which I shall propose. "There was a certaine person which in his house had a "good & faithful seruaunt, who became extremely sick, that "person without attending the end of his diseased seruãt, "caused him to be caried into ỹ midst of the streate with- "out any further care for him: In the meane time there "came a straunger by, who moued by compassion of the "sicke seruaunt, bare him home to his owne house, where "with great care and diligence, sparing no cost or charge, "made him to recouer his former helth. I wold now fain

know

hinde of pay, whether for retaining and vsing the seruice
of that seruaunt, his first maister by good right might co-
plaine vpon the second, if he should detaine him again,
or by demaunding of him againe, the second not disposed
to restore him, might sustaine any damage. The gentle-
men after many opinions and arguments debated to &
fro amongs them, and at length the all concluding in one
mind, gaue charge to Nicholas Chasennemie, (because he
was an eloquent talker) to make the answer: who first
praising the *Persians* custome, sayde that he was, (with
the rest) of this opinion, that the first maister had no fur-
ther title in hys seruaunt, hauing in such necessitie not
only forsaken him, but throwen him into the streate, and
that for the good turnes which the second maister had done
him, he ought by good right to be his: wherefore by ke-
ping him, he did no wrong, force, or iniurie to the first.
All the rest at the Table (which were right honest per-
sones) sayde all togither that they were of his opinion.
The Knight content with that answer, and specially be-
cause Nicholas Chasennemie had pronounced it, affirmed
that he was likewise of that minde, and afterwardes he
sayd: Time it is then that I render vnto you the hono-
which you haue done me, in manner accordingly as I
haue promised. Then he called vnto him two of his ser-
uauntes, and sent them to the Gentlewoman, whome he
had caused to be apparelled and decked very gorgeously,
praying hir by hir presence to content and satisfie all the
companie. And she taking in hir armes, hir little faire
sonne, came into the hall, accompanied with the two
seruauntes, and was placed (as it pleased the Knight)
betwixt a very honest Gentleman, and then he sayde:
Syrs, beholde the thing wherein I loue best, and purpose
to loue aboue all worldly things, whether I haue occa-
sion so to doe, your eyes may be iudges.

The gentlemen doing their reuerence vnto hir, greatly
praised hir, & sayd to the knight that there was good rea-
son why she ought to be beloued, vpon which commen-
dations they began more attentiuely to beholde hir, and
many of them would haue sayd and sworne that it had
bene she in deede if it had not bene thought that she had
bene dead. But Nicholas behelde hir more than the rest,
who very desirous to know what she was, could not for-
beare (when he saw that the knight was a little depar-
ted from the place) to aske hir whyther she was of *Bo-
logna*, or a straunger. When the gentlewoman saiwe hir
husband to aske hir that question, she coulde scarce for-
beare frō making answere, notwithstanding to atchieue
that which was purposed, she helde hir peace. Another
asked hir if that little Boy was hirs, and another if she
were the wife of maister Gentil, or any kin vnto him: vn-
to whome she gaue no answer at all. But when maister
Gentil came in, one of the straungers sayd vnto him.
"Syr, this gentle woman is a very godly creature, but she
"seemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not? Syrs sayd maister
"Gentil, that is but a litle argument of hir vertue, for this
"time to hold hir peace. Tel vs then (sayd he) what is she?
"That will I doe very gladly sayd the knight, vnder con-
"dition that none of you shall remoue out of his place for
"any thing I speake, vntil I haue ended my tale: which
request being graunted, and the table taken vp, maister
Gentil which was set downe by the gentlewoman, said:
"My maisters, this gentlewoman is the loyall and faith-
"full seruant, of whome earst I propounded the question,
"whome I haue relieued from amids the strete, whither
"hir kin, litle caring for hir, threw hir as a vile and vnpro-
"fitable thing: & haue by my greate care brought to passe,
"that I haue discharged hir from death, vpon an affection
"which God knoweth to be so pure and perfecte, as of a

lumpe

lumpe of dead lothsome flesh he hath reuiued so fair and fresh as you see: but to the intent you may more plainly vnderstand how it is come to passe, I wil open the same in few words. And beginning at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them, what had chaūced til that time, to the great maruell and admiration of them that heard him, and then he added these words: By meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaunged within this little time, & specially maister Nicholas, of good right she is my wife, and none by iust title can claime hir. Wherunto none at al made answer, loking that he shold haue proceded further. In the meane while Nicholas and the rest that were there, fell into earnest weping. But maister Gentil rising from the borde, and taking in his armes the little childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towards Nicholas, and sayd vnto him: Rise vp sir gossip, I doe not restore vnto thée thy wife, whom thy frends and housholde did cast into the strate, but I wil giue thée this gentlewoman my gossip, with the litle childe, ý is, as I am assured begotten of thée, for whome at the christening I made answer and promise, and called him Gentil, and do pray thée that she be no lesse estéemed of thée (for being in my house almost thrée moneths) than she was before. For I sweare by the almighty God, who made me in loue with hir, (peraduenture that my loue might be the cause of hir preseruation) that she neuer liued more honestly with hir father, mother, or with thée, than she hath done in company of my mother. Whē he had sayd so, he returned towards the gentlewoman, and sayd vnto hir: Mistresse, from this time forth, I discharge you of the promise which you haue made me, and leaue you to your husband franke and frée. And when he had bestowed the gentlewoman, and the childe in the fathers armes, he returned to his place againe. Nicholas

ioyfully receiued his wife & childe, for the which so much the more he reioyced, as he was furthest of from hope of hir recouerie, rendering innumerable thankes to the Knight and the rest, who moued with compassion wept for company, greatly praising master Gentil for that act, who was commended of eche man that heard the report thereof. The Gentlewoman was receiued into hir house with marueilous ioy. And long time after she was gazed vpon by the Citizens of Bologna, as a thing to their great wonder reuiued againe.

Afterwards maister Gentil continued still a friend vnto Nicholas, and vnto his wife and children.

(*.*)

Of M. Thorello and Saladine.

¶ SALADINE in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receiued into the houſe of maſter THORELLO, who went ouer the ſea, in companie of the Chriſtians, and aſsigned a terme to his wife when ſhe ſhould marry againe. He was taken, and caried to the SOVLDAN to be his Falconer, who knowing him, and ſuffering him ſelfe to be knowne, did him great honour. Maiſter THORELLO fell ſicke, and by Magique Arte, was caried in a night to PAVIE, where he found his wife about to mary againe, who knowing him, returned home with him to his owne houſe.

The.xx. Nouel.

VEry comely it is (ſayeth Cicero in the ſecõd boke of his *Offices*,) that Noble mens houſes ſhould ſtyll bée open to Noble gueſts and ſtraungers. A ſaying by the honourable and other eſtates to bée fixed in ſure remembraunce, and accordingly practiſed. For hoſpitalitie & houſholde intertainment, heapeth vp double gain & cõmoditie.

The

The guest it linketh and knitteth in fast band of perfect friendship, common familiaritie, disport of minde & pleasant recreation, the poore & needy it feedeth, it cherisheth, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, goodly blessings, & seruice in time of neede. Hospitalitie is a thing so diuine, as in the law of Nature and Christ, it was wel and brotherly obserued. Lothe disdained not to receiue the Angels, which were straungers vnto him, and by reason of his common vse thereof, and their friendly interteinement, he and his houshold was deliuered from the daunger of the Citie, escaped temporal fire, and obteined heauenly reward. Abraham was a friendly host to straungers, and therefore in his olde dayes, and in the barrein age of his wife Sara, he begat Isaac. Ietro albeit he was an *Ethnicke* and vnbeleuing man, yet liberally intertained Moyses, & maried him to Sephora, one of his daughters. The poore widow of *Sarepta* interteined Helias, and Symon the Currior disdained not Peter, nor Lydia the purple silke woman Paule and his felowes. Forget not Hospitalitie (saythe the sayde Apostle Paule,) for with the same diuers haue pleased Angels by receiuing them into their houses. If Paule the true preacher of eternall health, hath so commended keping of good houses, which by the former terme we cal hospitalitie, then it is a thing to be vsed amongs those that be able to mainteine the same: who ought with liberall hande frankly to reache bread and victuals to their acquaintance, but specially to straungers: which wandering in forein places, be vtterly vnable to helpe them selues, and peraduenture in such neede, as without such curtesie, doe perishe. For the further amplification of which vertue, what shall I neede to remember straunge and prophane Histories? as of Cimon of *Athens*, who was so famous in the same, as the tyrant Crytias, when he wished for the riches of the Scopades,

end the victories of Ageſilaus, forgatte not alſo to craue the liberalitie of Cimon. Pacuuius alſo, the Prince of *Campania*, ſo friendly entertained Annibal, as when his ſonne to do the Romanes a good turne, woulde haue killed him as he ſate at ſupper, was ſtayde by his fathers requeſt (whom he made priuie of his intent before they ſate downe.) Pacuuius had he not more regarded the office of hoſpitalitie, than the ſafetie of his countrey, might full well by that murder, haue defended the ſame from the deſtruction, whereunto afterwards it fell. Homere reporteth, that Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of *Troy* made inuocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be reuenged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to thintent the poſteritie hearing of his puniſhment, might feare to polute friendly houſhold intertainment. Wherfore, ſith hoſpitalitie hath bene thus put in vſe in elder time, practiſed in all ages, and the poluters of the ſame deteſted and accurſſed, and hath notorious commodities incident vnto it, I deeme it ſo worthie to be frequented in noble men and all degrées, as their palaces and great houſes ſhould ſwarme with gueſts, and their gates cluſtring with whole multitudes of the poore to be ſatiſfied with reliefe. Such hath bene the ſacred vſe and reuerent care of auncient time. Such hath bene the zealous loue of thoſe, whoſe fieldes and barnes, cloſets, and cheſtes haue bene ſtored and ſtuffed with worldely wealth, that comparing that golden age, glittering with pietie and vertue, to theſe our worſſe than copper days, cancred with all corruption, we ſhall finde the match ſo like, as darke and light, durt and Angell golde. Ceaſing then of further diſcourſe hereof, this hiſtorie folowing ſhall elucidate and diſplaye the mutuall benenolence of two noble perſonages, the one a mightie Souldan, an enimie of God, but yet a friend to thoſe that fauored good

entertainment and housekeping, the other a gentleman of *Pauie*, a rich and liberall marchaunt, & a frendly welcomer of straungers. The Souldan demaunding the way to *Pauie*, somewhat digressing from the same, is not only honourably conueyed to *Pauie*, and feasted there, but also sumptuously cherished, banketted, and rewarded by the sayd Marchant before his cõming thither. The marchant man desirous to be one of the holy voyage, intended by christian Princes, passed ouer the seas, who put to his shiftes there through the aduerse lucke, receiued by the Christians, became the Souldans Fawconer, and afterwards knowen vnto him by certaine markes and signes, is with greater honor intertained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, sent home again by Magike Arte to anticipate the mariage of his wife, vnto whome he had prefixed a certain date and terme to mary againe, if before that time, he did not returne. All which Noble entertainment, and the circumstances therof, in this maner doe begin.

In the time of the Emperoure Fredericke the first, the Christians to recouer the Holy lande, made a generall voyage and passage ouer the Sea. Saladine a most vertuous Prince, then Souldan of *Babylon*, hauing intelligence thereof, a certaine time before, determined in his owne person to see and espie the preparation which the Christian Princes made for that passage, the better to prouide for his owne, and hauing put order for hys affaires in Egipt, making as though he would goe on Pilgrimage, toke his iourney in the habite of a Marchant, accompanied only with two of his chiefest and wisest counsellers, and three seruaunts. And when he had searched and trauelled many christian prouinces, and riding through Lombardie to passe ouer the Mountaines, it chaunced that betweene *Millan* and *Pauie*, somwhat late

he

he met with a Gentleman named maister Thorello de Istria of *Pauie*, who with his houshoide, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleasure went to soiorne in one of his manors, that was delectably placed vpō the riuer of Tesino. And when maister Thorello sawe them come, thinking that they were certaine gentlemen straungers, he desired to do them honour. Wherfore Saladine demaunding of one of maister Thorello his men, how far it was from thence to *Pauie*, and whether they might come thither time inough to goe in, maister Thorello would not suffer his man to speake, but he him selfe made answer, saying: Sirs, ye cannot get in to *Pauie* in time, for that the gates will be shut before your comming. Than sayd Saladine: tell vs then we pray you, bicause we be straungers, where we may lodge thys night. Maister Thorello sayd, that wil I willingly do, I was about euen presently to send one of my men that be here, so farre as *Pauie*, about certaine businesse, hym will I appoynt to be your guide to a place where you shall haue very good lodging. And calling one of his wysest men vnto him, he gaue him charge of that he had to do, and sent him with them, after whome he followed: where incontinently in so good order as he could, caused to be made redy a sumptuous supper, and the tables to be couered in a plesant garden. Afterwards he went hym selfe to entertaine them. The seruaunt talking with the Gentlemen of manye things, cōducted them at leisure somwhat out of the way to protract the time, to his maisters house: and so sone as maister Thorello espied them, he went to bid them welcome, saying to them with smiling countenaunce: Maisters ye be heartily welcome.

Saladine which was a very wise man, well perceiued that the Gentleman doubted they would not haue come vnto him if he had inuited them at their first méeting,

and for that cauſe, to the intent they ſhould not refuſe to lodge at his houſe, he had politiquely cauſed them to be conducted thither, and anſwering to his gréeting, ſayd: "Syr, if a man may quarell with them that be curteous, "we may complaine of you, who leauing aparte our way "which you haue cauſed ſomwhat to be lengthened, with- "out deſeruing your good will, otherwiſe than by one only "ſalutation, you haue conſtrained vs to take and receiue "this your ſo great curteſie. The wiſe and well ſpoken "Knight, ſayd: Syr, this curteſie which you receiue of me, "in reſpect of that which belongeth vnto you, as by your "countenaunce I may well coniecture, is very ſmall, but "truely out of *Pauie* ye could haue got no lodging that had "bene good: and therefore be not diſpleaſed I pray you to "be caried out of the way, to haue a little better interteine- "ment: and ſaying ſo, his men came forth to receiue thoſe ſtraungers, and when they were lighted, their horſes were taken and conueyed into the ſtables, and maſter Thorello caryed the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their bootes were pulled of, and excellent wine brought forth, ſomewhat to refreſh them before ſupper: then he held them with pleaſant talke vntill the houre of ſupper was come. *Saladine* and they which were wyth him, could all ſpeake *Latine*, and therefore well vnderſtanded, & they likewiſe vnderſtode eche man, by meanes whereof euery of thē thought that the Gentleman was the moſt curteous and beſt cōditioned perſonage, indued with the moſt eloquent talke that euer they ſawe. On the other ſide it ſéemed to maſter Thorello, that they were the nobleſt and Princelike perſonages, and farre more worthie of eſtimation then he thought before. Wherefore, he was very angry with him ſelfe, that he had no greater companie and better interteinment for them that nyght, which he purpoſed to recom-

recompence the next day at dinner. Wherefore he sent one of his mē to *Pauie*, which was not far off frō thence, to his wife, which was a very wise and noble gentlewoman, and afterwards he brought them into the garden, where he curteously demaunded what they were. To whome Saladine answered: we be marchants of *Cypres*, trauailing to *Paris* about our business. Then sayd master Thorello: I wold to God that this countrie brought forth such gentlemen as the land of *Cypres* maketh marchants: and so from one talke to a nother, vntill supper time came. Wherefore he to honor them the better, caused them to sit downe at the Table, euery of them according to his degrée and place. And there they were exceadingly wel intreated and serued in good order, their supper being farre more bountifull than they loked for. And they sate not long after that the table was taken away, but master Thorello supposing them to be weary, caused them to be lodged in gorgeous & costly beds: and he likewise within a while after went to bed. The seruaūt sent to *Pauie*, did the message to his mistresse, who not like a woman, with a womanish heart, but like one of princely minde, incontinently caused many of hir husbandes friendes and seruaunts to be sent for. Afterwardes she made ready a great feast, and inuited the noblest & chéefest Citizens of the Citie, apparelling hir house with clothe of gold and silke, tapistrie & other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir husband had cōmaunded. The next day in the morning the Gentlemen rose, with whome maister Thorello mounted on horsebacke, and carying with him his Hawkes, he brought them to the riuer, and shewed them diuers flightes. But Saladine demaunding where the best lodging was in *Pauie*, master Thorello sayd: I will shew you my selfe, for that I haue occasion to goe thither. They beléeuing him, were contented,

tented, and rode on their way, and being about nine of the clock, arriued at the Citie, thinking they ſhold haue bene brought to the beſt Inne of the towne: but maſter Thorello conueyed them to his owne houſe, where fiftie of the chiefeſt Citizens, ready to receiue them, ſodenly appeared before them. Which Saladine, & they that were with him perceiuing, cõiectured by and by what that did
" meane, and ſaid: Maſter Thorello, this is not the requeſt
" which we demaunded, your entertainment yeſternight
" was to ſumptuous and more than we deſired, wherefore
" giue vs leaue we pray you to departe. Whome maſter
" Thorello anſwered: My maſters, for that which ye recei-
" ued yeſternight I wil giue thanks to *Fortune*, and not to
" you: for I ouertaking you by the way, forced you in a
" maner, to make your repaire vnto my homely houſe: but
" for this morning voyage, I haue my ſelfe prepared, and
" likewiſe the Gentlemen about you, with whome to re-
" fuſe to dine, if you thinke it curteſie, doe as ye pleaſe. Sa-
" ladine and his companions vanquiſhed wyth ſuche per-
" ſwaſion, lighted, and being receiued by the gentlemen in
" loning and curteous order, were conueyed to their cham-
" bers, which were richly furniſhed for them, and hauing
" put of their riding apparell, and ſomwhat refreſhed them
" ſelues, they came into the hall, where all things were in
" redineſſe in triumphant ſort. Then water was brought
them to waſhe, and they placed at the Table, were ſer-
ued with many delicate meates in magnificent and roy-
all order, in ſuch wiſe, as if the Emperour himſelfe had
bene there, he could not haue bene better entertained.
And albeit that Saladine and his companiõs were great
Lordes, & accuſtomed to ſée maruellous things, yet they
wondred very much at this, conſidering the degrée of the
Knight, whome they knewe to be but a Citizen and no
Prince or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that

they

they had talked a little togither, ẏ weather waring very hot, the gentlemen of *Pauie*, (as it pleased maister Thorello) went to take their rest, & he remained with his three guests: with whome he went into a chãber, where to the entent ẏ nothing which he had & loued might be vnsene, caused his honest wife to be called forth: who being very beautiful & wel fauored, clothed in rich & costly aray, accõpanied with hir two yong sonnes, which were like to Angels, came before them, and gratiously saluted them. When they saw hir, they rose vp, & reuerently receiued hir, then they caused hir to syt downe in the mids of thẽ, sporting & dalying with hir two faire sonnes. But after she had pleasantly entred in talk, she asked thẽ of whence they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentlemen made the same answere that they had done before to maister Thorello. Then the gentlewoman sayd vnto them with smiling chere: I perceiue then, that mine aduise being a woman, is come well to passe. And therfore I pray you, that of your special grace you wil do me this pleasure, as not to refuse or disdain the litle present that I shal bring before you, but that you take it, in consideration that women according to their little abilitie, giue little things, and that ye regard more the good affection of the person which offreth the gift, then the value of the giuen thing. And causing to be brought before euery of them two faire roabes, the one lined with silk, & the other with Venetair, not in fashion of a citizin, or of a marchant, but Noblemanlike, & iij. Turkey gownes wt sleues of taffata, lined with linnẽ cloth, she said vnto thẽ: Take I pray you these roabes, with the like wherof this day I apparelled my husband, and the other things may also serue your turnes, although they be little worth, cõsidering ẏ ye be far from your wiues, & the greatnesse of your iorney, which you haue taken, & haue yet to make,

and

and also for that marchant men loue to be neat and fine in things appertinent to their bodies. The Gentlemen much maruelled, and plainly knew that master Thorello was disposed not to forget any one part of curtesie towards them, and doubted (by reason of the beautie and richelle of the robes not marchantlike,) that they should not be knowne of master Thorello, notwithstãding one of them answered the Gentlewoman: These be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreatie did not constrayne vs, against which no deniall ought to be made. That done, whẽ master Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman bad them *a Dieu*, and went hir way: and then she furnished the seruaunts with diuers other things necessary for them, and master Thorello obtained by earnest request, that they should tary all that day. Wherefore after they had reasted them selues a while, they did put on their robes, and walked forth on horsebacke into the Citie: and when supper tyme was come, they were bountifully feasted in honorable companie: and whẽ bed time approched, went to rest. And so soone as it was day, they rose, & found in stead of their weary hackneyes, thre fat and faire palfreyes, and also the like number of fresh and mightie horsses for their seruaunts: Which Saladine seing, turned towards his companions, and said vnto thẽ:

" I sweare by God that there was neuer a more liberall
" Gentleman, more courteous or better conditioned than
" this is. And if Christian kings for their part be suche, I
" meane indued with such kingly qualities as this gentle-
" man is, the Souldan of *Babilon* shall haue inough to doe
" to deale with one, and not to attend for all those which
" we se to be in preparation for inuasion of his Countrie.

But seing that to refuse them or render them again, serued to no purpose, they thanked him very humbly, and

got

got vpō their horſſe. Maiſter Thorello with many of his friends, accompanied them out of the Citie a great peece of the way: And albeit that it much grieued Saladine to depart from maiſter Thorello (ſo farre he was already in loue with him,) yet being conſtrained to forgo his company, he prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, ſayd vnto them: Syrs, I will be gone, ſith it is your pleaſure I ſhall ſo doe, and yet I ſay vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet demaūd to know, but ſo farre as pleaſeth you. But what ſoeuer ye be, you ſhall not make me beleue at this tyme, that ye be marchantes, and ſo I bid you farewell. Saladine hauing taken his leaue of all them that were in companie with maiſter Thorello, aunſwered him: Syr, it may come to paſſe, that we may let you ſée our marchandiſe, the better to confirme your beleefe: And fare you alſo heartily well. Saladine then and his companions being departed, aſſuredly determined if he liued, and that the warres he loked for did not let him, to doe no leſſe honor to maiſter Thorello, then he had done to him, & fell into great talke with his companions of him, of his wife & of his things, actes and déedes, greatly praiſing all his entertainment. But after he had ſerched by great trauaile all the Weſt parts, imbarking him ſelf and his company, he returned to *Alexandria*, and throughly informed of his enimies indeuors, prepared for his defence. Maiſter Thorello returned to *Pauie*, and muſed a long time what theſe thrée were, but he neuer drew nere, ne yet arriued to ỹ truth. When the time of the appointed paſſage made by the Chriſtians was come, and that great preparation generally was made, maiſter Thorello notwithſtanding the teares and prayers of his wife, was fully bent to goe thither, and hauing ſet all things in order for that voyage, and ready to get on horſbacke, he ſayd vnto hir whome

" he perfectlye loued. Sweete wife, I am going as thou
" ſeeſt, this iourney, aſwell for mine honoure ſake, as for
" health of my ſoule. I recommende vnto you our godes
" and honoure. And bicauſe I am not ſo certaine of re-
" turne, for a thouſand accidents that may chaunce, as I
" am ſure to goe, I pray thée to do me this pleaſure, that
" what ſo euer chaunceth of me, if thou haue no certaine
" newes of my life, that yet thou tarie one yeare, one
" moneth, and one day before thou marry againe, the
" ſame terme to begin at the daye of my departure. The
" Gentlewoman which bitterly wept, anſwered: I know
" not deare huſbād how I ſhal be able to beare the ſorow
" wherein you leaue me, if you goe away. But if my life
" be more ſtrong and ſharpe, than ſorow it ſelf: and whe-
" ther you liue or die, or what ſo euer come of you, I will
" liue and die the wife of maſter Thorello, and the onely
" ſpouſe of his remembrance. Wherunto maſter Thorel-
" lo ſayd: Sweéte wife, I am more than aſſured that tou-
" ching your ſelfe, it will proue as you doe promiſe. But
" you be a yong woman, faire, and well allied, and your
" vertue is great and wel knowne throughout the Coun-
" trey: by reaſon whereof I doubt not, but that many great
" perſonages & Gentlemen (if any ſuſpition be conceiued
" of my death) wyll make requeſtes to your brethren and
" kinred, from whoſe purſute (although you be not diſpo-
" ſed,) you can not defend your ſelfe, and it behoueth that
" of force, you pleaſe their will, which is the onely reaſon
" that moueth me to demaund that terme, and no longer
" time. The Gentlewoman ſayd: I will doe what I can
" for fulfilling of my promiſe. And albeit in end that I ſhal
" be conſtrained to doe otherwiſe, be aſſured that I will
" obey you in the charge which now you haue giuen me:
" I humbly thanke almightye God, for that he neuer
" brought vs into theſe termes before this tyme. Their

talke

talke ended, the Gentlewoman weeping, embraced maister Thorello, and drawing a ring from hir finger, she gaue it him, saying: If it chaunce that I die before I see you, remember me when you shall beholde the same. "

He receiuing the ring, got vp vpon his horse, and taking his leaue, went on his voyage, and arriued at *Genoua*, he shipped him selfe in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto winde and weather so fauoured, as within seiue dayes he landed at *Acres*, and ioyned with the armye of the Christians: wherein began a great mortalitie and Plague, during which infection (what so euer was the cause) eyther by the industrie or fortune of Saladine, the rest of the Christians that escaped were almost taken and surprised by him, without any fighte or blowe stricken. All which were imprysoned in many Cities, and deuided into diuers places, amongs which prisoners maister Thorello was one, who was caried prisoner to *Alexandria*, where being not knowne, and fearing to be knowne, forced of necessitie, gaue himselfe to the keping of Hawkes, a qualitie wherein he had very good skill, whereby in the end he grewe to the acquaintance of the Souldan, who for that occasion (not knowing him that time) toke him out of prison, and retained him for his Fawconer. Maister Thorello which was called of the Souldan by none other name than Christian, whome he neyther knewe, ne yet the Souldan him, had none other thing in his minde and remembraunce but *Pauie*, and manye times assayed to escape and run away. But he neuer came to the point. Wherfore diuers Ambassadoures from *Genoua* being come to Saladine, to raunsome certaine of their prisoners, and being ready to returne, he thought to wryte vnto his wife, to let hir knowe that he was aliue, and that he would come home so soone as he could, praying hir to tarie his retourne.

Which was the effect of his letter: very earnestly de-
firing one of the ambassadours of his acquaintance to
doe so much for him as safely to deliuer those letters to
ỹ hands of the Abbot of *S. Pietro in ciel Doro*, which was
his vncle. And master Thorello standing vpon these ter-
mes, it chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking w
him of his Hawkes, master Thorello began to smile and
to make a iesture with his mouth, which Saladine being
at his house at *Pauie* did very wel note, by which at Sa-
ladine began to remember master Thorello, and earnest-
ly to viewe him, and thought that it was he in deede.
"Wherefore leauing his former talke, he sayd: Tell me
"Christian, of what countrey art thou in the West parts?
"Syr sayd master Thorello, I am a *Lombarde*, of a Citie
"called *Pauie*, a poore man and of meane estate. So soone
as Saladine heard that, as assured whereof he doubted, said
"to him selfe: God hath giuen me a time to let thys man
"know how thankfully I accepted his curtesie that he vs-
"sed towardes me, and without any more words, hauing
"caused all his apparell in a chamber to be set in order, he
"brought him into the same & sayd: beholde Christian, if a-
"mongs al these roabes, there be any one which thou hast
"seene before. Master Thorello began to loke vpon them,
and saw those which his wyfe had giuen to Saladine: but
he could not beleue that it was possible that they should
"be the same, notwithstanding he answered: Syr I know
"them not, albeit my minde giueth me that these twaine
"do resemble the roabes which sometimes I ware, & cau-
"sed them to be giuen to three marchaunt men that were
"lodged at my house. Then Saladine not able to forbeare
"any longer, tenderly imbraced him, saying: you be maister
"Thorello de Istria, and I am one of the three marchantes
"to whome your wife gaue those roabes: and nowe the
"time is come to make you certenly beleue what my mar-
chandise

thandise is, as I tolde you when I departed frō you that
it might come to passe. Master Thorello hearing those
wordes, began to be bothe ioyfull and ashamed, ioyfull
for that he had entertained such a guest, & ashamed that
his fare and lodging was so simple. To whome Saladine
sayd: master Thorello, sith it hathe pleased God to send
you hither, thynke from henceforth that you be Lorde of
this place and not I, and making great cheere, and reioy-
sing one with an other, he caused him to be clothed in
royall vestures, and brought him into the presence of all
the Noble men of his country: and after he had reherced
many things of his valor and commendation, commaun-
ded him to be honoured as his owne person, of all those
which desired to haue his fauor. Which thing euery mā
did from that time forth: but aboue the rest, the two
Lords that were in company with Saladine at his house.
The greatnesse of the sodein glory wherin master Tho-
rello sawe him selfe, did remoue out of his minde his af-
faires of *Lombardie*, and specially, bicause he hoped that
his letters should truelye be deliuered to the handes of his
vncle. Now there was in the camp of the Christians the
day wherein they were taken by Saladine, a Gentleman
of *Prouince*, which died and was buried, called master
Thorello de Dignes, a man of great estimation: wherby
(master Thorello of Istria, knowne throughout ꝑ whole
army for his nobility and prowesse) euery mā that heard
tell that master Thorello was dead, beleeued that it was
master Thorello de Istria, and not he de Dignes, & by rea-
son of his taking, the truth whether of them was deade,
was vnknown. Wherfore many *Italians* returned with
those newes, amongs whome some were so presumptu-
ous, as they tooke vpon them to say and affirme that they
sawe him deade, and were at his burial. Which knowne
to his wife & his frends, was an occasion of very great

and inestimable sorow, not only to them: but to all other that knew him.

Very long it were to tell in what sort, and how great sorow, heauinesse, and lamentings hys wife did vtter, who certaine moneths after she had continually so tormented hir self, (and when hir griefe began to decrease, being demaunded of many great personages of *Lombardie*,) was counselled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary againe. Which thing after she had many times refused, in very great anguishe and dolor, finally being constrained thereunto, she must nedes follow the mindes of hir parents. But yet vpon condition, that the nuptials shold not be celebrate vntill such time as she had performed hir promise made to master Thorello. Whilest the affaires of this Gentlewoman were in those termes at *Paris*, and the time of hir appoyntment within eight dayes approched, it chaunced that master Thorello vpon a day espied a man in *Alexandria*, (which he had seen before, in the company of the Ambassadors of *Genoua*,) going into the galley that was bound with them to *Genoua*: wherefore causing him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had made, and asked him when they arrived at *Genoua*? To whome he sayd: Syr the Galley made a very ill voyage as I heard say in *Creta*, where I remained behinde them, for being nere the coast of *Sicilia*, there arose a marueilous tempest, which drove the galley vpon the shoare of *Barbarie*, and not one of them within boorde escaped, amongs whome two of my brethren were likewise drowned. Master Thorello giuyng credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembring him selfe that the terme which he had couenaunted with his wife was almost expired, and thinking that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of him or of his state, beleeued verily that his

his wife was maried againe, for sorow wherof he fel into such melancholy, as he had no lust to eate or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: which so soone as Saladine, (who greatly loued him) did vnderstand, he came to visite him, and after that he had (through instant request) knowen the occasion of his heauinesse and disease, he blamed him very muche for that he did no sooner disclose vnto him his conceipt. And afterwards prayed him to be of good chéere, assuring him if he would, so to prouide, as he should be at *Pauie*, iust at the terme which he had assigned to his wife: and declared vnto him the order how. Maister Thorello geuing credit to the words of Saladine, and hauing many times heard say, that it was possible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort him selfe, and to vse the cõpany of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to *Pauie*. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Necromancers, (whose science already he had well experienced) that he should deuise the meanes how maister Thorello might be borne to *Pauie* in one night, vpon a bed. Whereunto the Necromancer answered, that it should be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he should be cast into a slẽpe. And when Saladine had giuen order therunto, he returned to maister Thorello, and finding him fully purposed to be at *Pauie* if it were possible at the terme which he had assigned, or if not, to die: sayd thus vnto him.

Maister Thorello, if you doe heartily loue your wife, and doubt least shée be married to an other, God forbyd that I should slay you by any manner of meanes, because of all the women that euer I sawe, she is for manners, comely behauiour, and decent order of apparell, (not remembring hir beautie, which is but a fading floure) me thinke most worthy to be praysed and loued.

A i

" A gladsome thing it wold haue bene to me (sith fortune
" sent you hither) that the tyme which you and I haue to
" line in this world, we might haue spent together, and ha-
" ued Lordes of the kingdome which I possesse, & if God
" be minded not to doe me that grace, at least wise sith you
" be determined either to die or to returne to *Pauie*, at the
" terme which you haue appointed, my great desire is, that
I might haue knowne the same in time, to the intēt you
might haue bene conducted thither with such honor and
traine as your vertues do deserue. Which sith God wil
not that it be brought to passe, and that you will nedes
be there presently, I will send you as I can in manner
" before expressed. Wherunto master Thorello said: Sir,
" the effect (bisides your wordes) hath done me sufficient
" knowledge of your good will, which I neuer deserued, &
" that which you told me, I can not beleeue, so long as life
" is in me, and therefore am most certaine to die. But sith
" I am so determined, I beseeche you to do that which you
" haue promised out of hand: bicause to morrow is the last
" day of the appointmēt assigned to my wife. Saladine said,
that for a truthe the same should be done: And the next
day the Souldan purposing to send him the night follow-
ing, he caused to be made redy in a great hall a very fair
and rich bed, all quilted according to their manner (with
velvet and clothe of gold, and caused to be laide ouer the
same, a Coverlet wrought ouer wt borders of very great
pearles, & rich precious stones: which euer afterwardes
was deemed to be an infinite treasure, and two pillowes
sutelike vnto that bed: that done, he commaunded that
they should inuest master Thorello, (who nowe was in-
fidel) with a Sarazine roabe, the richest and fairest thing
that euer any man saw, & vpon his head one of his low
guilt bandes, after their maner, & being
already late in the Euening, he and diuers of his Barons
went

went into the chamber wher maister Thorello was, and being set downe bisides hym, in weeping wise he began to say: Maister Thorello, the time of our separation doth now approche, and bicause that I am not able to accompany you, ne cause you to be waited vpon, for the qualitie of the way which you haue to passe, I must take my leaue here in this chāber, for which purpose I am come hither. Wherefore before I bid you farewel, I pray you for the loue and friendship that is betweene vs, that you do remēber me if it be possible before our dayes do end, after you haue giuen order to your affaires in *Lombardie*, to come againe to see me before I die, to the end that I being reioyced with your second visitation, may be satisfied of the pleasure which I lose this day for your vntimely halt: & trusting that it shall come to passe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to visite me with your letters, and to require me in things wherein it may like you to commaunde, which assuredly I shall accomplishe more frankly for you, than for any other liuing man.

Maister Thorello was not able to retaine his teares: wherefore to stay the same, he answered him in fewe wordes, that it was impossible that euer he should forget his benefites, and his worthy friendship extended vpon him, and that without default he wold accomplish what he had commaūded, if God did lend him life and leysure. Then Saladine louingly imbracing & kissing him, pouring forth many teares, bad him farewell, and so went out of the chamber. And all the other Noble men afterwards toke their leaue likewise of him, & departed with Saladine into the hall where he had prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Necromancer attending, and hasting his dispatch, a Philitian brought him a drinke, & made him beleue that it would fortifie & strengthen him in his iorney, causing him to drinke the same: which be-

ing done, within a while after he fell a sléepe, and so sléeping was borne by the commaundement of Saladine, and layde vpon the faire bed, wherupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of passing price and valor, vpō the which he had ingrauen so plaine an inscription, as afterwards it was knowne that the same was sent by Saladine to the wife of master Thorello.

After that he put a Ring vpon his finger, whych was beset with a Diamonde, so shining, as it séemed like a flaming torche, the value whereof was hard to be estéemed. Then he caused to be girte about him, a swoorde, the furniture and garnishing whereof, coulde not easily be valued: and besides all this, he hong vpon his necke a Tablet or Broche beset wyth stones and Pearles, that the like was never séene. And afterwards he placed on either of hys sides, two exceeding great Golden basens, full of double Ducates, and many Coordes of Pearles and rings, girdles, and other things to tedious to reherse, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kissed him againe, and wylled the Negromancer to make hast. Wherefore incontinently master Thorello, and the bed in the presence of Saladine was caried out of sight, and Saladine taried still, deuising and talking of him amongs his Barons. Master Thorello being now laide in S. Peters Church at *Pauie*, according to his request, with all his Jewels and habilliments aforesaid about him, & yet fast a slepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Churche with light in his hand: and chauncing sodenly to espie the rich bed, did not only marueil thereat, but also ran away in great feare. And when the Abbot and the Monkes saw that he made suche hast away, they were abashed, and asked the cause why he ran so fast? The Sexten tolde them the matter. "Why how now sayd the Abbot? Thou art not suche a

Babe,

Babe, neyet ſo newly come vnto the Churche, as thou
oughteſt ſo lightly to be afraide. But let vs goe and ſée
what bugge hath ſo terribly frayed thée. And then they
lighted many Torches. And when the Abbot and his
Monkes were entred the Church, they ſawe that won-
derfull rich bed, and the Gentleman ſléeping vpon the
ſame. And as they were in this doubt and feare, behol-
ding the goodly Jewels, and durſt not goe nére the bed,
it chaunced that maſter Thorello awaked, fetching a
great ſighe. The Monkes ſo ſone as they ſaw that, and
the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, God help
vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs.

Maſter Thorello opened his eyes, and plainely knew
by loking round about him, that he was in the place
where he demaunded to be of Saladine whereof he was
very gladde, and riſing vp, and viewing particularlye,
what he had about him, albeit he knew before the mag-
nificence of Saladine, now he thought it greater and bet-
ter vnderſtode the ſame, than before. But ſéeing the
Monkes run away, and knowing the cauſe wherefore,
he begā to call the Abbot by his name, and intreate him
not to be afraide. For he was maſter Thorello his Ne-
newe. The Abbot hearing that, was driuen into a grea-
ter feare, bicauſe hée was accompted to be deade dyuerſe
moneths before: but afterwards by diuerſe arguments,
aſſured that he was maſter Thorello, and ſo often called
by hys name (making a ſigne of the Croſſe) he went vn-
to him. To whome maſter Thorello ſayd: Whereof be
you afraide good father? I am aliue I thanke God, and
from beyond the Sea returned hither. The Abbot (al-
though he had a great bearde, and apparelled after the
guiſe of *Arabie*) croſſed him ſelfe againe, and was well
aſſured that it was he. Then he toke hym by the hand,
and ſayd vnto him as foloweth.

" My sonne thou art welcome home, and marueil not,
" that we were afraid: for there is none in all this Citie,
" but doth certainly beleue that thou art dead. In so much
" as madame Adalietta thy wife, vãquished with the pray-
" ers and threates of hir friendes and kin, against hir will
" is betrouthed againe, and this day the espousals shall be
" done. For the mariage, and all the preparation necessary
" for the feast, is ready. Master Thorello rising out of the rich bed, and reioysing with the Abbot & all his Monks, prayed euery of them not to speake one word of his comming home, vntill he had done what he was disposed. Afterwards placing all his rich Iewels in suretie and sauegard, he discoursed vnto his vncle what had chanced vnto him, till that time. The Abbot ioyful for his fortune, gaue thankes to God. Then master Thorello demãded of his vncle, what he was that was betrouthed to his wife. The Abbot tolde him. To whome master
" Thorello sayd: Before my returne be knowne, I am de-
" sirous to see what countenance my wife wil make at the
" mariage. And therefore, albeit that the religious doe not
" vse to repaire to such feastes, yet I pray you for my sake
" take paine to goe thither. The Abbot answered that he would willingly doe so. And so soone as it was day, he sent word to the bridegrome, that he, and a frend of his, would be at the mariage: whereunto the gentleman answered that he was very glad thereof. When dinner time was come, master Thorello in the habite and apparel wherin he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the wedding dinner, where euery of them that saw him, did marueilously beholde him, but no man knew him, because the Abbot answered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, sent Ambassador from the Soudan to the French king. Master Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer against his wife, whome he beheld with great plea-

pleasure and delight, and perceiued very well by his face that she was not well content with that mariage. She likewise beheld him sometimes, not for any knowledge she had of him, for his great beard and straunge attire: the firme credite and generall opinion also that he was dead, chiefly hindred that. But when master Thorello thought time to proue whether she had any remembrance of him, he secretely conueyed into his hand, ỳ ring which she gaue him at his departure, and called a litle boy that wayted vpon him, and sayd vnto him: Goe tell the bride » in my behalfe, that the custome of my countrey is, that » when any Straunger (as I am here) is bydden by any » newe maried woman (as she is now,) for a token of his » welcome, she sendeth vnto him the cup wherein she drin- » keth full of wine, wherof after the straunger hath dronke » what pleaseth him, he couereth the cup againe, and sen- » deth the same to the bryde, who drinketh the rest that re- » maineth. The page did his message vnto the bride, who » like a wise Gentlewoman well brought vp, thinking he had ben some great personage, to declare ỳ he was wel- come, commaunded a standing cup all gilt, standing be- fore hir, to be washed cleane, & to be filled full of wine, & caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was done. Master Thorello hauing put into his mouthe the afore- said ring, secretely let fal the same into the cup as he was drinking, not perceiued of any mã, to the intent that she drinking the latter draught, might espy the ring. When he had dronke, he returned the cup vnto the bride, who thankfully receiued the same. And for that the manner of his countrey might bé accomplished, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, she vncouered the same, & pledging the rest of the wine, beheld the ring, & without speaking any word, well viewed the same, and knowing that it was the very ring which she had giuen to master Tho-

rello when he departed, tolde it out. And she hastily did marke and looke vpon him, whome she supposed to be a straunger, & already knowing him, cried out as though she had bene straught of hir wittes, throwing downe the Table before hir: this is my Lord and husband, this is of trouth Maister Thorello: and running to the Table where he sate, without respect to his apparell of cloth of golde, or to any thing that was vpon the table, preasing so neere him as she could, imbraced him very harde, not able to remoue hir hands from about his necke for any thing that could be sayd or done by the companie that was there, vntill Maister Thorello required hir to forbeare for that present, for so much as shee should haue leysure inough to vse hir further imbracements. Then she left him, and contented hir selfe for the time: but the royall and mariage was wholly troubled and appalled for that sodain chaunce, & the most part of the guests exceedingly reioyced for the returne of that Noble knight. Then the company being intreated to sit still, and not to remoue, Maister Thorello rehearsed in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the day of his departure vntill that time, concluding with a petition to the Bridegrome, that had newly espoused his wife, that he would not be displeased if he toke hir againe. The newe maried Gentleman, albeit it grieued him very sore, and thought him selfe to be mocked, answered liberally and like a friend, that it was in his power to doe with his owne what he thought best. The Gentlewoman drawing of the rings and garland which she had receyued of hir new husband, did put vpon hir finger the ring which she found within the cup, and likewise the Crowne that was sent vnto hir by Saladine. And the whole troupe and assemblie leauing the house where they were, went home with maister Thorello and his wife, and there the

kin

kin and friends, and all the Citizens which haunted the same, and regarded it for a myracle, were with long feasting and great cheare in great ioy and triumph.

Master Thorello departing some of his precious Iewels to him that had bene at the coll of the marriage, likewise to the Lord Abbot and diuerse others, and hauing done Saladine to vnderstād his happy repaire home to his Countrey, recommending himselfe for euer to his commaundement, lined with his wife afterwardes many prosperous yeres, vsing the vertus of curtesie more than euer he did before.

Such was the end of the troubles of master Thorello, and his welbeloued wife, and the recompence of their franke and honest curtesies.

(.·.)

Anne the Queene of Hungarie.

¶ A Gentleman of meane calling and reputation, doothe fall in loue with ANNE, the Queene of HVNGARIE, whom shee very loyally and liberally requited.

The xxxj. Nouel.

FOlowing the preceding argumentes treated in certain of ỳ former Nouels: I will now discourse the princely kindnesse & curtesie done to a pore Gentleman, by a Ladie of later dayes, Anne the Quene of *Hungarie*, who the Gentleman, though beyõd his reach to catch what he aspired, fell in loue with that bountiful and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinking (bylike) that she in end would haue abased hir Maiestie, to recline to his vain and doting trauaile. But she like a Quene, not despising ỳ pore mans loue, vouchsafed by familiar speeche to poure some drops of comfort into his louing minde, and once to proue, on whome hée fixed his fansie, reached him a nosegay, and prayed him to bestowe it vpon whome he liked best. All which familiar dealings she vsed, to kepe the pore pacient from dispaire, that so highly had placed him selfe. But in end perceiuing his continu-

ance,

ance, wold not reiect and giue him ouer, or with scornes and floutes contemne the amorous gentleman: and that long loue might gaine some deserued guerdon, she neuer left him vntill she had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble disposition of this chast and gentle Quéne, I thought good to adioyne next to that of maister Thorello and Saladine: whos for curtesie and passing mutual kindnesse, are worthy of remembrance. And for you noble Dames for a Christall to sharpen your sights, and viewe the recompence of loue, done by a Quéne of passing beautie, and yet most chast & vertuous, that it might somewhat touch your squeymish stomakes and haultie hearts, & lenifie that corrosiue humor, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble suppliants. A helping preseruatiue I hope this Historie shal be to imbolden you to yeld your noble endeuors to Gentlemen, that loue you, in sutes and petitions to their prince and soueraigne. An incouragement (I hope) to be mediators for such, as by seruice and warfare haue confirmed their faithfull deuoirs for defense of their Countrey. Remember the care the Romane matrones had for those that deserued well of their Common wealth: as howe they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole yeres space, for his good reuenge ouer the rauishers of Lucrece: & for Martius Coriolanus, for his pietie and mothers sake, discharging his Countrey from the enimies siege. Let mistresse Paolina of the prime chabre to this Quene Anne, render example for preseruit of such as be worthy to be cherished and esteemed. O how Liberalitie beseemeth a Quéne, no lesse (as one maketh comparison) than the bright beames the Sunne, or the twinkling starres in the firmament. Oh how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduaunced to Princes chambres, no lesse than the gréne leaues to braunched trées, or diuers coloured floures in

Prolegayes. So flourishing be the fruites that bud from liberalitie, and freshe the benifites that succéde of the painfull trauailes sustained in the suites of seruiceable Gentlemen. This Philippo whome the Quéene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but yet learned & well furnished with commendable qualities. His deserued aduaūcement may stirre vp eche Gentle heart, to merite and serue in Common wealth. His learning & other vertues may awake the sluggish courtier, from loytering on Carpets, and doing things vnséemely: His diligence also reuiue the blockish spirites of some that route their time in sluggish slepe, or waste the day in harlotrie and other filthy exercise. Whose example if they practise, or imitate such commendable life as becommeth their estates, then glory will followe their dédes, as the shadow doeth the body. Then welfare and liuelihode abounda[illegible] shal be ministred to supply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion. And thus the Historie doth begin.

Not long sithens Quéne Anne, the sister of Levves, that was king of *Hungarie*, & wife to Ferdinando Archeduke of *Austriche*, (which at this day is parcell of the kingdome of *Hungarie* and *Boeme*,) togither wyth the Lady Mary daughter of Philip king of *Spaine*, and wife of the sayd Levves, went to kéepe hir abode, and soiorne in *Hispurge*, a Countrey among the Dutche very famous, where many times the Court of the *Hungarian* Princes long space remayned. These two Noble Quénes remained wythin the Palace of king Maximilian, Emperoure at that time elected, which Palace is so néere adioyning to the Cathedrall Church, as without sight of the people at their pleasure they might by a secrete Gallerie passe to the Church to heare diuine seruice

ſeruice accuſtomably celebrated there. Which vſe they daily obſerued with their Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court. In which Church was made and erected a high place in manner of a Cloſet gorgeouſly wrought, and in royall manner apparelled of ſuch amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole traine and companie attendant vpon the Perſons of the two Quéenes. Nowe it came to paſſe that a Gentleman of *Cremona* in *Italie* called Philippo di Nicuoli, which in thoſe dayes by reaſon of the recouerie of the Duchie of *Milane*, by the Frenche, departed *Lombardie*, and went to *Hiſpurge*, and was Secretarie to Signor Andrea Borgo, becauſe hée was well learned, and coulde wryte very faire, and therewithall a proper and very handſome man. This yong Gentleman very much frequenting the Church, and ſéeing the beautie of Quéene Anne to excell all the reaſt of the Ladies, adorned and garniſhed with Princely behauioure and Quéenelike qualities, not foreſéeing (when he beheld hir) the nature of loue which once being poſſeſſed, neuer leaueth the pacient till it hath infebled his ſtate, like the qualitie of poyſon, diſtilling through the vaines, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the lokes of his eyes, to ſatiſfy and content his deſired minde by viewing and intentiſe conſidering hir wonderfull beautie, that rapt beyonde meaſure, he was miſerably intangled wyth the ſnares of blinde and deceitfull loue, wherewith he was ſo cruelly inflamed, that hée was like to ſorte out of the boundes of reaſon and wytte. And the more hée did beholde the highneſſe of hir Maieſtie, and the excellency of ſo great a Lady, and therwithal did weigh and cõſider his baſe degrée

and lignage, and the poore state whereunto frowarde fortune that time had brought him, ꝑ more he thought him selfe frustrate and voide of hope, and the more the perilous flames of loue did assaile & fire his amorous heart, kindling his inward partes with loue so deepely ingrafted, as it was impossible to be roted out. Walter Philippo then in this maner (as you haue heard) knotted and intrapped within the fillets and laces of loue, supposing all labour which he should imploy to be lost & consumed, throughly bent him selfe, with all care and diligence to atchieue this high & honorable enterprise, what so euer should come of it: which effectually he pursued. For alwayes when ꝑ Quéenes were at church to heare diuine seruice, he failed not to be there. And hauing done his dueefull reuerence, which very comely he could doe, he vsed to bestow him selfe directly ouer against hir: where delyting in the beautie of the Quéene, which daily more & more inflamed his heart, wold not depart from thence, till the Quéenes were disposed to goe. And if perchaunce for some occasion, the Quéenes went not to Church, maister Philippo for all that (were his businesse neuer so great and needefull) would vouchsafe at least wise to visit the place, where he was wont to see his Ladie. Suche is the ordinarie force of loue, that although libertie of sight and talke be depriued from the pacient, yet it doeth him good, to treade in the steps of that ground where his mistresse doth vsually haunt, or to see the place vpon which she eased hir tender corps, or leaned hir delicate elbowes. This yong man baited and fed in amorous toyes & deuises, now armed with hope, and by and by disarmed by despair, reuolued in his minde a thousand thoughts and cogitations. And although he knew that his ladder had not steps inow to clime so high, yet from his determined purpose he was not able to remoue: but rather the more

difficult

difficult and daungerous his enterprise seemed to be, the more grew desire to prosecute and object him selfe to all dangers. If peraduenture the Quenes for their disport and pastime were disposed to walke into the fieldes or gardens of the Citie of *Hispurge*, he failed not in company of other Courtiers to make one of the troupe, being no houre at rest and quiet if he were not in the sight of Quene Anne, or nere ỳ place where she was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed from *Lombardie* to *Hispurge*, which for the most parte followed the Lord Francesco Sforza the second, by whom they hoped, when the Duchie of *Milane* was recouered, to be restored to their Countrey. There was also Chamberlain to the said Lord Francesco, one maister Girolamo Borgo of *Verona*, betwene whome and maister Philippo, was very nere friendship & familiaritie. And bicause it chaunceth very seldome, that feruent loue, can be kept so secrete and couert, but in some part it will discouer it selfe, maister Borgo easily did perceiue the passion wherwith maister Philippo was inflamed. And one maister Philippo Baldo many times being in the company of maister Borgo and Philippo, did marke and perceiue his loue, & yet was ignorant of the truthe, or voide of coniecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But seeing him contrary to wonted custome altered, & from vsual mirth transported, fetching many sighes & strainings from his stomake, and marking how many times he wold steale from the cõpany he was in, & withdraw him self alone, to muse vpon hys thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane state, hauing lost his sleepe, and stomake of eating meat: iudged that the amorous wormes of loue did bitterly gnawe and teare his heart with the nebs of their forked heads. They thre then being vpon a time togither, debating of diuers things amõgs them

selues, chaunced to fall in argument of loue, and maist. Baldo & Borgo, the other gentlemen, said to master Philippo, how they were well assured that he was straungely attached with that passion, by marking and considering the new life, which lately he led contrary to former vse, intreating him very earnestly, that he would manifest his loue to them, that were his deere and faithful frends, telling him that as in weightie matters otherwise he was alredy sure what they were, euē so in this he might hardily repose his hope and confidence, promising him all their helpe and fauoure, if therein their indeuor and trauaile might minister ayde and comfort. He then like one raised from a traunce, or lately reuiued from an extasie, after he hadde composed his countenaunce and gesture, with teares and multitude of sobbes, began to

" say these wordes: My welbeloued friendes and truly
" companions, being right well assured that ye (whose
" fidelitie I haue already proued, & whose secrete mouthes
" be recommended amongs the wise and vertuous, (will
" keepe close and couert the thing which you shall heare
" me vtter, as of such importaunce, that if the yong Ro-
" mane Gentleman Papyrius had bene heere, for all hys
" silence of graue matters required by hys mother, I
" would vnnethes haue disclosed the same vnto hym. In
" deede I cannot deny, but must needes confesse that I am
" in loue, and that very ardently, which I cannot in suche
" wise conceale, but that the blinde must needes clearely
" and euidently perceiue. And although my mouth would
" faine keepe close, in what plight my passions doe con-
" straine my inwarde affections, yet my face and straunge
" manner of life, which for a certayne time and space I
" haue led, doe witnesse, that I am not the man I was
" wont to be. So that if shortly I doe not amend, I trust

to

to arriue to that ende whereunto euery Creature is
borne, and that my bitter and paynefull life shall take
ende, if I may call it a life, and not rather a liuyng
death. I was resolued and throughly determined, ne-
uer to discouer to any man the cause of my cruell tor-
ment, being not able to manifest the same to hir, whome
I doe only loue, thinking better by conceling it through
loue, to make humble sute to Lady Atropos, that shée
would cutte of the threede of my dolorous lyfe. Neuer-
theleſſe to you, from whome I ought to keepe nothyng
secrete, I will disgarboile and vnlace the very secretes
of my minde, not for that I hope to finde comfort and
reliefe, or that my passions by declaration of them, will
lessen and diminishe, but that ye, knowing the occasi-
on of my death, may make reporte thereof to hir, that
is the only mistresse of my life, that she vnderstanding
the extrémne panges of the truest louer that euer liued,
may mourne and waile his losse: which thing if my sée-
ly ghost may know, no doubt where so euer it doe wan-
der, shall receiue great ioy and comforte. Be it knowne
vnto you therefore, the first daye that mine eyes be-
held the diuine beautie and incomparable fauor of that
supererceilent Lady Quéene Anne of *Hungarie*, & that
I (more than wisdom required) did meditate and consi-
der the singular behauior and notable curtesie and other
innumerable gifts wherwith she is indued, the same be-
yonde measure did so inflame my heart, that impossible
it was for me to quenche the feruent loue, or extinguish
the least parte of my conceiued torment. I haue done
what I can to macerate and mortifie my vnbridled de-
sire, but all in vayne. My force and puissaunce is to
weake to matche wyth so mightye an aduersarye.
Alas syrs, I knowe what ye wyll obiecte against me,
ye

" ye will say that mine ignobilitie, my birth and stocke be
" no méete matches for such a personage, and that my loue
" is to highly placed, to sucke relief: And the same I do con-
" fesse so well as you. I doe acknowledge my condition e
" state to base, I confesse that my loue (nay rather I may
" terme it folly) doth presume beyond the bounds of order.
" For the first time that I felt my selfe wrapped in those
" snares, I knew hir to beare the port amõgs the chiefest
" Quéenes, & to be the párelelle princelle of Christendom.
" Againe, I knew my selfe the poorest Gentleman of the
" world, and the most miserable exile. I thought moreouer
" it to be very vnséemely for me to direct my minde vpon a
" wight so honorable, and of so great estate. But who can
" raine the bridle, or prescribe lawes to loue? What is he
" that in loue hath frée will and choyse? Truely I beleue
" no man, bicause loue the more it doth séeme to accord in
" pleasure and delight, the further from the marke he sho-
" teth his bolte, hauing no respect to degrée or state. Haue
" not many excellent and worthy personages, yea Dukes,
" Emperours and Kings, bene inflamed with the loue of
" Ladies, and women of base and vile degrée? Haue not
" most honorable dames, and women of greatest renoume
" despised the honor of their states, abandoned the compa-
" nie of their husbãds, and neglected the loue of their chil-
" dren, for the ardent loue that they haue borne to men of
" inferiour sort? All Hystories be full of examples of that
" purpose. The memories of our auncestors be yet in fresh
" remembraunce, whereof if they were ignorant vnto you
" that be of great experience, I could adnouche assured te-
" stimony. Yet thus much I say vnto you, that it séeme no
" new thing for a man to be ouercome by his owne affec-
" tion: It is not the Nobilitie of hir state, or for that she is
" a Quéene, it is not the consideration of one parte or a-
" ther, that moued me first hereunto. But loue it is, that

is

is al greater force than we our selues be of, which many tymes maketh that to seeme lawfull, which altogether is vnlawful, and by subduing reason maketh the great potentate and lorde tributarie to his wil & pleasure, whose force is farre greater than the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to attayne to prosperous ende of this magnifike and stately loue, which more & more doth seme infortunate, yet I can not for my life elsewhere applie ỳ same, or alter it to other place. And consuming still through faithfull & feruent loue borne to the Quéne, I haue forced & cõstrained my self by al possible meanes, to gyue ouer that fond & foolish enterprise, and to place my minde elsewhere: but mine endeuour and all my labour and resistance is employed in vaine. Yea and if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the losse of my poore afflicted soule (which God forbid) mine owne handes before this time had ended my desires. I am therfore determined (sith that I can attaine to no successe of loue, and that god doth suffer me to be inspired with that most honourable and curteous Ladie, beyond al order and estimation) to content my selfe with the sight of those hir faire & glistring eyes, farre excelling ỳ sparcling glimpse of the Diamonde or Saphire, and to serue loue and honour hir, so long as life doth last within this feeble corps. Vpon whose radiant and excelling beautie, my hope shal continually feede: and yet I am not so farre voyde of vnderstanding, but that I do most euidently know none other to be the guide of this vnmeasurable loue, but follie most extreme. Vpon the ende of those wordes he let fall many teares, and stayed with sobbes and sighes was able to speake no more. And in very déede he that had séene him, would haue thought that his heart had bene tormented with most bitter and painefull passions. Nowe they being very attentiue to his pitiful oration, were attached

with incredible sorow, thinking thei had ben in a dreame by hering of this discourse, & stode stil a while one loking vpon an other, without speaking word. Afterwards comming to themselues, distraught almost, for the great admiration and wonder to heare him speake those words, maister Girolamo and Baldo, with suasible arguments went about to persuade him to withdraw his fonde and foolishe mind, praying him to place the same elsewhere, shewing him the impossibilitie of his enterprise, & the great perill that might succede therof. But they spake to a man that semed to be deafe, who replied, that he neither could nor would giue ouer his loue, that had alreadie made too deepe impression, what so euer came of it. Notwithstanding, they ceased not stil with sharp admonitions to beate into his head, the fond beginning of his foolish loue: & not only at that time, but continually when they were together, they did their best by oft repetition of his vaine conceipt, to let him vnderstand his manifest error: but their labor and friendly lessons were to no purpose. Wherfore maister Borgo & maister Baldo, determined to giue him ouer, and to attende what wold succede therof. Maister Philippo continuing his pursute, neuer failing to be at church, when he knew the Quenes to be there, at length it chanced that they begā to espie his loue, for that both of them did mark his order, gesture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequentation of the places where they continually haunted, and his maner in placing himselfe at the church directly ouer against them, and his common vse in beholding and loking vpon their faces, iudging thereby that without doubte he was in loue with one of them, or at least with some Gentlewoman in their companie, whereof the two Quenes began to vse some talk, although not certaine vpon whome his loue was bent. Neuertheless they were desirous to know the truth, & expected opportu-

nitie

nitis ſomtime to diſſolue that doubt. In the meane while maſter Philippo thought by gazing on their beauty, to remoue the fire that miſerably did conſume the ſucke & marow of his bones, ſeeking comfort and reliefe for his afflicted heart, the more I ſay he ſought for eaſe, the greater he felt his pain. And truly al they that feruently do loue, aſpire to that, which otherwiſe they wold eſchue, by ſight of them whom they do loue, not remembring that ỹ more they doe contemplate the beloued beautie, the more increaſeth deſire, and with deſire extreme and bitter ſmart. Maſter Philippo then loſt no occaſiõ or time ſtil to behold Madame ỹ Quéene, were it in the church or court, or wer ſhe diſpoſed for diſport & recreation to walke abrode. It chaũced now while things wer at this point, ỹ ladies very deſirous to know vpon whõ maſter Philippo did erpẽd his loue, ỹ fortune opened vnto thẽ a meane to vnderſtãd the ſame. It was then about that time of ỹ yere, wherin all floures & roſes were by Titans force conſtrained to adorne & deck eche gardens & place of pleaſure, & with their fragrant ſmells & odors, to ſcent the ſame. In the moneth of May it was when ỹ Twinnes were diſpoſed to ſhroud themſelues amõgs the hawthorn boughes & honyſuckles that yeld to euery wight greteſt ſtore of delights, at what time roſes & other floures at their firſt budding be verie rare and ſcant, ſauing in Kings Courts and princes palaces, where ſuch rarieties by art and induſtrie be moſt abundant, and all men haue delight to preſent ſuch nouelties to the beſt and principall ladies. Vpon a day Quéene Anne had in hir hands certaine floures in due order couched in a Noſegay, and for hir diſport walked vp & down a very faire & gorgeous garden, in the company of quene Mary, & other Ladies & gentlewomen, about that time of the day that the Sun werie of trauaile, went to hide him ſelf in the back ſide of ỹ weſtern moũtains: where amõgs

other of the Court was maister Philippo. Quéene Anne when she had espied hym, determined to make proufe, with what ladie amongs them all, maister Philippo was in loue, and sporting hir selfe with softe walkes vp and downe the garden, pleasantly iesting with diuerse there attendante, (as the maner is of like ladies) with trimme and pleasant talke, at length happed vpon maister Philippo, who although he was in cõmunication with certain *Italian* Gentlemen, neuertheleſſe his mynde and eyes were fired vpon the Quéene, that when soeuer she appered before him, his eyes and face were so firmely bent vpon hir, as the beholder might easily perceiue, that the visage of the Quéene was the vndoubted harborough of his thought. Philippo, séing the Quéene come toward him, did honor hir with gentle and dutiful reuerence, in such humble wise, as he séemed at hir hands pitifully to craue mercie. And truely who soeuer doth loue with secret and perfect heart, séemeth to vtter more wordes to his Lady with his eyes, than he is able to speake with tong. The Quéene beyng come vnto him with a grace right graue
" and demure, sayd vnto him: You Gentleman of *Lom-*
" *bardie*, if these floures which we haue in our hands were
" giuen vnto you, liberally to vse at your pleasure, and re-
" quired to make some curteous present of the same to one
" of vs the ladies here that liked you best, tell mée I pray
" you, to whether of vs would ye gyue the same, or what
" wold you do or say? Speake frankely we beséeche you, &
" tell your minde without respect: for thereby you shall doe
" to vs very great pleasure, and we shall know to whether
" of vs you beare your chiefest loue. For it is not to be sup-
" posed, that you being a yong man, can spende your time
" without loue, being a natural qualitie in euery creature.
Whē maister Philippo felt the swete voice of the Quéene pleasantly to pierce his eares, and hearde that he was cõ-

maunded

maunded for the loue of hir that he loued, not only to tell whome he loued best and most entierly, but also hir whō he worshipped and serued in heart, was almoste bysides himselfe, such was the ioylitie and pleasure that he felt in his heart, whose face was tainted with a thousand colors and what for superfluous loue & ioy, whereof the like he neuer tasted before, fell into an extasie, not able to render answere. But when he had recouered stomack, so wel as he could with soft and trembling voice, he answered the Quéene in this wise: With youre maiestie (to whome I » I yeld mine humble thanks for that curtesie) hath vouch- » safed to commaunde me (besides the infinite pleasure and » honour, for which eternally I shal stande bound to your » highnesse) I am readie sincerely and truely to disclose my » minde, being promised by your maiestie in opening of the » same, to deserue great thankes. Wherfore your pleasure » beyng such, I do say then, with al due reuerence, that not » onely here at this time, but at all times and places where » it shall please God to appoint mée, beyng not able to be- » stow them in other sort than they be, but were they more » precious and faire, the more ioyfull I shoulde be of them. » These floures I say shall of me right humbly bée present- » ted to your maiestie, not bicause you be a Quéene and of » a royall race (which notwithstandyng is a great vertue) » but bicause you be a Phœnix, a rare Ladie, and of all the » troupe the fairest, garnished with infinite gifts, and pas- » sing vertues, for your merites worthie to bé honoured » with farre more excellent gifts, than these simple floures » be, as she that (aboue al other ladies that liue at this day) » is the honour and onely glorie of all womanhode of our » age, as she that is the Paragon péereleſſe of the vniuer- » sall worlde: when he had sayd those wordes, he helde his » peace. The Quéene with great delight hearing the redy answere of the yong Gentleman, sayd vnto him: And we »

" do giue you thanks for the great honor and commenda-
" tion done vnto vs. When she had said so, without further
talke, she went forth, vsing pleasant talke and sport with
diuerse that waited vpon hir. Quéene Anne now vnder-
stode, and so likewise did Quéene Marie, which of them
the yong *Lombard* Gentlemã did accept for his soueraine
Ladie, whose loue she disdained not, but in hir minde ra-
ther cõmended, esteming him better than euer she did be-
fore: and like a discrete and wise Lady gaue him infinite
praise. She did not nowe as other women wonte to do,
who when they sée them selues of birth more noble, or of
degrée more ample than their louers be (which gift they
receiue through the fauor of the heauẽs) do not onely de-
spise thẽ, but mock them, & their faithful seruice, & many
times with fained countenance & fr' Tembled words do ex-
toll them & set them vp aloft, & by and by almost with one
breath, exchanging their fained praise into rebuke, they
thrust them downe headlong from the tipe of hope & com-
fort, to the bottomlesse pit of despaire: and the fuller she is
of floutes, the finer girle esteemed. But farre better is she
to be regarded, that not finding in hir heart to loue hir
suter, will frankely tell him at the first, that she can not
like him, & fashion hir minde to loue him, requiring him
not to féede his minde with vaine hope, or continue the
time with words and lokes, and pray him to séeke some
other that can better fansie his person than she. And al-
though perchance a man do very feruently loue a womã,
and that it were greate sorrow and griefe vnto him to be
cast of, and receiue suche refusall, yet in mine opinion it
were lesse griefe openly to receiue that repulse, than to be
fawned vpon, and flattered with fained talke, and for the
time choaked with the baite of vaine hope, & afterwards
become ridiculous, and gired by the scornefull. I am as-
sured, that the woman which giueth hir seruant such re-
pulse,

pulse, shall bée counted muche more cruell, than Mai-stresse Helena was to the scholer of Paris, after he was returned from the vniuersitie, to *Florence*, written by Boccaccio in his Decamerone, and hereafter in place described. But lette vs retourne to maister Philippo, who although hée coulde not imagine ne conceine the intent, wherefore Quéene Anne made that demaunde, yet the same was very dere and acceptable vnto him, vpon which he neuer thought, but felt great cõtentation in his mind, and was more iocunde and pleasant than hée was wonte to bée. On the other side, the Quéene, which was verie discrete and wyse, when she saiwe Maister Philippo, at the Church or other place, to make obeysaunce vnto hir, verie courteously requited the same, bowyng hir head to hym agayne, (which she neuer vsed but to Barons and Knightes of great reputation) declaryng thereby howe well in worth she regarded his reuerence made vnto hir. Wherewt he receyued maruellous pleasure and delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than continuance of such curtesies and honourable entertainment. Amongs certaine *Italians* that were vpon a daye assembled in the presence chaumber of Quéene Anne, waiting there vpon Madonna Barbara, the wyfe of maister Pietro Marters Stampa, who with hir two daughters were gone to salute the two Quéenes that wer that time together. There was also maister Philippo, with whom Borgo and Baldo, reasoned of diuerse matters: And as they were in talke, bothe the Quéenes came forth, which was the occasion, that all the Lordes and Gentlemen attended, vpon whose approche, eche man rose vp, & bare headed enquired whether the Quéenes woulde goe. Quéene Anne perceiuyng a companie of *Italians* together, lefte Quéene Marie, and wente streight to them, and very gently inquired of diuerse of the Gentlemen,

their

their names, and of what partes of *Italie* they were, then she came to the place where they. iij. were standing together, & curteously asked first maister Girolamo, what his name was, of what countrey, & whether he were a Gentleman? To whom reuerentely he sayde, that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a Gentleman of *Verona*. Maister Baldo likewise being demaunded the same, answered so well as he coulde, that he was a Gentleman borne, of an auncient house in *Milane*, and that his name was Philippo Baldo. When she had receiued their answere, with chearefull and smiling countenance she turned to Maister Philippo, inquiring of him also his name and countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman or not? Whom maister Philippo after his duetie done reuerently answered:

"Madame, my soueraine Ladie and onely maistresse, I am
"a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philippo de
"i Nicuoli, of *Cremona*. The Queene making no further demaundes of any of the other Gentlemen, sayd to Maister
"Philippo: You say true sir, I dare warrant that you be
"a Gentleman in deede, and he that said the contrary, shold
"declare him selfe to be voide of iudgement, what a Gentleman is. She sayde no more, but from thence with Queene Mary and the whole traine she went to Church. All they that heard the Queene speake thole wordes, did wonder, and could not deuise what she meant by them, notwithstanding euery man thought that the Queene bare to maister Philippo singuler good will and fauour. He (as it was his custome) full of diuerse cogitations, whole his mynde was building of great cities, went to Church, bestowing him selfe in his wonted place, tossing in his minde the Queenes wordes spoken vnto him. And although he could not perceiue to what ende that honorable Ladie had spoken them: yet he thought that her maiestie had bone him great honour. And verily the humanitie and curtesie of

a Ladye,

a Lady is excellent and noble is worthie to be extolled with infinite praise and commendation, who being of high estate and lignage, and the wyfe of so greate a Prince that proceeded of the stirpe Imperiall, not onely dyd not disdaine to be beloued of a man of so base degree, and banished from his owne house, but also with great care and diligence did deuise, and in effecte declare that she was the same whom the *Italian* yong Gentleman did loue, as partly it was euidently to be perceiued, not for other purpose doubtlesse, but to do some noble deede conuenable for the greatnesse of hir estate, & incident to the feruent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwardes in very dede she accomplished. But howe many be there in these dayes, I doe not speake of Queenes and Princesses, but of simple and priuate Gentlewomen, that beyng of meane worship, indued with some shew of beautie, be without good conditions & vertue, who seyng themselues beloued of some Gentlemen, not enriched with the goods of Fortune as they be, do scorne and mocke them, thynking them selues to good to be loked vpon, or ellee moued of vertuous loue, scornfully talking their fee at the fire, as though the suters were vnworthy their copanie. Howe many likewise be possessed and ouerwhelmed with pride by reason nature more propicious vnto them than other, be descended of some great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them, if any other gentlemen beside those that be rich, do inuede to loue them? Again a great number of women (I speake of them whose mindes do not aspire to fame or honor, so that their delights and braueries be maintened) be of this trampe, that they care not whether their louers be discrete, well conditioned, vertuous and gentle, but onely do regarde whether their purses be full of money, or their shapes somewhat mouselaire, not hauyng the valour and good conditions

of the minde, with a thousand other qualities that ought to garnishe a Gentleman, whereby all Gentlemen may ly do growe beautifull, and bee enriched with greater perfections. Some other there be that fixe their mindes vpon yong men, that bee of goodly personage, although voide of vertue or comely behauiour, louyng rather a piece of flesh with two eyes in his head, than an honest man well furnyshed with vertue. Thynke not yet for all thys, that herein men ordinarily bee wyser than women, although they ought to bee endued with greater witte than the woomankynde: but to say the truth, they be all spotted with one kinde of pitch, that warfare here in the large campe of this present worlde: wherof it commeth to passe, that we see little loue to continue long, because as the beginnyng wanted loue, euen so is the ende altogether wythoute, the knowledge whereof consumeth lyke the beautie of the floure. And therevpon many times it chaunceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon transitorie beautie, which dothe dissolue lyke a windie cloude, the little heate therof doth not wax more hotte, but rather congeale to frost, and many times conuerteth into hatred and mischiefe. A worse thyng yet than this is in common practise. There be many that will needes bee deemed and called Gentlemen, bycause they come of Auncient and Noble race, but growyng vp to mans state, they appeare in shapes of men, but altogether without vertue or approued manners, vtterly ignorant what the nature of Gentle is, and doe accompte them selues to be iolly fellowes, when in companie of other as bigge beasts as them selues, they contriue the day in bauntes and bragges, and doe say: Suche a woman is at my commaundement, and such a mans wyfe I do keepe, suche a one is my companyons friende, whereby they bryng many women, yea and of the moste honest

sort,

sort, into slaunder and infamie. Diuerse Gentlewomen also bee suche soles, and of so simple discretion, that although they knowe e clerely perceyue thys to be true, yet allured with ỹ personages and beautie of such Roisters, passe not to gyue the rayne to these vnbridled Jades, and doe not forsee (lyke ignorant Owle crockes) that in fewe dayes through their owne temeritie, they incurre common shame of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the streates as they goe: where one that is wise and discrete, daily doth feare the least suspition that may be conceiued. There is no woman that is wise, but so nere as she can, will shunne and auoide all occasion wherby slaunder may arise, and will chose vnto hir amongs a number, such one as can best please hir fansie, and suche one as for his vertue and honestie she purposeth to match hir self with in mariage, which is the end of all honest loue. Howe be it Nature hath not framed euery creature of one mettall, ne yet Minerua infused lyke wayne into euery head. And truely this our age doeth brede many fayre and worthie women, whose condicions be good e honest, adorned with comely qualities, the generositie, stoutnesse e valour of whose myndes do deserue singular praise and estimation. And what is he, chaunsing vpon a curteous and vertuous woman, that will not giue ouer the loue of all other, to honour and loue hir for euer? But we haue digressed to long from our Historie, and therfore, returning to the same againe, I say, that Fortune ỹ guide of maister Philippo, was fully determined to bestow hir fauor vpon hym. For besides that the Queene dearely esteemed his loue, it seemed that all thyngs were vnited and agreed to sort his enterprise to happy successe. The Queene had to hir Gouernesse Madonna Paola dei Conali, a gentlewoman of Verona, verie auncient e graue (aduised to ỹ calling, by Madonna Bianca Maria Sforza,

the wife of the Emperour Maximilian) whome Queene Anne required diligently to procure for hir, such Rithmes in the *Thoscane* language, and other *Italian* workes, as were to be founde, bicause hir disposition was to be conuersant and familiar in that tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exercise the same, wherein she attained such perfection, as all *Italians* could very well understande hir. Now (as the good lucke of maister Philippo would haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone, continually desiring if it were possible, at all times to be in presence of the Queene: Whome so soone as Madonna Paola espied, bicause she familiarly knew hym, she went vnto him, and sayd: My welbeloued friend maister Philippo, bicause the Queene hath great delight to learne our tongue, and therein alreadie hath some good towardnesse, as by hir common speaking of the same you may perceyue, this morning at hir vprising she gaue me a great charge to procure for hir, certaine *Italian* Rithmes, who besides those bookes in that tongue alreadie printed, gladly desireth to see some tryuine deuises of diuerse learned mens that make in our time: speciallie hir minde is earnestly disposed vpon rithmes cunningly disposed, whereof I thinke you haue some store, by reason of your delight in that exercise. Wherefore I thought to repaire vnto you, and doe heartily pray you, to make hir speedie partaker of such as you haue, wherein you shall do hir great and gratefull seruice, and I shal remain continually bound vnto you, besides that I do purpose when I present them vnto hir, to make hir priuie that I receiued them at your handes, which bicause of the loue she beareth to our nation, she will honourably accept, and the same no doubte when opportunitie serueth, liberally reward: Maister Philippo in courteous wise thanked the gentlewoman, and sayd, that he was sorie he was not able

better

better to fulfille hir requeſt, bicauſe in that ſhirrey he had ſmall ſtore of ſuch deſired things, neuertheleſſe he would make diligent ſearch, to get ſo many as were poſſible to be founde, either amongs the Gentlemen that followed the Court, or elſe where they were to be gotten. In the meane time he ſayd that he woulde deliuer thoſe few he had, and would bring them vnto hir that night. And praying hir to commende him to the good grace and fauour of hir maieſtie, he toke his leaue, and wente ſtraight to his lodging, where diligently he began to ſearche among his writings (the gladdeſt man in the worlde for that occaſion offered) and founde amongs the ſame diuers rithmes which he thought vnworthie to paſſe into the handes of ſo great a Lady, ſauing the thirde Rithme or Chapter, as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctor of the lawes, and excellente Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of *Crema*, who no doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, therby exprelling the amorous affections of Louers, was in our time without comparifon. And bicauſe the ſame was ſo apt for ỹ purpoſe of maiſter Philippo his loue, as could be deſired: he wrote the ſame faire (being in dede a very faire writer) in a ſheete of paper, which ſoundeth to this effect.

Quanto piu creſce (Amor) l'aſpro tormento. &c.

The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,
Melting by times my ſad accenſed ſpreete,
The more to burne, I feele my ſelfe content:
And though eche day a thouſande times I fleete
Tvvixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet and ſmart,
My glorious proofe of enterpriſe makes ſvveete.
The fire ſo high, vvhich kindled hath myne hart,
As by loues flames, none euer had (I knovv)
So lofty ſource of heate in any part,

Svveete then my torments are, ſvvete is my vvoe,
Svvete eke of loue the light, ſvvete the conceyte
From ſo high beames, fallen in my breaſt, groe.

Such povver of porte, ſuch maieſtie moſt gret
I tremble to beholde, and do confeſſe
My lotte to baſe, ſo vvorthy a bliſſe to get.
But Will herein, my Reaſon doth ſuppreſſe,
And thoſe faire eyes, vvhere loue hym ſelfe nie lies
Armed vvith lookes of ioy and gentleneſſe,
Lokes that vpliftes my ſoule aboue the Skies,
And in each coaſt all cloudes expelling cleane,
Do teache ten thouſande pathes to Paradiſe.
My Goddeſſe braue, Angelicall Sirene
Faireneſſe it ſelfe, Dame Beauties ſacred heire,
What mountes of ioy may match my happy peyne?

Whoſe ſcaling hope, hovv ſo enſue diſpeire
Leues vaũt of thoughts, vvhich once ſo highly flevv,
As honour all that earth beſides doth beare,
Comparde to this, but baggage vvere to vevv.

When Maſter Philippo had written out theſe verſes, immediatly he returned to the court, and cauſed Madonna Paola, to be called vnto him by one of the Groomes of the Chamber, to whome he ſayde: Miſtreſſe Paola, I haue brought you a ditie, that is very trim & pretty, which I pray you deliuer to the Queene, and I will do what I can to get other. Miſtreſſe Paola toke them, and went into the chamber, and finding the Quéene alone, ſayd vnto hir: Madame, this morning ye commaunded me to get you ſome *Italian* Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receiued theſe few verſes of maiſter Philippo, ſecretarie to the Lord Andrea Borgo, who hath promiſed to bring me

me other. The Quéene hearing hir speake those wordes, smiling receiued the paper, and read the same: the sense wherof she liked very wel, thinking that master Philippo had bene the compositor of the same, and that of purpose he had made them for hir, whereby shée was oute of doubt that it was she that master Philippo so feruently loued, and the better hir opinion was confirmed, bicause some of the wordes tended to the state of hir personage. And considering the valor of his minde, she blamed Nature, for that in a mã so basely borne she had sowen séede that brought forth such a Gẽtlemanlike and noble hart, greatly to hir selfe praising the yong man. Then she conferred the whole matter with hir cousin Quéene Marie, which was a wise and comely Ladie, and vpon that loue they vsed many discourses, more and more esteming the yong gentleman. Quene Anne determined, when conueniently shée might, to render to maister Philippo for his great loue condigne reward: and studying still howe to requite his curtesie, euer when she saw master Philippo, she vsed him with hir wonted chere & grateful salutation, (which thing only euery honest gẽtlemã ought to expect that is indued with reason, at ỹ hands of a princesse so noble & worthy, as a reward sufficient, ỹ inequalitie of the parties considered) Wherof master Philippo was ỹ best contented man of the world, and durst not hope for greater recompence, continuing his wonted life, féeding himself still with that beloued sight: in suche wise as many gentlemen enuied the fauor borne vnto him by ỹ Quene, who for none other cause did vse that curtesy, but for that she saw him to be a vertuous yong man, and well lerned: continually esteemyng those, that eyther wyth learnyng or other gyftes of the mynde were indewed: and when occasion chaunced, shée vouchesafed to bestowe vpon them courteous intertainement and liberall rewardes,

It for

It fortuned about that time that the Emperor Maximi-
lian died, Charles his nephew (which was the Empero
Charles, the fifthe) then being in *Spayne*: by reason o
whose death the Lorde Andrea Borgo, purposed to send
one of his Gentlemen to kyng Charles, for the confirma-
tion of that liuing he enioyed, giuen vnto him for his lo
and faithfull seruice by the sayd Maximilian. Amongst all
he chose this maister Philippo, for his wisedome and ex-
perience in such affaires. Whiche done, he went to the
Quenes, and gaue them to vnderstand that shortely he
would send his Secretarie into *Spayne*, and told them the
cause, humbly praying them both, that they would write
their fauourable letters in his behalf. The Quenes know-
ing what paine and trauell he had sustained in the ser-
uice of Maximilian, and what daungers he had passed,
were very willyng therunto. Now Quene Anne consi-
dered that she had conuenient time to recompence maister
Philippo for his long loue born vnto hir. And bicause she
was the most curteous Lady of the world, and therwith-
all most bountifull and liberall, and not only with cour-
ly talke and other gesture: but also in effecte willing to
do them good, whome she honoured in minde, concluded
what to do, requiring the Lorde Andrea to sende his Se-
cretarie vnto hir, when he was readie to depart, for that
besides Letters, she would by mouth cõmit certain busi-
nesse for hir to do in the Court of *Spayne*. When the Lord
Andrea was gone, Quene Anne began to deuise with
the other Quene what she might do for maister Philippo,
who prayed Quene Anne, after she had commended him
in letters, to suffer hir to make the ende and conclusion
of the same. Wherupon both the Quenes wrote many
letters into *Spayne* to king Charles, and to the Lord Chã-
cellour and other noble men, whome they thought to be
apt and mete ministers to bring the effect of their letters
to passe.

to passe. When the Lorde Andrea had put all things in order for that dispatch, he sayd to master Philippo (which was nowe furnished with all things necessarie and appertinent for that long voyage) Philippo remembre this day that you go to Quéene Anne, and tell hir, that I willed you to come vnto hir, to know if she would cõmaund you any seruice to the Catholike King, where you shall humbly offer your selfe, in what it pleaseth hir to commaunde: you shall also tell hir, what thyngs I haue giuen vnto you in charge by speciall commission. Neuer conlde more pleasant talke sounde into the eares of Master Philippo, than this, who for that he should bothe sée and speake vnto his Ladie before his departure, and for that she would commit vnto him the doing of hir affaires in *Spayne*, was the gladdest and best contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repaire to the Quéene, he went vnto hir, & gaue hir to vnderstãd by one of the priuie Chamber, that hée was attendant there to know hir pleasure. The Quéene certified of his readinesse to depart, by and by toke order that he should come into hir chãbre, who entring the same, with trembling heart, after he had done his humble reuerẽce, with great feare and bashfulnesse, sayd: Pleaseth your Paiestie, that my lorde Borgo, being about to addresse me his Secretarie into *Spayne*, to the Catholike King there, hath commaunded me to waite vpon your highnesse, to know your pleasure for certain affaires to be done for your maiestie. Wherfore may it please the same to employe mée, youre humble seruaunt, I shall thinke my selfe the happiest man of the worlde: A thyng so blessed and ioyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto mée, greater felicitie. Then he disclosed vnto hir the rest of his message, which was cõmitted vnto him by his lord and master. The Quene beholding him with mery coun-

" tenaunce gently sayd vnto him: And we for the trust we
" haue in you to do our message & other affaires in Spayne,
" haue required you to come hither. And bicause we know
" you to be a Gentleman, and assured that you will gladly
" do your endeuour in any thing that may do vs pleasure,
" haue chosen you aboue any other. Our will and cõman-
" dement is, that first you deliuer these letters, conteining
" matters of great importance to the handes of the catho-
" like King, and that you do our humble commendations
" to his maiestie. Then all the rest accordingly as they be
" directed, which principally aboue other things we praye
" you to dispatch vpon your arriuall. And if we be able to
" do you any pleasure, eyther for your preferment, or for
" other commoditie, spare not to write vnto vs your
" mynde and (we do assure you) the same shalbe effectually
" accomplished, to the vttermoste of our indeuour, which
" we do of our owne motion frankly offre vnto you, in cõ-
" sideration of the fidelitie, worthinesse, and honest beha-
" uiour always knowen to be in you. Maister Philippo hea-
ring these wordes, was replenished with such ioy, as he
thought himself rapt into the heauens, and his heart felt
such pleasure, as it seemed to flete in some depe sea of de-
lites: and after the best maner he coulde, thanked hir for
hir curtesie: and albeit (he sayd) that he knew hym self
vnworthie of that fauour, yet he dedicated the same to
hir commaundement, surrendring himself as a slaue and
faithfull seruant to hir maiestie. Then vpon his knés,
to his great contentation he kissed hir hãds, which of hir
self she offred vnto him, & thẽ reuerẽtly he toke his leaue.
When he was gone out of the chamber, he met with the
Quenes coferer, that attended for him, who taking him
aside, did put into his hand a purse with .500. crownes, &
the maister of the horse presented vnto him a very goodly
and beautifull horse, wherwith maister Philippo, was so

well

well pleased, as he was like to leape out of his skin for ioy. Then he toke his iorney & arriued at the Courte in *Spayne*, where at oportunitie, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accomplished other businesse and message prescribed vnto him by Quéene Anne: And when he had dispatched the Quénes other letters, he attended the businesse of his Lorde Andrea Borgo. The King perused the contentes of the letters sent vnto him by his sister and kynswoman, so did the Lord Chauncelour, (which at that time was the lord Mercurino Gattinara) and other: to whom the Quénes had written: whereby the kyng was solicited to stand good Lord, to the Lord Andrea Borgo, & likewise exhorted to be beneficial to master Philippo, whō for his good condicios & experience they had sent vnto him in ỳ ambassage. Upon a day ỳ king moued by the lord chācelor, caused master Philippo to com before him, to whō kneling before his maiesty, ỳ king said these wordes: The testimonie & report so honorably made of you " by the two Quenes, frō whom you brought vs letters, & " the hope which we haue to find you a faithful & profitable " seruant, and to be correspondent in effect to the tenor of " those letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the numbre " of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our presence " you shall sweare vnto vs to be faithfull and true. Master " Philippo that expected for no such dignitie, maruelled at the kings wordes, and there by othe ministred vnto him by the lorde Chauncelour was receiued into his seruice, & exercised that office, in singular fauor of the King, to the great satisfactiō of al men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperor, knowing the experiēce that master Philippo had in the affaires of *Italie*, and specially in *Lombardie*, he cōmitted vnto him al maters touching the state of ỳ region, which so happily came to passe to master Philippo, as besides the ornaments of vertue & wisedom,

he acquired greate riches, and yet he continually serued and worshipped the Quéne as his noble patronesse and worthy mistresse. Tell me now ye faire Ladies and gentlewomen: What shall we say of the princely behauiour and noble disposition of this Quene? Truly in my iudgement, she deserueth that praise and commendation that may be attributed to the moste excellente Ladie of the worlde, who neuer gaue ouer hir faithfull seruaunt tyll she had bountifully with hir owne handes and commendation, rendred vnto him a most Princely reward. And as the sunne in beautie and brightnesse doeth surmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen so magnificence and liberalitie in eche Ladie doth excell al other vertues, specially in those personages, that kéepe the state of Princes. But to conclude, méete and requisite it is, that ye beautifie this most curteous and liberall Quéne with due praises. For surely in my iudgement, yf all women would conferre theyr heades and wittes together, and deuise Hymnes and Sonnets of Liberalitie, they can neuer sufficiently be able to celebrate the praise and glorie of this Quéne.

Alexander de Medices

Duke of Florence.

¶ The gentle and iuſt acte of ALEXANDER de MEDICES the firſt Duke of FLORENCE, vpon a Gentleman whome he fauoured, who hauing rauiſhed the daughter of a poore Myller, cauſed him to marie hir, for the greater honour and celebration wherof, he appointed hir a riche and honourable dowrie.

The. xxij. Nouell.

IF the force of Vertue were not apparant at the ſighte of eye, it would be demed to be of leſſe value than the greatneſſe therof deſerueth (for ſundry cauſes riſing in the myndes of men) and that by performing the littie which reſted for ẏ entier perfectiõ of hir whole vnited glorie. Now bicauſe that hir effectes be diuerſe, and that diuerſly they be vſed, the examples alſo of ſuch diuerſitie, doe variate and make diuerſe ẏ affections of men: ſome to folow that qualitie & other that part, proceding from the whole and perfect body of vertue, which hath cauſed ſome to winne the price of modeſtie and temperance in their dedes, other ful of mag-

nanimitie (not familiar to many) haue resisted the assaultes of Fortune. Many other haue embraced that only honor which is the nourice of ech good act, wherby they haue well ruled the state of free cities, or guided the armies of mightie Monarchs. And such whilom ỹ cities of *Rome* *Athenes*, *Sparta*, and the ancient monarchs of the *Medes*, the *Persians*, and *Assyrians* did see. I will omit a good companie of those sage and wise men, which haue appaised the troubles of Cities, the inquietations of Palaces, the cries of Iudgement seates, the dissimulation and deceiptfull flatteries of Courtes, the carefull griefs which the housholder by gouernement of his house and familie doth sustaine and feele, of purpose more frankly to retire to the studie of sapience, which alone is able to make a man happie, & worthy to be partaker of the diuinitie. But aboue al, I wil praise him which not subiect to the law, liueth nevertheless like him that is most thrall thervnto, or without respect of bloud or frendship shall exercise Iustice vpon his dearest and best beloued: as in olde tyme Manlius and Torquatus at *Rome*, the people of *Athenes* towardes one Tinnagoras, who beyond the duetie of an Ambassador of a franke citie, fell downe on his knés and worshipped the *Persian* King. And in oure time the Marquize of *Ferrara*, by doing to death his owne sonne for adulterie committed with his mother in law. And yet Iustice may redounde and sauour of some crueltie, which rather turneth to shame than praise: as Iohn Maria Visconte Duke of Milan, when he caused a couetous priest to be buried quick, with ỹ corps of him whom he had refused to put into the grounde without money, the historie wherof is hereafter remembred, so as mediocritie of punishment ought to be yoked wt the rigor of the law, for ỹ mitigation of the same. And beholde, wherfore the great *Dictator* Iulius Cæsar loued better to gain the hart of his

enimies

enimies with mercie, than vanquish & bring them to obedience, with massy manacles & giues of iron. Moreouer in our age Alphonsus of *Aragon* (the true sampler of a iust & righteous prince) did not he esteeme (when he straightly besieged *Gaiette*) the victorie to be more glorious & better gotten, which is done by cõposition and gentlenesse, than the bloody conquest, coloured with the teares and blood of a poore simple people? And truly princes & great lordes, specially they which newly (without succession receiued from their ancestors) ariue to the gouernement of some cõmon welth, ought continually to haue before their eyes, an honest severitie for the holinesse of the law, & a graue mildnesse, to moderate the rigor of their former dutie. For by ỹ meanes right is mainteined, the heart of má is won, so wel as by violẽce: & the state of gouernmẽt taketh so good footing, as the wind of no seditiõ afterwards can remoue the same, being foũded vpon a sure stone, & framed vpon a rock durable for a lõg time. Wherof we haue an exãple of fresh memorie of a kind act, ful both of wisedom & gentle severitie, in a prince of our time, who without effusion of bloud punished with rigor enough, a trespasse cõmitted, and swetely remitted the paine vpon him, which merited grieuous, nay mortal punishment, as at large you shall sée by the discourse that followeth. Alexander de Medices, fauored by the Church of *Rome*, and armed with the Papall standard) was he that first with great astiutie and wisedome inueyed the seniorie of *Florence*, immediately vsurpyng the name, title, and prerogatiues of Duke. The same albeit vpon the prime face, he was odious to the people of *Florence*, wroth for losing of their auncient libertie, and displeasant to the Senatours and potentates, to sée themselues depriued of the soueraintie of Iustice, and of the authoritie they had to commaunde ouer all the Citizens, yet for al that was he indued with so good

so good qualities, and gouerned so well his principalitie, as that which at the beginnyng was termed *Tyrannie*, was receiued as iust domination, and that whiche was supposed to be abused by force, semed to be done as it wer by lawful succession. And they counted them selues happy (when they saw their luck to be such as their common wealth must néedes obey the aduise and pleasure of one Prince alone) to haue a soueraine lorde, so wise so bertuous and so ful of curtesie: Who albeit, in other things he shewed him selfe praise worthie, noble, and of gentle kynde, yet banquished he him selfe in him selfe, and in the rest of his perfection, by that indifferent iustice, which made him wonderfull, by reason hée denied the same to none, and in no one iote shewed him selfe parcial to any, which thought by him to be supported in their follies.

And that which was more to be wondred in hym, & augmented the praise of his integritie in iudgement, was, that he punished in an other the thyng, which by reason he ought to haue pardoned and remitted, he beyng attainted & well beate with that disease. But the good Lord applied to reason, to time, & to the grauitie of the fact and qualitie of the offended persones. For where the greatnesse of the déede surpasseth all occasion of pardon and mercy, the Prince, Judge, or Magistrate ought to dispoile and put of his sweetest affections, to apparel himself with rigor, which reacheth the knyfe into the hande of him that ruleth, of purpose that so priuate familiaritie, do not in the ende raise in the subiects heart a contempt of their superiours, and an vnbridled licence, lawlesse to line at their pleasure. Now the thing which I meane to tel, consisteth in the proofe of a rare and exquisite prudence, which seldome or neuer, harboureth in yong age, the heate wherof, can not but with great difficultie, féele the coldnesse and correction of reason: And likewyse the causes

from

from whence wisdomes force procedeth, doe rest in long experience of things, wherby men ware old in ripenesse of witte and their dedes become worthy of praise. Then Duke Alexander ordred so wel his estates, and kept such a goodly and plentifull Court, as the same gaue place to no Prince of *Italie*, how great or rich so euer it was, and that he did aswell for his owne garde & honor, as to shew the natural stoutnesse of his corage, not using for all that any insolencie or vnseemely dealing against the haynous and auncient enimies of his house. Amongs this goodly troupe of courtiers, which ordinarily folowed the Duke, there was a *Florentine* gentleman, very neere the Duke, and the best beloued of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Manor hard by *Florence*, where he was very well & stately lodged, which caused him many times to forsake the Citie, with two of his companions, to recreate him self in that pleasant place. It chaunced vpon a day, he being in his fieldish house, bisides the which there was a Mill, the maister whereof had a passing faire daughter, whome the sayd Gentleman did well marke and behold, and with hir became straungely in loue, in whome also appeared some Noble port, that excéded the bloud and race whereof she came. But what? The heauens be not so spare distributers of their gifts, but sometimes diuide them with the least measure, and at other times in equall weight or greatest heape, to them that be of baslest sort and popular degrée, so well, as to the greatest men and of most noble race. *Rome* sometimes hath sén a bondman and slaue, sometimes a runnagates sonne, for his wit and corage to beare the scepter in his hand, and to decide the causes of a lofty people, who already by reason of his sleights and practises, began to aspire the Empire of the whole world. And hée that within our Fathers remembrance desireth to know what that great Tambarlane of

Kr.j. *Tarta-*

Tartarie was, the astonishment and ruine of all the Est partes, shall well perceiue that his originall sorted from the vulgar sort, & from the baseste place that was among all estates: wherby must be confessed, that the goodnesse of nature is such and so great, that she wil helpe hir nourite children (whatsoeuer they be,) the best she can. Not that I meane to inferre hereby, but that the blood of predecessors, with the institution of their posterity, much augmenteth the force of the sprite, and accomplisheth that more sincerely whereunto nature hath giuen a beginning.

Now to come to our purpose, this yong Courtier, taken and chained in the bandes of loue, fettred & clogged with the beauty and good grace of that Countrey wench, sore thought the meanes how he might inioy the thing after which he hoped. To loue hir, he demed it vnworthy of his degrée. And yet he knew hir to be such (by report of many) as had a very good wit, tongue at will, and which is more esteemed, a Paragon and mirror of chast life & modesty. Which tormented this amorous *Mounsier* beyõd measure, and yet chaunged not his affection, assuring himself that at length he should attaine the end of his desires, and glut his vnsatiable hunger, which pressed him frõ day to day to gather that swete and sauorous frute which louers so egerly sue for at maydens handes of semblable age to this, who then was betwene .xvj. and .xvij. yeres. This louer did to vnderstand to his companions his griefe and frensie, who sory for the same, assayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling him that it was vnseemely for a Gentleman of his accompt, to make himself a fable to ỹ people, which would come to passe if they knew how vndiscretely he had placed his loue: ỹ that there wer a number of fair & honest gentlewomen to whom commenably & with great contentation he might addresse the same. But he which much lesse saw, than blind loue him selfe ỹ was

his

his guid, & he that was more bare of reason & aduise than the Poets faine *Cupido* to be naked of apparel, wold not heare the good counsel, which his companions gaue him, but rather sayd that it was lost time for them to bée suche words, for he had rather die, and to indure all the mocks & scoffs of the world, than lose the most delicate pray (in his minde,) that could chaunce into the handes of man, adding moreouer, that the homelinesse & rudenesse of the Countrey, had not so much anoyed his new beloued, but she deserued for hir beauty to be compared with the greatest Minion and finest attired gentlewoman of the City. For this maiden had but the ornament and myniomesse which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force and by trumperies, vsurpe that which the heauens denie them. Touching hir vertue let that passe in silence, sithēs that she (quod hée sighing) is too chast & vertuous for one whome I wold chose to daly with all. My desire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or some of those auncient Matrones, which in elder yeres builded the temple of womans *Fortune* at *Rome*. The companions of this louer séeing how he was bent, promised him what they were able to doe, for accomplishment of his will, for the which hée thanked thē very heartily, offring himself to like duety, wher fortune should prepare the proofe of their affection & náde of his amorous seruice. In ỳ meane time, conceining in his minde some new deuise, which so sone as hée desired was not able to be brought to passe, & knowing ỳ the duke seldōe wold haue him out of his sight, begā to muse vpō lies, doing him to vnderstand ỳ he had necessary occasion, for a certein time to remain & be at his cōtry house. The duke which loued him, & who thought ỳ either he had some secrete sickenesse, or else some wench which he was lothe to discouer before his cōpanios, gaue him leane for a month, which so pleased the amorous Gentleman, as he lept for

ioy, & was not able to rest one houre before he had found out his friends and companions, to mount on horsback to visite hir, that had vnder hir power and obeysance the best portion of him, which was his heart and his most secrete thought. When hée was come to this Countrey house, hée began to walke abrode, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his beloued did dwell, who was not so foolish, but by and by suspected wherunto those goings and commings of the Pilgrim tended, and for what pray he led his Dogs in lease, and caused so many nets & cords to be displayed by hunters of all ages and eche sexe, who to discouer the Countrey, allayde to beate the bushes, to take the beast at forme. For which cause shée also for hir parte, began to flie the snares of such Birders, and ramging of the Dogs that vented after hir, & strayed not frō the house of the good man hir father: whereof this poore louer conceiued greate dispaire, not knowing by what meanes he might rouse the praie after which hée hunted, ne finde the meanes to do hir to vnderstand his plaints & vnmeasured griefe of heart, the firme loue and sincere minde wherwith he was so earnestly bent, both to obey and loue hir aboue all other. And that which most of all increased his pain, was, that of so great a troupe of messages which he had sent, with gifts and promisses the better to atchieue his purpose, no one was able to take place or force (neuer so little) the chastite of that sober & modest maide. It chaunced one day as the Gentleman walking along a woode side newly felled, hard adioyning to his house, by which there was a cleare and gay fountaine shadowed betweene two thicke & lofty Apple trées, the Millers daughter went thither for water, and as she had set downe hir pailes vpon the fountaines brinke, hir louer came vnto hir, little thinking of such a ioyfull meeting, which he well declared by these words: Prayed be

God,

God, that when I hoped leaſt of this good happe, hée hath
ſent me hither, to ſée the only ſubſtance of my ioy. Then
turning his face towards the maiden, ſayd vnto hir. Is
it true that thou art héere (or do I dreame) and ſo neare
to him y moſt deſireth to gratifie thée in any thing wher-
in it may pleaſe thée to commaunde him? Wilt thou not
haue pitie vpon the paines and griefs which continually
I indure for the extreme loue I beare thée? And ſaying
ſo, he would haue imbraced hir. But the mayd which ca-
red no more for his flatteries, than before ſhe did for his
preſents and meſſages, ſeing the ſame to tend to nothing
elſe but to hir ruine and great diſhonor, with ſtout coun-
tenance, and by hir liuely colour declaring the chaſt and
vertuous motion of hir bloud, ſayd to this valiant Gen-
tleman: How now ſyr, doe you thinke that the vileneſſe
of mine apparell, holdeth hidden leſſe vertue, than the
rich and ſumptuous ornaments of the greateſt Ladies?
Doe you ſuppoſe that my bringing vp hathe bred in me
ſuch groſſe bloud, as for your only pleaſure, I ſhould cor-
rupt the perfection of my minde, & blot the honor which
hitherto ſo carefully I haue kept and religiouſly preſer-
ued? Be ſure that ſoner death ſhall ſeparate the ſoule
from my body, than willingly I would ſuffer the ouer-
throwe & violation of my virginitie. It is not the part of
a Gentleman as you be, thus to eſpy and ſubtely purſue
ye poore countrey maids to charme vs with your fleights
and guilfull talke. It is not the duety of a Gentleman to
ſuborne ſuch baunte curriors to diſcouer and put in peril,
the honoure of maidens and honeſt wiues, as heretofore
you haue done to me. It ought to ſuffice that you recey-
ued ſhame by repulſe of your meſſagers, and not to come
your ſelfe to be partakers of their ſhame and confuſion.
And that is it that ought to moue you (ſweete heart (an-
ſwered he) to take pitie vpon my griefe, ſo plainly ſeing

" that vnfainedly I doe loue you, and ỹ my loue is so inci
" planted, as rather had I suffer death, than occasion ỹ leas
" offense that may displease you. Only I beseeche you, not
" to shew your self so cruel vnto him, who disdaining all o-
" ther, hath made you so frank an offer both of him self & al
" all that he hath to commaund. The maid not greatly tru-
sting his words, feared that he prolõged the time to make
hir stay til his seruãts came to steale hir away. And there-
fore without further answer, she taking vp hir pailes, &
half running til she came nére the Pil, escaped his hãds,
telling hir father no part of that talk betwene them: who
began already to doubt the treason, deuised by the gétle-
man, against the pudicitie of his daughter, vnto whom he
neuer disclosed his suspition, were it that he knew hir to
be vertuous inough, and constant to resist the luring as-
saults of loue, or considered the imbecillitie of our flesh, &
the malice of ỹ same, which daily aspireth to things ther-
vnto defended, & by lawes limited and prescribed, which
lawes it ought not to excéde, and yet thereof wisheth the
abolishment. And the goodman also did feare that she did
not care for the words, that he had sayd vnto hir, as alre-
dy resolued in opinion, that she wished & desired the loue
and acquaintance of him whome she hated to death, and
that vanquished by despite (for the litle regard had of hir
chastitie) she wold not giue ouer hir louer, which neyed af-
ter none other prouender. Who seeing that the maidẽ had
forsaken him, and little esteemed his amorous onset, en-
raged for loue, and chafed with choler both together, and
" with him self, sayd. Ah foolish & dastard louer, what dost
" thou meane when thou hadst hir so nere thée, in a place so
" commodious, and was not able, ne durst gainesay thée?
" And what knowest thou if she came to ease thy pain and
" finish thy troublesome trauels? Surely I suppose she did
" so, but that shame & duety forced hir to vse such words,

to

to make me thinke, that lightly she would not be ouer-
come by my persuasions. And put the case that it were
not so, who could haue let me to take by force that, wher-
vnto willingly she would not accorde. But what is she,
to be reuenged of suche an iniurie? She is for conclusi-
on the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir vaunte,
that she hathe mocked a Gentleman, who being alone
with hir, and burning wyth loue, durst not staunche hys
thirst (although full dry) so nére the fountaine. And by
God (sayd he, rising from a greene banke nére the foun-
taines side) if I die therfore, I wil haue it eyther by loue
or force. In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hée re-
tourned to his place, where his companyons séing him
so out of quiet, sayd vnto him: Is this the guise of gentle
minde, to abase it self to the pursute of so simple a wench?
Doe not you know the malice of that sexe, and the guiles
wherewith those Serpents poysen men? Care you so
little for a woman as she doth for you, and then will she
imbrace you & make much of you, hir only study is (which
I beleue) to frame hir selfe against all that, for wbych
humble sute is made. But admit, that a woman hath
some quality to draw men to loue hir, honoure and serue
hir, truely that office and duetifull deuoire ought to be
imployed in seruice of them, that be honourable, in spirite
and iudgement of gentle kinde, wbych no doubte will
counteruaile the merite of the suter. And certelle I am
of opinion that a man may vainely consume a yeare or
two in pursuite and seruyce of thys meany Countrey
wenche, so well as addresse his loue in the obedience of
some faire and honest Gentlewoman: which courteously
and with some fauoure will recompence, the trauailes of
hir seruaunt, where that rude and sottish gyrle, by pryde
will vaunt and lake a lofte, at the honoure done vnto
hir, despise them whose worthinesse she knoweth not,

and

" and whome neither she nor the best of hir lede, be worthy
" to serue in any respect: wil you knowe then what I think
" best for you to do? Mine aduise is then, that one of these
" euenings, she be trussed vp in a male and brought hither,
" or else in place where you thinke good, that you may en-
" ioy at pleasure the beautie of hir whome you doe praise
" and wonder at so much. And afterwards let hir dissemble
" if she lust, and make a Jewell of hir chastity and modesty
" when she hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away
" the victory of your pursutes. Ah my good friend, aunswe-
" red the desperate louer, how rightly you touche the most
" daungerous place of all my wound, and how soueraine a
" salue and plaister you apply therunto. I had thought tru-
" ly to intreat you of that, whereof euen nowe you haue
" made the ouerture, but fearing to offend you, or to much
" vsurpe vpon your friendship, rather had I suffer a death
" continuall, than raise one point of offense, or discontem-
" tation in them, which so frankly haue offred to doe me
" pleasure, wherof (by Gods assistance) I hope to be acquit-
" ted with all duety and office of friendship. Now resteth
" it, to put in proofe, the effect of your deuise, and that so
" shortly as I can. In like manner you see that the terme
" of my heere abode, will shortly be expired, and if we be
" once at the Courte, impossible it is for me to recouer so
" good occasion, and peraduenture she wil be maried, or some
" other shall cary away the pray, after I haue beaten the
" bushe. The plot then of this maidens rape, was resolued
vpon, and the first espied occasion taken. But the louer
which feared least this heat of his companiõs wold cole,
sollicited them so muche, as the execution was ordayned
the folowing night: which they did, not so muche for the
pleasure of their friend, to whome in suche aduentures
they ought to deny all helpe, (sith friendeship ought not
to passe, *Sed vsq; ad aras*, as Pericles the *Athenian* sayd,

so

so farre as was sufferable by the lawes of God) as for that they wer of nature of the self same tramp, which their passionate cõpanion was, and would haue made no conscience to enterprise the same for themselues, although the other had not tolde them his affections. These also be the frutes of vnruled youth, wherin only the verdure and greennesse of the age beareth greatest sway, the will whereof reason can not restrayne, which easily waltreth and tolleth soner to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the pasture and cõtentation of the minde. The next night after, they. iij. came accompanied with. v. or. vj. seruauntes (so honest as their maisters) in armure & weapons well appointed to defend & hurt, that if any resistance were made, they might be able to repell their aduersaries. Thus about two of the clocke in the night repaired they to the Pill, the heauens hauing throwne their mantell ouer the vaporous earth, & dimmed hir face with their vaile obscure & dark, and yet not such, but that the aire was cloudy cleere, & when no man doubted of so great offense, & of such vnhappy rape, they brake into the pore millers house, betwene whose armes they toke away his daughter deere, & almost dead for fear, piteously begã to cry for help, defending hir self so wel as she could from these Thenes and Murderers. The desolate father, raging with no lesse fury than the *Hircanian* Tigre, when hir Faucons be kylled or taken away, ran first to one, and then to another, to let them from carying of hir away, for whome they came. In the end the amorous rauisher of his daughter sayd vnto him: Father, Father, I aduise thee to get thee hence if thou „ loue thy life, for thy force is to weake to resist so ma- „ ny, the least of whome is able to cole this thy swithe „ heat and choler, for the which I would be sorry, for the „

" great loue I beare vnto thy daughter, who (I hope)
" before she depart my company, shal haue wherwith to
" be contented, and thou cause to pacify this immoderate
" rage which in vain ỹ yalpest forth against this troupe.
" Ah false knaue and theefe, (sayd the honest poore man)
" is it thou then, which by thine infamous filthinesse
" insaciable knauerie, doest dishonor the commendable
" fame of my daughter, and by like meanes shortnest
" the hoped yeres of me hir poore vnhappy father, losing
" through thy wickednesse, the staffe and stay of mine
" olde aged life? Thinkest thou Traitor that liuing till
" this day (for all my pouertie) in reputation of an hon-
" nest man in mine old dayes, will become an vnshamed
" fast and vile minister and Chapman of my daughters
" maidenhode and virginitie? No knaue, thincke not
" that I forget the wrong receiued of thee, for which by
" some meanes or other, I will purchase iust reuenge
" either vpon thee or thine. The Gentleman caring lit-
tle or nothing for the olde mannes wordes, hauing in
hand his desired spoile, cõmaunded his men to march
before with the maiden, leauing behinde the poore old
man which thundred against them a thousand taunts
and curses, threatning and reuiling them, by all the
termes he could deuise, desirous (as I thinke) to haue
them turne backe to kill him. But therunto they gaue
so little heede, as when hee demaunded to leaue his
daughter behinde them: to whom the amorouse cour-
tier addressing himself, began to make much of hir and
kisse hir, & assayed by all meanes with pleasant words
and many sweete promisses to comfort hir: but ỹ poore
wench knowing ful wel, that they went about to play
the butchers with hir chastity and shamefastnesse, and
to commit murder with the floure of hir virginity, be-
gã to cry so pitiously with dolorous voice, as she wold
han

haue moued to compassion the hardest harts that euer were, except the same which craued nothing more thā the spoile of that his sweetest enimy, who hir self detested & blaspheмed hir vnhappy fate and constellation. When she saw hir vertue ready to be spoiled by one, who (not in mariage ioyned) went about to violat and possesse the same, & knew ỳ afterwards he wold vaunt himselfe for the victory of such a precious price. Alas (sayde she) is it possible that the soueraigne iustice of God can abide a mischief so great and cursed, and that the voice of a poore wretched afflicted maide cannot be heard in the presence of the mighty Lord aboue? Why may not I now rather suffer deathe than the infamie which I see to wander before mine eyes? O ỳ good old man my deere and louing father, how farre better had it bene for thee to haue slaine me wyth thy dagger, betwene the hāds of these most wicked theeues, than to let me goe to be the enimies pray of my vertue & thy reputation. O happy a hundred hundred times be ye, which haue already passed the ineuitable tract of death when ye were in cradle, and I poore vnhappy wēch no lesse blessed had I bene if partaker of your ioy, where now I rest aliue to feele the smart and anguish of that death more egre to suppoꝛt, than that which deuideth the body & soule. The Gentleman offended with those complaints, began to threaten that hee wold make hir forget that hir disordered behauioure, saying that she must change an other tune, and that hir plaints were to no purpose amongs them which cared not, or yet were bent to stay vpon those hir womanishe teares, lamentations and cries. The poore Mayden hearing that, and seeing that she dysparckled hir voyce into the aire in vaine, began to holde hir peace, whych caused the Louer to speake vnto hir these wordes:

" And what my wenches do you thynke it now so euill or
" straunge, if the heate of loue that I beare to you, sty-
" ceth me to vse such violence? Alas it is not malice or
" euill will that causeth me to doe the same, it is loue
" which cã not be inclosed, but must nedes manifest his
" force. Ah that you had felt, what I do suffer and indure
" for loue of you, I beleue then you wold not be so hard
" hearted, but haue pitie vpon the griefe whereof you
" should haue proued the vehemencie. Whereunto the
maide answered nothing but teares and sighes, wring-
ging hir armes and hands, & sometimes making warre
vpon hir fair hair. But all these feminine fashions no-
thing moued this gallãt, and lesse remoued his former
desire to haue hir, which he atchieued in dispite of hir
teeth, so sone as he arriued at his owne house. The re-
nant of the night they lay together, where he vsed hir
with all such kinde of flattering and louing speeche, as
a louer of long time a suter could deuise to doe to hir,
whome at length he did possesse. Now, all these flatte-
ring follies tended only to make hir his owne, to kepe
hir in his Countrey house for his pleasure. She that
for hir age (as before is sayd) was of condition sage,
and of gentle minde, began subtilely to dissemble and
faine to take pleasure in that which was to hir more
bitter than any *Aloes* or woode of *Myrrha* and more
against hir heart than remembraunce of death, which
still she wished for remedy of hir griefe, and volunta-
rily wold haue killed hir self like a Lucrece, if the feare
of God and dreadfull losse of body & soule had not tur-
ned hir minde, and also hoped in God that the rauisher
should repaire the fault which hee had committed, and
beare the penaunce for his temeritie, wherof she was
no whit deceiued, as well ye shall perceiue, by that
which immediatly doeth follow.

Nowe

Nowe whilest the rauisher toke his pleasure with his rape, the miserable father made the aire to sounde with his complaints, accusing fortune for letting the whorish varlet so to passe, wythout doing him to feele the lustinesse of his age, and the force that yet reasted in his furrowed face, and corpse withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his plaintes, curses, and desire, were throwne forthe in vaine, perceiuing also his force vnequall to deale with such an enimy, and to get againe by violence his stolne daughter, or to recouer hir by that meanes wherby she was taken away, hee determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination hee layd him downe to sleepe vnder the trees, which ioyned to the fountaine, where sometimes the Courtier had talked with his daughter. And seeing that the element began to shew some brightnesse interpaled with coulours of White, Yealow and Red, signes preceding the rising of fresh *Aurora*, started from his slepe, & toke his way to *Florence* whither he came, vpõ the opening of the City gates. Then going to the Pallace of the Duke, he taried vntil he saw the Prince goe forthe to seruice. The good man seing him of whom he attended to receiue succoure, fauour and iustice, began to freat and rage for remembrance of his receiued wrong, and was ashamed to see himself in place not accustomed: & albeit it grieued his heart wyth hardy speache to presume in presence of so many, yet the iust anger & desire of vengeance emboldned him so much, as kneling vpon his knees before the Maiestie of the Duke, aloud he spake these wordes: Alas (my soueraigne Lord) if ,, euer your grace had pitie vpon a desolate man, and ful ,, of dispaire, I humbly beseeche the same that nowe you ,, do regard the misery which on euery side assaileth me. ,,

" haue pity vpon the pouerty of that vnfortunate olde
" man against whome one hath done such wrong, as I
" hope by force of your vertue and accustomed iustice,
" you wil not leaue a sinne so detestable without deser-
" ued punishment, for respect of mischiefs that may in-
" sue where such wickednesse shalbe dissembled and suf-
" fred without due correction: Saying so, the greate
teares ran downe his grisly beard, and by reason of
his interrupted sighes and continuall sobbes, the pan-
ting of his stomake might easily haue bene perceyued
all riueld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and
continuall Countrey trauaile: and that which moued
most the standers by, was the ruefull looke of the god
olde man, who casting his lookes here & there, beheld
eche one with his holow & dolorous eyes, in such wise
as if hee had not spoken any word, hys countenaunce
wold haue moued the Lords to haue compassion vpon
his misery, & his teares wer of such force, as the Duke
which was a wise man, and who measured things by
reasons guide, prouided with wisedome, and foreseeing
not without timely iudgement, wold know the cause
which made that man so to make his playnt, and not-
withstãding assailed (with what suspition I know not)
would not haue him openly to tel his tale, but leading
" the olde man aside, he sayd vnto him: My friend, albeit
" that grieuous faultes and of great importance, ought
" grieuously and openly to be punished, yet it chaunceth
" oftentimes, that hee which in a heate and choler doth
" execution for the guilt, (although that iustly after he
" hath disgested his rage, at leasure hee repenteth his ri-
" gor and ouer sodaine seueritie, (offense being natural
" in man) may sometime (where slander is not euident)
" by milde and mercifull meanes forget the same with-
" out infringing or violating the holy and ciuil constitu-
tions

tions of Lawmakers. I speake thus much bicause my
heart doeth throbbe that some of my house haue done
some filthy fault against thée or some of thine. Now I
would not that they openly should be slaundered, and
yet lesse pretend I to leaue their faultes vnpunished,
specially such as by offensiue crime the common peace
is molested, wherein my desire is, that my people doe
liue. For which purpose God hath constituted Princes
& Potestates as shepheards and guids of his flocke, to
the end that the Tirannicall fury of the vitious, might
not destroy, deuoure, and scatter the impotent flockes
of no valoure if it be forsaken and left forlorne by the
mighty armes of Principalities and Monarchies. A
singuler modesty doubtlesse, and an incredible exam-
ple of clemency in him, whome his Citizens thought
to be a Tyrant and vniust vsurper of a frée Seignio-
rie, who so priuely, and with such familiaritie, as the
friend could wishe of his companion, hearkened to the
cause of a poore Countrey man, and moreouer his mo-
desty so great, as hée would it not to be knowen what
fault it was, or else that the offenders should publike-
ly be accused, offering for all that to be the reuenger
of the wrong done vnto the poore, and the punisher
of the iniurie exercised against ỳ desolate, a worke cer-
tainly worthy of a true christian Prince, & which esta-
blisheth kingdomes decayed, conserueth those that be,
rendring the Prince to be beloued of God, and feared
of his Subiects. The poore olde man seing the Duke in
so good minde, and that accordingly hée demaunded to
knowe the wrong done vnto him, the name of the
factor, and that also hée had promysed hym his helpe
& ryghtfull correction due vnto the deserued fault, the
good olde man I say conceiuing courage, recited from
point to point the whole discourse of the rape, and the

violence

violence done vpon his poore vertuous daughter, declaring besides the name and surname of those which accompanied the Gentleman, the author of that conspiracy, who (as we haue already sayd) was one that was in greatest fauor with the Duke: who notwithstanding the loue that he bare to the accused, hearing
" the vnworthinesse of a deede so execrable, said: As God
" liueth this is a detestable facte, and well deserueth a
" sharp and cruell punishment. Notwithstanding from
" take good heede that you doe not mistake ỳ same, by ac-
" cusing one for an other, for the Gentleman whome
" thou hast named to be the rauisher of thy daughter, is
" of all men deemed to be very honest, and doe well as-
" sure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy heade shall an-
" swer for example to eche false accuser and slaunderer
" in time to come. But if the matter be so true as thou
" hast sayd, I promise thee by the faith I beare to God, so
" well to redresse thy wrong, as thou shalt haue cause to
" be throughly satisfied with my iustice. To whome the
" good old man thus answered. My Lord the matter is so
" true, as at this day he keepeth my daughter (like a cō-
" mon strumpet) in his house. And if it please your high-
" nesse to send thither, you shall know that I doe vse no
" false accusation or lying wordes before you, my Lord
" and Prince, in presence of whome as before the min-
" ster and lieuetenant of God, man ought not to speake
" but truely and religiously. With it is so, sayd the Duke
" get thee home to thy house where God willing I will
" be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou
" say nothing to any man what so euer it be: for the rest
" let me alone, I will prouide according to reason. The
good man almost so glad for his good exploit, as the day before hee was sorowfull for his losse, ioyfully went home to his homely house & Countrey Cabane, which

he

he cauſed to be made ready ſo well as hée could, attending the comming of his deliuerer, ſuccor, ſupport, and iudge, who when he had heard ſeruice, commaũded his horſſe to be ſaded: for (ſayd he) I beare ſay there is a wilde Boare haunting hereby, ſo wel lodged as is poſſible to ſée, we will goe thither to wake him from his ſleepe & eaſe, and vſe that paſſe time til dinner be redy. So departing frõ *Florence*, he rode ſtraight vnto ỳ Pil where his dinner was made ready by his ſeruauntes. There he dined very ſoberly, and vſing fewe wordes vnto his companie, ſate ſtill all penſiue, muſing vpon that he had to doe. For on the one ſide the grauitie of ỳ fact moued him rigorouſly to chaſtiſe him which had committed the ſame with all crueltie and inſolencie. On the other ſide the loue which he bare him (mollifying his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his ſentence. The Princes minde thus wandering betweene loue and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had rouſde the greateſt Hart that euer he ſawe: which newes pleaſed him very much, for by that meanes he ſent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow ỳ chaſe, retaining with him his moſt familiar friends, and thoſe that were of his priuy and ſecrete councell, whome he would to be witneſſes of that which he intended to doe, and cauſing his hoaſt to come before him, he ſayd: My friend, thou muſt bring vs to the place wherof this morning thou toldeſt me, that I may diſcharge my promiſe. The Courtiers wõdred at thoſe words, ignorant wherunto ỳ ſame were ſpoken: but the good man whoſe heart lept for ioy, as already feeling ſome great beneſit at hand, and honour prepared for the beautifying of his houſe, ſeing the Duke on horſſe backe, ran bifides him in ſteade of his Lackey, with whome the Prince helde much pleaſant

talke all along the way as they went togither, but they had not gone farre, but the Gentleman the Ranither, wyth his Companions, vnderstanding that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym reuerence: and his Fortune was such, as he nor any of his friends perceiued the olde man: by meanes whereof the Duke pursued the praie whereof they nothyng doubted. For that cause the sayd Ranither sayd to his "Prince: My Lord, if fortune had so much fauoured "me, as I myght haue knowen of your commyng in- "to these quarters, I would haue done my duetie to "entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the great- "nesse of your excellencie, but according to the abilitie "of the least, and yet the most obedient of your ser- "uauntes. To whome the Duke dissembling his anger "sayd: Sir, I dined here hard by within my tentes, not "knowing that your house was so nere vs, but sith that "I haue met you vpon your owne Marches and Con- "fines, I will not goe hence before I see your lodging: "for so farre as I can iudge by the outwarde parte of "this goodly building, me thinkes the workeman hath "not forgotten any thing that should serue for the set- "ting forthe and ornament of this parte of the house, "which for the quantitie is one of the fairest plottes "that I haue sene.

So approching the Castel, ỳ Duke lighted, to viewe the commodities of the place, and specially the image, for which alone he was departed from his City, whereof the Maister of the house (vronke with the sodaine pleasure to see the Duke there) thought nothing. So descending into the base Court, they sawe a Marble fountaine that discharged the water in foure great gutters, receyued by foure naked *Nymphei*, and by them poured forth into Vessels, richely wrought with

Dame-

Damaskine, where was an armed Knight, lying vn-
der an highe and broade tree, which ouershadowed the
Fountaine. And hard by, they espied a little doze which
shewed the way into so singulare and well planted a
Garden, as euer the delicious and pleasant Gardens
were of *Alcinoe*. For in the same (bysides the Artifici-
all workmanship, and ordinary trauel of the gardener)
nature produced foure Fountaines in the foure co-
ners, making the place and plaine of the Garden e-
qually parted in foure square forme. Now these foun-
taines watered all the fayre knots of the same, wyth-
out any paine to the gardener, except to open certaine
little Conduites, whereby the water sprang and ran,
where hee thoughte it nedefull. I will heere leaue to
speake of the Trees & frutes deuided in fine forme o-
der, the *Laberynthes* subtilely & finely made: the sweete
Herbers yelding such contentation to the eye, as if
the Duke had had no greater respect to the wrong
done to the Millers daughter, than incited wyth the
gentlenesse of the maister of the house, and the singu-
laritie of the place, perchaunce hee might haue for-
gotten himselfe within that little earthly Paradise. And
to perfourme the excellencie of the place, the working
hande and industrie of man, holpen by the benefite of
Nature, had wrought a Caue or Vault verye deepe,
wherein were bestowed a good number of Antiqui-
ties, and wherin the immortall voyce of an *Echo* an-
swered their talk with a triple voyce in that profound-
ed earthly place: which moued the Duke to call the
Gentleman vnto hym, vnto whome he sayd: If it be
so, that the rest of the house doe matche wyth that
which I haue already seene, I am out of doubte it is
one of the fayrest and moste delectable places at thys
day wythin the whole compasse of *Italy*. Wherefore

my friend, I pray thee that we may see the hole, both for the contētation of our mindes, and also that I may make some vaunt that I haue seene the rarest and best furnished little house that is within all the iurisdiction of *Florence*. The Gentleman bathed in ease and full of pleasure, seeing that the Duke liked so well his house, brought him from chamber to chamber, which was enriched either with stately tapissarie of *Turkey* making, or with rich Tables diuinely wrought, with vtensils so neate and fit, as the Duke coulde cast his eye vpon none of them, but he was driuen into an admiration & wonder. And the further he went, the greater he saw the increase, & almost a regeneration, or as I may say, a new birth of rare things, which made ỳ littlenesse of the place more stately and wonderfull: wherefore he greatly esteemed him in his minde which had deuised the magnificence of such a furniture. After then that he had visited the Portals, Galleries, Parlers, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Closets, and chiefest places of that house, they came into a gallerie, which had a direct prospect vpon the Garden, at the end whereof there was a chamber shut, ouer which there was such Antike and Imbolled worke, as it was maruell to behold, and vpon the garden side in like workemanship, ye might haue viewed a troupe of *Nymphes* dying (along the side of a wode adioyning vpon a great riuer) an hierde of *Satires*, making as though they would haue ouerrunne them: a pleasure it was to see their gaping mouthes, their eyes fixed vpon the place where they cloyenfooted pursuters were, and the countenaunce of them which so well expressed their feare, as there wāted nothing but speech. Moreouer a better sight it was to beholde the *Satires* Wiues, with displayed throat, and their fingers pointing at the back of those fearfull run-

aways,

alwayes, as though they mocked their sodaine flyghte. Within a while after ye might haue seene *Hercules* lying a bed with his wife, towards whom a *Faunus* came thinking to inioy the beautie and embracements of the sleeping dame. But farther it was to see how that stròg *Amphitrionian* gaue him the mocke, and strained him so hard, as he thought his belly wold burst. The Duke beholding as he thought, the fairest place of the house so shut, by and by suspected the truthe of the cause. For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawen his woman into the same, for that it was the most secrete chamber of his house, and the furdest from all ordinary seruice. And therefore sayde the Duke: wherefore is not this chamber opened vnto vs so wel as the rest? I suppose the same to be your treasure house, and the storehouse of your most delicat things; but you may be assured that we be not come hither to trouble you, but only (as we think) to do you pleasure. My Lord (sayd the Gentleman) the place is to farre out of order, at this time to shew your grace. Howeuer I knowe not where the keyes be, for thys morning the keper of my house is gone vnto the city, & I can not tell to whome he hath delinered the same. The Duke which heard the end of his excuse, not accepting the same for the price which the courtier wold e thought to haue solde it, was sure then of that which before he did suspect. Wherefore with furious countenance he sayd vnto him: Ode to, goe to, either with the key, or without it, let this daze be opened, that I may se all thy secretes within. The ranither seing ỳ Duke to be earnest, could not tell at the first sute, of what wonde to make his arrowes, and stode still astonied, and surprised with greate feare. In the end notwithstanding, playing the good fellowe, he went vnto

ỹ Duke, in whose eare finding he whispered (bicause he knew right well that the Duke was an indifferent good companion, and loued so well his neighbors wife as his owne.) And sayd: My Lord there is a pretty wench within, whome I do kepe, and would not shewe hir to any liuing man but to you. That is the cause I aske, (sayd the Duke) let us see hir that I may giue iudgement of hir beautie, & tell you whither she be worthy of keeping or not. The maister of ỹ house opened the chambre dore, thinking to haue gained much, and supposed to insummate himselfe the better into the fauor of the Duke, but immediatly he saw himself farre deceiued of his accompt. For the rauished and shamefast maiden comming forthe of the Chamber with hir haire about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir stomake and breast all naked and discouered, hir face and eyes all blubbered with teares, like a desperate woman threw hir selfe at the Princes feete, saying: Ah (my Lord) beholde heere, and haue pitie vpon the moste vnfortunate wenche of all most wretched captiue women, who shamefully and traiterously hathe bene abused and defloured by hym, which impudently dareth to bring you into the place the wytnesse of his abhominable and wycked life. The Duke seing this sight, and hauing compassion vpon the maiden, turned his face towardes the Gentleman and his Companions (which by chance were come thither, as the Duke was entred into the Gallerie) not with milde and pleasant countenaunce as he shewed from the beginning, but with a looke so grime and seuere, as the hardest of his company could not tell what to do, or what answer to make him. Vpon them then began the right terrible Prince to vomit his displeasure, saying: Is this the ennobling of the bloud wherof thou art descended,

to

so ranishe thy neighbors daughters vnder mine obey-
sance and protection? Doest thou thus abuse the fami-
liaritie which hitherto I haue shewed vnto thee? Thin-
kest thou that the lawes be peruerted by seeing some
chaunge in the common wealth of *Florence*? No I as-
sure thee, for so long as the soule shal reside within my
body, I will be hee that shall pursue the wicked wyth
all extremitie, and shall not indure the oppression of
the poore, enough afflicted with their owne proper mi-
sery. O God could I haue thought that a Gentleman
of my house, would haue bene so prodigall of his ho-
noure, as to soyle his handes so filthily by rauishing of
them which ought to be required, and to dishonoure
them in place where their vertue ought to serue for
a generall example? I cannot tell what stayeth me
from cutting of those curssed heads of yours from your
shoulders like arrant traytors and theeues as you be.
Get ye hence ye infamous villaines and beastly Ruf-
fians, the troublers of your neighbours rest, and the
spoylers of the fame of hir, that is more worth than
all ye together. Then speaking to the Maide hee sayd:
Rise vp my wench, and on me repose thy comfort, for
I promise thee by the Faithe of a Gentleman, that I
will doe thee such reason, and vse thee so vprightly,
as bothe my Conscience shall be quieted, thou conten-
ted, and thine honoure restored for the wrong and in-
iury which it hathe receiued of these Gallantes. And
by and by hee commaunded the Miller to come before
hym, and all those whome hee had brought wyth him
to assist his doings, before whome hee caused to bee
brought bothe the rauished mayden, and the condemp-
ned of the rape: vnto whom he said: This is the praie
my friends that I determined to take, which I haue
done without toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs.

Behold, I pray you the honor which my houſholde ſeruauntes doe vnto my houſe, as to ouerrun the ſimple Countrey people, and raviſh their daughters betweene the armes of their proper parents, as to breake, beate downe, and ouerthrow the dores of their houſes, who liuing vnder the lawes of our city, ought to enioy like priuiledge of libertie & franchize. If one reſpect (which I will not diſcloſe) did not impeche & ſtay me, I would doe ſuch cruel iuſtice vpon the offenders, as the poſteritie ſhould make report thereof. Notwithſtanding it ſhal ſuffiſe that they receiue this ſhame before you all, by ſeeing themſelues vanquiſhed of a crime, whych for expiation and reuenge, deſerueth moſt ſhameful death and to receiue of me for proofe of my mercy, an vndeſerued pardon of their fault, with condition neuertheleſſe that thou (ſpeaking to the Gentleman rauiſher) ſhalt take this maiden to wife, (for otherwiſe thou art not able to repaire the honor thou haſt taken from hir) and ſhalt loue hir ſo dearely, as fondly heeretofore ſhe was beloued of thée. I giue hir vnto thée to eſteeme and loue hir ſo much, as if ſhe were the very ſiſter of me the Duke of *Florence*, who commaundeth thée for the raunſome & redemption of thy head, preſently to marry hir. I will moreouer, and ordaine by reaſon of hir
" fathers pouerty, that for the wrong which he hath re-
" ceiued of you thée, his daughter ſhal be indowed with
" two thouſand Crownes by him that marrieth hir, and
" with a thouſand of either of the two other, to the intét
" that if hir huſband die (without heire,) ſhe haue wher-
" with honeſtly to mainteine hir degrée, and the honeſt
" port of hir houſe. And hereof I will that without delay
" a contract be made, and a publike inſtrument of god
" recorde inrolled, ſwearing once again before thée, that
" if I vnderſtand that thou vſe hir otherwiſe, than a wife

ought

ought to be by hir husband, I will deale such punishment „
and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come „
shal take example. The Gentleman which expected no „
better meede than death, ioyfull of that sentence, fell
downe prostrate before the Duke in signe of consent,
and the like did his Companions. But the ioy of the
Miller and his daughter can not be expressed, who ex-
tolled the vertue & iustice of their Prince vp into the
heauens: to whome wyth such humilitie they rendred
their humble thanks, as he wold doe that saw him self
in so great calamitie, and brought to such dishonor as
earst they were sene to be, by meanes of him that ac-
knowledged one of them for his sonne, & the other for
hir lawful spouse. Thus was the mariage made in pre-
sence of the Duke, with so great ioy and contentation
of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for ẏ rape
of the Bride. The Duke being retourned to *Florence*,
the brute of this acte incontinently was dispersed al-
most throughout the Region of *Italy*, & this iudgement
no lesse praysed, than the sentẽce which king Salomon
gaue vpon ẏ controuersie of the two harlots for the li-
uing childe, which either of them claimed for hir own.
And for this cause was hée cõmended aboue any other
Prince or Lord which in times passed did commaund
or rule the Common wealthe in all the Countrey of
Thuscan. In this wise that modestie made him worthy
of the Principalitie, which almost against all right hée
had vsurped, and of a praise which shall no lesse conti-
nue, than the memorie of man is able to extende the
same from one generation to an other, and which Co-
uetous of the praise of a Prince so vertuous, iust and
modest, shall not cease to illustrate and gloriously ad-
uaunce him in open euidence, to the end that hys like
exercise the same in like things, or of greater conse-

quence for not suffering venemous and vnprofitable herbes to grow in their Common wealth. Within the Garden wherof, a little mildew or vntimely raine, is able to marre and corrupt all the good sedes & plants sowen and grifted before. Considering that wycked weedes and daungerous impes take deper rote than those that beare a good and sauorous frute, for the conseruation whereof, the diligent husbandman imployeth almost all the seasons of the yeare.

The Ducheſſe of Malfi.

¶ The Infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called ANTONIO BOLOGNA, with the Ducheſſe of MALFI, and the pitifull death of them bothe.

The. xxiij. Nouel.

THe greater Honor and authoritie men haue in this world, & the greater their eſtimation is, the more ſenſible & notorious are the faultes by them committed, & the greater is their slāder. In lyke manner more difficult it is for ỹ man to tolerate and ſuſtaine Fortune, which all

all the dayes of his life hathe liued at his ease, if by chaunce hee fall into any great necessitie, than for hym which neuer felt but woe, mishappe, and aduersitie. Dyonisius the Tyrant of *Sicilia*, felte greater payne when hee was expelled his kingdome, than *Milo* did, being banished from *Rome*. For so muche as the one was a Soueraigne Lord, the sonne of a King, a Iusticiarie on earth, and the other but a simple Citizen of a Citie, wherein the people had Lawes, and the lawes of Magistrates had in reuerence. So likewyse the fall of a high and loftie Tree, maketh a greater noyse, than that whiche is lowe and little. Highe Towers and stately Palaces of Princes be seene further off, than the poore Cabans and homely shephierds Shepecotes. The Walles of loftie Cities salute the viewers of the same farther of, than the simple caues, which the poore doe dig belowe the Mountaine rocks. Wherefore it behoueth the Noble, and such as haue charge of Common wealth, to liue an honest lyfe, and beare their port vpryght, that none haue cause to take ill example vpon dyscourse of their deedes and naughtie life. And aboue all, that modestie ought to be kept by women, whome as their race, Noble birth, authoritie and name, maketh them more famous, euē so their vertue, honestie, chastitie, and continencie more praise worthy. And behouefull it is, that like as they wilbe to be honoured aboue all other, so their life do make them worthy of that honour, without disgracing their name by deede or worde, or blemishing that brightnesse which may commende the same. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the exploits and conquests done by the *Babylonian* Quēne Semyramis, neuer was recōmended with such praise, as hir vice had shame, in records by those which left remēbrāce of ancient acts.

quence for not suffering venemous and vnprofitable herbes to grow in their Common wealth. Within the Garden wherof, a little mildew or vntimely raine, is able to marre and corrupt all the good seedes & plants sowen and grifted before. Considering that wycked weedes and daungerous impes take deeper rote than those that beare a good and sauorous frute, for the conseruation wherof, the diligent husbandman imployeth almost all the seasons of the yeare.

The Duchesse of Malfi.

¶ The Infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called ANTONIO BOLOGNA, with the Duchesse of MALFI, and the pitifull death of them bothe.

The. xxiij. Nouel.

THe greater honor and authoritie men haue in this world, & the greater their estimation is, the more sensible & notorious are the faultes by them committed, & the greater is their slãder. In lyke manner more difficult it is for ỹ man to tolerate and sustaine Fortune, which all

all the dayes of his life hathe liued at his eaſe, if by chaunce hee fall into any great neceſſitie, than for hym which neuer felt but woe, miſhappe, and aduerſitie. Dyoniſius the Tyrant of *Sicilia*, felte greater payne when hee was expelled his kingdome, than *Milo* did, being baniſhed from *Rome*. For ſo muche as the one was a Soueraigne Lord, the ſonne of a king, a Iuſticiarie on earth, and the other but a ſimple Citizen of a Citie, wherein the people had Lawes, and the lawes of Magiſtrates had in reuerence. So likewyſe the fall of a high and loftie Tree, maketh a greater noyſe, than that whiche is lowe and little. Highe Towers and ſtately Palaces of Princes be ſeene further off, than the poore Cabans and homely ſhephierds Sheepecotes. The Walles of loftie Cities ſalute the viewers of the ſame farther of, than the ſimple caues, which the poore doe dig belowe the Mountaine rocks. Wherefore it behoueth the Noble, and ſuch as haue charge of Common wealth, to liue an honeſt lyfe, and beare their port vpryght, that none haue cauſe to take ill example vpon dyſcourſe of their deedes and naughtie life. And aboue all, that modeſtie ought to be kept by women, whome as their race, Noble birth, authoritie and name, maketh them more famous, euē ſo their vertue, honeſtie, chaſtitie, and continencie more praiſe worthy. And behouefull it is, that like as they wiſhe to be honoured aboue all other, ſo their life do make them worthy of that honour, without diſgracing their name by deede or worde, or blemiſhing that brightneſſe which may commende the ſame. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the exploits and conqueſts done by the *Babylonian* Queene Semyramis, neuer was recōmended with ſuch praiſe, as hir vice had ſhame, in records by thoſe which left remēbrāce of ancient acts.

Thus I ſay, becauſe a woman being as it were the ſ
maze of ſweetenelle, curteſie & ſhamefaſtnelle, ſo ſoone
as ſhe ſteppeth out of the right tracte, and leaueth the
ſmel of hir duetie and modeſtie, beſides the denigrati-
on of hir honor, thruſteth hir ſelf into infinite troubles
and cauſeth the ruine of ſuch which ſhould be honored
and praiſed, if womens allurement ſolicited them not
to follie. I will not here indeuor my ſelf to ſeeke for ex-
amples of Samſon, Salomon or other, which ſuffred the
ſelues fondly to be abuſed by women: and who by
meane of them be tumbled into great faults, and haue
incurred greater perils. Contenting my ſelf to recite
a right pitifull Hiſtorie done almoſt in our time, when
the French vnder the leading of that notable captaine
Gaſton de Foix, vanquiſhed the force of *Spaine* and *Na-
ples* at the iourney of *Rauenna* in the time of ỳ French
king called Levves the twelfth, who married the Lady
Marie, daughter to king Henry the ſeuenth, and ſiſter
to the victorious Prince of worthy memory king Hen-
ry the eight, wife (after the death of the ſayd Levves) to
the puiſſant Gentleman Charles, late Duke of *Suffolke*.

In that very time then liued a Gentleman of *Na-
ples*, called Antonio Bologna, who hauing bene Maiſter
of houſhold to Federicke of *Aragon*, ſometime King of
Naples, after the French had expelled thoſe of *Ara-
gon* out of that Citie, the ſayde Bologna retired into
Fraunce, & thereby recouered the goods, which hee poſ-
ſeſſed in his countrey. The Gentleman beſides that he
was valiant of his perſone, a good man of warre, & wel
eſteemed amongſt the beſt, had a paſſing number of good
graces, which made him to be beloued & cherished of e-
uery wight: & for riding & managing of great horſe, he
had not his fellow in *Italy*: he could alſo play exceeding
well and trim vpon the Lute, whoſe fayning voyce ſo

well

well agreed therunto, that the moſt melancholike perſons wold forget their heauineſſe, vpon hearing of his heauenly noiſe: and beſides theſe qualities, hee was of perſonage comely, and of good proportion. To be ſhort, Nature hauing trauailed and diſpoyled hir Treaſure houſe for inriching of him, he had by Arte gotten that, which made him moſt happy & worthy of praiſe, which was, the knowledge of good letters, wherin hee was ſo well trained, as by talke and diſpute thereof, he made thoſe to bluſhe that were of that ſtate and profeſſion. Antonio Bologna hauing left Federicke of *Aragon* in Fraunce, who expulſed out of *Naples* was retired to king Lewes, went home to his houſe to liue at reſt and to auoyd trouble, forgetting the delicates of Courtes and houſes of great men, to be the only huſband of his owne reuenue. But what? It is impoſſible to eſchue that which the heauēs haue determined vpon vs: and leſſe the vnhappe, whych ſeemeth to followe vs, as it were naturally proceeding from our mothers wombe: In ſuch wiſe as many times, he which ſeemeth the wiſeſt man, guided by miſfortune, hasteth himſelf wyth ſtouping head to fall headlong into his deathe & ruine. Euen ſo it chaūced to this *Neapolitane* Gentleman: for in the very ſame place where he attained his aduāce-ment, he receiued alſo his diminution and decay, and by that houſe which preferred hym to what he had, he was depriued, both of his eſtate and life: the diſcourſe whereof you ſhall vnderſtand. I haue tolde you alreadye, that this Gentleman was Maiſter of the King of *Naples* houſhold, & being a gentle perſon, a good Courtier, wel trained vp, and wiſe for gouernment of himſelf in the Court and in ỹ ſeruice of Princes, the Ducheſſe of *Malfi* thought to intreat him that hee would ſerue hir, in that office which he ſerued the king. This

Duchesse was of the house of *Aragon*, & sister to ỳ Cardinal of *Aragon*, which thẽ was a rich & puissant personage. Being thus resolued, was wel assured ỳ she was not deceiued: for so much as she was persuaded, ỳ *Bologna* was deuoutly affected to ỳ house of *Aragon*, as one brought vp there from a childe. Wherfore sending for him home to his house, she vsed vnto him these, or like

" wordes: Master *Bologna*, sith your ill fortune, nay rather
" ỳ vnhap of our whole house is such, as your good Lord &
" master hath forgon his state & dignitie, and ỳ you therwithall haue lost a good Master, wythout other recompence but the praise which euery man giueth you for
" your good seruice, I haue thought good to intreat you to
" do me ỳ honor, as to take charge of the gouernment of
" my house, & to vse the same, as you did that of the king
" your master. I know well that the office is to vnworthy for your calling: notwithstanding you be not ignorant what I am, and how nere to him in bloud, to
" whõ you be so faithfull and louing a seruãt: & albeit ỳ
" that I am no Queene, endued with great reuenue, yet
" with that little I haue, I bear a Princely heart: & such
" as you by experience do knowe what I haue done, and
" daily do to those which depart my seruice, recõpensing
" them according to their paine & trauaile; magnificence
" is obserued as well in the Courts of poore Princes, as
" in the stately Palaces of great Kings and monarches.
" I do remember that I haue red of a certain noble gentleman, a *Persian* borne, called Ariobarzanes, who vsed
" great exãples of curtesie & stoutnes towards king Artaxerxes, wherwith ỳ king wondred at his magnificẽce,
" & confessed himself to be vanquished: you shall take aduise of this request, & I in the mean time do think you
" will not refuse ỳ same, aswell for that my demaund is
" iust, as also being assured, ỳ our house & race is so well
" imprinted in your heart, as it is impossible ỳ the me-

mory

mo⁊y therof can be defaced. The gentleman hearing ẏ courteous demaund of the Ducheſſe, knowing himſelf how deꝑely bou̇d he was to ẏ name of *Aragon*, & led by ſome vnknowen pr̃ouocation to his great yll luck, anſwered hir in this wiſe: I wold to god madame, ẏ with ſo good reaſon & equitie I were able to make denial of your cõmaundement, as iuſtly you require the ſame: wherfo⁊e fo⁊ ẏ bounden duety which I owe to ẏ name & memo⁊ie of the houſe of *Aragon*, I make pr̃omiſe ẏ I ſhall not only ſuſtain ẏ trauail, but alſo the daunger of my life, daily ready to be offred fo⁊ your ſeruice: but I fæle in minde I know not what, which cõmaũdeth me to wd⁊aw my ſelf to liue alone at home at my houſe, & to be content with the little I haue, fo⁊going the ſũptuouſe charge of Pr̃inces houſes, which life would be wel liked of my ſelf, were it not fo⁊ the feare that you madame ſhold be diſcontented with my refuſal, & that you ſhold conceiue, ẏ I diſdained your offred charge, o⁊ cõtempne your Court fo⁊ reſpect of the great Office I bare in the Court of the Kyng, my Lo⁊d & Maſter. Fo⁊ I cãnot receiue mo⁊e hono⁊ than to ſeruc hir, which is of that ſtock & royall race. Therfo⁊e at all aduẽtures I am reſolued to obey your wil, & hũbly to ſatiſfy ẏ duty of ẏ charge wherin it pleaſeth you to imploy me, mo⁊e to pleaſure you fo⁊ auoiding of diſpleaſure: thẽ fo⁊ deſire I haue to liue an hono⁊able life in ẏ greateſt pr̃inces houſe of ẏ wo⁊ld, ſith I am diſcharged from him in whoſe name reſteth my cõfo⁊t & only ſtay, thinking to haue liued a ſolitary life, & to paſſe my yeres in reſt, exrept it were in ẏ po⁊e abilitie of my ſeruice to ẏ houſe, wherunto I am bound continually to be a faithful ſeruaunt. Thus Madame, you ſee me to be the redieſt mã of the wo⁊ld, to fulfill the requeſt, and accompliſh ſuch other ſeruice wherin it ſhall pleaſe you to imploy me.

The Ducheſſe thanked him very heartily, and gaue him charge of all hir houſholde traine, commaunding eche perſon to do him ſuch reuerence as to hir ſelf, and to obey him as the chief of all hir familie. This Lady was a widow, but a paſſing faire Gentlewoman, fine and very yong, hauing a yong ſonne vnder hir guard & keping, left by the deceaſed Duke hir huſbād, togither with the Duchie, the inheritaunce of hir childe. Now conſider hir perſonage being ſuch, hir eaſy life and delicate bringing vp, and daily ſeing the youthely trade and maner of Courtiers life, whether ſhe felt hir ſelf prickt with any deſire, which burned hir heart ye more inceſſantly, as the flames were hidden & couert: from the outward ſhew whereof ſhe ſtayd hir ſelf ſo well as ſhe could. But ſhe following beſt aduiſe, rather eſtéemed the prooфe of mariage, than to burne with ſo little fire, or to incurre the exchange of louers, as many vnſhamefaſt ſtrūpets do, which be rather giuen ouer, thā ſatiſfied with pleaſure of loue. And to ſay the truthe, they be not guided by wiſdomes lore, which ſuffer a maiden ripe for mariage to be long vnwedded, or yōg wife long to liue in widdowes ſtate, what aſſurance ſo euer they make of their chaſte and ſtayed life. For bookes be ſo full of ſuch enterpriſes, and houſes ſtored with examples of ſuch ſtolne and ſecrete practiſes, as there néede no further prooфe for aſſurāce of our cauſe, the ſame of it ſelf being ſo plaine and manifeſt. And a great follie it is to build the fātaſies of chaſtitie, amid the follies of worldly pleaſures. I will not goe about to make thoſe matters impoſſible, ne yet wil iudge at large, but that there be ſome maidens & wiues, which wiſely can conteine themſelues amongs the troupe of amorous ſuters. But what? the experience is very hard, and the prooфe no leſſe daungerous, & perchaunce

in

in a moment the minde of ſome peruerted, whych all their liuing dayes haue cloſed their eares frō the wordes of thoſe that haue made offer of louing ſeruice, we nede not run to forayne Hiſtories, ne yet to ſeeke records that be auncient, ſith we may ſee the daily effects of the like, practized in Noble houſes, and Courtes of Kings and Princes. That this is true, example of this fair Ducheſſe, who was moued with that deſire which pricketh others that be of Fleſh and bone. This Lady waxed very weary of lying alone, & grieued hir heart to be without a match, ſpecially in the night, when the ſecrete ſilēce and darkneſſe of the ſame preſented before the eies of hir minde, the Image of the pleaſure which ſhe felt in the life time of hir deceaſed Lord and husband, wherof now feeling hir ſelfe deſpoiled, ſhe felt a continuall combat, and durſt not attempte that which ſhe deſired moſt, but eſchued ý thing wherof hir minde liked beſt. Alas (ſaid ſhe) is it poſſible after the taſte of the value of honeſt obediēce which the wife oweth vnto hir husband, that I ſhould deſire to ſuffer the heat which burneth & altereth the martired minds of thoſe that ſubdue them ſelues ſo loue? Can ſuch attempt pierce the heart of me to become amorous by forgetting & ſtraying from the limittes of honeſt life? But what deſire is this? I haue a certaine vnacquainted luſt, & yet very well know not what it is that moueth me, and to whome I ſhall vow the ſpoile thereof. I am truely more fonde and folliſh than euer Narciſſus was, for there is neither ſhadow nor voyce, vpō which I can well ſtay my ſight, nor yet ſimple Imagination of any worldly man, whereupon I can arreſt the conceipt of my vnſtayed heart, and the deſires which prouoke my mind. Pygmalion loued once a Marble piller, and I haue but one deſire, the coloure wherof is more

" pale than death. There is nothyng which can giue ſhe
" ſame ſo much as one ſpot of vermilion rud. If I ſhall
" couer theſe appetites to any wight, perhaps they will
" mock me for my labor, and for all the beautie & Noble
" birth ỳ is in me, they wil make no conſcience to deme
" me for their ieſting ſtock, & to ſolace themſelues with
" reherſall of my fond conceits. But ſith there is no ene-
" mie in the field, & that but ſimple ſuſpition doth aſſaile
" vs, we muſt breake of the ſame, and deface the entier
" remembrance of the lightneſſe of my braine. It apper-
" taineth vnto me to ſhew my ſelf, as iſſued forth of the
" Noble houſe of *Aragon*. To me it doeth belong to take
" hede how I erre or degenerate from the royall bloud
" wherof I came. In this ſort that fair widow and yong
Princeſſe fantaſied in the nyght vpon the diſcourſe of
hir appetites. But when the day was come, ſeing the
great multitude of the *Neapolitan* Lords & gentlemen
which marched vp & downe the Citie, eying and behol-
ding their beſt beloued, or vſing talk of mirth with the
whoſe ſeruaunts they were, al that which ſhe thought
vpō in the night, vaniſhed ſo ſone as ỳ flame of burned
ſtraw, or the pouder of the Canon ſhot, & purpoſed for
any reſpect to liue no lōger in ỳ ſort, but promiſed the
conqueſt of ſome friend that was luſtie and diſcreet.
But the difficultie reſted in that ſhe knew not, vpon
whom to fixe hir loue, fearing to be ſlaundered, and al-
ſo that the light diſpoſition and maner of moſt part of
youth wer to be ſuſpected, in ſuch wiſe as giuing ouer
all them whych vaunted vpon their Gennets, Turkey
Palfreis, & other Courſers along ỳ Citie of *Naples*, ſhe
purpoſed to take repaſt of other Veniſon, than of that
fond & wanton troupe. So hir miſhap began already to
ſpin the threde which choked the aire and breath of hir
vnhappie life. Ye haue heard before ỳ M. Bologna was

one

one of ỳ wiſeſt & moſt perfect gentlemen that the land of *Naples* ỳ tyme brought forth, & for his beautie, proportion, galantneſſe, valiance, & good grace, without cõparilon. His fauor was ſo ſweete and pleaſant, as they which kept him cõpanie, had ſomwhat to do to abſtain their affection. Who then could blame this faire Princeſſe, if (preſſed with deſire of matche, to remoue ỳ tickliſh inſtigations of hir wãton fleſh, and haning in hir preſence a mã ſo wiſe) ſhe did ſet hir minde on him, or fantaſie to mary him: wold not ỳ partie for calming of his thirſt & hunger, being ſet at the table before ſundry ſorts of delicate biands, eaſe his hunger? We think the perſon doth greatly forget himſelf, which haning hãdfaſt vpõ occaſion, ſuffreth ỳ ſame to vaniſh & flie away, ſith it is wel knowne ỳ ſhe being bald behinde, hath no place to ſeaſe vpon, when deſire moueth vs to lay hold vpon hir. Which was the cauſe ỳ the Ducheſſe became extremely in loue with ỳ maſter of hir houſe. In ſuch wiſe as before al men, ſhe ſpared not to praiſe ỳ great perfectiõs wherwith he was enriched, whõ ſhe deſired to be altogether hirs. And ſo ſhe was inamored, that it was as poſſible to ſee ỳ night to be void of darkneſſe, as ỳ Ducheſſe without the preſence of hir *Bologna*, or elſe by talk of words to ſet forth his praiſe, ỳ continual remẽbrance of whome (for that ſhe loued him as hir ſelf) was hir only minds repaſt. The gentleman ỳ was ful wiſe, & had at other times felt the great force of ỳ paſſion which proceedeth frõ extreme loue, immediatly did mark ỳ coũtenãce of the Ducheſſe, & perceiued ỳ ſame ſo nere, as vnfainedly he knew ỳ very ardẽtly ỳ Ladie was in loue võ him: & albeit he ſaw ỳ inequalitie & difference betweene thẽ both, ſhe being forted out of ỳ royal bloud, yet knowing loue to haue no reſpect to ſtate or dignity, determined to folow his fortune, & to ſerue hir.

which ſo lowingly ſhewed hir ſelf to him. Then ſodainly reprouing his fonde conceit, hée ſayd vnto himſelf:
" What follie is that I enterpriſe, to ẏ great preiudice
" and perill of mine honor and life? Ought the wiſdom
" of a Gentleman to ſtraie and wandre through the aſ-
" ſaults of an appetite riſing of ſenſuality, and that reaſon giue place to ẏ which doeth participate with brute
" beaſtes depriued of all reaſon by ſubduing the mynde
" to the affections of the body? No no, a vertuous man
" ought to let ſhine in him ſelf the force of the generoſi-
" tie of his mynde. This is not to liue according to the
" ſpirite, when pleaſure ſhall make vs forget our duetie
" and ſauegard of our Conſcience. The reputation of a
" wiſe Gentleman reſteth not onely to be valiant, and
" ſkilfull in feates of armes, or in ſeruice of the Noble:
" But nedefull it is for him by diſcretion to make him-
" ſelfe prayſe worthy, and by vanquiſhing of him ſelf to
" open the gate to fame, whereby he may euerlaſtingly
" make himſelfe glorious to all poſteritie. Loue prick-
" eth and prouoketh the ſpirit to do wel, I do confeſſe,
" but that affection ought to be addreſſed to ſome vertu-
" ous end, tending to mariage, for otherwiſe that ver-
" tuous image ſhall be ſoyled with the villanie of beaſt-
" ly pleaſure. Alas ſaid he, how eaſie it is to diſpute, whe
" the thing is abſent, which can bothe force and violent-
" ly aſſaile the bulwarks of moſt conſtant hearts. I full
" well doe ſée the trothe, and doe feele the thing that is
" good, and know what behoueth me to follow: but when
" I view that diuine beautie of my Ladie, hir graces,
" wiſdome, behauior and curteſie, when I ſée hir to caſt
" ſo louing an eie vpon me, that ſhe vſeth ſo great fami-
" liaritie, that ſhe forgetteth the greatneſſe of hir houſe
" to abaſe hir ſelf for my reſpect: how is it poſſible that
" I ſhould be ſo foolish to diſpiſe a duetie ſo rare and pre-

cious

tious, and to ſet light by that which the Nobleſt would
purſue with all reuerence and indeuor? Shall I be ſo
much voide of wiſedome to ſuffer the yong Princeſſe,
to ſée hir ſelf contempned of me, to conuert hir loue to
teares, by ſetting hir mynde vpon an other, to ſéeke
mine querthrow? Who knoweth not ỳ furie of a wo-
man? ſpecially of the Noble dame, by ſéing hir ſelf
deſpiſed? No, no, ſhe loueth me, and I will be hir ſer-
uaunt, and vſe the fortune proffred. Shal I be the firſt
ſimple Gentleman that hath married or loued a Prin-
ceſſe? Is it not more honourable for me to ſettle my
minde vpon a place ſo highe, than vpon ſome ſimple
wenche by whome I ſhall neither attaine profit, or ad-
uauncement? Baldouine of *Flaunders*, did not héy a No-
ble enterprize when he caried away Iudith the daugh-
ter of the *French* King, as ſhe was paſſing vpon ỳ ſeas
into England, to be married to the king of that Coun-
trey? Iam neither Pirat nor aduenturer, for that the
Ladie loueth me. What wrong doe I then to any per-
ſon by yelding loue againe? Is not ſhe at libertie? To
whome ought ſhe to make accompt of hir dedes & do-
ings, but to God alone and to hir owne conſcience? I
will loue hir, and cary like affection for the loue which
I know & ſée that ſhe beareth vnto me, being aſſured ỳ
the ſame is directed to good end, and that a woman ſo
wiſe as ſhe is, will not commit a fault ſo filthy, as to
blemiſh and ſpot hir honor. Thus Bologna framed the
plot to intertaine the Ducheſſe (albeit hir loue alredy
was fully bét vpon him) and fortified him ſelf againſt
all miſhap and perillous chaunce that might ſucceed,
as ordinarily you ſée that louers cóceiue all things for
their aduauntage, & fantaſie dreames agreable to that
which they moſt deſire, reſembling the mad and Bed-
lem perſons, which haue before their eies, the figured

" fantaſies which cauſe the conceit of their furie, and ſtay
" themſelues vpon the viſion of that, which moſt trou-
" bleth their offended brain. On the other ſide, ỹ Ducheſſe
was in no leſſe care of hir louer, the wil of whom was
hid & ſecrete, which more did vexe & tormẽt hir, than ỹ
fire of loue ỹ burned hir ſo feruẽtly. She could not tell
what way to hold, to do him vnderſtand hir heart & af-
fection. She feared to diſcouer ỹ ſame vnto him, doub-
ting either of ſome ſond & rigorous anſwer, or of reue-
ling of hir mind to him, whoſe preſẽce pleaſed hir more
" than all ỹ men of the world. Alas ſaid ſhe, am I happed
" into ſo ſtrãge miſery, ỹ with mine own mouth I muſt
" make requeſt to him, which with al humilitie ought to
" offer me his ſeruice? Shall a Ladie of ſuch blood as I
" am, be cõſtrained to ſue, wher all other be required by
" importunat inſtãce of their ſuters? Ah loue, loue, what
" ſo euer he was ỹ clothed thee with ſuch puiſſãce, I dare
" ſay he was the cruel enimie of mans fredom. It is im-
" poſſible that thou haſt thy being in heauen, ſith ỹ cle-
" mencie & courteous influence of ỹ ſame, inueſteth mã
" with better benefits, than to ſuffer hir nourſe childreñ
" to be intreated with ſuch rigor. He lieth which ſayth ỹ
" *Venus* is thy mother, for the ſweetneſſe & good grace ỹ
" reſteth in ỹ pitifull Goddeſſe, who taketh no pleaſure
" to ſe louers pered with ſo egre trauails as that which
" afflicteth my heart. It was ſome fierce cogitatiõ of *Sa-*
" *turne* that brought thee forth, & ſent thee into the world
" to breake the eaſe of them which liue at reſt without
" any paſſion or griefe. Pardon me Loue, if I blaſpheme
" thy maieſtie, for the treſſe and endleſſe griefe wherein
" I am plunged, maketh me thus to roue at large, & the
" doubts which I conceiue, do take away the healthy and
" ſoundneſſe of my mind, the little experiẽce in thy ſchole
" cauſeth this amaze in me, to be ſolicited with deſire ỹ

counter-

countersayeth the duetie, honor, and reputation of my
state: the partie whome I loue, is a Gentleman, ver-
tuous, valiant, sage, & of good grace. In this there is no
cause to blame Loue of blindneſſe, for all ỳ inequalitie
of our houses, apparãt vpon the first sight and shew of
the same. But frõ whence issue the Monarches, Prin-
ces & greater Lords, but frõ the naturall and common
masse of earth, wherof other men doe come: what ma-
keth these differẽces betwene those ỳ loue eche other,
if not the sottish opinion which we conceiue of great-
nesse, and prehemínence: as though naturall affections
be like to that ordained by the fantasie of men in their
lawes extreme. And what greater right haue Princes
to ioyn with a simple gentlewoman, than ỳ Princeſſe
to mary a Gentleman, and such as Anthonio Bologna
is, in whome heauen & nature haue forgotten nothing
to make him equall with them which marche amongs
the greatest. I thinke we be the daily slaues of the fõd
and cruell fantasie of those Tyrants, which say they
haue puissance ouer vs: and that straining our will to
their tirannie, we be still bound to the chaine like the
galley slaue. No no, Bologna shall be my husband, for of
a friend I purpose to make him my loyall and lawfull
husband, meaning therby not to offend God & men to-
gither, & pretend to liue without offẽse of conscience,
wherby my soule shall not be hindred for any thing I
do, by marying him whõ I so straũgely loue. I am sure
not to be deceiued in Loue. He loueth me so much or
more as I do him, but he dareth not disclose the same,
fearing to be refused & cast off with shame. Thus two
knited wils, & two hearts tied togithers wỏ equal knot
cannot chose but bring forth fruites worthie of such
societie. Let men say what they list, I will do none o-
therwise than my head and mind haue alredy framed.

Sem-

" Semblably I néde not make accompt to any perſon
" for my fact, my body, and reputation being in ful liber-
" tie and freedome. The bond of mariage made, ſhall ſo-
" uer the fault which men would déeme, & leauing mine
" eſtate, I ſhall do no wrong but to the greatneſſe of my
" houſe, which maketh me amõgs men right honorable.
" But theſe honors be nothing worth, where the minde
" is voide of contentation, and where the heart pricke
" forward by deſire leaueth the body and mind reſtleſſe
" without quiet. Thus the Ducheſſe founded hir enter-
priſe, determining to mary hir houſholde Paiſter, ſee-
king for occaſion and time, meete for diſcloſing of the
ſame, & albeit that a certaine naturall ſhamefaſtneſſe,
which of cuſtome accompanieth Ladies, did cloſe hir
mouth, and made hir to deferre for a certaine time the
effect of hir reſolued minde. Yet in the end vanquiſhed
with loue and impacience, ſhe was forced to breake of
ſilence, and to aſſure hir ſelf in him, reiecting feare cõ-
ceiued of ſhame, to make hir waie to pleaſure, which
ſhe lufted more thã mariage, the ſame ſeruing hir, but
for a maſke and couerture to hide hir follies & ſhame-
leſſe luſts, for which ſhe did the penance that hir follie
deſerued. For no colorable dede or deceitful trompery
can ſerue the excuſe of any notable wickednelle. She
then throughly perſuaded in hir intent, dreamyng and
thinking of nought elſe, but vpon the imbracement of
hir Bologna, ended and determined hir conceits & pre-
tended follies: and vpon a time ſent for him vp into
hir chamber, as commonly ſhe did for the affaires and
matters of hir houſe, and taking him a ſide vnto a win-
dow, hauing proſpect into a garden, ſhe knew not how
to begin hir talk: (for the heart being ſeaſed, & minde
troubled, and the wittes out of courſe, the tongue fai-
led to doe his office,) in ſuch wiſe, as of long time ſhe

was

was vnable to ſpeake one onely word. She ſurpriſed with like affection, was more aſtõned by ſeeing the alteration of his Ladie. So the two Louers ſtode ſtill like Images beholding one another, without any moouing at all, vntil the Ladie the hardieſt of them bothe, as feeling the moſt vehement and greateſt griefe, toke Bologna by the hãd, and diſſembling what ſhe thought, vſed this or ſuch like language: If any other beſides your ſelf (Gentleman) ſhould vnderſtand the ſecretes which now I purpoſe to diſcloſe, I doubt what ſpeeche were neceſſary to colour my words: But being aſſured of your diſcretion and wiſdom, and with what perfection nature hath indued you, and Arte, hauing accõpliſhed that in you, which nature did begin to worke, as one bred and brought vp in the royall Court of the ſecond *Alphonſe*, of Ferdinando and Federick of *Aragon* my couſins, I wil make no doubt at all to manifeſt to you the hidden ſecretes of my heart, being well perſuaded that when you ſhall both heare and fauor my reaſons, and take ỹ light which I bring forthe for me, eaſily you may iudge that mine aduiſe cannot be other, than iuſt and reaſonable. But if your conceits ſhall ſtraye from that which I ſhal ſpeak, & deeme not good of that which I determine, I ſhall be forced to thinke & ſay that they which eſteeme you wiſe & ſage, and to be a man of good and ready wit, be marueloully deceiued. Notwithſtãding my heart foretelleth that it is impoſſible for maiſter Bologna, to wandre ſo farre from equitie, but that by and by he wil enter the lyſtes, & diſcerne the white from black, and the wrong from that which is iuſt and right. For ſo much as hitherto I neuer ſaw thing done by you, which prepoſterated or peruerted ỹ good iudgement that all the world eſteemeth to ſhine in you, the ſame well manifeſted & declared by your tongue, the

" right iudge of the mind: you know and ſee how I am a
" widow through the death of that noble Gentleman of
" good remembrance, the Duke my Lord & husband: you
" be not ignorant alſo, that I haue liued and gouerned
" my ſelf in ſuch wiſe in my widow ſtate, as there is no
" man ſo hard and ſeuere of iudgement, that can blaſon
" reproche of me in ỳ which appertaineth to the honeſty
" & reputation of ſuch a Ladie as I am, bearing my part
" ſo right, as my conſcience yeldeth no remorſe, ſuppo-
" ſing that no man hath wherewith to bite & accuſe me.
" Touching the order of the goods of the Duke my lõe,
" I haue vſed them with ſuch diligence and diſcretion,
" as beſides the dettes which I haue diſcharged ſithens
" the death of my Lord, I haue purchaſed a goodly Manor
" in *Calabria*, and haue annexed the ſame to the Duke-
" dom of his heire: and at this day doe not owe one pen-
" nie to any creditor that lent mony to the Duke, which
" he toke vp to furniſh the charges in the warres, which
" he ſuſtained in the ſeruice of the Kings our ſouerains
" Lords in the late warres for the kingdome of *Naples*.
" I haue as I ſuppoſe by this meanes ſtopped the ſlan-
" derous mouth, and giuen cauſe vnto my ſonne, during
" his life to accõpt himſelf bound vnto his mother. Now
" hauing till this time liued for other, and made my ſelf
" ſubiect more than Nature could beare, I am entended
" to chaunge both my life and condition. I haue till thys
" time run, trauailed, & remoued to the Caſtels & Lord-
" ſhips of the Dukedome, to *Naples* and other places, be-
" ing in mind to tary as I am a widow. But what? new
" affaires and new councel hath poſſeſt my mind. I haue
" trauailed and pained my ſelf inough, I haue too long a-
" bidden a widowes life, I am determined therefore to
" prouide a husband, who by louing me, ſhal honor & che-
" riſh me, according to the loue which I ſhal bear to him,

and

& my deſert. For to loue a man without mariage, God defend my heart ſhould euer think, & ſhall rather die a hundred thouſand deathes, thã a deſire ſo wicked ſhold ſoile my conſcience, knowing well ỳ a woman which ſetteth hir honor to ſale, is leſſe than nothing, & deſerueth not ỳ the cõmon aire ſhold breathe vpõ hir, for all the reuerence ỳ men do beare or make them. I accuſe no perſon, albeit ỳ many noble women haue their forheds marked, with the blame of diſhoneſt life, & being honored of ſome, be neuertheleſſe the cõmon fable of ỳ people. To the intent then ỳ ſuch miſhap happẽ not to me, & perceiuing my ſelf vnable ſtil thus to liue, being yong as I am, & (God be thãked) neither deformed nor yet painted, I had rather be the louing wife of a ſimple fere, than ỳ Concubine of a king or great Prince. And what is the mightie Monarche able to waſh away the fault of his wife which hath abãdoned him cõtrary to ỳ duty & honeſty which ỳ vndefiled bed requireth? no les thẽ Princeſſes ỳ whilom treſpaſſed vñ thoſe which wer of baſer ſtuffe than thẽſelues. *Meſalina* vñ hir imperial robe could not ſo wel couer hir faults, but ỳ the hiſtoriãs do defame hir with ỳ name & title of a cõmon woman. *Fauſtina* the wife of ỳ ſage Monarch *Marcus Aurelius*, gained lyke report by rendring hir ſelf to others pleaſure, beſides hir lawful ſpouſe. To mary my ſelf to one that is mine equall, it is impoſſible, for ſo much as there is no Lord in all this Countrey meete for my degree, but is to olde of age, ỳ reſt being dead in theſe later warres. To mary a huſband that yet is but a child, is follie extreame, for the inconueniences which daily chaũce therby, & the euil intreatie ỳ Ladies do receiue whẽ they come to age, & their nature waxe cold, by reſon wherof, imbracements be not ſo fauorable, & their huſbãds glutted vñ ordinary meat vſe to rũ in erchãge.

" Wherefore I am reſolued without reſpite or delay, to
" chooſe ſome wel qualitied and renoumed Gentleman,
" that hath more vertue than richeſſe, of good Fame and
" honeſte, to the intēt I may make him my Lord, eſpouſe,
" and huſband. For I cannot imploy my loue vpon trea-
" ſure, which may be taken away, where richeſſe of the
" minde do faile, and ſhall be better content to ſee an ho-
" neſt Gentleman with little reuenue to be praiſed and
" cōmended of euery man for his good dēdes, than a rich
" carle curſſed and deteſted of all the world. Thus much
" I ſay, and it is the ſumme of all my ſecretes, wherin I
" pray your Councell and aduiſe. I know that ſome wil
" be offended wyth my choiſe, & the Lords my brothers,
" ſpecially the Cardinall will think it ſtraunge, and re-
" ceiue the ſame with ill digeſture, that muche a do ſhall
" I haue to be agreēd with them and to remoue the griefe
" which they ſhall conceiue againſt me for this mine en-
" terprize: wherefore I would the ſame ſhould ſecretely
" be kept, vntil without perill and daunger either of my
" ſelf or of him, whome I pretende to marry, I may pu-
" bliſh and manifeſt, not my loue but the mariage which
" I hope in God ſhall ſon be conſummate and accompli-
" ſhed with one, whome I doe loue better than my ſelf,
" and who as I full well do know, doeth loue me better
" than his owne proper life. Maiſter Bologna, which till
then harkned to the Oration of the Dutcheſſe without
mouing, feeling himſelf touched ſo neere, and hearing
that his Ladie had made hir approche for mariage, ſtode
ſtil aſtonned, his tongue not able to frame one word, only
fantaſied a thouſand *Chimeraes* in the aire, and formed
like numbre of imaginations in his minde, not able to
coniecture what hee was, to whome the Dutcheſſe had
vowed hir loue, & the poſſeſſion of hir beauty. He could
not thinke that this ioy was prepared for himſelf for

his

his Ladie ſpake no word of him, and he leſſe durſt ope his mouth, and yet was wel aſſured that ſhe loued him beyõd meaſure. Notwithſtãding knowing the ſickleneſſe and vnſtable heart of women, he ſayd vnto himſelf that ſhe would chaunge hir minde, for ſeing him to be ſo great a Cowarde, as not to offer hys ſeruice to a Ladie by whome he ſaw himſelf ſo manie times bothe wantonly loked vpon, & intertained with ſome ſecreſie more thã familiar. The Ducheſſe which was a fine and ſubtile dame, ſeing hir friend rapt with the paſſion, and ſtanding ſtil vnmoueable through feare, pale & amazed, as if hée had bene accuſed and condempned to die, knew by that countenaunce & aſtonishment of Bologna, ý ſhe was perfectly beloued of him: and ſo meaning not to ſuffer hym any longer to continue in that amaze, ne yet to further fear him, wyth hir diſſembled and fained mariage of any other but with him, ſhe toke him by the hand, and beholding him with a wãton and luring eye, (in ſuch ſort as the curious Philoſophers themſelues would awake, if ſuch a Lãpe and torch did ſhine within their ſtudies,) ſhe ſayde thus vnto hym:

„ Seignor Anthonio, I pray you be of good chére, & torment not your ſelf for any thing ý I haue ſaid: I know well, and of long time haue perceyued what good and faithfull loue you beare me, & with what affection you haue ſerued me, ſithens firſt you vſed my companie. Thinke me not to be ſo ignorant, but that I know ful wel by outward ſignes, what ſecretes be hid in the inner heart: and that coniectures many times doe giue me true and certaine knowledge of concealed things. And am not ſo ſolish to thinke you to be ſo vndiſcrete, but that you haue marked my countenaunce & maner, and therby haue knowen that I haue bene more affectioned to you, than to any other. For that cauſe (ſayd

" ſhe, ſtraining him by ẏ hãd very louingly, & with chere
" full coloure in hir face) I ſweare vnto you, & doe pro-
" miſe ẏ if you ſo thinke meete, it ſhall be none other but
" your ſelf whom I will haue, & deſire to take to huſband
" and lawfull ſpouſe, aſſuring my ſelf ſo much of you, as
" the loue which ſo long time hath ben hidden & couered
" in our hearts, ſhal appeare by ſo euident proofe, as only
" death ſhal end & vndoe the ſame. The gentleman hea-
ring ſuch ſodain talk, & the aſſurãce of ẏ which he moſt
wiſhed for, albeit he ſaw ẏ daunger extreme wherun-
to he laũched himſelf by eſpouſing this great Ladie, &
the enimies he ſhold get by entring ſuch aliance: not-
withſtanding building vpon vaine hope, and thinking
at length that the choler of the *Aragon* brother would
paſſe away if they vnderſtode ẏ mariage, determined
to purſue ẏ purpoſe, & not to refuſe that great preher-
ment, being ſo prodigally offred, for which cauſe he an-
" ſwered his Lady in this maner. If it were in my pow-
" er madame, to bring to paſſe ẏ, which I deſire for your
" ſeruice by acknowledging of ẏ benifits & fauors which
" you depart vnto me, as my mind preſenteth thãks for
" the ſame, I wold think my ſelf the happieſt Gentlemã
" ẏ liueth, & you the beſt ſerued Princeſſe of the world.
" For one better beloued (I dare preſume to ſay, and ſo
" long as I liue wil affirm) is not to be found. If til this
" time I delayed to opẽ that which now I diſcouer vnto
" you, I beſeeche you Madame to impute it to the great-
" neſſe of your eſtate, and to the duetie of my calling &
" office in your houſe, being not ſeemely for a ſeruant to
" talk of ſuch ſecretes with his Ladie and miſtreſſe. And
" truely ẏ pain which I haue indured to holde my peace,
" and to hide my griefe, hath bene more noyſome to me
" than one hundred thouſand like ſorowes together, al-
" though it had ben lawfull to haue reuealed thẽ to ſome

truſty

frutty friend: I do not deny madame, but of long time
you did perceiue my follie and preſumption, by addreſ-
ſing my minde ſo high, as to the *Aragon* bloud, and to
ſuch a Princeſſe as you be. And who cã beguile the eye
of a Louer, ſpecially of hir, whoſe Paragon for good
minde, wiſedom & gentlenelle is not? And I cõfeſſe to
you bildes, that I haue moſt euidently perceiued how
certain loue hath lodged in your gracious heart, wher-
with you bare me greater affection, thã you did to any
other within the compaſſe of your familie. But what?
Great Ladies hearts be fraught wᵗ ſecretes & conceits
of other effects, than the minds of ſimple womẽ, which
cauſed me to hope for none other guerdon of my loyal
& faithfull affection, than death, & the ſame very ſhort,
ſith ẏ litle hope accompanied with great, nay rather
extreme paſſion, is not able to giue ſufficiẽt force, both
to ſuffer & to ſtablish my heart with conſtancie. Now
for ſo much as of your motion, grace, curteſie & libera-
litie the ſame is offred, & that it pleaſeth you to accept
me for yours, I hũbly beſeche you to diſpoſe of me not
as huſband, but of one which is, & ſhalbe your ſeruaunt
for euer, & ſuch as is more ready to obey, thã you to cõ-
maund. It reſteth now Madame, to conſider how, & in
what wiſe our affairs are to be directed, ẏ things being
in alſuraãce, you may ſo liue without perill and bruite of
ſlaunderous tongues, as your good fame & honeſt part
may continue without ſpot or blemiſh.

Beholde the firſt Acte of the Tragedie, and the proui-
ſion of the fare which afterwardes ſent them hothe
to their graue, who immediately gaue their mutuall
faith: and the houre was aſſigned the next day, that
the fair Princeſſe ſhold be in hir chamber alone, attẽ-
ded vpon with one only Gentlewoman which had ben
brought vp with ẏ Ducheſſe frõ hir cradle, & was made

pſtuts to the heavy mariage of thoſe two lovers which was conſummate in hir pzeſence. And foz the pzeſent time they paſſed ỳ ſame in wozds, foz ratificatiõ wher of they wẽt to bed togither. But ỳ pain in the end was greater than the pleaſure, and had ben better foz them bothe, yea and alſo foz the third, that they had ſhewed them ſelues ſo wyſe in the dẽde, as diſcrete in keping ſilence of that which was done. Foz albeit their mariage was ſecrete, and therby politikely gouerned them ſelues in their ſtelthes and robberies of loue, and that Bologna moze oft held the ſtate of the ſteward of the houſe by day, than of Lozd of ỳ ſame, and by night ſupplied that place, yet in ỳ end, the thing was perceiued which they deſired to be cloſely kept. And as it is impoſſible to till and culture a fertile ground, but ỳ the ſame muſt yelde ſome frute, euen ſo the Ducheſſe after many pleaſures (being ripe and plentiful) became with child, which at the firſt aſtonned the maried couple: neuertheleſſe the ſame ſo well was pzouided foz, as the firſt childbedde was kept ſecrete, and none did know thereof. The childe was nourced in the towne, and the father deſired to haue him named Federick, foz remembzaunce of the parents of his wife. Now foztune which lieth in daily waite and ambuſhment, ỹ liketh not ỳ men ſhold long loiter in pleaſure and paſſetime, being enuious of ſuch pzoſperity, cramped ſo the legges of our two louers, as they muſt nedes change their game, and learne ſome other pzatiſe: foz ſo much as the Ducheſſe being great with childe again, and deliuered of a girle, the boſineſſe of the ſame was not ſo ſecretely done, but that it was diſcouered. And it ſufficed not that the bzute was noiſed thzough *Naples*, but that the ſound flew further off. As eche mã doth know that rumoz hath many mouthes, who with the multi-

tude

titude of his tongues and Trumps, proclaimeth in diuers and ſundry places, the things which chaunce in al the regions of the earth. Euen ſo that babling fame, caried the newes of that ſecond childbed to the eares of the Cardinall of *Aragon* the Ducheſſe brother, being then at *Rome*. Think what ioy and pleaſure the *Aragon* brothers had, by hearing the report of their ſiſters fate. I dare preſume to ſay, that albeit they were extremely wroth with this happened ſlaunder, & with ỳ diſhoneſt fame whych ỳ Ducheſſe had gotten throughout *Italie*, yet farre greater was their ſorrow & griefe, for that they did not know what he was, that ſo courteouſly was allied to their houſe, and in their loue had increaſed their lignieage. And therfore ſwelling wyth deſpite, & rapt with furie to ſée themſelues ſo defamed by one of their bloud, they purpoſed by all meanes whatſoeuer it coſt them, to know the lucky louer that had ſo wel tilled the Ducheſſe their ſiſters field. Thus deſirous to remoue that ſhame from before their eyes, and to be reuenged of a wrong ſo notable, they ſent eſpial round about, and ſcoutes to *Naples*, to view and ſpy the behauior & talk of the Ducheſſe, to ſettle ſome certaine iudgement of him, whych ſtealingly was become their brother in law. The Ducheſſe Court being in thys trouble, ſhée dyd continually perceiue in hir houſe, hir brothers men to mark hir countenance, and to note thoſe that came thither to viſite hir, & to whom ſhe vſed greateſt familiaritie, bicauſe it is impoſſible but that the fire, although it be raked vnder the aſhes, muſt giue ſome heat. And albeit the two louers vſed eche others companie, without ſhewing any ſigne of their affectiõ, yet they purpoſed to chaũge their eſtate for a time, by yelding truce to their pleaſures. Yea, & although Bologna was a wiſe and prouidẽt perſonage,

fearing to be ſurpriſed vpon the fact, or that the Gentlewoman of the Chamber corrupted with money, or forced by feare, ſhold pronoũce any matter to his hinderance or diſauantage, determined to abſent himſelf from *Naples*, yet not ſo ſodainly but that hee made the Ducheſſe his faithfull Ladie & companion priuie of his intent. And as they were ſecretely in their chãber together, hee vſed theſe or ſuch like words: Madame, although the right god intent and vnſtained conſcience, is free from fault, yet the iudgement of men hath further relation to ỹ exteriour apparance, than to vertues force and innocencie it ſelf, as ignorant of the ſecrets of the thought: and ſo in things that be well done, we muſt of neceſſitie fall into the ſentence of thoſe, whom beaſtly affection ranſheth more, than ruled reaſon. You ſee the ſolempne watch and garde which the ſeruaunts of the Lords your brothers do within your houſe, & the ſuſpicion which they haue cõceiued by reaſon of your ſecõd childbed, & by what meanes they labor truely to know how your affaires procede, and things do paſſe. I feare not death where your ſeruice may be aduaũced, but if herein the maiden of your chãber be not ſecrete, if ſhe be corrupted, and if ſhe kepe not cloſe that which ſhe ought to do, it is not ignorant to you that it is ỹ loſſe of my life, and ſhall die ſuſpected to be a whoremonger & harlet, euen I, (I ſay) ſhall incurre that perill, which am your true and lawfull husband. Thys ſeparation chaunceth not by Juſtice or deſert, ſith the cauſe is not righteous for vs: but rather your brethrẽ will procure my death, when I ſhall thinke the ſame in greateſt aſſurãce. If I had to do but with one or two, I wold not change the place, ne march one ſtep from *Naples*, but be aſſured, that a great band, and the ſame wel armed will ſet vpon me. I pray you madame ſuffer me to re-

tire

tire for a time, for I am aſſured that when I am abſent, they will neuer ſoile their hands, or imbrue their ſwords in your bloud. If I doubted any thing at al of perill touching your owne perſon, I had rather a hundred hundred times die in your companie, than liue to ſee you no more. But out of doubt I am, ỹ if the things were diſcouered, & they knew you to be begottē with childe by me, you ſhould be ſafe, where I ſhold ſuſtaine the penaunce of ỹ fact, committed wout fault or ſinne. And therfore I am determined to goe from *Naples*, to order mine affaires, and to cauſe my Reuenue to be brought to the place of mine abode, and from thence to *Ancona*, vntil it pleaſeth God to mitigate the rage of your brethren, and recouer their good wils to conſent to our mariage. But I meane not to doe or conclude any thing without your aduiſe. And if this intent doe not like you, giue me councell Madame, what I were beſt to doe, that both in life and death you may knowe your faithfull ſeruaunt and louing huſband is ready to obey and pleaſe you.

This good Ladie hearing hir huſbands diſcourſe, vncertain what to doe, wept bitterly, as wel for griefe to loſe his preſence, as for that ſhe felt hir ſelf with child the third time. The ſighes and teares, the ſobbes and heauie lokes, which ſhe threwe forth vpon hir ſorowfull huſband, gaue ſufficient witneſſe of hir paine and griefe. And if none had heard hir, I thinke hir playntes woulde haue well expreſſed hir inwarde ſmarte of minde. But like a wiſe Ladie, ſeeing the alleaged reaſons of hir huſband, licenſed him, although againſt hir minde, not without vtterance of theſe few words, before he went out of hir Chamber: Deare huſband, if I were ſo well aſſured of the affection of my brethren, as I am of my maides fidelitie, I would entreat

" you not to leaue me alone: ſpecially in the caſe I am,
" being with childe. But knowing that to be iuſt & true
" which you haue ſayd, I am content to forçe my will for
" a certaine time, that hereafter we may liue at reſt to-
" gether, ioyning our ſelues in the companie of our chil-
" dren and familie, voide of thoſe troubles, which great
" Courts ordinarily beare within the compaſſe of their
" Palaces. Of one thing I muſt intreat you, that ſo often
" as you can by truſtie meſſenger, you ſend me word &
" intelligence of your health and ſtate, bicauſe the ſame
" ſhal bring vnto me greater pleaſure & contentation,
" than the welfare of mine owne: and bicauſe alſo, vpon
" ſuch occurrentes as ſhall chaunce, I may prouyde for
" mine owne affaires, the ſuretie of my ſelf, and of our
" childrē. In ſaying ſo, ſhe embraced him very amorouſ-
ly, and he kiſſed hir wyth ſo great ſorrow and griefe of
heart, as the ſoule thought in that extaſie out of his bo-
dy to take hir flight, ſorowful beyōd meſure ſo to leue
hir whome he loued, for the great curteſies and honor
which he had receiued at hir hands. In the end, fearing
that the *Aragon* eſpials wold come and perceiue them
in thoſe priuities, Bologna toke his leaue, and bad hys
Ladie and ſpouſe Farewell.

And thus was the ſecond Acte of this Tragicall hiſtorie, to ſee a fugitife huſband ſecretely to mary, eſpe-
ciallly hir, vpon whom he ought not ſo much as to loke
but with feare and reuerence. Beholde here (O ye fo-
liſh louers) a Glaſſe of your lightneſſe, and ye women,
the courſe of your fonde behauior. It behoueth not the
wiſe ſodainly to execute their firſt motiōs and deſires
of their heart, for ſo much as they may be aſſured that
pleaſure is purſued ſo neare with a repentāce ſo ſharp
to be ſuffred, and hard to be digeſted, as their voluptu-
ouſneſſe ſhall vtterly diſcontent them. True it is, that

maria-

marriages be done in Heauen, and perfourmed in earth, but that ſaying may not be applied to fooles, which gouerne themſelues by carnall deſires, whoſe ſcope is but pleaſure, & the reward many times equal to their follie. Shall I be of opinion that a houſholde ſeruaunt ought to ſollicite, nay rather ſuborne the daughter of his Lord without punifhment, or that a vile and abiect perſon dare to mount vpon a Princes bed? No no, pollicie requireth order in all, and eche wight ought to be matched according to their qualitie, without making a paſtime of it to couer our follies, & know not of what force loue and deſteny be, except the ſame be reſiſted. A godly thing it is to loue, but where reaſon loſeth his place, loue is without his effect, and the ſequele rage & madneſſe. Leaue we ẏ diſcourſe of thoſe which beleue that they be conſtrained to folowe the force of their minde, and may eaſily ſubdue themſelues to ẏ lawes of vertue and honeſty, like one that thruſteth his head into a ſack, and thinks he can not get out, ſuch people do pleaſe themſelues in their loſſe, and think all well that is noiſom to their health, daily folowing their cõtrarie. Come we againe then to ſir Bologna, who after he had left his wife in hir Caſtell, went to *Naples*, and hauing ſelled a rent vpon his landes, and leuied a good ſumme of money, he repaired to *Ancona*, a Citie of the patrimonie of the *Romane* Church, whither he caried his two children, which he had of the Ducheſſe, cauſing the ſame to be brought vp with ſuch diligẽce and care, as is to be thought a father wel affectioned to his wife would doe, and who delighted to ſee a braunche of the tree, that to him was the beſt beloued fruit of ẏ world. There he hired a houſe for his train, and for thoſe that waited vpon his wife, who in the meane time was in great care, & could not tell of what woode to make hir

arowes, perceiuing that hir belly began to ſwell and grow to the time of hir deliuerie, ſeeing that from day to day, hir brothers ſeruaunts were at hir back, voide of councel and aduiſe, if one euening ſhe had not ſpoke to the Gentlewoman of hir chãber, touching the douts and peril wherin ſhe was, not knowing how ſhe might be deliuered from the ſame. That maiden was gentle & of a good minde and ſtomake, and loued hir miſtreſſe very derely, & ſeeing hir ſo amazed and tormenting hir ſelf to death, minding to fray hir no further, ne to reproue hir of hir fault, which could not be amended, but rather to prouide for ỳ daunger wherunto ſhe had hedlong caſt hir ſelf, gaue hir this aduiſe: How now Madame (ſaid ſhe,) is that wiſdom which from your childhode hath bene ſo familiar in you, diſlodged from your breſt in time, when it ought chiefly to reſt for incoumbring of thoſe miſhaps ỳ are cõming vpon vs? Thinke you to auoid ỳ dangers, by thus tormenting your ſelf, except you ſet your hands to the worke, thereby to giue the repulſe to aduerſe fortune? I haue heard you many times ſpeake of the conſtancie & force of minde, which ought to ſhine in the dedes of Princeſſes, more clerely than amõgs thoſe dames of baſer houſe, & which ought to make thẽ appere like the ſunne amid ỳ litle ſtarres. And yet I ſée you now aſtonned, as though you had neuer forſéne, ỳ aduerſitie chaunceth ſo wel to catch the great within his clouches, as ỳ baſe & ſimple ſort. Is it but now, ỳ you haue called to remembrance, ỳ which might inſue your mariage with ſir Bologna? Did hys only preſence aſſure you againſt the waits of fortune, & was it the thought of paines, feares & frights, which now turmoileth your dolorous minde? Ought you thus to vexe your ſelf, when nede it is to think how to ſaue both your honor, and the fruite within your intrailes?

If your ſorow be ſo great ouer ſir Bologna, and if you
feare your childbed wil be deſcried, why ſeeke you not
meanes to attempt ſome voyage, for couering of the
fact, to beguile the eyes of them which ſo diligently do
watch you? Doth your heart faile you in that matter?
Whereof do you dreame? Why ſweat and freat you
before you make me anſwere? Ah ſweete heart (anſwe-
red the Ducheſſe,) if thou felteſt the paine which I do
ſuffer, thy tongue wold not be ſo much at will, as thou
ſhewest it now to be for reproſe of my ſmal cõſtancie.
I do ſorow ſpecially for ẏ cauſes which thou alleageſt,
and aboue all, for that I know wel, that if my brethrẽ
had neuer ſo litle intelligence of my being with child,
I were vndone: my life at an end, and peraduenture
poore wench, thou ſhouldeſt beare the penaũce for my
ſinne. But what way can I take, that ſtil theſe cãdles
may not giue light, and I may be voided of the traine
which ought to wayt vpon my brethren? I thinke if I
ſhould deſcend into Hel, they would know, whither a-
ny ſhadowe there were in loue with me. Now geſſe if
I ſhould trauaile the Realme, or retire to any other
place, whither they wold leaue me at peace? Nothing
leſſe, ſith they would ſodainly ſuſpect, that the cauſe of
my departure proceeded of deſire to liue at libertie,
to dallie wyth him, whome they ſuſpect to be other
than my lawfull husbande. And it may be as they be
wisked and ſuſpicious, and will doubt of my great-
neſſe, ſo ſhall I be farre more infortunate by trauai-
lyng, than here in miſerie amidde myne anguiſhe:
and you the reſt that be keepers of my Councell, ſhall
fal into greater daunger, vpon whome no doubt they
wil be reuenged, and ſeeth themſelues for your vnhap-
py waiting and attendance vpon vs. Madame ſaid the
bolde maiden, be not afraide, and follow mine aduiſe,

for

" For I hope that it ſhall be the meanes both to ſée your
" ſpouſe, & to rid thoſe troubleſome verlets out of your
" houſe, & in like manner ſafely to deliuer you into good
" aſſuraunce. Say your minde ſayd the Ladie, for it may
" be, that I will gouerne my ſelf accordyng to the ſame.
" Mine aduiſe is then, ſayd ỳ Gentlewoman, to let your
" houſhold vnderſtand, that you haue made a vow to vi-
" ſite the holy Temple of our Lady of *Loretto*, (a famous
" place of Pilgrimage in *Italie*) and that you commaund
" your traine to make themſelues ready to waite vpon
" you for accõpliſhment of your deuotion, & from thence
" you ſhall take your iourney to ſoiorne at *Ancona*, whi-
" ther before you depart, you ſhall ſend your moueables
" and plate, with ſuch money as you ſhall think neceſſa-
" rie. And afterwardes God will performe the reſt, and
" through his holy mercy will guide & direct all your af-
" faires. The Ducheſſe hearing the maydẽ ſpeake thoſe
words, and amazed of hir ſodaine inuention, could not
forbeare to embrace and kiſſe hir, bleſſing the houre
wherin ſhe was borne, and that euer ſhe chaunced in-
" to hir companie, to whome afterwardes ſhe ſayd. My
" wẽch, I had well determined to giue ouer mine eſtate
" and noble porte, ioyfully to liue like a ſimple Gentle-
" woman with my deare and welbeloued huſband, but
" I could not deuiſe how I ſhould conueniently departe
" this Countrey wythout ſuſpition of ſome follie: and
" ſith that thou haſt ſo well inſtructed me for bringing ỳ
" ſame to paſſe, I promiſe thée that ſo diligently thy coũ-
" cel ſhal be performed, as I ſée the ſame to be right good
" and neceſſarie. For rather had I ſée my huſband, being
" alone without title of Ducheſſe or great Lady, than to
" liue without him beautified with the graces and ſwéet
" names of honor and preheminence. This deuiſed plot
was no ſoner groũded, but ſhe gaue ſuch order for exe-
cution

cution of the ſame, & wrought it to paſſe with ſuch dexteritie, as ỳ Ladie in leſſe than. viij. dayes had conueyed and ſent the moſt part of hir moueables, and ſpecially the chiefeſt and beſt to *Ancona*, taking in ỳ meane time hir way towards *Loretto* after ſhe had vowed hir ſolempne vow made for that Pilgrimage. It was not ſufficiẽt for this ſwilth woman to take a husband, more to glut hir libidinous appetite, than for other occaſion, except ſhe added to hir ſinne, an other execrable impietie, making holy places and dueties of deuotion, to be as it were the miniſters of hir follie. But let vs conſider the force of Louers rage, which ſo ſone as it hath ſeaſed vpon the minds of men, we ſee how marueilous be the effects thereof, and with what ſtraint and puiſſaunce that madneſſe ſubdueth the wiſe and ſtrongeſt worldlings. Who wold think that a great Ladie wold haue abandoned hir eſtate, hir gods and childe, would haue miſpriſed hir honor and reputation, to folow like a vagabond, a poore and ſimple Gentleman, and him beſides that was the houſhold ſeruaunt of hir Court: And yet you ſee this great and mightie Ducheſſe trot & run after the male, like a female Wolfe or Lioneſſe (whẽ they goe to ſault,) and forget the Noble bloud of *Aragon* wherof ſhe was deſcẽded, to couple hir ſelf almoſt with the ſimpleſt perſon of all the trimmeſt Gentlemen of *Naples*. But turne we not the example of follies, to be a matter of cõſequence: for if one or two become bankrupt of their honor, it foloweth not god Ladies, that their face ſhould ſerue for a matche to your deſerts, & much leſſe a patron for you to folow. Theſe Pictories be not written to train and trap you, to purſue the thouſand thouſand ſlippery ſleightes of Loues gallantiſe, but rather carefully to warn you to behold the ſemblable faultes, and to ſerue for a bugge to diſ-

charge the poyſon which gnaweth and fretteth the integritie and ſoundneſſe of the ſoule. The wiſe & ſkilfull Apothecary or compoſitor of drugges, deſireth Vipers fleſh to purge the patient from hote corrupted blonde, which conceiueth and engendreth Leproſie within his body. In like manner, the fonde loue, & wicked ribaldrie of Semiramis, Paſiphae, Meſſalina, Fauſtina, and Romida is ſhewed in writ, that euery of you ſhould feare to be numbred and recorded amõgs ſuch common and diſhonorable women. You Princes and great Lordes read the follies of Paris, the adulteries of Hercules, the daintie and effeminate life of Sardanapalus, the tirannie of Phalaris Buſiris, or Dionyſius of Scicile, and ſee the Hiſtory of Tiberius, Nero Caligula, Domitian and Heliogabalus, & ſpare not to numbre them amongs our wanton youthes which foile thẽſelues with ſuch villanies more filthily than the ſwine do in the durt. All this intendeth it an inſtruction for your youth to follow the infection and whoredome of thoſe monſters. Better it were all thoſe bokes were drõched in bottõleſſe depth of ſeas, than chriſtiã life by their meanes ſhold be corrupted: but the exãple of ỹ wicked is induced for to eſchue & auoid them as ỹ life of the good & honeſt is remẽbred to frame & addreſſe our behauior in this world to be praiſe worthy & cõmẽded. Otherwiſe ỹ holineſſe of ſacred writ ſhold ſerue for an argument to ỹ vnthrifty & luxurious to confirm & approue their beaſtly & licencious wickednelle. Come we again thẽ to our purpoſe: the good Pilgrime of *Loretto* went forth hir voyage to atchieue hir deuotions, & to viſite the Saint for whoſe Reliques ſhe was departed ỹ Countrey of ỹ Duke hir ſonne. When ſhe had done hir ſuffrages at *Loretto*, hir people thought ỹ the voyage was at an end, & that ſhe wold haue returned again into hir Countrey. But ſhe

ſaid vnto them: that ſith ſhe was ſo neere *Ancona*, being but .xv. miles off, ſhe would not returne before ſhe had ſeen ỹ auncient & goodly city, which diuers Hiſtories do greatly recõmend, as wel for the antiquitie, as for the pleaſant ſeat therof. All were of hir aduiſe, & went to ſée ỹ antiquities of *Ancona*, & ſhe to renue ỹ pleaſures which ſhe had before begon wᵗ hir Bologna, who was aduertiſed of all hir determination, reſting now like a God, poſſeſſed wᵗ the iewels & richeſſe of the Ducheſſe, & had taken a faire palace in the great ſtreat of the Citie, by ỹ gate wherof the train of his Ladie muſt paſſe. The Harbinger of the Ducheſſe poſted before to take vp lodging for the traine: but Bologna offred vnto him his Palace for the Lady. So Bologna which was alreadỹ welbeloued in *Ancona*, and entred new amitie and great acquaintance with the Gentlemen of the Citie, with a goodly troupe of them, went forth to méete his wife, to whome he preſented his houſe, and beſought hir that ſhe and hir traine would vouchſafe to lodge with him. She receiued the ſame verỹ thãkfullỹ, and withdrew hir ſelf vnto his houſe, who conducted hir thither, not as a Huſband, but like hym that was hir humble and affectionate ſeruaunt. But what needeth much diſcourſe of wordes? The Ducheſſe knowing that it was impoſſible but ethe man muſt be priuie to hir facte, and know what ſecretes hath paſſed betweene hir and hir Huſband, to the ende that no other opinion of hir Childebed ſhould be conceyued, but that which was good and honeſt, and done ſince the accompliſhment of the mariage, the morrowe after hir arriuall to *Ancona*, aſſembled all hir traine in the Hall, of purpoſe no longer to kéepe ſecrete that ſyr Bologna was hir Huſbande, and that already ſhe had had two Children by him, and againe was great with childe.

And when they were come together after dinner, in ỹ
preſence of hir huſbād, ſhe ſpake vnto thē theſe wordes.
" Gentlemen, and al ye my truſty and loving ſeruants,
" highe time it is to manifeſt to euery of you, the thing
" which hath ben done before the face, and in ỹ preſence
" of him who knoweth the moſt obſcure & hyddē ſecrets
" of our thoughts. And needefull it is not to kepe ſilent ỹ
" which is neither euill done ne hurtfull to any perſon.
" If things could be kept ſecrete and ſtill remaine vn-
" knowen, except they were declared by the doers of thē,
" yet would not I commit the wrong in cōcealing that,
" which to diſcouer vnto you doth greatly delite me, and
" deliuereth my mind from exceeding griefe, in ſuch wiſe
" as if ỹ flames of my deſire could breake out with ſuch
" violence, as the fire hath taken heat within my mind,
" ye ſhold ſee the ſmoke mount vp with greater ſmoul-
" der than that which the mount *Gibel* doeth domit forth
" at certaine ſeaſons of the yeare. And to the intent I
" may not kepe you long in this ſuſpect, this ſecrete fire
" within my heart, and that which I will cauſe to flame
" in open aire, is a certain opinion which I conceiue for
" a mariage by me made certaine yeares paſt, at what
" time I choſe and wedded a huſband to my fantaſie and
" liking, deſirous no longer to liue in widow ſtate, and
" vnwilling to doe the thing that ſhould preiudice & hurt
" my conſcience. The ſame is done, and yet in one thing
" I haue offended, which is by long kēping ſecrete the
" perfourmed mariage: for the wicked brute diſpearſed
" through the realme by reaſon of my childbed, one yere
" paſt, hath diſpleaſed ſome, howbeit my conſcience re-
" ceiueth comfort, for that the ſame is frē from fault or
" blot. Now know ye therfore what he is, whome I ac-
" knowledge for my Lord and ſpouſe, and who it is that
" lawfully hath me eſpouſed in the preſēce of this Gen-

tlewoman

tle woman whom you ſée, which is the witneſſe of our
Nuptials & accorde of mariage. This gentleman here
preſent Antonio Bologna, is he to whom I haue ſworn
and giuen my faith, and hée againe to me hath ingaged
his owne. Ye it is whom I accompt for my ſpouſe and
huſband, (& with whome henceforth) I meane to reſt
and continue. In conſideration wherof, if there be any
héere amongs you all, that ſhall miſlike of my choiſe, &
is willing to wait vpon my ſonne the Duke, I meane
not to let them of their intent, praying them faithfull-
ly to ſerue him, and to be carefull of his perſon, and to
be vnto him ſo honeſt and loyall, as they haue bene to
me ſo long as I was their miſtreſſe. But if any of you
deſire ſtil to make your abode with me, and to be par-
takers of my wealth and woe, I wil ſo entertain him,
as hée ſhall haue good cauſe to be contented, if not, de-
part ye hence to *Malfi*, and the ſteward ſhall prouide
for either of you according to your degrée: for touching
my ſelf I do minde no more to be termed an infamous
Ducheſſe: rather had I be honored with the title of a
ſimple Gentlewoman, or with that eſtate which she
can haue that hath an honeſt huſband, and with whom
ſhe holdeth faithfull and loyall companie, than reuer-
ced with the glory of a Princeſſe, ſubiect to the deſpite
of ſlaunderous tongues. Ye know (ſaid ſhe to Bologna)
what hath paſſed betwene vs, and God is the witneſſe
of the integritie of my Conſcience, wherefore I pray
you bring forth our children, ỳ eche man may beholde
the fruites raiſed of our alliance. Hauing ſpoken thoſe
words, and the children brought forth into the hall, all
the companie ſtode ſtil ſo aſtonned with that new ſuc-
ceſſe and tale, as though hornes ſodainely had ſtarted
forth their heads, and reſted vnmoueable and amazed,
like the great marble piller of *Rome* called *Paſquile*,

for ſo much as they neuer thought, ne conjectured that Bologna was the ſucceſſor of the Duke of *Malfi* in his mariage bed.

This was the preparatiue of the *Cataſtrophe* & bloudie end of this Tragedie. For of all the Ducheſſe ſeruaunts, there was not one that was willing to continue with their auncient miſtreſſe, who with the faithful maiden of hir chamber remained at *Ancona*, enioying the ioyful embracements of hir husband, in al ſuch pleaſure & delights as they doe, which hauing lined in feare, be ſet at liberty, & out of al ſuſpition, plunged in a ſea of ioy, & fleting in the quiet calme of al paſſetime, where Bologna had none other care, but how to pleaſe his beſt beloued, & ſhe ſtudied nothing elſe but how to loue and obey him, as the wife ought to do hir husband. But this faire weather laſted not long, for although ỹ ioyes of mẽ do not long endure, and waſt in litle time, yet delights of louers be leſſe firme & ſtedfaſt, & paſſe away almoſt in one moment of an hour. Now the ſeruaunts of the Ducheſſe which were retired, and durſt tary no longer with hir, fearing the fury of the Cardinal of *Aragon* brother to the Ladie, the very day they departed from *Ancona*, deuiſed amongs themſelues ỹ one of them ſhold ride in poſt to *Rome*, to aduertiſe the Cardinal of the Ladies mariage, to the intent that the *Aragon* brethren ſhold conceiue no cauſe to accuſe thẽ of felonie & treaſon. That determination ſpedily was accompliſhed, one poſting towards *Rome*, and the reſt galloping to the Countrey and Caſtels of the Duke. Theſe newes reported to the Cardinal & his brother, it may be conſidered how grieuouſly they toke ỹ ſame, & for that they were not able to digeſt thẽ with modeſtie, the yõgeſt of the brethren, yelled forth a thouſand curſſes & deſpites, againſt ỹ ſimple ſexe of womãkind.

Do ſaid ỹ Prince (trãſported with choler, & driuen in
to deadly furie,) what law is able to punish or reſtrain
ỹ fooliſh indiſcretiõ of a womã, that yeldeth hir ſelf to
hir own deſires? What ſhame is able to bridle & with-
drawe hir from hir minde & madneſſe? Or with what
feare is it poſſible to ſnaffle thẽ frõ execution of their
filthineſſe? There is no beaſt be he neuer ſo wilde, but
man ſometime may tame, and bring to his lure and
order. The force and diligence of man is able to make
milde the ſtrong and proud, and to ouertake the ſwif-
teſt beaſt and foule, or otherwiſe to attaine the high-
eſt and deepeſt thing of the world: but this incarnate
diueliſh beaſt the woman, no force can ſurmount hir,
no ſwiftneſſe can approche hir mobilitie, no good mind
can preuent hir ſleights and deceites, they ſeeme to be
procreated and borne againſt all order of nature, and
to liue without law, which gouerneth all other things
indued wyth ſome reaſon and vnderſtanding. But
what a great abhomination is this, that a Gentlewo-
man of ſuch a houſe as ours is, hath forgotten hir e-
ſtate, and the greatneſſe of hir aliance, beſides the no-
bilitie of hir deceaſed huſband, with the hope of the to-
warde youth of the Duke hir ſonne and our Nephew.
Ah falſe and vile bitch, I ſweare by the almightie God
and by his bleſſed wounds, that if I can catch thee, and
that wicked knaue thy choſen mate, I will pipe ye
both ſuch a galiarde, as ye neuer felt the lyke ioy
and mirthe. I will make ye daunce ſuch a bloudy bar-
genet, as your whorish heate for euer ſhall be coled.
What abuſe haue they committed vnder title of ma-
riage, which was ſo ſecretely done, as their Children
do witneſſe their filthy embracements, but their pro-
miſe of faith was made in open aire, and ſerueth for
a cloke and viſarde for their moſt filthy whoredomes.

And

" And what if mariage was concluded, be we of ſo little
" reſpect, as the carion beaſt would not vouchſafe to a-
" uertiſe vs of hir entent? Or is Bologna a man worthy
" to be allied or mingled with the royall bloud of *Ara-*
" *gon* and *Caſtille*? No no, be hee neuer ſo good a Gentle-
" mã, his race agréeth not with kingly ſtate. But I make
" to God a vowe, that neuer will I take one ſound and
" reſtfull ſléepe, vntill I haue diſpatched that infamous
" fact from our bloud, and that the caitife whoremonger
" be vſed according to his deſert. The Cardinall alſo
was out of quiet, grinding his téeth togither, chatte-
ring for the Iacke an Apes *Pater noſter*, promiſing no
better vſage to their Bologna than his yonger brother
did. And the better to intrap them both (without fur-
ther ſturre for that time) they ſent to ỳ Lord Giſmon-
do Gonſago the Cardinal of *Mantua* then Legate for
Pope Iulius the ſecond at *Ancona*, at whoſe hands they
enioyed ſuch friendſhip, as Bologna and all his familie
were commaũded ſpedily to auoide ỳ Citie. But for al
ỳ the Legate was able to do, of long time he could not
preuaile. Bologna had ſo great intelligẽce wiñ *Ancona*.
Neuertheleſſe whiles he differred his departure, he
cauſed the moſt part of his train, his children & goods to
be conueyed to *Siena*, an auncient Citie of *Thoſcane*,
which for the ſtate and liberties, had long time bene
at warres with the *Florentines*, in ſuch wiſe as the ve-
ry ſame day that newes came to Bologna that he ſhold
departe the Citie within .xv. dayes, hee was ready, and
mounted on horſeback to take his flight to *Siena*, which
brake for ſorrow the hearts of the *Aragon* brethren,
ſéeing that they were deceiued and fruſtrate of their
intent, bicauſe they purpoſed by the way to apprehend
Bologna, and to cut him in pieces. But what? the time
of his hard luck was not yet expired, and ſo ỳ marche

from

from *Ancona*, serued not for the Theatre of those two infortunate louers vtterthrow, who certain moneths liued in peace in *Thoscane*. The Cardinal night nor day did sleepe, and his brother still did wayt to performe his vthe of reuenge. And seeing their enimie out of feare, they dispatched a post to Alfonso Castruccio, the Cardinall of *Siena*, that he might entreat the Lord Borgliese, chief of the seignorie there, that their sister and Bologna should be banished the Countrey and limits of that Citie, which with small suite was brought to passe. These two infortunate, husbād and wife, were chased from al places, and so vnlucky as whilom Acasta was, or Oechpus, after his fathers death and incestuous mariage w̄ his mother, vncertain to what Saint to vow themselues, and to what place to take their flight. In the end they determined to goe to *Venice*, and to take their flight to *Ramagna*, there to imbarke themselues for to retire to the sauegarde of the Citie, enuironned with the sea *Adriaticum*, the richest in *Europa*. But the poore soules made their reconing there without their hoste, failing half the price of their banket. For being vpon the territorie of *Forly*, one of the train a farre off, did see a troupe of horsemen galloping towardes their cōpany, which by their countenaunce shewed no signe of peace or amitie at all, which made them cōsider that it was some ambush of their enimies. The *Neapolitan* Gentleman seeing the onset bending vpon them, begā to fear death, not for that he cared at all for his mishap and ruine, but his heart began to cleaue for heauinesse to see his wife and litle children ready to be murdered, and serue for the pastetime of the *Aragon* brethrens eyes, for whose sakes he knew himself already predestinate to die, and that for despite of him, and to accelerate his death by the ouerthrow of his, he was assu-

red that they wold kil his childrē before his face & preſence. But what is there to be done, where counſell & meanes to eſcape do faile? Ful of teares therfore, aſtoniſhment & fear, he expected death ſo cruel as mā could deuiſe, & was alredy determined to ſuffer the ſame wᵗ good corage, for any thing ẏ the Ducheſſe could ſay vnto him. He might well haue ſaued himſelf & his eldeſt ſonne by flight, being both wel moũted vpon two good Turkey horſſes, which ran ſo faſt, as ẏ quarrel diſcharged forth of a croſbow. But he loued too much his wife & children, and wold keepe them companie both in life
" and death. In the end the good Ladie ſayd vnto him: ſir
" for all the ioyes & pleaſures which you can doe me, for
" Gods ſake ſaue your ſelf & the little infant next you,
" who can wel indure ẏ galloping of the horſe. For ſure
" I am, ẏ you being out of our cõpanie, we ſhal not nede
" to fear any hurt. But if you do tary, you wil be ẏ cauſe
" of the ruine and ouerthrow of vs all, & receiue therby
" no profit or aduaũtage: take this purſe therfore, & ſaue
" your ſelf, attending better Fortune in time to come.
The poore gentleman Bologna knowing that his wife had pronounced reaſon, & perceiuing ẏ it was impoſſible from that time forth that ſhe or hir traine could eſcape their hãds, taking leaue of hir, & killing his children not forgetting the money which ſhe offred vnto him, willed his ſeruants to ſaue thẽſelues by ſuch meanes as they thought beſt. So giuing ſpurrs vnto his horſe, he began to flee amaine, and his eldeſt ſonne ſeing his father gone, began to followe in like ſorte. And ſo for that time they two were ſaued by breaking of the intended yll luck like to light vpon them. And in a place to reſcue himſelf at *Venice*, hee turned another way, & in great iourneys arriued at *Millan*. In the meane time the horſemẽ were approched neere the Ducheſſe,

who

who ſeing that Bologna had ſaued himſelf, very courteouſly began to ſpeake vnto the Ladie, were it that the *Aragon* brethren had giuen them that charge, or feared that the Ladie wold trouble them with hir importunate cries & lamentatiõs. One therfore amongs them ſayd vnto hir: Madame, we be commaunded by the Lordes your brethren, to conduct you home vnto your houſe, that you may receiue again the gouernmẽt of the Duchie, and the order of the Duke your ſonne, & doe maruell very much at your folly, for giuing your ſelf thus to wander the Countrey after a man of ſo ſmall reputation as Bologna is, who whẽ he hath glutted his luſting lecherous mind with the comelineſſe of your Noble perſonage, will deſpoil you of your goods & honor, and then take his legs into ſome ſtrange countrey. The ſimple Ladie, albeit grieuous it was vnto hir to heare ſuch ſpeech of hir huſbãd, yet held hir peace and diſſembled what ſhe thought, glad and well contẽted with the curteſy done vnto hir, fearing before that they came to kill hir, and thought hir ſelf already diſcharged, hoping vpon their courteous dealings, that ſhe and hir Children from that time forth ſhould liue in good aſſurannce. But ſhe was greatly deceyued, and knew within ſhorte ſpace after, the good will hir brethren bare vnto hir. For ſo ſone as theſe gallants had conducted hir into the kingdome of *Naples*, to one of the Caſtels of hir ſonne, ſhe was committed to priſon with hir children, and ſhe alſo that was the ſecretarie of hir infortunate mariage. Till this time Fortune was contented to procẽde with indifferent quiet againſt thoſe Louers, but henceforth ye ſhall heare the iſſue of their little proſperous loue, and how pleaſure hauing blinded them, neuer forſake them vntill it had giuen them the ouerthrow.

It boteth not here to recite fables or histories, conti-
ting my self that ladies do read without too many we-
ping teares, the pitiful end of that miserable princesse,
who seeing hir self a prisoner in the companie of hir li-
tle children and welbeloued Maiden, patiently lived
in hope to see hir brethren appaised, comforting hir self
for the escape of hir husband out of ỹ hands of his mor-
tal foes. But hir assurance was changed into an horri-
ble feare, & hir hope to no expectation of suretie, when
certain dayes after hir imprisonmẽt, hir Gaoler came
" in, and sayd vnto hir: Madame I do aduise you hence-
" forth to consider vpon your conscience, for so much as
" I suppose that euen this very day your life shall be ta-
" ken from you. I leaue for you to thinke what horrour
and traunce assailed the feeble heart of this poore Lady,
and with what cares she receiued those cruell newes,
but hir cries and mones together with hir sighes and
lamentations, declared with what chere she receiued
" that aduertisement. Alas (sayd she) is it possible that
" my brethren should so farre forget themselues, as for
" a fact nothing preiudiciall vnto them, cruelly to put to
" death their innocent sister, and to imbrue the memory
" of their fact, in the blood of one which neuer did offend
" them? Must I against all right and equitie be put to
" death before the Iudge or Magistrate haue made trial
" of my life, & known the vnrighteousnesse of my cause?
" Ah God most righteous, and bountiful father, behold
" the malice of my brethren, and the tyrannous cruelties
" of those which wrongfully doe seeke my blood. Is it a
" sinne to marry? Is it a fault to flie and auoide the sinne
" of whoredome? What lawes be these, where mariage
" bed and toyned matrimony is pursued with like seue-
" rities, as murder, theft and aduoutrie? And what Chri-
" stianitie in a Cardinall, to shed ỹ blood which he ought

to

to defend. What profeſſion is this, to aſſaile the inno-
cent by the bie way ſide, in place to puniſh theeues and
murderers? O Lord God thou art iuſt, & doſt al things
rightcouſly, I ſée well that I haue treſpaſſed againſt
thy Maieſtie in ſome other notorious crime than by
mariage: I moſt humbly therfore beſeeche thée to haue
compaſſion vpon me, and to pardon mine offenſes, ac-
cepting the confeſſion and repentance of me thine hũ-
ble ſeruaũt for ſatiſfaction of my ſinnes, which it plea-
ſed thée to waſh away in the precious bloud of thy ſõne
our Sauior, that being ſo purified, I might appere at ỳ
holy banket in thy glorious kingdome. When ſhe had
thus finiſhed hir prayer, two or three of the miniſters
which had taken hir biſid: s *Forly*, came in, and ſayd vn-
to hir: Now Madame make ready your ſelf to goe to
God, for beholde your houre is come. Praiſed be that
God (ſayd ſhe) for the wealth and woe which it plea-
ſeth him to ſend vs. But I beſeeche you my friendes to
haue pitie vpon theſe lyttle children and innocẽt crea-
tures. Let thẽ not feele the ſmarte which I am aſſured
my brethrẽ beare againſt their poore vnhappie father.
Well well Madame ſayd they, we will conuey them
to ſuch a place, as they ſhal not want. I alſo recõmend
vnto you (quod ſhe) this poore maiden, and entreat hir
wel, in conſideration of hir good ſeruice done to the in-
fortunate Dutcheſſe of *Malfi*. As ſhe had ended thoſe
words, ỳ two Ruffians did put a corde about hir neck,
and ſtrangled hir. The mayden ſeeing the piteous tra-
gedie commenſed vpon hir miſtreſſe, cried out a main,
and curſed the cruell malice of thoſe tormenters, and
beſought God to be witneſſe of ỳ ſame, and crying out
vpon his diuine Maieſtie, ſhe beſought him to bend his
iudgement againſt them which cauſeleſſe (being no
Magiſtrates,) hadde killed ſuch innocent creatures.

" Reaſon it is (ſaid one of the tyrants) that thou be pu-
" taker of the ioy of thy miſtreſſe innocencie, ſith thou
" haſt bene ſo faithfull a miniſter, and meſſanger of hir
" follies. And ſodainly caught hir by the hair of the head,
" & in ſtead of a carcanet placed a roape about hir necke.
" How now (quod ſhe,) is this the promiſed faith which
" you made vnto my Ladie? But thoſe words flew vp
" to the air with hir ſoule, in companie of the miſerable
" Ducheſſe.

But hearken now the moſt ſorowfull ſcene of all ſ tragedie. The litle children which had ſeene all the ſe-
rious game done vpon their mother and hir maide, as
nature prouoked thē, or as ſome preſage of their mi-
hap led them therunto, kneled vpon their knées before
thoſe tyrants, and embracing their legs, wailed in ſuch
wiſe, as I think that any other, except a pitileſſe heart
ſpoiled of all humanitie, wold haue had cōpaſſion. And
impoſſible it was for them, to vnfold the embracemēts
of thoſe innocent creatures, which ſéemed to forethink
their death by the wilde lokes and countenāce of thoſe
roiſters. Wherby I think that néedes it muſt be cōfeſ-
ſed, that nature hath in hir ſelf, and vpon vs imprinted
ſome ſigne of diuination, and ſpecially at the hour and
time of death, in ſuch wiſe as ỹ very beaſts féele ſome
cōceits, although they ſée neither ſword nor ſtaffe, and
indeuor to auoyde the cruell paſſage of a thing ſo fear-
full, as the ſeparation of two things ſo néerely vnited,
euen the body and ſoule, which for the motion ỹ chal-
leth at the very inſtant, ſheweth how nature is con-
ſtrained in that monſtrous ſeparation, & more than
horrible ouerthrow. But who can appeaſe a heart de-
termined to do euil, & hath ſworn the death of another
forced therunto by ſome ſpecial cōmaundement? The
Aragan brethrē ment hereby nothing elſe, but to ruin

out

out ꝯ whole name ꝯ race of Bologna. And therfore the two miniſters of iniquitie did like murder ꝯ ſlaughter vpon thoſe two tender babes, as they committed vpon their mother, not without ſome motion of horror, for doing of an act ſo deteſtable. Behold here how far the crueltie of man extēdeth, whē it coueteth nothing elſe but vengeance, and marke what exceſſiue choler the minde of thē produceth, which ſuffer themſelues to be forced ꝯ ouerwhelmed with furie. Leaue we apart the crueltie of Euchrates, the ſonne of the king of *Bactria*, ꝯ of Phraates the ſōne of the *Perſian* Prince, of Timon of *Athens*, ꝯ of an infinite nūbre of thoſe which were rulers and gouerners of the Empire of *Rome*: and let vs match with theſe *Aragon* brethrē, one Vitoldus Duke of *Lituania*, the crueltie of whom, conſtrained his own ſubiects to hang thēſelues, for fear leaſt they ſhold fall into his furious ꝯ bloudy hands. We may confeſſe alſo theſe brutal brethrē to be more butcherly thā euer Otho erle of *Monferrato*, ꝯ prince of *Vrbin*. was, who cauſed a yeoman of his chamber to be wrapped in a ſheete powred with ſulpher ꝯ brimſtō, ꝯ afterwards kindled with a candle, was ſcalded ꝯ cōſumed to death, becauſe only he waked not at an hour by him apointed. Let vs not excuſe them alſo frō ſome affinity with Maufredus the ſonne of Henry ye ſecond Emperor, who ſmoldered his own father, being an old mā, betwene y. couerleds. Theſe former furies might haue ſome excuſe to couer their crueltie, but theſe had no other cauſe but a certain beaſtly madneſſe which moued thē to kil thoſe little childrē their neuews, who by no meanes could preiudice or anoy ye duke of *Malfi* or his title, in ye ſucceſſiō of his Duchie, the mother hauing wdrawn hir goods, ꝯ was aſſigned hir dowry: but a wicked hart muſt nedes bring forth ſemblable works according to his malice.

In

In the time of theſe murders, the infortunate Lord kept himſelf at *Millan* wyth his ſonne Frederick, and vowed himſelf to ỳ Lord Siluio Sauello, who that time beſieged the Caſtell of *Millan*, in the behalf of Maximilian Sforcia, which in the end he conquered and recouered by compoſition with ỳ French within. But that charge being atchieued, the generall Sauello marched from thence to *Cremona* with his campe, whither Bologna durſt not folow, but repaired to the Marquize of *Bitonte*, in which time ỳ *Aragon* brethren ſo wrought, as his goods were confiſcate at *Naples*, and he driuẽ to his ſhifts to vſe the golden Duckates which the Dutcheſſe gaue him to relieue himſelf at *Millan*, whoſe Death althoughe it was aduertiſed by many, yet he coulde not be perſuaded to beleue the ſame, for that diuers which went about to betray him, and feared he ſhould flie from *Millan*, kept his beake in the water, (as the Prouerbe is,) and aſſured him both of the life & welfare of his ſpouſe, and that ſhortly his brethren in law wold be reconciled, becauſe that many Noble mẽ fauored him well, and deſired his returne home to his Countrey. Fed and filled with that vaine hope, he remained more than a yeare at *Millan*, frequenting the companie, and well entertained of the richeſt Marchants and Gentlemen of the Citie: and aboue all other, he had familiar acceſſe to the houſe of the Ladie Hippolita Bentiuoglia, where vpon a day after dinner, taking his Lute in hand, wherein he could exceedingly wel play, he began to ſing a certain Sonnet, which he had compoſed vpon the diſcourſe of his misfortune, the tenor whereof is this.

The

The ſong of *Antonio Bologna*, the husband of the Ducheſſe of *Malfi*.

IF loue, the death, or tract of time, haue meaſured my diſtreſſe,
Or if my beating ſorrowes may my languor well expreſſe:
Then loue come ſone to viſit me, which moſt my heart deſires,
And ſo my dolor findes ſome eaſe, through flames of fanſies fires.
The time runnes out his rolling courſe, for to prolong mine eaſe,
To thend I ſhall enioy my loue, and heart himſelf appeaſe.
A cruell Darte brings happy death, my ſoule then reſt ſhall finde:
And ſleping body vnder tombe, ſhall dreame time out of minde.
And yet the Loue, the time, nor Death, lokes not how I decreace:
Nor giueth eare to any thing of this my wofull peace.
Full ſwre I am from my good happe, or halfe the ioy I craue,
wherby I chãge my ſtate with teares, & draw full nere my graue.
The courteous Gods that giues me life, nowe moues the Planets all:
For to arreſt my groning ghoſt, and hence my ſprite to call.
Yet from them ſtill I am ſepard, by things vnequall here,
Not mẽt the Gods may be vniuſt, that bredes my chãging chere.
For they prouide by their foreſight, that none ſhall doe me harme:
But ſhe whoſe blaſing beuty bright, hath brought me in a charm.
My miſtreſſe hath the powre alone, to rid me from this woe:
whoſe thrall I am, for whome I die, to whome my ſprite ſhall goe.
Away my ſoule, go from the griefs, that thee oppreſſeth ſtill,
And let thy dolor witneſſe beare, how much I want my will.
For ſince that loue and death himſelf, delights in guiltleſſe bloud,
Let time trãſport my troubled ſprite, where deſtny ſemeth good.

His ſong ended, the poore Gentleman could not forbeare frõ pouring forth his luke warme teares, which abundantly ran downe his beanie face, and his panting ſighes truely diſcouered ẏ alteration of his mind, which moued eche wight of that aſſembly to pitie his

mournefull ſtate: and one ſpecially of ſmall acquaintaunce, and yet knew the deuiſes which the *Aragon* bꝛethꝛen had trained and conſpired againſt him: that vnacquainted Gentleman his name was Delio, one very well learned and of trimme inuention, and very excellently hath endited in the *Italian* vulgar tongue. Who knowing the Gentleman to be huſbande to the deceaſed Ducheſſe of *Malfi* came vnto him, & taking him aſide, ſayd: Sir, albeit I haue no great acquaintance with you, this being the firſt time that euer I ſaw you, to my remembꝛance, ſo it is, that vertue hath ſuch foꝛce, and maketh gentle mindes ſo amoꝛous of their like, as when they doe beholde eche other, they feele thẽſelues coupled as it were in a bande of minds, that impoſſible it is to diuide the ſame. Now knowing what you be, and the good and commendable qualities in you, I compte it my duetie to reueale that which may chaunce to bꝛeede you damage. Knoẅ you then, that I of late was in companie with a Noble man of *Naples*, which is in this Citie, banded with a certaine companie of hoꝛſemen, who tolde me that hee had ſpeciall charge to kill you, and therfoꝛe pꝛayed me (as he ſeemed) to require you not to come in his ſight, to the intent hee might not be conſtrained to doe that, which ſhould offende his Conſcience, and grieue the ſame all the dayes of his life. Moꝛeouer I haue woꝛſe tidings to tell you, which are, that the Ducheſſe your wife is deade by violent hand in pꝛiſon, and the moſte parte of them that were in hir companie. Beſides this aſſure your ſelf, that if you doe not take heede to that which this *Neapolitane* captaine hathe differred, other will doe and execute the ſame. This much I haue thought good to tell you, bicauſe it woulde verie much grieue me, that a Gentleman ſo excellent as you be,

ſhould

ſhould be murdered in that miſerable wiſe, and would »
deeme my ſelfe vnworthy of life, if knowing theſe »
practiſes I ſhould diſſemble the ſame. Wherunto Bo- »
logna anſwered: Syr Delio I am greatly bounde vn- »
to you, and giue you heartie thankes for the good will »
you beare me. But of the conſpiracie of the brethren »
of *Aragon*, and the death of my Ladie, you be decey- »
ued, and ſome haue giuen you wrong intelligence. »
For within theſe two dayes I receiued letters from »
Naples, wherein I am aduertiſed, that the right hono- »
rable and reuerende Cardinall and his brother be al- »
moſt appeaſed, and that my goodes ſhall be rendred a- »
gaine, and my deare wife reſtored. Ah ſyr ſayd Delio, »
how you be beguiled and fedde with follies, and nou- »
riſhed with ſleights of Courte. Aſſure your ſelf that »
they which wryte theſe trifles, make ſuch ſhamefull »
ſale of you, as the Butcher doeth of his fleſh in the »
ſhambles, and ſo wickedly betray you, as impoſſible it »
is to inuent a Treaſon more deteſtable: but bethinke »
you well thereof. When he had ſayde ſo, hee toke his »
leaue, and ioyned himſelf in companie of fine and
pregnant wittes, there aſſembled togither. In the
meane tyme, the cruell ſpryte of the *Aragon* bre-
thren were not yet appeaſed with the former mur-
ders, but needes muſt finiſh the laſt acte of Bologna his
Tragedie by loſſe of his life, to keepe his wife and
Children companie, ſo well in an other worlde, as
hee was vnited with them in Loue in this fraile and
tranſitorie paſſage. The *Neapolitan* gentleman before
ſpoken of by Delio, which had taken an enterpriſe to
ſatiſfie the barbarous Cardinal, to bereue his Coun-
treyman of life, hauing changed his minde, and differ-
ring from day to day to ſorte the ſame to effect, which
he had taken in hande, it chaunced that a *Lombarde*

of larger conſcience than the other, inueagled with Couetouſneſſe, and hired for readie money, practiſed the death of the Ducheſſe poore husband. This bloudy beast was called Daniel de Bozola that had charge of a certaine bande of ſoldiers in *Millan*. This newe Iudas and allured manqueller, within certaine dayes after, knowing that Bologna oftentimes repaired to heare ſeruice at the Church and couent of S. Fraunces, ſecretly conueyed himſelf in ambuſh, hard bi∫ides the church of S. Iames whether he came, (being accompanied with a certaine troupe of ſouldiours) to aſſaile the infortunate Bologna, who was ſoner ſlaine than hee was able to thinke vpon defenſe, & whoſe miſhap was ſuch, that he which killed him had good leiſure to ſaue himſelf by reaſon of the little purſuite made after him. Beholde heere the Noble facte of a Cardinall, and what fauer it hath of Chriſtian puritie, to commit a ſlaughter for a facte done many yeares paſt vpon a poore Gentleman which neuer thought him hurte. Is this the ſweete obſeruation of the Apoſtles, of whom they vaunt themſelues to be the ſucceſſors and followers? And yet we cannot finde nor reade, that the Apoſtles, or thoſe that kept in their trace, hired Ruffians and Murderers to cut the throtes of them which did thē hurt. But what? It was in the time of Iulius the ſecond, who was more marſhall than chriſtian, and loued better to ſhed bloud than giue bleſſing to the people. Such ende had the infortunate mariage of him, which ought to haue contented himſelf with that degree and honor that hee had acquired by his deedes and glory of his vertues, ſo much by eche wight recōmended. We ought neuer to clime higher than our force permitteth, ne yet ſurmount the bounds of duety, and ſelfe ſuffer our ſelues to be haled fōrth with deſire of brutal ſenſualitie. The ſinne

being

being of ſuch nature, that hée neuer giueth ouer ẏ partie whome he maskereth, vntil he hath brought him to the ſhame of ſome notable follie. You ſée the miſerable diſcourſe of a Princeſſe loue, that was not very wiſe, and of a gentleman that had forgottē his eſtate, which ought to ſerue for a loking glaſſe to them which be ouer hardie in making of enterprizes, and doe not meaſure their abilitie with the greatneſſe of their attemptes: where they ought to maintaine themſelues in reputation, and beare the title of wel aduiſed: foreſeeing their ruine to be example to all poſteritie, as may be ſéene by the death of Bologna, and of all them which ſprang of him, and of his infortunate ſpouſe his Ladie and miſtreſſe.

But we haue diſcourſed inoughe hereof, ſith diuerſitie of other Hiſtories doe call vs to bring the ſame in place, which were not much more happie than thoſe, whoſe Hiſtorie ye haue already taſted.

The Counteſſe of Celant.

¶ The diſordered life of the Counteſſe of CELANT, and how ſhe (cauſing the Counte of MASINO to be murdered) was beheaded at MILLAN.

The xxxiiij. Nouel.



NOt without cauſe of long time haue wiſe & diſcrete men prudently gouerned, and giuen great hede ouer their Daughters, and thoſe whome they haue choſen to be their wiues, not in vſing them like bõdwemen and ſlaues, bereuing them of all libertie, but rather to auoide the murmur and ſecrete ſlaunderous ſpeache of the common people, and occaſiõs offred for infection and marring of youth, ſpecially circumſpect of the aſſaults bent againſt maidens, being yet in the firſt flames of fire, kindled by nature in the hearts, yea of thoſe that be the wiſeſt. Some perſones perhaps iudging it to be very ſtraunge, that ſuch

ſuch ſolempne guard ſhold be obſerued of thoſe which ought to liue at libertie, and doe not conſider how libertie and licentious bridle let ſlip vnto youth, brede vnto the ſame moſt ſtrong and tedious bondage, that better it had bene the ſame to haue bene chained and cloſed in ſome obſcure priſon, than marked with thoſe blottes of infamie, which willingly ſuch licence and libertie doe conduce. If England doe not by experience ſée maidens of Noble houſes infamed through to much vnbrideled and frank maner of life, and their parents deſolate for ſuch villanie, and the name of their houſes fabulous and ridiculous to the people, yet that manner of eſpiall and watch ouer children, may be noted in nations not very farre cõfining from vs, where men be iealous of the very fantaſie of thẽ, whome they thinke to be of good grace, and who dare with one very loke giue atteint vnto their Daughters. But where examples be euident, where follie is more than manifeſt, where all the world is aſſured of that which they ſée by daily experience, and that the frutes of the diſordered, breake out into light, it behoueth no more to attend the daungerous cuſtomes of a Countrey, and to condeſcend to the ſottiſhe opinion of them, which ſay that youth too narrowly loked vnto, is trained vp in ſuch groſeneſſe and blockiſhneſſe of minde, as impoſſible it is afterwards the ſame ſhould do any thing praiſe worthy. The *Romane* maidẽs whilom were cloiſtered within their fathers Palaces, ſtil at their mothers elbowes, & notwithſtanding were ſo well brought vp, ỹ thoſe of beſt ciuility & fineſt trained vp in our age, ſhal not be the ſecond to one of the leaſt perfect in ỹ Citie. But who can learne ciuilitie & vertue in theſe our daies, our daughters mouled in cõpanies, whoſe mouths run ouer wt whoriſh & filthy talk,

with behauior full of ribaulrie, y many times trou-
ted with facts leſſe honeſt thã word is able to expreſſe.
I do not pretend hereby to depriue that ſexe of honeſt
and ſemely talk and companie, and leſſe of exercises a-
mongs the Noble Gentlemen of our Engliſh ſoile, as
yet of the libertie receiued from our auncestors, only
(me thinke) that requiſite it were to contemplate the
maners and inclination of wils, and refrain thoſe that
be prone to wantonnelle, & by like meanes to reioyce
the mindes of them that be bent to beauinelle, diuided
from curteſie and ciuility, by attending of which choiſe
and conſidering of that difference, impoſſible it is but
vertue muſt ſhine more bright in Noble houſes than
homelinelle in cabanes of peſants and coũtrey carles:
who oftentimes better obſerue the Diſcipline of our
predeceſſors in education of their children, than they
which preſume to praiſe thẽſelues for good ſkill in ble
and gouernmẽt of that age, more troubleſome & pain-
full to rule, than any other time of mannes life.

Therfore the good and wiſe Emperor Marcus Aure-
lius would not haue his daughters to be brought vp in
Courts. For (quod he) what profite ſhall the nurſe re-
ceiue by learning hir maiden honeſty and vertue, whẽ
our words intice them to dalliance, and to learne the
follie of thoſe that be amorous? I make this diſcourſe,
not that I am ſo rigorous a iudge for our maydens of
England, that I wiſhe them ſo reformed, as to ſée and
be ſéene ſhould be forbidden, being aſſured that vertue
in what place ſo euer ſhe be, cannot but open things y
ſhall ſauor of the taſt therof. But to talke of an *Italian*
dame, who ſo long as hir firſt huſband (knowing hir
inclination) kept hir ſubiect, ſhe liued in reputation of
a modeſt and ſober wife. Nothing is ſeene in hir that
can defame hir renoumie. And ſo ſoone as the ſhadow

of

of that free captiuitie was paſſed by the deathe of hir husband, God knoweth what pagrant ſhe played, and how ſhe ſoyled both hir owne renoume, and the honor of hir ſecond husband, as ye ſhal vnderſtand if with patience ye vouchſafe to reade the diſcourſe of this preſent Hiſtorie.

Caſall, (as it is not vnknowen) is a Citie of *Piedmont*, and ſubiecte to the Marquize of *Monſerrato*, where dwelled one ỳ was very rich, although of baſe birth, named Giachomo Scappardone, who being growne to be rich, more by wicked Art and vſury, to much manifeſt, than by other his owne diligence, toke to wife a yong *Greke* maiden, which the Marchioneſſe of *Monſerrato* mother of Marquize Guglielmo, had brought home with hir from ỳ voyage that ſhe made into *Grecia* with hir husband, when the *Turkes* ouerran ỳ countrey of *Macedonia*, and ſeated vpon the Citie of *Modena* which is in *Morea*. Of that maiden Scappardone had a daughter indifferent faire, but in behauior liuely and pleaſant, who by name was called Bianca Maria. The father died within a while after hir birth, as one that was of good yeres, and had bene greatly turmoiled in getting of riches, whoſe value amounted aboue one hundred thouſand Crownes. Bianca Maria arriued to the age of.xvj.or.xvij.yeres, was required of many, aſwell for hir beautie, gentleneſſe & good grace, as for hir great riches. In the ende ſhe was maried to the vicecount Hermes, the ſonne of one of the chiefeſt houſes in *Millan*, who incontinently after the mariage, conueyed hir home to his houſe, leauing his *Greeke* mother to gouerne the vſuries gotte by hir dead husbãd. The Gentleman which amõgs two grẽs, knew one that was ripe, hauing for a certaine time well vſed and learned the maners of his wife, ſaw ỳ it behoued him

rather to deale with the bit and bridle than the ſpur, ſeeing hir to be wanton, full of deſire, and coueted nothing ſo much as fonde and diſordered libertie, & therfore without cruell dealing, diſquiet, or trouble, he vſed by little and little to kæpe hir in, and cheriſhed hir more than his nature willingly wold ſuffer, of purpoſe to holde hir within the bounds of duetie. And although ỳ *Millan* dames haue almoſt like liberties that ours haue, yet the Lord *Hermes* kept hir within dores, and ſuffred hir to frequent none other houſe and company,

" but the Ladie Hippolita Sforcia, who vpon a day de-
" maunded of him wherfore he kept in his wife ſo ſhort,
" & perſuaded him to giue hir ſomewhat more the bridle
" bicauſe diuers already murmured of this order, as to
" ſtraite & froward, eſteeming him either to be to much
" fond ouer hir, or elſe to iealous. Madame ſaid the *Mi-*
" *lanoiſe*, they which at pleaſure ſo ſpeake of me, know
" not yet the nature of my wife, who I had rather ſhold
" be somewhat reſtrained, than run at rouers to hir di-
" honour and my ſhame. I remember well madame the
" proper ſaying of Paulus Emilius that Notable *Romane*,
" Who being demaunded wherfore hæ refuſed his wife
" being a Gentlewoman ſo faire & beautiful. Lo (quod he
" & lifted vp his leg whereupon was a new paire of buſ-
" kins) ye ſæ this fair buſkin meete and ſæmely for this
" leg to outwarde apparance not grieuous or noiſome,
" but in what place it hurteth me, or where it wringeth
" ye doe neither ſæ nor yet conſider. So I Madame, do
" feele in what place my hoſe doeth hurt and wring my
" legge. I know Madame what it is to graunt to ſo wã-
" ton a Dame as my wife is, hir will, and how farre I
" ought to let goe the bridle: Iealous I am not vpon the
" faith that I beare vnto God, but I know that which I
" wold not, if it be poſſible that it chaunce vnto me. And

by

by my trouth Madame, I giue hir licence to repaire to
you both day and night, and at whatſoeuer hour, being
aſſured of the vertuous companie which haunte your
houſe: otherwiſe my palace ſhal ſuffice hir pleaſure for
the common ioy of vs both, and therfore wold wish no
more talk to be hereof, leaſt too importunate ſutes do
offend my nature, and make me thinke that to be true
which of god will I am loth to ſuſpect, contenting my
ſelf with hir chaſtity, for feare leaſt too much liberty do
corrupt hir. Theſe words were not ſpoke without cauſe;
and the wiſe husband ſaw well that ſuch beaſts, albeit
rudely they ought not to be vſed, yet to be holde ſhort,
and not ſuffred to much to wander at will. And verily
his Prophecy was too true for reſpect of that which fo-
lowed. For they had not bene maried full. vj. yeares,
but the good Vicecount Hermes, departed this world,
wherof ſhe was very ſory, bicauſe ſhe loued him dere-
ly, hauing as yet not taſted the licorous baites of ſuch
libertie, as afterwardes ſhe dranke in Gluttonous
draughtes, when after hir husbands obſequies, ſhe re-
tired to *Montferrato*, and then to *Caſal* to hir Fathers
houſe, hir mother being alſo dead, and ſhe a lone wom̃
to ioy at pleaſure the frute of hir deſires, ſhe bent hir
only ſtudie to gay and trimme apparell, and imploy-
ed the mornings with the Vermilion rudde to colour
hir chekes by greater curioſitie than the moſt ſhame-
leſſe Curtiſan of *Rome* firing hir eyes vpon euery mã,
gyzing and laughing with open mouth, and pleaſantly
diſpoſed to talke and reaſon with euche Gentleman
that paſſed through the ſtreate. This was the way to
attaine the glorious feaſt of hir triumphãt filthineſſe,
who wanne the prize aboue the moſt famous women
which in hir time made profeſſiõ of thoſe armes, wher-
with *Venus* once diſpoyled *Mars*, & toke from him the

" strongest and best tryed armure of all his furniture.
" Think not faire maids, that talke and clattering with
" youth is of small regarde. For a Cittie is halfe wonne
" when they within demaunde for Parle, loth then they
" be to indure the Canon shotte. So when the eare of a
" yong wife or mayde is pliant to lasciuious talke, & de-
" lited in wanton words, albeit hir chastitie receiue no
" damage, yet occasion of speach is ministred to the peo-
" ple, and perchaunce in such disaduantage, as neuer af-
" ter hir good name is recouered. Wherfore needefull it
is, not only to auoide the effect of euill, but also y least
suspition: For good fame is so requisite for women as
honest life. The great captain Iulius Cæsar, (which first
of all reduced the common wealth of *Rome* in forme
of Monarchie) being once demaunded wherfore he had
refused his wife, before it was proued that she had of-
fended with Clodius, the night of the sacrifices done to
the Goddesse Bona, answered so wisely as truely, that
the house of Cæsar ought not only to be voide of wic-
kedne, but of suspition therof. Behold wherfore I haue
sayd, and yet doe say, that ye ought to take great hede
to your selues, and to laugh in time, not bending your
eares to vncomely talke, but rather to folowe the na-
ture of the Serpent, that stoppeth his eare with his
taile, to auoid the Charmes and Sorceries of the En-
chaunter. So long then as Bianca Maria was sued vnto,
and pursued of many at *Cusull* that desired hir to wife,
two amonges y rest did proffer themselues, which were
the Lord Galeotto Gonzaga, the neere kinsman of the
Duke of *Mantua*, and the Countie of *Celant*, a great
Baron of *Italy*, whose lands lie in the dale of *Agosta*.
A great pastime it was to this fine Gentlewoman
to feede hir self with the Oblations of those two Lords,
and a toy it was to hir, to vse hir owne discourse & an-

swers

ſwers thereunto, expreſſing with right good grace ſun-dry amorous countenances, intermingling therwith-all ſighes, ſobbes, alteration of cheere, that full well it might haue bene ſaid, of loue trickes that ſhe was the only dame and miſtreſſe. The Marchioneſſe of *Mont-ferrato* deſirous to gratifie the Lord of *Mantua* his ſõne in Law, endeuored to induce this wãton Lady to take for ſpouſe Giſmondo Gonzaga, and the ſute ſo wel pro-ceded, as almoſt the mariage had bene concluded if ẏ *Savoy* Earle had not come betwixt, and ſhewed forth his Nobleneſſe of minde, when he vnderſtode how things did paſſe, and that an other was ready to beare away the price, and recouer his miſtreſſe. For ẏ cauſe he came to viſit the Ladie, who intertained him well, as of cuſtome ſhe did all other. Ye that would not em-ploy his time in vaine, hauing found hir alone and at conuenient leiſure, began to preache vnto hir in this wiſe with ſuch countenance, as ſhe perceiued ẏ Coun-tie to be farre in loue with hir.

The Oration of the Counte of Celant to his Ladie.

I Am in doubt Madame, of whome chiefly I ought to make complaint, whether of you, or of my ſelf, or ra-ther of fortune which guideth & bringeth vs together. I ſee well that you receiue ſome wrong, and that my cauſe is not very iuſt, you taking no regarde vnto my paſſion which is outragious, and leſſe hearkening vnto that which many times I haue giuen you to vnderſtãd of the honeſt loue I beare you. But I am beſides this, more to be accuſed for ſuffering an other to marche ſo far ouer my game and foyle, as I haue almoſt loſt the

" tract of the pray which I moſt deſire, and ſpecially doe
" condemne my Fortune, for that I am in daunger to
" loſe the thing which I deſerue, & you in perill to paſſe
" into that place where your captiuitie ſhalbe worſe thē
" the ſlaues by the *Portugales* condemned to the mines
" of *India*. Doeth it not ſuffiſe you that the Lord Hermes
" cloſed you vp the ſpace of .v. or .vi. yeares in his cham-
" ber, but wil you nedes attempt the reſt of your youth-
" ly dayes amid the *Mantuanes*, whoſe ſuſpicious heads
" are full of hammers working in the ſame? Better it
" were madame, that we being nérer the gallant guiſe
" of *Fraunce*, ſhould liue after the libertie of that Coun-
" trey, rather than be captiue to an *Italian* houſe, which
" wil reſtrain you with like bondage, as at other times
" you haue felt ỳ experience. Moreouer ye ſée what opi-
" nion is like to be cõceiued of you, whē it ſhalbe bruted
" ỳ for the Marquize feare, you haue maried the *Mãtuan*
" Lord. And I know well ỳ you like not to be eſtéemed
" as a pupil, your nature cãnot abide compulſion, you be
" frée from hir authoritie, it were no reaſon you ſhold be
" conſtrained. And not to ſtay in framing of orations, or
" ſtand vpon diſcourſe of words, I hũbly beſeche you to
" behold the cõſtãt loue I beare you, & being a gentlemã
" ſo wealthy as I am, none other cauſe inducéth me to
" make this ſute, but your good grace and bringing vp,
" which force me to loue you aboue any other Gẽtlewo-
" man ỳ liueth. And although I might alleage other rea-
" ſons to proue my saying, yet refer I my ſelf to the ex-
" perience & bõũty of your mind, & to the equitie of your
" iudgement. If my paſſion wer not vehemẽt, & my tor-
" mẽt without cõpariſon, I wold wish my fained griefs
" to be laughed to ſcorne, & my diſſẽbled paine reiarded
" wõ flouts. But my loue being ſincere & pure, my trauail
" cõtinuall, & my griefs endleſſe, for pitie ſake I beſeche

you

you madame to cõſider my faithfull deſerts with your
duetiful curteſie, & then ſhal you ſee how much I ought
to be preferred before them, which vnder the ſhadow
of an other mans puiſſance, doe ſeke to purchaſe pow-
er to cõmaund you: wher I do faithfully binde & tie my
word & dede cõtinually to loue & ſerue you, & promiſe
al ỳ daies of my life to accõpliſh your cõmaundement.
Behold if it pleaſe you what I am, & with what affectiõ
I make mine hũble plaint, regard ỳ meſſanger, loue it
is himſelf ỳ holdeth me within your ſnares, & maketh
me captiue to your beauty & diuine graces, which haue
no piere. But if you refuſe my ſute, & cauſe me breath
my words into ỳ aire, you ſhalbe accuſed of cruelty, ye
ſhal ſee ỳ entier defaict of a gentlemã which loueth you
better thẽ loue himſelf is able to yeld flame and fire to
force any wight to loue mortal creature. But I think
the heauens haue departed in me ſuch aboundãce, to ỳ
intẽt in louing you with vehemẽcy ſo great, you might
alſo think ỳ it is I which ought to be the frend & ſpouſe
of that gentle & courteous Lady Bianca Maria, which a-
lone may cal hir ſelf ỳ miſtreſſe of my hart. The Lady
which before was mocked & flouted with ỳ Counte his
demaunds, hearing that laſte diſcourſe, & remembring
hir firſt mariage, & the naturall iealoſie of *Italians*, half
wonne without making other coũtenance, anſwered
the Counte in this maner: Syr Counte, albeit ỳ I am
obedient to the wil and commaundement of Madame
the Marchioneſſe, & am loth to diſpleaſe hir, yet I will
not ſo farre gage my libertie, but ſtill doe reſerue one
poynt to ſay what reaſteth in my thought. And what
ſhold let me to chooſe ſuch one, to whome I ſhalbe both
his life & death: And of whom being once poſſeſſed, it is
impoſſible to be rid & acquited: I aſſure you, if I fea-
red not the ſpeche & ſuſpition of malicious minds, and

the

" the venime of ſlaunderous tongues, neuer huſbande
" ſhold bring me more to bondage. And if I thought that
" he whom I pretend to chooſe, would be ſo cruel to me,
" as others whome I know, I would preſently refuſe
" mariage for euer. I thanke you neuertheleſſe, both of
" your aduertiſements giuen me, & of the honor you doe
" me, you deſiring to accompliſh that honor by mariage
" to be celebrated betwæne vs. For ỳ fidelitie of which
" your talke, & the little diſſimulatiõ I ſee to be in you, I
" promiſe you that there is no Gentleman in this coun-
" trey to whome I giue more puiſſance ouer me, than to
" you, if I chaunce to mary, and therof make you ſo good
" aſſurance, as if it were already done. The Counte ſee-
ing ſo good an entry wold not ſuffer the time ſo to ſlip,
but beating the buſhes vntill the praie was ready to
" ſpring, ſayd vnto hir. And ſith you know what thing is
" profitable, and what is hurtfull, and that the benefite
" of libertie is ſo much recommended, why doe you not
" performe ỳ which may redound to your honor? Aſſure
" me of your word, and promiſe me the Faith & loyaltie
" of mariage, then let me alone to deale with the reſt,
" for I hope to attain the effect without offenſe and diſ-
" pleaſure of any. And ſeeing hir to remaine in a muſe
without ſpeaking word, he toke hir by the hand, & kiſ-
" ſing ỳ ſame a million of times, added theſe words: How
" now Madame, be you appalled for ſo pleaſant an aſ-
" ſault, wherin your aduerſarie confeſſeth himſelf to be
" vanquiſhed? Courage madame, I ſay corage, & beholde
" him here which humbly prayeth you to receiue him
" for your lawfull huſband, and who ſweareth vnto you
" all ſuch amitie and reuerence that huſbande oweth to
" his loyall ſpouſe. Ah ſyr Counte ſaid ſhe, and what wil
" ſhe Marquize ſay, vnto whom I haue wholly referred
" my ſelf for mariage? Shall not ſhe haue iuſt occaſion

to

to frowne vpon me, and frowardly to vſe me for the
litle reſpect I beare vnto hir: God be my witneſſe, if I
would not that Gonzaga had neuer come into this cõ-
trey: for although I loued him not, yet I haue almoſt
made him a promiſe, which I can not keepe. And ſith
there is nothing done (ſayd the *Sauoy* Lord) what nede
you to torment your ſelf? Wil the Marqueſſe wreke
hir tyrannie ouer the will of hir ſubiects, and force la-
dies of hir lande to marrie againſt their luſt? I thinke
that ſo wiſe a princeſſe, ſo well nurtured, will not ſo
farre forget hir ſelf, as to ſtraine that which God hath
left at libertie to euery wight. Promiſe me onely ma-
riage, and leaue me to deale with the reſt, other thin-
ges ſhall be well prouided for. Bianca Maria vanqui-
ſhed with that importunitie, and fearyng againe to fal
into ſeruitude, hoping that the Counte woulde main-
teine ſuch libertie as he had aſſured, agreed vnto hym,
and plighted vnto him hir faith, and for the time vſed
mutuall promiſes by wordes reſpectiuely one to ano-
ther. And the better to confirme the fact, and to let the
knotte from breking, they bedded themſelues toge-
thers. The Counte very ioyfull for that encountre,
yelded ſuch good beginning by his countenance, and by
familiar and continuall haunte with Bianca Maria, as
ſhortly after the matter was known, and came to the
Marqueſſe eares, that the daughter of Scappardone had
maried the Counte of *Celant*. The good lady albeit that
ſhe was wroth beyonde meſure, and willingly would
haue bene reuenged vpon the bride, yet hauing reſpect
to the Counte, which was a noble man of great autho-
ritie, ſwallowed downe that pille without chewing,
and prayed the Lord Gonzaga not to be offended, who
ſeeing the light behauiour of the Ladie, laughed at the
matter, and praiſed God for that the thing was ſo wel

broken off: for he did foreſee almoſt already what ſhould that Comedie wold haue, being very familiar for ten dayes in ỹ houſe of Bianca Maria. This mariage then was publiſhed, & the ſolemnitie of ỹ nuptials done very princely, according to ỹ nobilitie of him which had maried hir: but ỹ augurie & preſage was heauy, & the melancolike face of the ſeaſon (which was obſcured & darkned about ỹ time they ſhold go to church) declared that the mirth and ioy ſhould not long continue in the houſe of the Countie, according to the cõmon saying: *He that looketh not before he leapeth, may chaũce to ſtumble before he ſleapeth.* For the Lorde of *Celant* being retired home into his valeys of the *Sauoy* mountains, began to loke aboute his buſineſſe, and perceiued that his wife ſurpaſſed al others in light behauior and vnbrideled deſires, whereupon he reſolued to take order and ſtop hir paſſage before ſhe had won the fielde, and that frãkly ſhe ſhold go ſeke hir ventures where ſhe liſt, if ſhe would not be ruled by his aduiſe. The foliſh Counteſſe ſeeing that hir huſband well eſpied hir fonde and foliſh behauior, and that wiſely he went about to remedie the ſame, was no whit aſtonnied, or regarded his aduiſe, but rather by forging cõplaints did caſt him in ỹ teeth ſomtimes vp hir riches that ſhe brought him, ſomtime ſhe thwited him with thoſe whõ ſhe had refuſed for his ſake, & with whõ farre of ſhe liued like a ſauage beaſt amid ỹ mountaine deſerts & baren dales of *Sauoy*, & tolde him that by no meanes ſhe minded to be cloſed and ſhut vp like a tameleſſe beaſt. The Counte which was wiſe, & would not breake the Cle vpon his knee, prouidently admoniſhed hir in what wiſe a Lady ought to eſteeme hir honor, & how the light eſt faults of noble ſorts appered mortall ſinnes before the people. That it was not ſufficiẽt for a Cõtlewomã to haue hir

body

body chaſt, if hir ſpech were not accoꝛding, & the minde
coꝛreſpõdent to ẏ outward ſemblãce, & the conuerſatiõ
not agreable to ẏ ſecrete conceipts of minde: & I ſhall
be ful ſoꝛy ſweete wife (ſayd the Counte) to giue you »
any cauſe of diſcõtentation: foꝛ wher you ſhalbe vered »
and moleſted, I ſhal receiue no ioy oꝛ pleſure, you be- »
ing ſuch one as ought to be ẏ ſecond my ſelf, determi- »
ning by gods grace to kepe my pꝛomiſe, & vſe you like »
a wife. if ſo be you do regarde me as you ought to doe »
your huſband. Foꝛ reaſon wil not that the head obey ẏ »
mẽbꝛes & indeuoꝛ their relief & ſuccoꝛ, if thei ſhew not »
thẽſelues to be ſuch as depend vpon ẏ helth & life of it. »
The huſband being the wiues chief, ought to be obeyd »
in ẏ which reſon requireth: and ſhe referring hir ſelfe »
to the pleaſure of hir head, foꝛceth him to whom ſhe is »
adioyned, to do and aſſay all trauaile and paine foꝛ hir »
ſake. Of one thing I muſt nedes accuſe you, which is, »
that foꝛ a trifle you frame complaint, and the mynde »
occupied in follie, lucketh foꝛ nothing moꝛe than vaine »
things, & thoſe that be of litle pꝛoũte, ſpecially where »
the pleaſure of the body is only conſidered: but ẏ mind »
which foloweth reaſon, diſſembleth his griefes, with »
woꝛds ful of wiſedom, & in knowing much, faineth not »
withſtanding a ſubtile and honeſt ignoꝛãce: but I may »
be much deceiued herin, by thinking ẏ a womã fraught »
with fickle opinions may recline hir eares to what ſo »
euer thing, except to ẏ which deliteth hir minde, & plea »
ſeth ẏ deſires framed in hir foliſh fãtaſie. Let not this »
ſpeach be ſtraunge vnto you, foꝛ yeur woꝛdes vttered »
without diſcretion, make me vſe this language. Moꝛe »
ouer you ſhal do me pleſure & a gret good turn to your »
ſelf, if you take hede to my requeſt, and thereby folow »
mine aduiſe. The Coũteſſe which was ſo fine & malici- »
ous as the Erle was good & wiſe, diſſembling hir grief,

and couering the venome hidden in hir mynde, began ſo well to play the hypocrite before hir huſbande, and to counterfait the ſimple dame, as albeit he was right politike, yet he was within hir ſnare intrapt, and flattered him with ſo faire words, as ſhe wonne him to go to *Caſal*, to viſite the landes of hir inheritance. Wele wherunto the intent of this falſe woman tended and what checkmate ſhe ment to giue both to hir huſband, and hir honour: wherby we knowe, that when a woman is diſpoſed to gyue hir ſelfe to wyckednelle, hir mynde is voide of no malice or inuention to bring to ende any daunger or perill offred vnto hir. The facts of one Medea (if credite may be giuen to Poets) and of Phædra, the woman of Theſeus, wel declare with what beaſtly zeale they began and ended their attemptes. The Eagles flight is not ſo high, as the folish deſires and conceipts of a woman which truſteth in hir owne opinion, and treadeth out of the tract of dutie and way of wiſedome. Pardon me good Ladies, if I ſpeake ſo largely, and thinke not that I meane to diſplay any other but ſuch as forget the degrée wherin their auncеſtours haue placed them, and digreſſe from the true path of thoſe which haue immortalized the memory of them ſelues, and of their huſbands, and the houſes alſo wherof they came. I am very loth to take vpon me the office of a ſlanderer, and no leſſe do meane to flatter thoſe, whome I ſée to their greate ſhame, offende openly in the ſight of the worlde. But why ſhoulde I diſſemble that which I know your ſelues woulde not conceyle, if in conſcience ye were required therunto? It were extreme follie and vnſhamefaſtneſſe to decke and clothe vice with the holy garment of vertue, and to call that Curteſie and Ciuilitie, whiche is manifeſt whoredom: Let vs terme eche thing by his due name,

let

let vs not blot and deface that which of it ſelfe is faire and pure, let vs not alſo ſtaine the renoume of thoſe, whom their owne vertue do recommende. This gentle Counteſſe beyng at *Caſal*, making much of hir husbande, and killing him with the kiſſe of treaſon, and of him being vnfainedly beloued and cheriſhed, not able to forget his ſermons, and much leſſe hir owne filthy life, ſeeing that with hir Counte it was impoſſible for hir to liue and glut hir lecherous luſt, who in dede was the true poſſeſſor of the ſame, determined to runne away and ſeeke hir aduenture: for the bringing to paſſe wherof, ſhe had already taken order for money, the intereſt growing to hir dayly profite at *Millan*. And hauing leuied a good ſumme of Ducates in hande, vntill hir other rents were readie, ſhe fled away in the night in companie of certaine of hir men which were priuie to hir doings. Hir retire was to *Pauie*, a Citie ſubiect to the ſtate & Duchy of *Millan*, where ſhe hired a great and princely pallace, and apparelled the ſame according to hir eſtate and traine of hir husband, and as hir owne reuenue was able to beare. I leaue for you to thinke what buzzings entred into the Countes hed, by the ſodaine flight of his wife, who wold haue ſent and gone him ſelfe after to ſeeke hir out, and bryng hir home againe, had he not well conſidered and wayed his owne profite and aduantage, and knowing that hir abſence would rid out of his head a fardell of ſuſpicions, which he before conceiued, was in the ende reſolued to lette hir alone, and ſuffer hir remaine in what place ſoeuer ſhe was retired, from whence he neuer mynded to cal hir home againe. I were a very fole (ſayd he) to kepe in my houſe ſo pernicious and fearefull an enimie, as that arrant whore is, who one day before I be ware, wil cauſe ſome of hir ruffians to cut my throte, beſides

" the violation of hir holy mariage bed: God defend that
" ſuch a ſtrumpet by hir preſence ſhould any longer pro-
" fane the houſe of the lord of *Celant*, who is wel reward-
" ded and puniſhed for the exceſſiue loue which he bare
" hir. Let hir goe whether ſhe liſt, and lyue a gods name
" at hir eaſe, I do content my ſelf in knowing what wo-
" men be able to do, without further attempt of fortune
" & other proofe of hir wicked life. He added further, that
the honor of ſo noble a perſonage as he was, depended
not vpon a womans miſchief: and aſſure your ſelfe the
whole race of womãkind was not ſpared by ỳ Cõte,
againſt whom he then inueyed more through rage thã
any reaſon that time in him, he conſidered not the god
and honeſt ſorte of women, which deface the villanie
of thoſe that giue them ſelues ouer to their own luſts,
without regarde of modeſtie and ſhame, which ought
to be familiar, as it wer by a certaine natural inclina-
tion in all women and maidens. But come we again
to Bianca Maria, holding hir Court e and open houſe at
Paue, wher ſhe got ſo holy a fame, as miſtreſſe Lais of
Corinth ſomtimes was neuer more comon in *Aſia* than
this faire dame, almoſt in euery corner of *Italie*, whoſe
conuerſation was ſuch, as hir frank libertie & familiar
demeanor to ech wight, wel witneſſed hir abhomina-
ble life. True it was, ỳ hir reputation there was very
ſmal, and ſhe hired not hir ſelfe, ne yet toke paines by
ſetting hir body to ſale, but for ſome reſonable gain &
earneſt pain. Howbeit ſhe (of whom ſomtimes the fa-
mous *Greke* orator wold not bie repẽtance for ſo high
a price) was more exceſſiue in ſale of hir marchãdiſe,
but not more wanton. For ſhe no ſoner eſpied a beau-
tiful gentleman ỳ was youthly, & wel made, but wold
preſently ſhew him ſo good countenance, as he had ben
a very fole, which knewe not after what prouender

this

this Colt did neigh: whoſe ſhameleſſe geſture Meſſalina the *Romane* princeſſe did neuer ſurmoût, except it were in that ſhe viſited & haũted cõmon houſes: & this dame vſed hir diſports within hir owne houſe: ẏ other alſo receiued indifferẽtly Carters, Galey ſlaues, & porters: and this half *Greke* did hir paſtime with noble mẽ that were braue and luſty. But in one thing ſhe well reſembled hir, which was, ẏ Meſſalina was ſoner werie with trauaile, than ſhe ſatiſfied with pleſure. & the filthy vſe of hir body, like vnto a ſink that receiueth al filth, without diſgorgyng any, throwne into the ſame. This was the chaſt life which that good lady led, after ſhe had taken flight from hir huſband. Marke whether the *Milanois* that was hir firſt huſbande were a groſſe headed perſon or a fole, & whether he wer not lerned & ſkilful in ẏ ſcience of *Phiſiognomie*, & time for him to make redy ẏ rods to make hir know hir duetie, therwith to correct hir wãton youth, & to cut of the luſty twigs & proud ſcikces ẏ ſoked ẏ moiſture & hart of ẏ ſtock & brãches. It chanced whiles ſhe lined at *Pauie*, in this good & honorable port, ẏ Coũte of *Maſſino* called Ardizzino Valperga came to the emperors ſeruice, & therby made his abode at *Pauie* with one of his brothers: the Coũte being a godly gentlemã, yong & trim in apparel, giuen to many good qualities, had but one onely fault, which was ẏ he was lame in one of his legs, by reſon of a certain aduẽture & blow receiued in ẏ warres, although ẏ ſame toke away no part of his beauty & fine behauior. The Coũte I ſay, remaining certain days at *Pauie*, beheld ẏ beauty, grace & comlineſſe of the Coũteſſe of *Celant*, & ſtayed with ſuch deuotion to viewe & gaze vpon hir, as many times he romed vp & down ẏ ſtrete wherin ſhe dwelt to find means to ſpeake vnto hir. His firſt talk was but a *Bon iour*, and ſimple ſalutation, ſuch as

Gentle-

Gentlemen commonly vſe in company of Ladies, and at that firſt bruntе Valperga coulde ſettle none other iudgemēt vpon that Goddeſſe, but that ſhe was a wiſe and honeſt dame, and ſuch a one notwithſtandyng as there neded not the Emperors camp to force the place which as he thought was not ſo well flanked & rampired but that a good man of armes might eaſily winne, and the breache ſo liuely and ſautable, as any ſouldier might paſſe the ſame. He became ſo familiar with the Lady, and talked with hir ſo ſecretly, as vpon a daye beyng with hir alone, hee vſed this kynde of ſpeache: "Were not I of all men moſte blame worthie, and of "greateſt follie to be reproued, ſo long time to be ac"quainted with a Lady ſo faire and curteous as you be, "and not to offre my ſeruice, life and goodes to be diſpo"ſed as ſhall like you beſt? I ſpeake not this Madame, "for any euil and ſiniſter iudgement that I conceiue of "you, for that I praiſe and eſteeme you aboue any Gen"tlewomā that euer I knew til this day, but rather for "that I am ſo wonderfully attached with your loue, as "wrong I ſhold do vnto your honeſtie and my loyal ſer"uice towards you, if I continued dumbe, and did con"ceyle that which inceſſantly would conſume my heart "with infinite numbre of ardent deſires, and waſt mine "intrailes for the extreme and burning loue I beare "you. I do require you to put no credite in me, if I doe "not all that which it ſhal pleaſe you to commaund me. "Wherfore Madame, I humbly beſeeche you to accepte "me for your owne, and to fauor me as ſuch one, which "with all fidelitie hopeth to paſſe his time in your com"panie. The Counteſſe although ſhe knew well inough that the fire was not ſo liuely kindeled in the ſto macke of the Coûte as he went about to make hir be leue, and that his wordes were too eloquent, and coun

tenance,

tenance to ioyfull for ſo earneſt a louer as hée ſeemed to be: yet for that he was a valiant Gentleman, yong, luſty, and ſtrongly made, minded to retaine him, and for a time to ſtay hir ſtomake by appeaſing hir glutto-nous appetite in matters of loue, w̄ a morſell ſo dain-ty, as was this mynion and luſty yong Lord: and whē the corage of him began to cole, another ſhould enter the liſtes. And therfore ſhe ſayd vnto him: Although I (knowing the vſe and maners of men, and with what baits they bake for Ladies, if they take not hēde, ha-uing proued their malice and little loue,) determined neuer to loue other thā mine affection, ne yet to fauor man, except it be by ſhewing ſome familiar maner to heare their talk, and for paſtime to hearken the braue requeſts of thoſe which ſay they burne for loue, in the mids of ſome braue of delites. And albeit I think you no better thā other be, ne more faithful, more affectio-nate, or otherwiſe moued than the reſt, yet I am con-tēt for reſpect of your honor, ſomewhat to beleue you, and to accept you for mine owne, ſith your diſcretion is ſuch (I truſt) as ſo Noble a Gentleman as you be, will himſelf declare in thoſe affairs, and whē I ſée the effect of my hope, I can not be ſo vnkinde, but with all honeſty ſhall aſſay to ſatiſfie ỳ your loue. The Counte ſeing hir alone, and receiuing the Ladies language for his aduauntage, and that hir countenance by alterati-on of hir minde did adde a certaine beautie to hir face, and perceiuing a deſire in hir that hée ſhold not vſe de-lay, or be to ſqueimiſh, ſhe demaūding naught elſe but execution, take the preſent offred time, forgetting all ceremonies and reuerence, he embraced hir and kiſſed hir a hundred thouſand times. And albeit ſhe made a certain ſimple and prouoking reſiſtance, yet the louer ſeing thē to be but preparatiues for the ſport of loue,

he ſtrayed from the bounds of honeſtie, and threw hir vpon a fielde bed within the Chambre, where he ſolaced himſelfe with his long deſired ſute. And finding hir worthy to be beloued, and ſhe him a curteous gentleman, conſulted together for continuaunce of their amitie, in ſuch wiſe as the Lord Ardizzino ſpake no more but by ỹ mouth of Bianca Maria, and did nothing but what ſhe commaunded, being ſo bewrapped with the heauie mantell of beaſtly Loue, as hee ſtill abode night and day in the houſe of his beloued: whereby the brute was noiſed throughout the Citie, and the ſongs of their Loue more common in eche Citizens mouthe, than the *Stanze* or Sonnets of Petrarch, played and ſained vpon the Cittorne, Lute or Harpe of theſe of Noble houſe, more fine & wittie than thoſe vnlawfull billets that be tuned and chaunted in the mouthes of the foliſh common ſort. Behold an Earle well ſerued and dreſſed by enioying ſo falſe a woman, which had already falſified the faith betrouthed to hir husband, who was more honeſt, milde and vertuous, than ſhe deſerued. Beholde ye Noble Gentlemen, the ſimplicitie of this good Earle, how it was deceiued by a falſe and filthy ſtrumpet, whoſe ſtincking life and common vſe of body woulde haue withdrawen eache ſimple creature from mixture of their owne with ſuch a Carrion. A leſſon to learne all youth to refraine the wherriſhe lokes and light conditioned Dames, a number (the more to be pitied) ſhewing forthe them ſelues to the portſale of euery cheapener, that liſt demaunde the price, the groſeneſſe whereof before conſidered, were worthy to be deſied and loathed. This Ladie ſeing hir Louer nouſled in hir luſt, dandled him with a thouſands trumperies, and made him holde the Pale, while

while other enioyed the ſecrete ſporte which earſt he vſed himſelf. This acquaintance was ſo daungerous to the Counte, as ſhe hir ſelf was ſhameleſſe to the Counte of *Celant*. For the one bare the armes of Cornwall, and became a ſecond *Acteon*, and the other wickedly led his life, & loſt the chiefeſt of that he loked for in the ſeruice of great princes, by the treaſon of an arrant common queane.

Whiles this Loue continued in all pleaſure and like contentation of either parts: Fortune that was ready to mounte the ſtage, and ſhew in ſight that hir mobilitie was no more ſtable than a womans will: (For vnder ſuch habite and ſere Painters and Poets deſcribe hir) made Ardizzino ſuſpecte what deſire ſhe had of chaunge: and within a while after, ſawe himſelf ſo farre miſliked of his Ladie, as though he had neuer bene acquainted. The cauſe of that recoile was, for that the Counteſſe was not contented with one kinde of fare, and whoſe eyes were more gredie than hir ſtomake able to digeſt, and aboue all deſired chaunge, not ſeeking meanes to finde him that was worthy to be beloued and intertained of ſo great a Ladie, as ſhe eſteemed hir ſelfe to be, and as ſuch women of their owne opinion thinke themſelues, who counterfaicte more grauitie and reputation than they doe, whome nature and vertue for their maieſtie and holineſſe of life make Noble and praiſe worthie. That deſire deceiued hir nothing at all: for a certaine time after that Ardizzino poſſeſſed the ſporte of this faire Counteſſe, there came to *Pauia*, one Roberto Sanſeuerino Earle of *Gaiazzo*, a yong faire and valiant Gentleman, whoſe Countrey lieth on this ſide the Mountaines, and very familiar with the Earle of *Maſſino*.

This vnfaithful Alcina and cruell Medea had no ſoner caſt hir eye vpon Signor di Gaiazzo, but was pierced with his loue in ſuch wiſe, as if forthwith ſhee had not attained hir deſires, ſhe would haue run mad, becauſe that Gentleman bare a certaine ſtately repreſentation in his face, & promiſed ſuch dexteritie in his dedes, as ſodainly ſhe thought him to be ỳ man that was able to ſtaunch hir filthy thirſt. And therfore ſo gentlely as ſhe could, gaue ouer hir Ardizzino, with whome ſhe vterly refuſed to ſpeake, and ſhunned his cõpanie when ſhe ſaw him, and by ſhutting the gates againſt him, the Noble man was not able to forbeare from throwing forth ſome words of choler, wherby ſhe toke occaſion both to expell him, and alſo to beare him ſuch diſpleaſure, as then ſhe cõſpired his death, as afterwards you ſhall perceiue. This great hatred was the cauſe that ſhe being fallen in Loue as you haue heard with the Counte of *Gaiazzo*, ſhewed vnto him all ſigne of amitie: and ſeeing that he made no great ſute vnto hir, ſhe wrote vnto him in this manner.

The Letter of *Bianca Maria* to the Counte of *Gaiazzo*.

" SIr I doubt not by knowing the ſtate of my degrée,
" but that ye be abaſhed to ſée the violẽce of my mind,
" when paſſing the limites of modeſtie, which ought to
" guard ſuch a Ladie as I am, I am forced (vncertain of
" the cauſe) to doe you vnderſtand the griefe that doeth
" torment me, which is of ſuch conſtraint, as if of curte-
" ſie ye doe not vouchſafe to viſite me, you ſhall commit
" two faultes, the one leauing the thing worthy for you
" to loue and regard, and which deſerueth not to be caſt
off,

off, the other in cauſing the death of hir, that for Loue »
of you, is bereft of reſt. And ſo loue hath very little in »
me to ſeaſe vpon either of heart or libertie, but ẏ eaſe »
of grief proceedeth from your only grace, which is able »
to vanquiſhe hir, whoſe victorious hap hath conquered »
all other, and who attẽding your reſolut anſwer, ſhall »
reſt vnder ẏ mercifull refuge of hope, which deceiuing »
hir, ſhall ſée by that very meanes the wretched end of »
hir that is all your owne. »

Bianca Maria *Counteſſe of Celant.* »

The yong Lorde much maruelled at this meſſage, were it for that already hée was in loue with hir, and ẏ for loue of his friend Ardizzino, wold not be knowen thereof, or for that he feared ſhe would be ſtraught of wits, if ſhe were deſpiſed, he determined to goe vnto hir, yet ſtayed & thought it not to be ẏ part of a faithfull companion to deceiue his friend. But in end pleaſure ſurmounting reaſon, and the beautie ioyned with the good grace of the Lady hauing blinded him, and bewitched his wits ſo wel as Ardizzino, he toke his way towards hir houſe who waited for him with good deuotion, whither being arriued, hée failed not to vſe like ſpæche that Valperga did, either of them (after certain reuerences and other fewe words) minding and deſiring one kinde of intertainment. This practize dured certaine months, and the Counteſſe was ſo farre rapt with hir newe louer, as ſhe only employed hir ſelfe to pleaſe him, and he ſhewed himſelfe ſo affected as ſhe thought to bridle him in all things: wherof ſhe was afterwards deceiued, as you ſhall vnderſtãd the maner. Ardizzino ſeing himſelf wholly abandoned ẏ preſence and loue of his Ladie, knowing ẏ ſhe railed vpon him in all places where ſhe came, departed *Pauia* halfe out

out of his wits for anger, and ſo ſtrayed from comely order by reaſon of his rage, as hee diſplayed the Counteſſe three times more lively in hir colours, than ſhe could be painted, and reproued hir with ỳ termes of the vileſt and moſt common ſtrumpet that euer ran at rouers, or ſhot at random. Bianca Maria vnderſtode hereof, and was aduertiſed of the good report that Ardizzino ſpread of hir throughout *Lombardie*, which chafed hir in ſuche wiſe as ſhe fared like the Bedlem furie, ceaſing night nor day to plaine the vnkindneſſe and follie of hir reiected Louer: Sometimes ſaying, that ſhe had iuſt cauſe ſo to doe, then flattering hir ſelfe, alledged, that men were made of purpoſe to ſuffer ſuch follies as were wrought by hir, and that where they termed themſelues to be womens ſeruauntes, they ought at their miſtreſſe hands to endure what pleaſed them. In the end, not able any longer to reſtrain hir choler, ne vanquiſh the appetite of reuenge, purpoſed at all aduẽture to prouide for the death of hir aũcient enimy, and that by meanes of him whome ſhe had now tangled in hir nettes. See the vnſhamefaſtneſſe of this maſtife bitche, and the rage of that female Tiger, how ſhee goeth about to arme one friend againſt an other, and was not content onely to abuſe the Counte Gaiazzo, but deuiſed to make him ỳ manqueller. And as one night they were in the mids of their embracements, ſhe began pitifully to weepe and ſigh, in ſuch wiſe as a man wold haue thought (by the veration of hir heart) that the ſoule and body wold haue parted. The yonge Lord louingly enquired the cauſe of hir heauineſſe: and ſayd vnto hir, that if any had done vnto hir diſpleaſure, hee would reuenge hir cauſe to hir contentation. She hearing him ſay ſo, (then in ſtudie vpon the deuice of hir enimies death,)

ſpake

ſpake to the Counte in this manner: You know ſir, that the thing which moſte tormenteth the Gentle heart and minde that can abide no wrong, is defamation of honoure and infamous reporte. Thus much I ſay, by reaſon the Lord of *Meſſino*, (who to ſay the trouth, hath bene fauored of me in like ſort as you be now) hathe not bene aſhamed to publiſhe open ſlaunders againſt me, as thoughe I were the arranteſt whore that euer had giuen hir ſelfe ouer to the Galley ſlaues alongs the ſhore of *Sicile*. If he had vaunted the fauoure which I haue done him but to certaine of his friendes, I had incurred no whit of ſlaunder, much leſſe any little ſuſpition, but hearing the common reports, the wrongfull wordes and wicked brute that he hath raiſed on me: I beſeeche you ſyr, to doe me reaſon that he may feele his offence, and the ſmart for his committed fault againſt hir that is all youres. The Lord *Sanſeuerino* hearing this diſcourſe, promiſed hir to doe his beſt, and to teache Valperga to talke more ſoberly of hir, whome he was not worthy for to ſerue, but in thought. Notwithſtanding he ſayde more, then he ment to do, for he knew Ardizzino to be ſo honeſt, ſage, and curteous a perſonage, as he would neyther doe nor ſay any thing without good cauſe, and that Ardizzino had vtter quarell againſt him, by taking that from him which he loued (although it was after his diſcontinuance from that place, and vpon the only requeſt of hir.) Thus he conceiued in mind ſtil to remain the friend of Ardizzino, and yet to ſpend his time with the Counteſſe, which he did, and vſed certaine months without quarrelling with Valperga, that was retained to *Pavia*, with whom he was conuerſant, viſited familiarly, & moſt commonly vſed one table & bed together.

Diuers

Bianca Maria ſeeing that the Lord of Gaiazzo cared not much for hir, but onely for his pleaſure, determined to vſe like practiſe againſt him, as ſhe did to hir former louer, and to banish him from hir houſe. So that when he came to ſee hir, either ſhe was ſicke, or hir affairs were ſuch, as ſhe could not keepe him company: or elſe hir gate was ſhut vpon him. In the end (playing double or quit) ſhe prayed the ſayd Lord to ſhewe hir ſuch pleaſure and friendſhip, as to come no more vnto hir, becauſe ſhe was in termes to goe home to hir husband the Counte of *Celant*, who had ſent for hir, and feared leaſt his ſeruaunts ſhould finde hir houſe ful of ſuters, alleaging that ſhe had lined long inough in ỹ moſt ſinfull life, the lighteſt faultes whereof were to heynous for dames of hir port & calling, concluding that ſo long as ſhe lined, ſhe would beare him good affection for the honeſt compante and cõuerſation had betwene them, and for his curteſie vſed towards hir. The yong Erle, were it that he gaue creadit vnto hir tale or not, made as though he did beleue the ſame, and without longer diſcourſe, forbare approche vnto hir houſe, and drew out of his heade all the amorous affection which he caried to ỹ *Piedmont* Circes. And to ỹ end hee might haue no cauſe to thinke vpon hir, or that his preſence ſhould make him faue againe to hir that firſt purſued him, he retired in good time to *Millan*: by which retire he auoided that miſhap, wherewith at length this Peſtilent woman wold haue cut him ouer the shinnes, euen whẽ his mind was leaſt thereon. Such was the malice and miſchief of hir heart, who ceaſing to play the whore, applied hir whole paſſions to murder. Gaiazzo being departed from *Pauie*, this Venus eftſoones againe allayed the embracemẽts of hir Ardizzino, and knew not well how to recouer him againe, becauſe ſhe feared that the

other

other had diſcouered ỹ enterpriſe of his murder. But what dare not ſhe attempt, whoſe minde is ſlaue to ſinne? The firſt aſſaies be hard, & the minde in doubt, and conſcience gnawing vpon the repentance worme, but the ſame once nouſled in vice, & roted in the heart, is more pleaſant and gladſome for the wicked to execute, than vertue familiar to thoſe that folow hir: So that ſhame ſeparate from before the eyes of youth, riper age nourſed in impudẽcy, their ſight is ſo daſeled, as they can ſee nothing that either ſhame or feare can make them bluſh, which was the cauſe that this Ladie continuing ſtill in hir miſchiefe, ſo much practiſed the friends of him, whom ſhe deſired to kil, and made ſuch fit excuſe by hir ambaſſades, as he was cõtent to ſpeak to hir, and to heare hir iuſtifications, which were eaſy inough to doe, the iudge being not very faultie. She promiſed and ſwore that if the fault were proued not to be in him, neuer man ſhould ſée Bianca Maria, (ſo lõg as ſhe liued) to be other than a friend and ſlaue to the Lord Ardizzino, wholly ſubmitting hir ſelf vnto his will and pleaſure. See how peace was capitulated betwene the two reconciled louers, and what were the articles of the ſame, the Lord of *Maſſimo* entring poſſeſſion againe of the Fort that was reuolted, and was long time in the power of another. But when hée was ſeaſed againe, the Ladie ſaw full wel, that hir recouered friend was not ſo hard to pleaſe, as the other was, and that with him ſhe liued at greater libertie. Continuing then their amorous daunce, and Ardizzino hauing no more care but to reioyſe himſelfe nor his Ladie, but to cheriſh and make much of hir friend, behold eftſones the deſire of blood and wil of murder, newly reuiued in that new Megera, who incited (I know not with what rage,) ſanſted to haue him ſlain, which refu-

ſed to kill him, whome at this preſent, ſhe loued as hir ſelf. And he that had inquired the cauſe therof, I think none other reaſon could be rendred, but that a braineleſſe head and reaſonleſſe mind, thought moſt notable murders & miſchief were eaſy to be brought to paſſe, and ſo ſtrangely to procede in diſordred luſts, which in fine cauſed miſerable ſhame & ruine, with the death of hir ſelf & him, whom ſhe had ſtirred to ỳ fact, boldening him by perſuaſion, to make him beleue vice to be vertue, & gloriouſly cõmẽded him in his follies, which you ſhal hear by reading at lẽgth ỳ diſcourſe of this hiſtory.

Bianca Maria ſeeing hir ſelf in ful poſſeſſion of hir Ardizzino, purpoſed to make him the chief executioner of the murder by hir intended, vpon Gaiazzo, for ỳ doing wherof one night holding him betwene hir armes, after ſhe had long time dalied with him, like a cunning miſtreſſe of hir Art, in the end weauing & training hir treaſõ at large, ſhe ſaid thus vnto him: Syr of lõg time I haue bene deſirous to require a good turne at your hands, but fearing to trouble you, & therupon to be denied, I thought not to be importunat: & albeit ỳ mater toucheth you, yet did I rather hold my peace thẽ to heer refuſall of a thing, which your ſelf ought to prefer, the ſame cõcerning you. Madame ſaid hir louer, you know ỳ matter nede to be hainous & of great importance, ỳ I ſhold denie you, ſpecially if it cõcerne the blemiſh of your honor. But you ſay the ſame doth touch me ſomewhat nerely, & therefore if abilitie be in me, ſpare not to vtter it, & I will aſſay your ſatisfaction to the vttermoſt of my power. Syr ſaid ſhe, is the Counte of Gaiazzo one of your very frends: I think (anſwered Valperga) that he is one of ỳ ſureſt friends I haue, and in reſpect of whoſe friendſhip, I will hazarde my ſelf for him no leſſe than for my brother, being certaine ỳ if I

haue nede of him, he will not faile to do ẏ like for me. „
But wherfore do you aſke me ẏ queſtiõ? I wil tel you „
ſaid ẏ traitreſſe (killing him ſo ſwetely as euer he felt „
ẏ like of any woman,) forſomuch as you be ſo deceiued „
of your opinion, and fruſtrate of your thought, as he is „
wicked in diſſẽbling that, which malicioufly lieth hidde „
in his heart. And briefly to ſay ẏ effect. Aſſure your ſelf „
he is ẏ greateſt & moſt mortall enimy ẏ you haue in ẏ „
world. And ẏ you do not thinke this to be ſome forged „
tale, or light inuention, or ẏ I hard the report therof of „
ſome not worthy of credit, I wil ſay nothing elſe but ẏ „
which himſelf did tell me, whẽ in your abſence he vſed „
my cõpany. He ſware vnto me without declaratiõ of ẏ „
cauſe, ẏ he could neuer be mery or his mind in reſt, be- „
fore he ſaw you cut in pieces, & ſhortly would giue you „
ſuch aſſault, as all ẏ dayes of your life, you ſhold neuer „
haue luſt or mind on ladies loue. And albeit thẽ, I was „
in choler againſt you, and that you had miniſtred ſome „
cauſe & reaſon of hatred, yet our firſt loue had takẽ ſuch „
force in my heart, as I beſought him not to do ẏ enter- „
priſe, ſo lõg as I was in place, wher you did remain, bi- „
cauſe I cãnot abide (wout death) to ſee your finger ake, „
much leſſe your life berieued frõ you. Vnto which tale „
his eare was deaf, ſwering ſtil & proteſting ẏ either he „
wold be ſlain himſelf, or elſe diſpatch ẏ Counte Ardiz- „
zino. I durſt not (quod ſhe) ne wel could as thẽ aduer- „
tiſe you therof, for ẏ ſmal acceſſe ẏ my ſeruãts had vn- „
to your lodging, but now I pray you to take good hede „
to your ſelf, & to preuẽt his diueliſh purpoſe: for better „
it were for you to take his life, than he to kil and mur- „
der you, or otherwiſe work you miſchief, & you ſhal be „
eſtemed ẏ wiſer man, & he pronoũced a traitor to ſeke „
ẏ death of him, ẏ bare him ſuch good will. Do thẽ acco- „
ding to mine aduiſe, & before he begin, do you kil him, „

" whereby you ſhall ſaue your ſelf, and doe the part of a
" valiant Knight, beſides ỳ ſatiſfying of the minde of hir
" that aboue al pleaſures of the world doth chiefly deſire
" the ſame. Experience now will let me proue whether
" you loue me or not, and what you will doe for hir that
" loueth you ſo dearly, who openeth this conſpired mur-
" der, aſwell for your ſafetie, as for lengthening of the
" life of hir, which without yours cannot endure. Graũt
" this my ſute (O friend moſt deare) and ſuffer me not
" in ſorowful plight to be deſpoiled of thy preſence. And
" wilt thou ſuffer that I ſhold die, and that yõder proud
" traiterous and vnfaithfull varlet ſhould liue to laugh
" me to ſcorne? If the Ladie had not added thoſe laſt
words to hir foliſh ſermon, perchance ſhe might haue
prouoked Ardizzino to folow hir Counſell: but ſeing
hir ſo obſtinately bent in hir requeſt, and to proſecute
the ſame with ſuch violence, concluding vpon hir own
quarel, his conſcience throbbed, and his mind meaſu-
red the malice of that woman, with ỳ honeſtie of him,
againſt whome ỳ tale was tolde, who knew his friend
to be ſo ſound and truſtie, as willingly he wold not do
the thing that ſhould offend him, & therefore wold giue
no credit to falſe report without good & apparãt proofe.
For which cauſe he was perſuaded that it was a mali-
cious tale made to pleaſe his Ladie, & deuiſed by ſome
that went about to ſowe debate betweene thoſe two
friendly Earles. Notwithſtanding vpõ further pauſe,
& not to make hir chafe, or force hir into rage, he pro-
miſed the execution of hir curſed will, thanking hir for
hir aduertiſement, and that he would prouide for his
defenſe & ſurety. And to the intent ỳ ſhe might thinke
he went about to performe his promiſe, he toke his
leaue of hir to goe to *Milan*, which he did, not to fo-
low the abhominable will of that rauenous maſtife,

but

but to reueale the matter to his companion, and direct the ſame as it deſerued. Being arriued at *Milan*, the chiefe Citie of *Lombardie*, he imparted to Gaiazzo from point to point the diſcourſe of the Counteſſe, and the petition ſhe made vnto him, whē ſhe had done hir tale. O God (ſayd the Lord Sanſeuerino,) who can beware ẏ traps of ſuch whores, if by thy grace our hands be not forbidden, and our hearts and thoughts guided by thy gwdneſſe? Is it poſſible that the earth can bráde a mõſter more pernicious than this moſt Peſtilent beaſt? This is truely the grift of hir fathers vſurie, and the ſtench of all hir predeceſſors villanies. It is impoſſible of a Bite to make a good Sparhauk, or Tercel gentle. This carion no doubt is the daughter of a vilain, ſprõg of the baſeſt race amongs the common people, whoſe mother was more fine than chaſte, more ſubtile than ſober. This mynion hath forſaken hir husband, to erect bloudy ſkaffoldes of murder amid the Nobles of *Italy*. And were it not for the diſhonor which I ſhould get to foile my hãds in the bloud of a beaſt ſo corrupt, I wold teare hir with my teethe in a hundreth thouſand pieces. How many times hath ſhe entreated me before: in how many ſundrie ſorts with ioyned hãds hath ſhe beſought me to kill the Lord Ardizzino? Ah my companion and right well beloued friend, ſhold you think me to be ſo traiterous and cowarde a knaue, as that I dare not tel to thē to whom I beare diſpleaſure, what lieth in my heart? By the faith of a Gentleman (ſayd Ardizzino,) I would be ſorry my minde ſhould feaze on ſuch a follie, but I am come to you, ẏ the ſong might ſound no more win mine eares. It behoueth vs then, ſith God hath kept vs hitherto, to auoid the air of that infection, that our braines be not putrified, and from henceforth to flie thoſe bloudſuckers, the ſchollers of

" Venus, for the goodneſſe, profit and honor that youth ga-
" thereth of them. And truely great honor wold redound
" to vs to kill one an other for the only paſtime and ſot-
" tiſh fanſie of that mynion. I haue repented me an hun-
" dred times when ſhe firſt moued me of the deuiſe to
" kill you, that I did not giue hir a hundred *Poignaladoes*
" with my dagger, to ſtop the way by that example for
" al other to attempt ſuch butcheries. For I am wel aſ-
" ſured that the malice which ſhe beareth you, proceedeth
" but of the delay you made for ſatiſfaction of hir mur-
" derous deſire, wherof I thank you, and yeld my ſelf in
" al cauſes to imploy my life, and that I haue, to do you
" pleaſure. Leaue we of that talke (ſayd Galazzo) for I
" haue done but my duety, and that which eache Noble
" heart ought to euery wight doing wrong to none, but
" prone to helpe and doe good to all. Which is the true
" marke and badge of Nobilitie. Touching that malig-
" nant ſtrumpet, hir own life ſhal reuenge the wrongs
" which ſhe hath gone about to denge on vs. In meane
" while let vs reioyce, and thinke the goods and richeſſe
" ſhe hath gotten of vs, will not cauſe hir bagges much
" to ſtrout and ſwell. To be ſhorte, ſhe hath nothing
" whereby ſhe may greatly laughe vs to ſcorne, except
" our good entertainment of hir both night and day doe
" prouoke hir. Let other coine the pens henceforth to
" fill the coafers, for of vs ſo farre as I ſee ſhe is decey-
" ued. Thus the two Lordes paſſed forthe their time,
and in all companies where they came, the greateſt
part of their talke and communication was of the diſ-
ordered life of the Counteſſe of *Celant*: the whole Citie
rang of the ſleights and meanes ſhe vſed to trappe the
Noble men, and of hir pollicies to be rid of them whē
hir thirſt was ſtanched, or diet grew lothſome for wāt
of chaunge. And that which grieued hir moſt, an *Italian*

Epigram

Epigram blaſed forth hir prowesſe to hir great diſhonor whereof, the copy I cannot get, and ſome ſay that Ardizzino was the author. For it was compoſed, whē he was diſpoſſeſſed of patience. And if ſhe coulde haue wreaked hir will on the knights, I beleue in hir rage ſhe would haue made an Anathomie of their bones. Of which hir two enimies Ardizzino was the worſſe, againſt whom hir diſpleaſure was the greater, for that he was the firſt with whome ſhe entred ſkirmiſh. Nothing was more frequent in *Pauie*, than villanous ieſts and playes vpon the filthy behauior of the Counteſſe, which made hir aſhamed to goe out of hir gates. In the end ſhe purpoſed to chaunge the aire and place, hoping by that alteration to ſtay the infamous brute & ſlaunder. So ſhe came to *Milan*, wher firſt ſhe was inueſted with ſtate of honor, in honeſt fame of chaſt life ſo long as Vicoũt Hermes liued, and then was not purſued to ſtaunche the thirſt of thoſe that did ordinarily draw at hir fountaine.

About the time ẏ ſhe departed frõ *Pauie*, Dom Pietro de Cardone a *Sicilian* the baſtard brother of ẏ Coũte of *Coliſano*, whoſe lieutenant he was, & their father ſlaine at ẏ battail of *Bicocca* with a band of horſmẽ arriued at *Milan*. This *Sicilian* was about the age of one or two & twenty yeres, ſomwhat black of face, but well made and ſterne of countenãce. Whiles the Coũteſſe ſioorned at *Milan*, this gentleman fell in loue with hir, and ſearched al meanes he could to make hir his friend, & to enioy hir. Who perceiuing him to be yong, & a nouice in ſkirmiſhes of loue, like a Pigeon of the firſt coate, determined to lure him, and to ſerue hir turne in that which ſhe purpoſed to doe on thoſe againſt whome ſhe was outragiouſly offẽded. Now ẏ better to entice this yong Lord vnto hir fãtaſy, and to catch him wᵗ hir bait,

if

if he paſſed through the ſtreat, and ſaluted hir & ſighed after the manner of the *Spaniard*, roming before his Ladie, ſhe the while bare an indifferent mery countenance, and ſodainly retrained that there, to make him take the pleaſure mingled wt the ſoute of one deſire, which he could not tel how to accompliſh. And the more faint was his hardineſſe, for that hee was neuer practiſed in daliance and ſeruice of Ladie of ſo great houſe or calling, who thinking that Gētlewoman to be one of the principall of *Milan*, was ſtraungely vexed & tormented for hir loue, in ſuch wiſe as in ỳ night he could not reſt for fantaſing and thinking vpon hir, and in ỳ day paſed vp & downe before the dore of hir lodging. One euening for his diſport he went forth to walk in cōpanie of another gentleman, which wel could play vpon the Lute, & deſired him to giue awake vnto his Ladie, that then for ielouſie was harkening at hir window, both the ſound of the inſtrument, and the words of hir amorous Knight, wher the gētleman ſong this ſong:

THe death with trenchāt dart, doth brede in breſt ſuch il,
As I cannot forget the ſmart, that therby riſeth ſtil.
Yet ne ertheleſſe I am the ill it ſelf in dede, (brede.
That death with daily dolours depe, within my breaſt doth

I am my miſtreſſe thrall, and yet I doe not kno,
If ſhe beare me good will at all, or if ſhe loue or no.
My wound is made ſo large, with bitter wo in breſt,
That ſtill my heart prepares a place to lodge a careful gueſt.

O Dame that hath my life and death at thy deſire. (fire,
Come eaſe my mind, wher facies flames doth burn like Ethna
For wanting thee my life is death and dolefull cheere,
And finding fauor in thy ſight, my dayes are happy heere.

Then

Then he began to ſighe ſo terribly, as if already ſhe had gyuen ſentence and definitiue Iudgement of his farewel, & diſputed with his felow in ſuch ſoꝛt, & with opinion ſo aſſured of his contempt, as if hæ had bene in loue with ſome one of the infants of *Spaine*. Foꝛ which cauſe he begã again very pitifully to ſing theſe verſes

THat God that made my ſoule, & knowes what I haue felt,
Who cauſeth ſighes and ſorowes oft, the ſely ſoule to ſwelt.
Doth ſee my torments now, and what I ſuffer ſtill,
And vnderſtands I taſt mo griefs, than I can ſhew by skill.

He doth conſent I wot, to my ill hap and woe,
And hath accorded with the dame that is my pleaſant foe,
To make my boyling breſt abound in bitter bliſſe,
And ſo bereue me of my reſt, when heart his hope ſhall miſſe.

O what are not the ſongs, and ſighs that louers haue, (graue,
When night and day with ſweete deſires, they draw vnto their
Their grief by friendſhip growes, where ruth nor pitie raines,
And ſo like ſnow againſt the ſunne, thei melt away with pains.

My dayes muſt finiſh ſo, my deſtnie hath it ſet,
And as the candle out I goe, before hir grace I get.
Before my ſute be heard, my ſeruice throughly knowne,
I ſhalbe laid in tombe full lowe, ſo colde as Marble ſtone.

To thee faire Dame I cry, that makes my ſenſes arre,
And plãteſt peace within, my breſt & then makes ſodain war.
Yet at thy pleaſure ſtill, thou muſt my ſowre make ſweete,
In graunting me the fauor due, for faithfull louers meete.

Which fauor giue me now, and to thy Noble minde,
I doe remaine a Gulley ſlaue, as thou by proofe ſhalt finde.

And ſo thou ſhalt releaſe my heart from cruell bandes,
And haue his fredome at thy wil that yelds into thy handes.

So rendring all to thee, the Gods may ioyne vs both (troth.
Within one lawe and league of loue, through force of conſtant
Then ſhalt thou miſtreſſe be, of life, of limme and all,
My goodes, my golde and honour loe, ſhall ſo be at thy call.

This gentle order of loue greately pleaſed the Lady, and therefore opened hir gate to let in the Scicilian Lorde, who ſéeyng himſelf fauoured (beyond all hope) of his Ladie, and cherefully intertained and welcommed wyth greate curteſie, ſtode ſo ſtil aſtonnied, as if he had bene fallen from the cloudes. But ſhée whyche coulde teache hym good maner, to make him the miniſter of hir miſchiefe, takyng him by the hande, made him ſitte downe vpon a gréene bedde beſydes hir, and ſéeing that he was not yet imboldened, for all he was a ſouldier, ſhe ſhewed hir ſelfe more hardie than he, and
" firſt aſſayled him wyth talke, ſaying: Syr, I praye
" you thinke it not ſtrange, if at this houre of the night,
" I am bolde to cauſe you enter my houſe, béeyng of no
" greate acquaintaunce with you, but by hearyng your
" curteous ſalutations: And we of this countrey be ſome
" what more at libertie than they in thoſe partes from
" whence you come. Beſides it liketh me well (as I am
" able) to honor ſtrange gentlemen, and to retaine them
" with right good willing heart, ſith it pleaſeth them to
" honor me with repaire vnto my houſe: ſo ſhall you be
" welcome ſtil when you pleaſe to knocke at my gate,
" which at all times I will to be opened for you, with
" no leſſe good will than if ye were my natural brother,
" the ſame with all the thinges therein, it maye pleaſe
" you to diſpoſe as if they were your owne. Dom Pie-

tro

tro of *Cardonne* well ſatiſfied and contented with this vnlooked for kyndneſſe, thanked hir very curteouſly, humbly praying hir beſides to dayne it in good parte, if he were ſo bolde to make requeſt of loue, and that it was the onely thyng, which hée aboue all other, deſyred moſte, ſo that if ſhée woulde receyue hym for hir friende and ſeruaunt, ſhée ſhoulde vnderſtand him to be a Gentleman, whiche lyghtly woulde promiſe nothyng, excepte the accompliſhment did followe: ſhe that ſawe a greater onſet than ſhée looked for anſwered hym ſmilyng with a very good grace: Syr I haue » knowne very many that haue vouched ſlipperie pro- » myſes, and proffered lordly ſeruices vnto Ladies, the » effecte wherof if I myght once ſée, I would not thinke » that they coulde vaniſhe ſo ſone, and conſume lyke » ſmoake. Madame (ſayde the *Sicilian*) yf I fayle in » any thyng whiche you commaunde mée, I praye to » God neuer to receyue any fauour or grace of thoſe » Curteſies whyche I craue. If then (quod ſhée) you » wyll promyſe to employe youre ſelfe aboute a buſi- » neſſe that I haue to doe when I make requeſte, I » wyll alſo to accepte you for a friende, and graunt ſuch » ſecrecie as a faythfull louer can deſyre of hys La- » dye. Dom Pietro whyche woulde haue offered hym ſelfe in Sacrifice for hir, not knowyng hir demaunde, toke an othe, and promyſed hir ſo lightly as madly afterwardes he did put the ſame in proſe. Beholde the preparatiues of the obſequies of their firſt loue, & the guages of a blodie bedde: the one was prodigal of hir honoure, the other the tormenter of his reputation, and neglected the duetie and honor of his ſtate, which the houſe wherof he came, commaunded hym to kepe.

Thus all the night he remained with Bianca Maria, who made him ſo wel to like hir good entertainement

and imbracementes, as he neuer was out of hir companie. And the warie Circes fained hir ſelfe ſo farre in loue with him, and vſed ſo many toyes & gametricks of hir filthie ſcience, as he not onely eſtemed him ſelfe the happieſt Gentleman of *Sicilia*, but the moſt fortunate wight of al the world, and by bibbing of hir wine was ſo ſtraungely charmed with the pleaſures of his faire miſtreſſe, as for hir ſake he wold haue taken vpon him the whole ouerthrow of *Milan*, ſo well as Roſa of *Cumes* to ſet the Citie of *Rome* on fire, if Tyberius Gracchus the ſedicious, woulde haue gyuen hir leaue. Such is the maner of wilde and fooliſh youth, as which ſuffreth it ſelf to be caried beyond the boundes of reaſon. The ſame in time paſt did ouerthrow many realmes, and cauſed the chaunge of diuers Monarchies. And truely vnſeemely it is for a man to be ſubdued to the will of a common ſtrumpet. And as it is vncomly to ſubmit him ſelfe to ſuche one, ſo not requiſite to an honeſt & vertuous dame, his maried wife. Which vnmanly dedes, be occaſious that diuers fooliſhe women commit ſuch filthy factes, with their inſpekable trumperies begiling the ſimple mã, and perchance through to much loſing the bridle raines to the laufull wife, the poore man is ſtraungely deceiued by ſome adulterous varlet, which at the wiues cõmaundement, when ſhe ſeth opportunitie, wil not ſhrinke to hazarde the honor of them bothe, in ſuch wiſe as they ſerue for an exãple vpon a cõmon ſcaffold to a whole generation & poſteritie. I will not ſeeke farre of for examples, being ſatiſfied with the follie of the Baſtarde of *Cardonne*, to pleaſe the crueltie and malice of that infernall furie the Counteſſe, who hauing lulled, flatered and bewitched with hir louetricks (and peraduenture with ſome charmed drinke) hir new pigeon, ſeeing it time to ſoli-

cite

cite his promise, to be reuenged of those, which thought no more of his conspiracies and traitrous deuises, and also when ỳ time was com for punishing of his wherdome, and chastising of the breach of faith made to his husbande, and of his intended murders, and some of them put in execution, she I saye, desirous to see the ende of that, which in thought she had deuised, vpon a day toke Dom Pietro aside, and secretly began this oration: I take God to wytnesse (sir) that the requeste which I pretende presently to make, procedeth of desire rather that the worlde should knowe how iustly I seeke meanes to maintaine myne honour, than for desire of reuenge, knowing very well, that there is nothing so precious and deare vnto a woman, as the preseruation of that inestimable iewel, specially in a Ladie of that honorable degree which I maintain among the best. And to the intent I seeme not tedious with poliritie of wordes, or vse other than direct circumstaunces before him that hath offred iust reuenge for the wrongs I haue receiued: Know you sir, that for a certain time I continued at *Pauie*, keping a house and traine so honest, as the best lords were cõtented with myne ordinarie: It chaunced that two honest gentlemen of noble house haũted my palace in like sort, and with the same intertainment, which as you see, I doe receiue eche Gentleman, who beyng well intreated and honoured of me, in the ende forgat themselues so farre, as without respect of my state and calling, without regard of the race and familie wherof they come, haue attempted the slaunder of my good name, and vtter subuersion of my renoume: and sufficient it was not for them thus to deale with me poore Gentlewoman, without desert (excepte it were for admittyng them to haue accesse vnto my house) but also to conti-

nue their blaſphemies, to mine extreme reprache and ſhame: and how true the ſame is, they that know me can well declare, by reaſon wherof, the vulgar people prone and readie to wicked reportes, haue conceiued ſuch opinion of me, as for that they ſee me braue and fine in apparel, and ſpecially through the ſlaunderous ſpeache of thoſe gallantes, doe deeme and repute me for a common whore, wherof I craue none other witneſſe than your ſelfe and my conſcience. And I ſweare vnto you, that ſithe I came to *Milan*, it is you alone that hath vanquiſhed, and made the triumphe of my chaſtitie. And if you were abſent from this Citie, I aſſure you on my faith that I wold not tarie here. xviii. houres. Theſe infamous ruffians I ſay, theſe perſecuters and termagants of my good name, haue chaſed me out of all good Cities, and made me to be abhorred of all honeſt companie, that wearie I am of my life, and lothe to liue any longer, except ſpedie redreſſe be had for reuengement of this wrong. Wherefore except I finde ſome noble Champion and valiant perſonage to requite theſe villains for their ſpitefull ſpeach blaſed on me in euery corner of towne and countrey, and to paye them their rewarde and hire that I may liue at libertie and quiet, ſorow will either conſume me or myne owne hands ſhal haſten ſpedy death. And in ſpeking thoſe wordes, ſhe beganne to weepe with ſuch abundance of teares ſtreaming downe hir cheekes and necke of Alabaſter hewe, as the *Scicilian* which almoſt had none other God but the Countеſſe, ſayd vnto hir:

"And what is he, that dare moleſt and ſlaunder hir that
"hath in hir puiſſaunce ſo many Souldiers and men
"of warre? I make a bowe to God, that yf I knowe
"the names of thoſe two arrant vilaynes, the which
"haue ſo defamed my Miſtreſſe name, the whole

worlde

worlde ſhall not ſaue their lyues, whoſe carrion bo-
dies I wyll hewe into ſo many gobbetts, as they haue
membres vpon the ſame. Wherefore Madame (ſayd
he, imbracing hir) I praye you to grieue youre ſelfe
no more, committe your wronges to mée, onely tell
me the names of thoſe Gallauntes, and afterwardes
you ſhall vnderſtande what differences I make of
worde and déede, and if I doe not trymme and dreſſe
them ſo fynely, as hereafter they ſhall haue no néede
of Barber, neuer truſte me any more. Shée, as re-
uiued from death to lyfe, kyſſed and embraced hym
a thouſande tymes, thankyng hym for hys good will,
and offeryng hym all that ſhée hadde. In the ende
ſhée tolde hym that hir enimies were the Counties of
Maſſino and *Caiazzo*, which but by theyr deaths alone
were not able to amende and repaire hir honoure.
Care not you (ſayde hée) for before that the Sunne
ſhall ſpreade hys Beames twice .xviiij. houres vp-
on the earthe, you ſhall heare newes, and knowe
what I am able to doe for the chaſtiſement of thoſe
deuyls. As he promyſed, hée fayled not to doe: For
within a whyle after, as Ardizzino was goyng to ſup-
per into the Citie, he was eſpyed by hym, that had
in companie attendaunt vpon hym fyue and twentie
men of Armes, which wayted for Ardizzino, in a lane
on the lefte hande of the ſtreate called *Meraueglie*,
leadyng towardes the church of Saint Iames, through
which the Counte muſt néedes paſſe. Who as he was
goyng very pleaſantly diſpoſed with his brother, and
boyes of his men, was immediatly aſſailed on euery
ſide, and not knowyng what it meant, would haue
fledde, but the wayes and paſſages were ſtoppes
rounde aboute: to defende hym ſelfe it auayled not,

hauing

hauing but their ſingle ſwoꝛdes, and deuoide the troupe of ſuch a bande that were throughly armed, which in a moment had murdꝛed and cut in pieces all that companie. And although it was late, yet the Counte Ardizzino many times named Dom Pietro, which cauſed him to be taken, and impꝛiſoned by the Duke of *Bourbon*, that was fled out of *Fraunce*, and then was lieutenaunt foꝛ the Emperour Charles the fifth in *Milan*. Whoſoeuer was aſtonned and amazed with that impꝛiſonmẽt, it is to be thought that the *Sicilian* was not greatly at his eaſe and quiet, who neded no toꝛments to foꝛce him confeſſe the fact, foꝛ of his owne accorde voluntarily he diſcloſed the ſame, but he ſayde he was pꝛouoked theꝛeunto by the perſuaſion of Bianca Maria, telling the whole diſcourſe as you haue heard befoꝛe. She had alreadie intelligence of this chaunce, & might haue fled and ſaued hir ſelfe befoꝛe the fact (by the confeſſion of Dom Pietro) had bene diſcouered, and attended in ſome ſecrete place til that ſtoꝛmie ſtuꝛme had ben calmed & appeaſed. But God which is a righteful iudge would not ſuffer hir wickednelle extend any further, ſith ſhe hauing founde out ſuch a nimble & willfull executioner the Coũte of *Gaiazzo* could not long haue remained aliue, who then in god time and happie houꝛ was abſent out of the Citie. So ſoone as Dom Pietro had accuſed the Counteſſe the Lꝛde of *Bourbon* ſente hir to pꝛiſon, and being examined, confeſſed the whole matter, truſting that hir infinite numbꝛe of crownes would haue coꝛrupted the Duke, oꝛ thoſe that repꝛeſented his perſon. But hir crownes and hir life paſſed all one way. Foꝛ the day after hir impꝛiſonment ſhe was condemned to loſe hir heade: And in the meane time Dom Pietro was ſaued, by the diligence and ſute of the captaines, & was employed in other warres, to whom

whome the Duke gaue him, for that hée was lothe to loſe ſo notable a ſouldier, and the aide of his brother the Counte of *Coliſano*. The Coũteſſe hauing ſentence pronoũced vpon hir, but truſting for pardon, ſhe wold not prepare hir ſelf to die, ne yet by any means craue forgiueneſſe of hir faults at the handes of God, vntill ſhe was conueyed out of the Caſtell, and ledde to the common place of execution, where a ſcaffold was prepared for hir to play the laſt acte of hir tragedie. Then the miſerable Ladie began to know hir ſelf, and to cõfeſſe hir faultes before the people, deuoutely praying God, not to haue regarde to hir demerites, ne yet to determine his wrath againſt hir, or enter with hir in iudgement, for ſo much as if the ſame were decréed according to hir iniquitie, no ſalnation was to bée looked for. She beſought the people to praye for hir, and the Counte of *Gaiazzo* that was abſent, to pardon hir malice and treaſon which ſhe had deuiſed againſt him.

Thus miſerably and repentantly dyed the Counteſſe, which in hir life refuſed not to imbrace and folow any wickedneſſe, no miſchiefe ſhe accounpted euill done, ſo the ſame were imployed for hir pleaſure and paſtime. A goodly example truely for the youth of oure preſent time, ſith the maſt part indifferẽtly do launch into the gulfe of diſordred life, ſuffring them ſelues to be plunged in the puddles of their owne vain conceipts, without conſideration of the miſchiefes that may enſue. If the Lord of *Cardonne* had not ben beloued of his generall, into what calamitie had he fallen for yelding him ſelfe a praie to that bloodie woman, who had more regarde to the light and wilfull fancie of hir, whome he ſerued like a ſlaue, than to his honeſtie and eſtimation: And truely thoſe be voide of their right wittes, which thinke them ſelues beloued of a whore. For their a-

mitie endureth no longer, than they ſucke from their purſſes and bodies any profit or pleaſure. And becauſe almoſt euery day ſemblable examples be ſéene, I will leaue of this diſcourſe, to take mée to a matter, not farre more pleaſant than this, although founded vpon better grounde, and ſtabliſhed vpon loue, the firſt onſet of lawfull mariage, the ſucceſſe wherof, chaunced to murderous end, and yet the ſame intended by neyther of the beloued: As you ſhall be iudge by the continuance of reding of the hiſtorie enſuing. Beare with me good Ladies (for of you alone I craue this pardon) for introducing the whorith life of this Counteſſe, and hir bloodie enterprize: becauſe I know right well, that recitall of murders and bloodie facts werieth the mindes of thoſe that loue to liue at reſt, and wiſh for faire weather after the troubleſome ſtormes of ragyng ſeas, no leſſe than the pilote and wiſe Mariner, hauing long time endured and cut the perillous ſtraicts of the Ocean ſea. And albeit the corruption of our nature be ſo great, as folies delite vs more than erneſt matters full of reaſon and wiſedome, yet I thinke not that our mindes be ſo peruerted and diuided from trouthe, but ſometimes we care and ſéeke to ſpeake more granely than the countrey Pynde, or more ſobrely than they, whoſe lines do beare the marke of infamie, and be to euery wight notorious for the only name of their vocation. Sufficeth vs that an hiſtorie, bée it neuer ſo full of ſporte and pleaſure, do bring with it inſtruction of our lyfe, and amendement of our maners. And we ought not to be ſo curious or ſcrupulous, to reiect merie and pleaſaunt deuiſes that be voide of harmefull talke, or without ſuch glée as may hinder the education of youth proclyne and redie to chooſe that is naught and corrupte. The very bookes of holy Scriptures do

deſcribe

deſcribe vnto vs perſons that be vicious & ſo deteſtable as nothyng more, whoſe factes vnto the ſymple may ſeeme vnſeemely, vpon the leaſte recitall of the ſame. And ſhal we therfore reiect the reading, and eſchue thoſe holy bookes? God forbid, but with diligence to beware, that we do not reſemble thoſe that be remembred there for example, for ſomuch as ſpeedily after ſinne, enſueth grieuous and as ſodaine punishement. For which cauſe I haue ſelected theſe hiſtories, of purpoſe to aduertiſe youth, howe thoſe that folowe the way of damnable iniquitie, faile not ſhortely after their greate offenſes, and execution of their outragious vices, to feele the iuſte and mightie hande of God, who guerdoneth the good for their good workes and deedes, and rewardeth the euill for their wickednelle and miſcheſe. Nowe turne we then to the Hiſtorie of two the rareſt louers that euer were, the performaunce and finiſhyng whereof, had it ben ſo proſperous as the begynnyng, had ioyed ioyefully the fruictes of their intente, and two noble houſes of one Citie reconciled to perpetuall friendſhip.

Rhomeo and Julietta

¶ The goodly Historie of the true and constant Loue betwene RHOMEO and IVLIETTA, the one of whom died of poison, and the other of sorow and heuinesse: wherin be comprised many aduentures of loue, and other deuises touching the same.

The. xxv. Nouel.



I Am sure, that they whiche measure the greatenesse of Gods workes, according to the capacitie of their rude & simple vnderstanding, wyll not lightly adhibite credite vnto this historie, so wel for the varietie of strange accidents which be therin described, as for the noueltie & straungenesse of so rare and perfect amitie. But they that haue redde Plinie, Valerius Maximus, Plutarche, and diuers other writers, doe finde, that in olde tyme a greate number of men and women haue died, some of excessiue ioye, some of ouermuch sorowe, and some of other passions: and amongs the same, Loue is not the least, which when it seaseth vpon any kynde & gentle subiect, & findeth no resistance to serue for a rāpart to

stay

stay the violence of his course, by little & little vndermineth melteth & consumeth ỹ vertues of naturall powers in such wise as the spirite yelding to the burden, abandoneth ỹ place of life: which is verified by the pitifull and infortunate death of two louers that surrendred their last breath in one Tombe at *Verona* a Citie of *Italy*, wherin repose yet to this day (with great maruel) the bones and remnantes of their late louing bodies: An history no lesse wonderfull than true. If then particular affection which of good right euery man ought to beare to the place where he was borne, doe not deceiue those that trauaile, I thinke they will confesse with me, that few Cities in *Italie*, can surpasse the said Citie of *Verona*, aswell for the Nauigable riuer called *Adisa*, which passeth almost through the midst of the same, and therby a great traffique into *Almaine*, as also for the prospect towards the fertile Mountains and pleasant valeis which do environ ỹ same, with a great number of very clere and liuely fountains that serue for the ease and commodity of the place. Omitting (besides many other singularities) foure bridges, and an infinite number of other honorable antiquities, daily apparant vnto those, that be so curious to view & loke vpon them. Which places I haue somewhat touched, because this most true History which I purpose hereafter to recite, dependeth therupon, the memory whereof to this day is so well knowne at *Verona*, as vnneths their blubbred eyes, be yet dry that sawe and beheld that lamentable sight.

When the Senior Escala was Lord of *Verona*, there were two families in the Citie, of farre greater fame than the rest, aswell for riches as Nobilitie: the one called the *Montesches*, and the other the *Capellets*: but like as most commonly there is discord amongs them

which be of semblable degrée in honor, there so there hapned a certaine enmitie betweene them, and for so much as the beginning therof was vnlawful, and of ill foundation, so likewise in processe of time it kindled to such flame, as by diuers and sundry deuises practised on both sides, many lost their liues. The Lord Bartholomew of *Escala*, (of whome we haue already spoken) being Lord of *Verona*, and seing such disorder in his common weale, allayed diuers and sundry wayes to reconcile those two houses, but all in vaine: for their hatred had taken such rote, as ỳ same could not be moderated by any wise councell or good aduise: betweene whome no other thing could be accorded, but giuing ouer armure and weapon for the time, attending some other season more conuenient, and with better leisure to appease the rest. In the time ỳ these things wer doing, one of the familie of *Montesches* called Rhomeo, of the age of.xx.or.xxi.yeres, the faireſt and best conditioned Gentleman that was amongs the *Veronian* youth, fell in loue with a yong Gentlewoman of *Verona*, & in few dayes was so attached with hir comely & good behauiour, as he abandoned all other affaires and businesse to serue & honor hir. And after many letters, ambassades and presents, he determined in the end to speake vnto hir, & to disclose his passions, which he did without any other practise. But she which was vertuously brought vp, knew how to make him so good answer to cutte off his amorous affectiõs as he had no luſt after that time to return any more, and shewed hir self so austere and sharpe of speach, as she vouchsafed not with one look to behold him. But the more ỳ yong Gentleman sued hir whilſt and silent, the more he was inflamed: and after he had continued certaine months in that seruice

without remedy of his griefe, he determined in the end to depart *Verona*, for preuke if by change of y place he might alter his affection, and sayd to himselfe. What doe I meane to loue one that is so vnkinde, and thus doeth disdaine me, I am all hir owne, and yet she flieth from me. I can no longer liue, except hir presence I doe enioy. And she hath no contented minde, but when she is furthest from me. I will then from hencefoorth estraunge my selfe from hir, for it may so come to passe by not beholding hir, that thys fire in me which taketh increase and nourishment by hir faire eyes, by little and little may die and quench. But minding to put in preuke what he thought, at one instant his was reduced to the contrarie, why not knowing whereuppon to resolue, passed dayes and nights in marueilous plaintes and lamentacions. For Loue bered him so neare, and had so well fired the Gentlewomans beautie within the Bowels of his heart and minde, as not able to resist, he fainted with thdischarge, and consumed by little and little as the Snow against the Sunne. Whereof his parents and kinred did marueil greatly, bewayling his misfortune, but aboue all other one of his companions of riper age and counsell than he, began charply to rebuke him. For the loue that he bare him was so great as he felt his Martirdome, and was partaker of his passion which caused him by ofte viewing hys friends disquietnesse in amorous pangs, to say thus vnto him: Rhomeo, I marueil much that thou spendest the best time of thine age, in pursute of a thing, from which thou flest thy selfe vnpriuy and banished, without respect either to thy prodigall dispense, to thine honor, to thy teares, or to thy miserable life, which be able

to

" to moue the most constant to pitie. Wherefore I pray
" thee for the Loue of our ancient amitie, and for thine
" health sake, that thou wilt learn to be thine owne ma-
" and not to alienate thy liberty to any so ingrate as she
" is: for so farre as I can coniecture by things that are
" passed betwene you, either she is in loue with some o-
" ther, or else determined neuer to loue any. Thou art
" yong, rich in gods and fortune, and more excellent in
" beautie than any Gentleman in this Citie: thou art
" well learned, and the only sonne of the house where
" thou cõmest. What griefe wold it be to thy poore mo-
" ther & other thy parents, to see thee so drowned in this
" dongeon of pitie, specially at that age wherein thou
" ought est rather to put them in some hope of thy ver-
" tue? Begin then frõ hencefoorth to acknowledge thine
" error, wherein thou hast hitherto liued, doe away that
" amorous vaile or couerture which blindeth thine eyes
" and letteth thee to folow the right path, wherein thine
" ancestors haue walked: or else if thou do faile thy self
" so subiect to thine owne will, yelde thy heart to some
" other place, and chose some Mistresse accordyng to thy
" worthinesse, and hencefoorth doe not sow thy paines in
" a soile so barrain wherof thou receiuest no frute: the
" time approcheth when all the dames of the Citie shall
" assemble, where thou maist behoolde such one as shall
" make thee forget thy former griefs. This yong Gen-
" tleman attentiuely hearing all the persuading reasons
" of his frend, began somewhat to moderate that heat, to
" acknowledge all ỹ erbortations which he had made
" to be directed to good purpose. And therin determined to
" put them in proofe, and to be present indifferently at
" all the feasts and assemblies of the citie; without bea-
" ring affection more to one woman than to another.
And continued in this manner of life .y. or .iy. months,
most

thinking by that meanes to quench the sparks of auncient flames. It chanced then within few dayes after, about the feast of Christmasse, when feasts & bankets most commonly be vsed, and maskes according to the custome frequented: And bicause that Anthome Capellet was the chief of that familie, and one of the most principal Lords of the Citie, he made a banket, and for the better solempnization of the same, inuited all the noble mẽ and dames, at what time ther was the most part of ẏ youth of *Verona*. The family of the *Capellets* (as we haue declared in ẏ beginning of this Hiſtory) was at variance with the *Montiſchis*, which was the cauſe that none of that family repaired to that banket, but onely the yong Gentleman Rhomeo, who came in a maske after ſupper with certain other yong Gentlemen. And after they had remained a certaine ſpace with their viſards on, at length they did put of ẏ ſame, and Rhomeo very shamefaſt, withdrew himſelf into a corner of the Hall: but by reaſon of the light of the torches which burned very bright, he was by & by known and loked vpon of the whole company, but ſpecially of the Ladies: for beſides his native beautie wherewith nature had adorned him, they maruelled at his audacitie how he durſt preſume to enter ſo ſecretly into ẏ houſe of thoſe which had litle cauſe to do him any good. Notwithſtanding, the *Capellets* diſſembling their malice, either for the honor of the company, or elſe for reſpect of his age, did not miſuſe him either in word or deede. By meanes whereof with free liberty he behelde and viewed the ladies at his pleaſure, which he did ſo wel, and with grace ſo good, as there was none but did very well like the preſence of his perſon. And after he had particularly giuen iudgement vpon the excellency of each one, according to his affection, he ſaw one gen-

tle woman amongs the reſt of ſurpaſſing beautie, who (although he had neuer ſeene hir tofore) pleaſed him aboue the reſt, & attributed vnto hir in heart the cheefeſt place for all perfection in beautie. And ſeaſyng hir inceſſantly with piteous lookes, the loue which he bare to his firſt Gentlewoman, was ouercomen with this new fire, which toke ſuch norriſhement and vigor in his heart, as he was able neuer to quench the ſame but by death onely: as you may vnderſtande by one of the ſtrangeſt diſcourſes, that euer any mortal man deuiſed. The yong Rhomeo then feelyng himſelfe thus tolled with this new tempeſt, could not tel what countenaunce to vſe, but was ſo ſurprized and chaunged with theſe laſt flames, as he had almoſt forgotten himſelfe, in ſuche wiſe as he had not audacitie to enquire what ſhee was, and wholly bent hym ſelfe to feede his eyes wyth hir [illegible], wherewyth he moyſtened the ſweete amorous venom, which dyd ſo empoyſon him, as hee ended his dayes with a kynde of moſte cruell death. The Gentlewoman that dydde put Rhomeo to ſuche payne, was called Iulietta, and was the daughter of *Capellet*, the maiſter of the houſe where that aſſemblie was, who as hir eyes dydde roll and wander to and fro, by chaunce eſpied Rhomeo, whiche vnto hir ſeemed to be the goodlieſt Gentleman that euer ſhe ſawe. And Loue which lay in wayte neuer vntyl that tyme, aſſailing the tender heart of that yong Gentlewoman, touched hir ſo at the quicke, as for any reſiſtance ſhe coulde make, was not able to defende hys forces, and then began to ſet at naught the royalties of the feaſt, and felt no pleaſure in hir hart, but when ſhe had a glimpſe by throwing or receiuing ſome ſight or looke of Rhomeo. And after they had cõtented the others troubled hart with millions of amorous lokes

whiche oftentymes interchangeably encountred and met together, the burning beames gaue sufficient testimonie of loues priuie onsettes. Loue hauing made the heartes breach of those two louers, as they two sought meanes to speake together, Fortune offered them a very méete and apt occasion. A certaine lorde of that troupe and company toke Iulietta by the hande to daunce, wherein shée behaued hir selfe so well, and with so excellent grace, as shée wanne that daye the price of honour from all the maidens of *Verona*. Rhomeo, hauyng foreséene the place wherevnto she minded to retire, approched the same, and so discretely vsed the matter, as he found the meanes at hir returne to sit beside hir. Iulietta when the daunce was finished, returned to the very place where she was set before, and was placed betwene Rhomeo & an other Gentlemã called Mercutio, which was a courtlike gentlemã, very wel beloued of all men, and by reason of his plesãt & curteous behauior was in al cõpanies wel intertained. Mercutio ỳ was of audacitie amõg maidẽs, as a lion is among lãbes, seased incõtinently vpon ỳ hande of Iulietta, whose hands wontedly wer so cold bothe in winter & sommer as ỳ mountain yce, although ỳ fires heat did warme ỳ same. Rhomeo which sat vpon ỳ left side of Iulietta, seing that Mercutio held hir by the right hand, toke hir by the other, that he might not be deceiued of his purpose, & straining the same a litle, he felt himself so prest with that newe fauor, as he remained mute, not able to answer: But she perceiuing by his change of color, ỳ the fault proceded of very vehemẽt loue, desiring to speake vnto him, turned hir selfe towards him, & with trembling voice ioyned with virginal shamfastnesse, intermedled wt a certaine bashfulnesse, sayd to him: Blessed be ỳ hour of your nere approche: but

minding to procéede in further talke, loue had so closed vp hir mouth, as she was not able to end hir tale. Whereunto the yong gentleman all rauished with ioy and contentation, sighing, asked hir what was ỳ cause of that right fortunate blessing. Iulietta somwhat more emboldned with pitiful loke and smiling countenance "said vnto him: Syr, do not marueil if I do blesse your "comming hither, bicause sir *Mercutio* a good time with "frosty hand hath wholly frosen mine, and you of your "curtesie haue warmed the same again. Whereunto im"mediatly Rhomeo replied: Madame if the heauēs haue "bene so fauorable to employ me to do you some agrea"ble seruice being repaired hither by chaunce amongst "other Gentlemen, I estéeme the same well bestowed, "crauing no greater benefite for satisfaction of all my "contentations receiued in this worlde, than to serue, "obey and honor you so long as my life doth last, as ex"perience shall yeld more ample proofe when it shall "please you to giue further assay. Moreouer, if you haue "receiued any heat by touche of my hand, you may be "well assured that those flames be dead in respect of the "liuely sparks and violent fire which sorteth from your "faire eyes, which fire hath so fiercely inflamed all the "most sensible parts of my body, as if I be not succored "by the fauoure of your diuine graces, I doe attend the "time to be consumed to dust. Scarse had he made an end of those last words, but the daunce of the Torche was at an end. Whereby *Iulietta* which wholly burnt with loue, straightly clasping hir hand with his, had no leisure to make other answere, but softly thus to say: "My deare friend, I know not what other assured wit"nesse you desire of Loue, but that I let you vnderstand "that you be no more your owne, than I am yours, be"ing ready and disposed to obey you so farre as honours

shal

shall permit, beseeching you for the present time to
sontent your selfe with this answere, vntill some o-
ther season meeter to Communicate more secretely
of our affaires. Rhomeo seeing himself pressed to part
with the companie, and for that hee knewe not by
what meanes hee might see hir againe that was his
life and death, demaunded of one of his friends what
she was, who made answer that she was the daugh-
ter of *Capellet*, the Lord of the house, and maister of
that dayes feast (who wroth beyond measure that for-
tune had sent him to so daungerous a place, thought
it impossible to bring to end his enterprise begon.) Iu-
lietta couetous on the other side, to know what yong
Gentleman hee was which had so courteously inter-
taigned hir that night, and of whome she felt the new
wounde in hir heart, called an olde Gentlewoman of
honor which had nursled hir and brought hir vp, vnto
whome she sayd, leaning vpon hir shoulder: Mother,
what two yong Gentlemen be they which first goe
forth with the two torches before them. Vnto whome
the olde Gentlewoman tolde the name of the houses
whereof they came. Then she asked hir againe, what
yong Gentleman is that which holdeth the visarde in
his hande, with the Damaske cloke about him. It is
(quod she) Rhomeo Montesche, the sonne of your Fa-
thers capitall enimy and deadly foe to all your kinne.
But the maiden at the only name of Montesche was
altogither amazed, dispairing for euer to attaine to
husband hir great affectioned friend Rhomeo, for the
auncient hatreds betwene those two families. Ne-
uertheleſſe she knew so wel how to dissemble hir griefe
and discontented minde, as the olde Gentlewoman
perceiued nothing, who then began to persuade hir to
retire into hir chamber: whome she obeyed: and being

in hir bed, thinking to take hir wonted reſt, a great tempeſt of diuers thoughts began to enuiron & trouble hir minde, in ſuch wiſe as ſhe was not able to cloſe hir eyes, but turning here & there, fãtaſied diuerſe things in hir thought, ſometimes purpoſed to cut of the whole attempt of that amorous practiſe, ſometimes to continue the ſame. Thus was the poore pucell vexed with two contraries, the one comforted hir to purſue hir intent, the other propoſed the imminent perill whervnto vndiſcretely ſhe headlong threw hir ſelf. And after ſhe had wandred of long time in this amorous Labyrinth, ſhe knew not wherupon to reſolue, but wept
" inceſſantly, and accuſed hir ſelf, ſaying: Ah Caitiue
" and miſerable creature, from whence doe riſe theſe
" vnaccuſtomed trauailes which I fœle in minde, pro-
" uoking me to loſe my reſt: but infortunate wretch,
" what doe I know if that yong Gentleman doe loue
" me as hée ſayeth. It may be vnder the vaile of ſugred
" words hée goeth about to ſteale away mine honoure,
" to be reuenged of my Parents which haue offended
" his, and by that meanes to my euerlaſting reproche
" to make me the fable of the *Veronæ* people. Afterwards ſodainly as ſhe condempned that which ſhe ſuſpected in the beginning, ſayd: Is it poſſible that vnder ſuch beautie and rare comelineſſe, diſloyaltie and
" Treaſon may haue their ſiedge and lodging? If it be
" true that the face is the faithfull meſſanger of the
" mindes conceit, I may be aſſured that hée doeth loue
" me: for I marked ſo many chaunged coloures in his
" face in time of his talke with me, and ſawe him ſo
" tranſported and beſides himſelf, as I cannot wiſhe a-
" ny other more certaine lucke of loue, wherin I will
" perſiſt immutable to the laſt gaſpe of life, to the in-

tent

tent I may haue him to be my husband. For it may so
come to passe, as this newe alliance shall engender a
perpetuall peace and amitie betwene his house and
mine. Resting then vpon this determination still, as
she saw Rhomeo passing before hir Fathers gate, she
shewed hir self with mery countenance, and folow-
ed him so with loke of eye, vntill she had lost his sight:
And continuing this manner of life for certain dayes,
Rhomeo not able to content himself with lokes, dai-
ly did beholde and marke the situation of the house,
and one day amongs others hee espied Iulietta at hir
chamber window, bounding vpon a narow lane, right
ouer against which Chamber he had a gardeine, which
was the cause that Rhomeo fearing discouery of their
loue, began then in the day time to passe no more
before the gate, but so soone as the night with his
browne mantell had couered the earth, he walked a-
lone vp and downe that little streat. And after he had
bene there many times, milling the chiefest cause of
his comming, Iulietta impacient of hir euill, one night
repaired to hir window, and perceiued through the
brightnesse of the Mone hir friend Rhomeo hard vn-
der hir window, no lesse attended for, than he himself
was waighting. Then she secretely with teares in
hir eyes, and with voyce interrupted by sighes, sayd:
Signior Rhomeo, me thinke that you hazarde your per-
sone too much, and commit the same into great danger
at this time of the night, to protrude your self to the
mercy of thē which meane you little good. Who if they
had taken you, would haue cut you in pieces, and mine
honor (which I esteeme dearer than my life,) hindred
& suspected for euer. Madame answered Rhomeo, my
life is in the hād of God, who only cā dispose the same:

how-

" howbeit if any man had sought meanes to bereue me
" of life, I should (in the presence of you) haue made him
" known what mine abilitie had bene to defend y same.
" Notwithstanding life is not so deare, and of such estis
" matiõ vnto me, but that I could vouchsafe to sacrifice
" the same for your sake: and although my misshap had
" ben so great, as to be dispatched in that place, yet had
" I no cause to be sory therefore, excepte it had bene by
" losing of meanes, the same to forgoe, the way how to
" make you vnderstand the good will and duety which I
" beare you: desiring not to conserue the same for any
" commoditie y I hope to haue therby, nor for any other
" respect, but only to loue, serue, and honor you, so long
" as breath shal remaine in me. So sone as he had made
an end of his talke, loue and pitie began to seaze vpon
the heart of Iulietta, and leaning hir head vpon hir hād,
" hauing hir face all besprent with teares, she said vnto
" Rhomeo: Syr Rhomeo, I pray you not to renue thoſe
" things againe: for the only memory of such inconueni
" ence, maketh me to coũterpoise betwene death & life,
" my heart being so vnited with yours, as you cānot re
" ceiue the leaſt iniury in this world, wherin I shal not
" be so great a partaker as your self: beseeching you in
" conclusion, that if you desire your owne health & mine,
" to declare vnto me in fewe words, what your determi
" nation is to attaine: for if you couet any other se
" crete thing at my handes, more than myne honour can
" well allow, you are marueilously deceiued: but if your
" desire be godly, and that the friendship which you pro
" test to beare me, be founded vppon vertue, and to be
" concluded by mariage, receiuyng me for your wyfe &
" lawful spouse, you shall haue such part in me, as wel
" any regarde to the obedience & reuerence that I owe
" to my parentes, or to the auncient enimitie of our fa
milie,

milies, I will make you the onely Lord & maister ouer
me, and of all things that I possesse, beyng prest and
readie in all points to folowe your commaundement.
But if your intent be otherwise, and thinke to reape
the frute of my virginitie, vnder pretense of wanton
amitie, you be greatly deceiued, and doe praye you to
auoide and suffer me from henceforth to liue in rest a-
mongs mine equals. Rhomeo which loked for none o-
ther thing holding vp his handes to the heauens, with
incredible ioy and contentation, answered: Madame
for somuch as it hath pleased you to do me that honour
to accept me for such a one, I accorde and consente to
your request, and do offer vnto you the best part of my
heart, which shall remaine with you for guage & sure
testimonie of my saying, vntill such time as God shall
giue me leaue to make you the entier owner and pos-
sessor of the same. And to ỳ intent I may begyn mine
enterprise, to morow I wil to Frier Laurence for coũ-
sell in the same, who bisides that he is my ghostly Fa-
ther, is accustomed to giue me instruction in all my o-
ther secrete affaires, and fayle not (if you please) to
mæte me againe in this place at this very hour, to the
intent I may giue you to vnderstande the deuise be-
twene him and me, which she liked very wel, & ended
their talk for that time. Rhomeo receiuing none other
fauor at hir handes for that night, but only wordes. This
frier Laurence of whom hereafter we shal make more
ample mention, was an aũcient Doctor of Diuinitie,
of the order of the friers Minors, who bisides the hap-
py profession which hæ had made in studie of holie
writ, was very skilful in Philosophy, and a great sear-
cher of nature secrets, & exceeding famous in Magike
knowledge, and other hidde and secret sciences, which
nothing diminished his reputation, bicause he did not

abuse thesame. And this Frier through his vertue and pietie, had so wel won the citizens hearts of *Verona*, as he was almost the confessor to them all, and of al men generally reuerenced and beloued: and many tymes for his great prudence was called by the lordes of the Citie, to the weightie affaires of the same. And amonges other he was greatly fauored by the lord of *Escale*, that time the principal gouernor of *Verona*, and of al ỳ familie of *Montesches*, and of the *Capellets*, and of many other. The yong Rhomeo (as we haue alredy declared) frō his tēder age, bare a certein particle amitie to frier Laurēce, & departed to him his secrets, by means wherof so sone as he was gone from Iulietta, wēt straight to ỳ Friers *Frāciscans*, wher frō point to point he discoursed ỳ succesle of his loue to ỳ good father, & the cōclusion of the mariage betwene him & Iulietta, adding vpon the end of talk, ỳ he wold rather chose shameful death, thā to faile hir of his promise. To whō the good Frier after he had debated diuers matters, & proposed al the inconueniences of that secrete mariage, exhorted hym to more mature deliberation of the same: notwithstanding, all the alleged persuasiōs wer not able to reuoke his promise. Wherfore the Frier vanquished with his stubbornesse, and also forecasting in his minde that the mariage might be some meanes of recōciliatiō of those two houses, in the ende agreed to his request, intreating him, that he might haue one delayed day for leysure to excogitate what was beste to be done. But if Rhomeo for his part was carefull to prouide for his affaires, Iulietta likewise did hir indeuor. For seing ỳ she had none about hir to discouer hir passions, she deuised to impart the whole to hir nurse which laye in hir chāber, apointed to waite vpon hir, to whome she committed the intier secrets of ỳ loue betwene Rhomeo & hir.

And

And although ý old womā in the beginning reſiſted Iulietta hir intent, yet in ý ende ſhe knewe ſo wel how to perſuade and win hir, that ſhe promiſed in all that ſhe was able to do, to be at hir cōmandement. And then ſhe ſent hir with al diligence to ſpeake to Rhomeo, and to know of him by what meanes they might be maried, & ý he would do hir to vnderſtand the determination betwene frier Laurence & him. Whō Rhomeo anſwered, how ý firſt day wherin he had informed frier Laurence of ý matter, ý ſaid frier deferred anſwer vntil the nexte, which was the very ſame, and that it was not paſt one houre ſithens he returned with final reſolution, & that Frier Laurence & he had deuiſed, that ſhe the Saterday folowing, ſhould deſire leaue of hir mother to go to cōfeſſion, & to repaire to the church of ſaint Francis, where in a certain chapel ſecretly they ſhold be maried, praying hir in any wiſe not to fail to be there. Which thing ſhe brought to paſſe with ſuch diſcretion, as hir mother agréed to hir requeſt: and accompanied onely with hir gouerneſſe, and a yong mayden, ſhe repaired thither at the determined day & time. And ſo ſone as ſhe was entred ý church, called for the good Doctor frier Laurence, vnto whō anſwere was made ý he was in the ſhriuing chapel, & forthw̄ aduertiſement was giuē him of hir cōming. So ſon as frier Laurence was certified of Iulietta, he went into the body of the Church, & willed the old woman and yong maiden to go heare ſeruice, and that when he had hearde the confeſſion of Iulietta, he would ſende for them again to waite vpon hir. Iulietta being entred a litle Cell with Frier Laurence, he ſhutte faſt the doore as he was wont to do, where Rhomeo and he had bene together faſt ſhut in, the ſpace of one whole houre before. Then Frier Laurence after that hée had ſhriued them, ſayde to Iulietta: Daughter, as Rhomeo

" here present hath certified me, you be agréd and con-
" tented to take him to husband, and he likewise you to
" his espouse and wife. Do you now still persist and con-
" tinue in that minde? The Louers answered that they
" desired none other thing. The Frier seeyng their con-
formed and agreable willes, after he had discoursed somwhat vpon the commendation of mariage dignitie, pronounced the vsuall wordes of the Church, and she hauing receiued the ryng from Rhomeo, they rose vp
" before the Frier, who sayd vnto them: If you haue a-
" ny other thing to conferre together, do the same with
" spede: for I purpose that Rhomeo shall go from hence
" so secretely as he can. Rhomeo sorie to go from Iulietta sayd secretly vnto hir, that she should send vnto him after diner the olde woman, and that he would cause to be made a corded ladder the same euening, thereby to climbe vp to hir chamber window, where at more leysure they woulde deuise of their affaires. Things determined betwene them, either of them retired to their house with incredible contentation, attendyng the happie houre for consummation of their mariage. When Rhomeo was come home to his house, he declared wholly what had passed betwene him and Iulietta, vnto a seruant of his called Pietro, whose fidelitie he had so greatly tried, as he durst haue trusted him with his life, and commaunded him with expedition to prouide a ladder of cordes with. vj. strong hookes of iron fastned to both ends, which he easily did, bicause they were much vsed in *Italie*. Iulietta did not forget in the euening about fiue of the clocke, to sende the old woman to Rhomeo, who hauing prepared all things necessarie, caused the ladder to be deliuered vnto hir, and prayed hir to require Iulietta ỹ same euening not faile to be at the accustomed place. But if this iorney seemed

med long to these two passioned louers, let other iudge that haue at other times allayed the like: for euery minute of an houre seemed to them a thousand yeares, so that if they had had power to commaunde the heauens (as Iosua did the Sunne) the earth had incontinently bene shadowed with darkest cloudes. The appointed houre come, Rhomeo put on the moste sumptuous apparell he had, and conducted by good fortune neere to the place where his heart toke life, was so fully determined of his purpose, as easily hee clymed vp the garden wall. Being arriued hard to the window, he perceiued Iulietta, who had already so wel fastned the corded ladder to drawe him vp, as without any daunger at all he entred hir chambre, which was so clere as ý day, by reson of the tapers of virgin wax, which Iulietta had caused to be lighted, ý she myght the better behold hir Rhomeo. Iulietta for hir part, was but in hir night kerchief: who so soon as she perceiued him, colled him about the neck, and after she had kissed & rekissed hym a million of times, began to imbrace hym betweene hir armes, hauing no power to speke vnto him, but by sighes onely, holding hir mouth close against his, and being in this traunce beheld him with pitiful eye, whiche made him to liue and die together. And afterwardes somewhat come to hir selfe, she sayd with sighes depely fetched from the bottom of hir heart: Ah Rhomeo, the exampler of all vertue and gentienesse, you be most hartily welcome to this place, wherin for your lacke and absence, and for feare of your persone, I haue gushed forth so many teares, as the spryng is almost dry: but nowe that I holde you betweene my armes, let death and fortune doe what they list, for I count my selfe more than satisfied of all my sorrowes past, by the fauour alone of your presence: whom Rhomeo with weeping

" ping eye, giuing ouer silēce answered: Madame for-
" much as I neuer receiued so much of fortunes grace,
" as to make you fēele by liuely experience what power
" you had ouer me, & the torment euery minute of ỳ day
" sustained for your occasion, I do assure you ỳ least griefe
" ỳ vexeth me for your absence, is a thousād times more
" painful than death, which long time or this had cut of ỳ
" thrēde of my life, if the hope of this happy iourney had
" not bene, which paying me now the iust tribute of my
" wepings past, maketh me better content & more glad,
" than if the whole world were at my cōmaundemēt, be-
" sēching you (without further memory of anciēt griefe)
" to take aduise in time to come how we may contēt our
" passionate hearts, & to sort our affaires with such wise-
" dome and discretion as our enimies without aduātage
" may let vs continue the remnant of our dayes in rest &
quiet. And as Iulietta was about to make answer, the
olde woman came in the meane time, and sayd vnto
" them: He that wasteth time in talke, recouereth the
" same to late. But for so much as either of you hath en-
" dured such mutuall paines, behold (quod she) a campe
which I haue made ready, (shewing them the field bed
which she had prepared and furnished,) wherunto they
easily agrēed, and being thē betwene the shētes in pri-
uy bed, after they had gladded and cherished thēselues
with all kinde of delicate embracementes which loue
was able to deuise, Rhomeo vnlosing the holy lines
of virginity, toke possession of the place, which was not
yet besieged with such ioy and contentation as they can
iudge which haue assayed like delites. Their marriage
thus consummate, Rhomeo perceiuing the morning
make too hastie approach, toke his leaue, making pro-
mise that he would not faile within a day or two to re-
sort againe to the place by like meanes and semblable
time,

time, vntill Fortune had prouided sure occasion vnfearfully to manifest their mariage to ỹ whole world. And thus a month or twaine, they continued their ioyfull mindes to their incredible satisfaction, vntill Lady fortune enuious of their prosperitie, turned hir whele to tumble them into such a bottõlesse pit, as they payed hir vsury for their plesures past, by a certain most cruell and pitiful death, as you shall vnderstand hereafter by ỹ discourse that foloweth. Now as we haue before declared, the *Capellets* & the *Montesches* were not so wel reconciled by the Lord of *Verona*, but that there rested in them such sparkes of ancient displeasures, as either partes waited but for some light occasion to draw togithers, which they did in the Easter holy dayes, (as bloudy men commõly be most willingly disposed after a good time to commit some nefarious deede) bisides the gate of *Boursarie* leading to the olde castell of *Verona*, a troupe of the *Capellets* rencountred with certain of the *Montesches*, and without other wordes began to set vpon them. And the *Capellets* had for chief of their glorious enterprise one called Thibault cosin Germaine to Iulietta, a yong man strongly made, and of good experience in armes, who exhorted his Companions with stout stomakes to repelle the boldnesse of the *Montesches*, that there should from that time forth no memorie of them be left at all. And the rumoure of this fray was increased throughoute all the corners of *Verona*, that succoure should come from all partes of the Citie to departe the same. Whereof Rhomeo aduertized, who walked alonges the Citie with certaine of his companions, hasted him spedily to the place where the slaughter of his Parents and alies were committed: and after he had well aduised & beholden many wounded & hurt on both sides, he sayd

to

" to his companions: My friends let vs part thē, for they
" be so fleght one vpon an other, as they wil all be hew-
" ed to pieces before the game be done. And saying so, he
thrust himself amids the troupe, and did no more but
part the blowes on either side, crying vpō them aloud,
" My friends, no more it is time henceforth ỳ our quarel
" cease. For bisides the prouocation of Gods iust wrath,
" our two families be slaunderous to the whole world,
" and cause this common wealth to grow vnto disorder.
But they were so egre and furious one against the o-
ther, as they gaue no audience to Rhomeo his councel,
and bent themselues to kill, dismēber, and teare eche
other in pieces. And the fight was so cruell and outra-
gious betwene them, as they which loked on, were a-
mased to sée them endure those blowes, for the ground
was al couered with armes, legges, thighs, and bloud,
wherein no signe of cowardnesse appeared, and main-
tained their fight so long, that none was able to iudge
who had the better, vntill that Thibault cousin to Iuli-
etta inflamed with ire and rage, turned towards Rho-
meo, thinking with a foine to run him through. But he
was so well armed and defended with a priuie coate
which he wore ordinarily for the doubt hée had of the
Capellets, as the pricke rebounded: vnto whom Rhomeo
" made answer: Thibault thou maist know by the pati-
" ence which I haue had vntill this present time, that I
" came not hither to fight with thée or thine, but to séeke
" peace and attonemēt betwene vs, and if thou thinkest
" that for default of corage I haue failed mine endeuor,
" thou doest great wrong to my reputation. And impute
" this my sufferance to some other perticular respect, ra-
" ther than to wāt of stomake. Wherfore abuse me not,
" but be content with this great effusion of bloud, and
" murders already committed, and prouoke me not I
beséeche

beſæche thée to paſſe the bounds of my good wil & mind. »
Ah Traitor, sayde Thibault, thou thinkeſt to saue thy »
ſelf by the plot of thy pleaſant tong, but ſée that thou »
defend thy ſelfe, elſe preſently I will make thée féele »
that thy tong ſhall not garde thy corpſe, nor yet be the »
buckler to defend the ſame from preſent death. And »
saying ſo, he gaue him a blowe with ſuch furie, as had not other warded the ſame, he had cut of his head from his ſhoulders. And the one was no readier to lend, but the other incontinently was able to pay againe, for he being not only wroth with the blow that he had receiued, but offended with the iniurie which the other had done, began to purſue his enimie with ſuch courage and viuacitie, as at the third blow with his ſweard, he cauſed him to fall backewarde ſtarke deade vpon the grounde, with a pricke vehemently thruſt into his throte, which he followed till his ſwearde appeared through the hinder parte of the ſame, by reaſon whereof the conflict ceaſed. For beſides that Thibault was the chief of his companie, he was alſo borne of one of the Nobleſt houſes within the Citie, which cauſed the poteſtate to aſſemble his Soldiers with diligence for the apprehenſion and impriſonment of Rhomeo, who ſéeing yl fortune at hand, in ſecrete wiſe conueyed him ſelf to Frier Laurence, at the Friers *Franciſcanes*. And the Frier vnderſtanding of his facte, kept him in a certaine ſecrete place of his Couent, vntil Fortune did otherwiſe prouide for his ſafe going abrode. The brute ſpred throughout the Citie, of this chaunce done vpon the Lord Thibault, the *Capellets* in mourning wædes cauſed the dead body to be caried before the ſigniory of *Verona*, ſo well to moue them to pitie, as to demaund iuſtice for the murder: before whome came alſo the *Monteſches*, declaring the innocencie of Rhomeo, and

the wilful assault of the other. The Counsel assembled & witnesses heard on both parts, a straight cõmaundement was giuen by the Lord of the Citie to giue ouer their weapons, and touching the offense of Rhomeo bicause he had killed the other in his owne defense, he was banished *Verona* for euer. This cõmon misfortune published throughout the Citie, was generally sorowed and lamented. Some complained the death of the Lord Thibault, so well for his dexteritie in armes, as for the hope of his great good seruice in time to come, if he had not bene preuented by such cruell death. Other bewailed (specially the Ladies and Gentlewomen) the ouerthrow of yong Rhomeo,) who bisides his beautie & good grace wherwith he was enriched, had a certaine naturall allurement, by vertue whereof he drew vnto him the hearts of eche man, like as the stony Adamant doth the cancred iron, in such wise as the whole nation and people of *Verona* lamented his mischance: but aboue al, infortunate Iulietta, who aduertised both of the death of hir cosin Thibault, and of the banishment of hir husbande, made the aire sound with infinite numbre of mornefull plaints and miserable lamentations. Then feeling hir selfe too much outraged with extreme passion, she went into hir chamber, and ouercome with sorow threw hir self vpon hir bed, where she began to reinforce hir dolor after so strange fashion, as the most constant would haue bene moued to pitie. Then like one oute of hir wittes, she gazed heere and there, and by Fortune beholding the windowe whereat Rhomeo was wont to enter into hir chamber, cried out: Oh
" vnhappy windowe, Oh entry most vnlucky, wherein
" were wouen the bitter toyle of my former misshaps,
" if by thy meanes I haue receiued at other times some

light

light pleasure or transitorie contentation, thou now » makest me pay a tribute so rigorous and painefull, as » my tender body not able any longer to support ỹ same, » shall henceforth open the gate to that life where the » ghost discharged from this mortall burden, shall sèke » in some place else more assured rest. Ah Rhomeo, » Rhomeo, when acquaintance first began betwéene vs, » and I reclined mine eares vnto thy suborned promis- » ses, confirmed with so many othes, I wold neuer haue » beleued that in place of our continued amitie, and » in appeasing of the hatred of our houses, thou woul- » dest haue sought occasion to breake the same by an » acte so vituperious and shamefull, whereby thy fame » shall be spotted for euer, and I miserable wretch de- » solate of spouse and companion. But if thou haddest » bene so greadie after the *Capellets* bloud, wherefore » didst thou spare the deare bloud of mine owne heart » when so many times, and in such secrete place the » same was at the mercie of thy cruell handes? The » victorie which thou shouldest haue gotten ouer me, had » it not bene glorious inough for thine ambitious mind, » but for more triumphant solempnitie to be crowned » with the bloud of my dearest kinsman? Now get thée » hence therefore into some other place to deceiue some » other, so vnhappy as my selfe. Neuer come againe in » place where I am, for no excuse shall hereafter take » holde to allwage mine offended minde. In the meane » time I shall lament the rest of my heauie life, with » such store of teares, as my body dried vp from all hu- » miditie, shall shortly search relefe in earth. And ha- » uing made an ende of those hir words, hir heart was so grieuously strained, as she could neither wéepe nor speake, and stode so immoueable, as if she had bene

in a traunce. Then being somewhat come againe vn
" to hir self, with feble voyce she sayde: Ah murderous
" tong of other mennes honor, howe daresst thou so infa
" mously to speake of him whome his very enimies do
" commend and praise? How presumest thou to impute
" the blame vpon Rhomeo, whose vngiltinesse and inno
" cent deede euery man alloweth? Where from hence
" forth shal be his refuge? sith she whiche ought to be the
" only bulwarke, and assured rãpire of his distresse, doth
" pursue & defame him? Receiue, receiue then Rhomeo,
" the satisfactiõ of mine ingratitude by ỳ sacrifice which
" I shall make of my proper life, and so the fault which I
" haue committed against thy loyaltie, shalbe made open
" to the world, thou being reuenged & my self punished.
And thinking to vse some furder talke, all the powers of hir body failed hir with signes of present death. But the good olde woman which could not imagine ỳ cause of Iulietta hir long absence, doubted very much that she suffred some passion, and sought hir vp and downe in euery place within hir fathers palace, vntill at length she found hir lying a long vpon hir bed, al the outward parts of hir body so colde as Marble. But the good olde woman which thought hir to be dead, began to cry like
" one out of hir wittes, saying: Ah deare daughter and
" noursechilde, how much doeth thy deathe now grieue
" me at the very heart? And as she was feeling all the partes of hir body, she perceiued some sparke of life to be yet within the same, which caused hir to call hir many times by hir name, till at length she brought hir
" out of hir sounde. Then she sayd vnto hir: Why Iuliet-
" ta myne own deare dareling, what meane you by this
" turmoiling of your self? I can not tel from whẽce this
" your behauior & that immoderate heauinesse doe pro-
" cede, but wel I wote that within this houre I thought

to

to haue accompanied you to the graue. Alas good mo-
ther (aunswered wofull Iulietta) doe you not most eui-
dently perceiue and see what iuste cause I haue to sor-
row and complaine, losing at one instant two persons
of the worlde which were vnto me moste deare? Me
thinke answered the good woman, that it is not semely
for a Gentlewoman of your degree to fall into such ex-
tremitie. For in time of tribulation wisedome shoulde
most preuaile. And if the Lord Thibault be dead, do you
thinke to get hym againe by teares? What is he that
doth not accuse his ouermuch presumption? would you
that Rhomeo had done that wrong to him, & his house,
to suffer himselfe outraged & assailed by one, to whome
in manhode and prowesse he is not inferiour? Suffi-
seth you that Rhomeo is aliue, and his affaires in such
estate, who in time may be called home again from ba-
nishment, for he is a great lorde, and as you know wel
allied and fauored of all men: wherfore arme your self
from henceforth with patience. For albeit that For-
tune doth estraunge him from you for a time, yet sure
I am, that hereafter she will restore him vnto you a-
gaine with greater ioy and contentation than before.
And to the end that we be better assured in what state
he is, if you will promise me to giue ouer your heaui-
nesse, I will to day knowe of Frier Laurence whether
he is gone. To whiche requeste Iulietta agreed, and then
the good woman repaired to *S. Francis*, where she found
Frier Laurence, who told hir that the same night Rho-
meo would not faile at his accustomed houre to visite
Iulietta, and there to do hir to vnderstand what he pur-
posed to doe in time to come. This iorney then fared
like the voyages of mariners, who after they haue ben
tost by great & troublous tempest, seeing some Sunne
beame pierce the heauens to lighten the land, assure

them selues agayne, and thynkyng to haue auoyded shipwracke, and sodainly the seas begin to swell, the wawes do roare, with such vehemence and noyse, as if they were fallen againe into greater daunger than before. The assigned houre come, Rhomeo fayled not according to his promise to bee in his Garden, where he found his furniture prest to mount the chamber of Iulietta, who with displayed armes, began so straightly to imbrace hym, as it seemed that the soule woulde haue abandoned hir body. And they two more than a large quarter of an houre were in such agonie, as they were not able to pronounce one worde, and wettyng eache others face fast closed together, the teares trickled downe in suche abundaunce, as they seemed to bee thoroughlye bathed therein. Whiche Rhomeo perceyuing, and thynkyng to staye those immoderate teares, sayde vnto hir: Myne owne deerest friende Iulietta, I am not nowe determined to recite the particulars of the straunge happes of frayle and inconstaunte Fortune, who in a moments hoysteth a man vp to the highest degree of hir wheele, and by and by, in lesse space than in the twynckelyng of an eye, shee throweth hym downe agayne so lowe, as more miserie is prepared for him in one day, than honour in one hundred yeares: whyche I nowe prome, and haue experience in my selfe, whiche haue bene nourished delicately amonges my friendes, and maintayned in suche prosperous state, as you doe little knowe, (hoping for the full perfection of my felicitie) by meanes of oure mariage to haue reconciled oure parentes and friendes, and to conducte the residue of my lyfe, according to the scope and lotte determined by Almyghty GOD: and neuertheles all

all myne enterprises bée put backe, and my pur-
poses tourned cleane contrarye, in suche wyse as
from henceforthe I muste wander lyke a vagabonde
thorough dyuerse Prouinces, and sequestrate my selfe
from my friendes, withoute assured place of myne a-
bode, whiche I desyre to lette you wete, to the in-
tente you maye be exhorted, in tyme to come, pati-
ently to beare so well myne absence, as that which
it shall please God to appointe. But Iulietta, all
affrighted with teares and mortall agonies, woulde
not suffer hym to passe any further, but interruptyng
hys purpose, sayde vnto hym: Rhomeo, howe canst
thou bée so harde hearted and voyde of all pitie, to
leaue mée héere alone, besieged with so many dead-
ly myseries? There is neyther houre nor minute,
wherein Death dothe not appeare a thousande tymes
before mée: and yet my misshappe is suche, as I can
not dye, and therefore doe manyfestelye perceyue,
that the same Deathe preserueth my lyfe, of pur-
pose to delyghte in my griefes, and triumphe ouer
my euyls. And thou lyke the mynister and tyrant of
hir crueltie, doest make no conscience (for ought
that I can sée) hauynge atchieued the summe of thy
desyres and pleasures on me, to abandon and for-
sake me. Whereby I well perceyue, that all the la-
wes of Amitie are deade and vtterly extinguished,
for so muche as hée, in whome I hadde greatest hope
and confidence, and for whose sake I am become an e-
nimie to my self, doth disdaine and contemne me. No
no Rhomeo, thou must fully resolue thy selfe vpon one
of these .ij. points, either to sée me incontinently thro-
wen down hedlong from this high window after thée:
or else to suffer me to accõpanie thée into that coũtrey
or place

" or place whither Fortune shal guide thée: for my heart
" is so muche transformed into thine, that so soone as I
" shall vnderstande of thy departure, presently my spi-
" will depart this wofull body: the continuance where-
" I doe not desire for any other purpose, but only to re-
" light my selfe in thy presence, and to bee partaker o
" thy misfortunes. And therefore if euer there lodge
" any pitie in the hearte of Gentleman, I beseeche the
" Rhomeo with al humilitie, that it may now fynd plac
" in thée, and that thou wilt vouchsafe to receiue me fo
" thy seruant, and the faithful cõpanion of thy mysha-
" And if thou thinke that thou canst not cõueniently re-
" ceiue me in the estate and habite of a wife, who shall
" let me to chaunge myne apparell? Shall I be the firs
" that haue vsed like shiftes, to escape the tirannie of pa-
" rentes? Dost thou doubt that my seruice will not be
" so good vnto thée as that of Petre thy seruaunt? Will
" my loyaltie and fidelitie be lesse than his? My beauti
" whiche at other tymes thou hast so greately commen-
" ded, is it not esteemed of thée? My teares, my loue, an
" the auncient pleasures and delights that you haue ta-
" ken in me, shall they be in oblition? Rhomeo seeing hir
in these alteratiõs, fearing that worse inconuenienc
would chaunce, take hir againe betweene his armes,
" and kissyng hir amorously, sayd: Iulietta, the onely m
" stresse of my heart, I pray thée in the name of God, an
" for the feruent loue which thou beares vnto me, to ex-
" tirpate & do away those vaine cogitations, except thou
" meane to seeke hazard the destruction of vs both: for if
" thou persiuer in this determination, there is no remo-
" die but we muste both perish: for so soon as thine absen
" shal be knowne, thy father will make such ernest pur-
" sute after vs, that we can not chose but be descried &
" taken, and in the ende cruelly punished, I as a thief
and

and ſtealer of thée, and thou as a diſobedient daughter
to hir father: and ſo in ſtead of pleaſant and quiet life,
our dayes ſhalbe abridged by moſt ſhameful death. But
if thou wilt recline thy ſelf to reaſon, (the right rule of
humane life,) and for the time abandon our mutual de-
lights, I will take ſuch order in the time of my baniſh-
ment, as within.iy.or.iiy. months without any delay,
I ſhalbe rewoked home againe. But if it fall out other-
wiſe (as I truſt not,) how ſo euer it happē, I wil come
againe vnto thée, and with the helpe of my friends wil
fetch thée from *Verona* by ſtrong hand, not in counter-
feit apparell as a ſtranger, but like my ſpouſe and per-
petuall companion. In the meane time quiet your ſelf,
and be ſure that nothing elſe but death ſhal deuide and
put vs aſunder. The reaſons of Rhomeo ſo much pre-
uailed with Iulietta, as ſhe made him this anſwer: My
deare friend I will doe nothing contrary to your will
and pleaſure. And to what place ſo euer you repair, my
heart ſhall be your owne, in like ſorte as you haue gi-
uen yours to be mine. In the meane while I pray you
not to faile oftentimes to aduertiſe me by Frier Lau-
rence, in what ſtate your affairs be, and ſpecially of the
place of your abode. Thus theſe two poore louers paſ-
ſed the night togither, vntill the day began to appeare,
which did ſeparate them, to their extreame ſorow and
griefe. Rhomeo hauing taken leaue of Iulietta, went to
S. Frances, and after he hadde aduertiſed Frier Lau-
rence of his affaires, departed from *Verona* in the habit
of a Marchaunt ſtraunger, and vſed ſuch expedition, as
without hurt hée arriued at *Mantona*, (accompanied
only with Petre his ſeruaunt, whome hée haſtely ſent
backe againe to *Verona*, to ſerue his Father) where he
toke a houſe: and liuing in honorable company, aſſayed
certaine months to put away the griefe which ſo tor-

ntented him. But during the time of his absence, mi-
serable Iulietta could not so cloke hir sorow, but that
through the euill coloure of hir face, hir inwarde pas-
sion was discried. By reason whereof hir mother, who
heard hir oftentymes sighing, and incessantly com-
" plaining, coulde not forbeare to say vnto hir: Daugh-
" ter if you continue long after this sorte, you will ha-
" sten the death of your good Father and me, who love
" you so dearely as our owne liues: wherefore hence-
" forth moderate your heauinesse, and endeuor your self
" to be mery: thinke no more vpon the death of your co-
" sin Thibault, whome (sith it pleased God to call away)
" do you thinke to reuoke with teares, and to withstand
" his almighty will? But the poore Gentlewoman not
" able to dissemble hir grief, sayd vnto hir: Madame long
" time it is sithens the last teares for Thibault wer pou-
" red forth, and I beleue that the fountaine is so well dri-
" ed and dried vp, as no more will spring in that place.
" The mother which coulde not tell to what effect thos
" words were spoken held hir peace, for feare she should
trouble hir daughter: and certaine dayes after seing
hir to continue in heauinesse and continuall griefs, as-
sayed by all meanes possible to know, aswell of hir, as
of other the houshold seruaunts, the occasion of hir so-
row, but al in vaine: wherwith the poore mother vexed
beyonde measure, purposed to let the Lorde Antonio
hir husband to vnderstand the case of hir daughter. And
vpon a day seeing him at conuenient leisure, she sayd
vnto him: My Lord, if you haue marked the counte-
nãce of our daughter, and hir kinde of behauior sithens
the death of the Lord Thibault hir cosin, you shall per-
ceiue so straunge mutation in hir, as it will make you
to maruel: for she is not only contẽted to forgoe meat,
drinke and slepe, but she spendeth hir time in nothing

else

elſe but in weeping & lamentation, delighting to kepe
hir ſelf ſolitarie within hir chamber, where ſhe tormē-
teth hir ſelf ſo outragiouſly, as if we take not hēde, hir
life is to be doubted, and not able to know the original
of hir paine, the more difficult ſhall be the remedy: for
albeit that I haue ſought meanes by all extremitie, yet
cannot I learne the cauſe of hir ſickneſſe. And where
I thought in the beginning, that it proceēded vpon the
death of hir coſin, now I doe manifeſtly perceiue ỳ con-
trary, ſpecially when ſhe hir ſelf did aſſure me that ſhe
had already wept and ſhed the laſt teares for him, that
ſhē was minded to doe. And vncertaine wherupon to
reſolue, I do thinke verily that ſhe mourneth for ſome
deſpite, to ſēe the moſt part of hir companions maried,
& ſhe yet vnprouided, perſuading with hir ſelf (it may
be) that we hir parents doe not care for hir. Where-
fore deare huſband, I heartely beſeēche you for our reſt
and hir quiet, that hereafter ye be carefull to prouide
for hir ſome mariage worthy of our ſtate: whereunto
the Lord Antonio willingly agreed, ſaying vnto hir:
Wife, I haue many times thought vpon that whereof
you ſpeake, notwithſtāding ſith as yet ſhe is not attai-
ned to the age of .xviii. yeares, I thought to prouide a
huſbād at leiſure. Neuertheleſſe things being come to
theſe termes, & knowing ỳ virgins chaſtitie is a dāge-
rous treaſure, I wil be mindful of ỳ ſame to your con-
tentation, and ſhe matched in ſuch wiſe, as ſhe ſhall
thinke the time hitherto well delayed. In the meane
while mark diligently whither ſhe be in loue with any
to the end ỳ we haue not ſo gret regard to gōdes, or to
ỳ nobilitie of ỳ houſe wherin we meane to beſtow hir,
as to ỳ life & helth of our daughter, who is to me ſo dere
as I had rather die a begger wōut lands or gōds, than
to beſtow hir vpon one which ſhal vſe & intreat hir yll.

Certain dayes after that the Lord Antonio had bruted the mariage of his Daughter, many Gentlemen were suters, so wel for ỳ excellencie of hir beautie, as for hir great richesse & reuenue. But aboue all others the alliance of a yong Earle named Paris, the Counte of *Lodronne* liked the Lord Antonio: vnto whome liberally he gaue his cõsent, & told his wife the party vpõ whom he did mean to bestow his daughter. The mother very ioyful ỳ they had found so honest a Gentlemã for their daughter: caused hir secretly to be called before hir, doing hir to vnderstand what things had passed betwene hir father & the Counte *Paris*, discoursing vnto hir the beauty & good grace of that yong Counte, ỳ vertues for which he was commended of al men, ioyning therunto for conclusion ỳ great richesse & fauor which he had in ỳ goods of fortune, by means wherof she & hir frieds shold liue in eternall honor. But Iulietta which had rather to haue bene torne in pieces than to agree to ỳ mariage, answered hir mother wd a more thã accustomed stoutnesse: Madame, I much maruel, & therwithal am astõned ỳ you being a Lady discrete & honorable, wil be so liberal ouer your daughter as to cõmit hir to ỳ plesure & wil of an other before, you do know how hir minde is bent: you may do as it pleaseth you, but of one thing I do wel assure you, that if you bring it to passe, it shal be against my will. And touching the regarde and estimation of Counte Paris, I shall first lose my life before he shall haue power to touch any part of my body: which being done, it is you that shall be coũted the murderer, by deliuering me into the hands of him, whome I neither can, wil, or know which way to loue. Wherfore I pray you to suffer me hencefoorth thus to liue, without taking any further care of me, for so muche as my cruell fortune hath otherwise disposed of me.

The

The doloꝛous mother whiche knewe not what iudge-
ment to fire vpon hir daughters aunſwere, like a wo-
man confuſed & bilides hir ſelf went to ſeke the Lorde
Antonio, vnto whome without conceyling any part of
hir daughters talke, ſhe did him vnderſtand the whole.
The good olde man offended beyonde meaſure, cõman-
ded hir incontinẽtly by force to be brought beſoꝛe him,
if of hir own good wil ſhe wold not come. So ſon as ſhe
came beſoꝛe hir father, hir eyes ful of teares, fel downe
at his fẽt, which ſhe bathed with the luke warm dꝛops
that diſtilled from hir eyes in great abundance, & thin-
king to open hir mouth to crie him mercie, the ſobbes
and ſighes many times ſtopt hir ſpeach, that ſhe remai-
ned dumbe not able to frame a woꝛde. But the old mã
nothing moued with his daughters teares, ſayde vnto
hir in great rage: Come hither thou vnkynde and diſ-
obedient daughter, haſt thou already forgotten howe
many times thou haſt heard ſpoken at the table, of the
puiſſance and authoꝛitie our auncient Romane fathers
had ouer their childꝛen? vnto whome it was not onely
lawfull to ſell, guage, and otherwiſe diſpoſe them (in
their neceſſitie) at their pleaſure, but alſo whiche is
moꝛe, they had abſolute power ouer their death & lyfe?
With what ꝛyons, with what toꝛmẽts, w̃ what racks
wold thoſe good fathers chaſten and coꝛrect thee if they
were aliue againe, to ſee that ingratitude, miſbehauoꝛ
and diſobedience which thou vſeſt towards thy father,
who with many pꝛayers and requeſtes hath pꝛouided
one of the greateſt loꝛds of this pꝛouince to be thy huſ-
bande, a gentleman of beſt renoume, and indued with
all kinde of vertues, of whome thou and I be vn-
woꝛthie, bothe foꝛ the notable maſſe of goodes and ſub-
ſtance wherwith he is enriched, as alſo foꝛ the honour
and generoſitie of the houſe whereof he is diſcended,

" and yet thou playeſt the parte of an obſtinate and re-
" bellious childe againſt thy fathers wil, I take the om-
" nipotencie of that almightie God to witneſſe, whiche
" hath vouchſafed to bryng thee forth into this worlde,
" that if vpon Tueſday nexte thou faileſt to prepare thy
" ſelfe to be at my caſtel of *Villafranco*, where the Coũte
" Paris purpoſeth to mete vs, and there giue thy conſent
" to that which thy mother & I haue agreed vpon, I will
" not onely depriue thee of my worldly goodes, but alſo
" will make thee eſpouſe and marie a priſon ſo ſtraight
" and ſharpe, as a thouſande times thou ſhalt curſe the
" day and tyme wherin thou waſt borne. Wherfore frõ
" henceforth take aduiſement what thou doſt, for except
" the promiſe be kept which I haue made to the Counte
" Paris, I will make thee feele how great the iuſt choler
" of an offended father is againſt a childe vnkinde. And
" without ſtaying for other anſwer of his daughter, the
olde man departed the chamber, and lefte hir vpon hir
knees. Iulietta knowing the furie of hir father, fearing
" to incurre his indignation, or to prouoke his further
" wrath, retired for that day into hir chamber, and con-
" trined the whole night more in weeping than ſleeping.
" And the next morning fayning to goe heare ſeruice, ſhe
" went forth with the woman of hir chamber to the fri-
" ers, where ſhe cauſed father Laurence to be called vnto
" hir, and prayed him to heare hir confeſſion. And when
" ſhe was vpon hir knees before him, ſhee began hir con-
" feſſion with teares, tellyng him the great miſchief that
" was prepared for hir, by ỹ mariage accorded betweene
" hir father, and the Counte Paris. And for concluſion
" ſaid vnto him: Sir, for ſo much as you know that I can
" not by Gods law be maried twice, and that I haue but
" one God, one huſbande, and one faith, I am determined
" (when I am from hence) with theſe two hands which

you

you ſée ioyned before you, this day to end my ſorowful life, that my ſoule may beare witneſſe in the heauens, and my blode vpon the earth of my faith and loyaltie preſerued. Then hauyng ended hir talke, ſhe loked about hir, and ſéemed by hir wilde countenaunce, as though ſhe had deuiſed ſome ſiniſter purpoſe. Wherefore Frier Laurence, aſtonned beyond meſure, fearing leſt ſhe wold haue executed that which ſhe was determined, ſayd vnto hir: Miſtreſſe Iulietta, I pray you in the name of God by litle and little to moderate youre conceyued griefe, and to content your ſelf whileſt you be here, vntill I haue prouided what is beſt for you to do, for before you part from hence, I wil giue you ſuch conſolation and remedie for your afflictiõs, as you ſhall remaine ſatiſfied and contented. And reſolued vppon this good minde, he ſpédily wente out of the Churche vnto his chamber, where he began to conſider of many things, his conſcience beyng moued to hinder the mariage betwene the Coũte Paris and hir, knowing that by his meanes ſhe had eſpouſed an other, and callyng to remembrance what a dangerous enterpriſe he had begonne, by committyng hymſelfe to the mercie of a ſymple damoſell, and that if ſhée failed to bée wyſe and ſecrete, all their doings ſhould be diſcried, he defamed, and Rhomeo hir ſpouſe puniſhed. Yée then after he had well debated vpon an infinite numbre of deuiſes, was in the ende ouercome wyth pitie, and determined rather to hazarde his honour, than to ſuffer the adulterie of Counte Paris with Iulietta. And béeyng determined herevpon, opened his cloſet, and takyng a vyoll in hys hande, retourned agayne to Iulietta, whome hée founde lyke one that was in a traunce, waytynge for newes, eyther of lyfe, or deathe. Of whome the good olde father demaunded vppon what

" what day hir mariage was appointed. The first day of
" that appointment (quod she) is vpon wednesday, which
" is the day ordeined for my cõsent of mariage accorded
" betwene my father and Counte Paris, but the nuptiall
" solemnitie is not before the .x. day of September. Wel
" then (quod the religious father) be of good cheere daugh-
" ter, for our Lord God hath opened a way vnto me both
" to deliuer you & Rhomeo from the prepared thraldom.
" I haue knowne your husband from his cradle, and he
" hath dayly committed vnto me the greatest secretes of
" his conscience, and I haue so dearely loued him again,
" as if he had ben mine own sonne. Wherfore my heart
" can not abide that any man shold do him wrong in that
" specially wherin my counsell may stande him in stede.
" And for somuch as you are his wife, I ought likewyse
" to loue you, & seke meanes to deliuer you frõ the mar-
" tyrdome and anguith wherwith I se your heart besie-
" ged. Understande then (good daughter) of a secrete
" which I purpose to manifest vnto you, and take harde
" aboue all things, that you declare it to no liuing crea-
" ture, for therein consisteth your life and death. Ye be
" not ignorant by the common report of the citizens of
" this Citie, and by the same published of me, that I haue
" trauailed thorough all the Prouinces of the habitable
" earth, wherby during the continuall time of .xx. yeres,
" I haue sought no rest for my wearied body, but rather
" haue many times protruded ỳ same to ỳ mercy of brute
" beasts in ỳ wildernesse, & many times also to the mer-
" cyelesse waues of the seas, and to the pitie of cõmon pi-
" rates together with a thousande other daungers and
" shipwracks vpon sea and lande. So it is good daughter
" that all my wandryng voyages haue not bene altoge-
" thers vnprofitable. For beside the incredible contem-
" tation receiued ordinarily in myndc, I haue gathered

some

some particular fruit, whereof by the grace of God you
shall shortly feele some experience. I haue proued the
secrete properties of stones, of plants, metals, & other
things hidden within the bowels of the earth, where-
with I am able to helpe my selfe against the common
law of men, when necessitie doth serue: specially in
things wherein I know mine eternall God to be least
offended. For as thou knowest I being approched as it
were, euen to the brimme of my graue, & that the time
draweth neare for yelding of mine accompt before the
auditor of all auditors, I ought therefore to haue some
deepe knowledge and apprehēsion of Gods iudgement
more than I had when ỳ heat of inconsidered youth did
boyle within my lusty body. Know you therefore good
daughter, that with those graces and fauors which the
heauens prodigally haue bestowed vpon me, I haue
learned and proued of long time the composition of a
certaine paaste, which I make of diuers soporiferous
simples, which beaten afterwards to poudre, & dronke
with a quātitie of water, within a quarter of an houre
after, bringeth the receiuer into such a sleepe, and buri-
eth so deepely the senses and other spirites of life, that
the cunningest Philitian wil iudge the party dead: and
besides that it hath a more marueilous effect, for the
person which vseth the same feeleth no kinde of griefe,
and according to the quantitie of the dough, the pacīēt
remaineth in a swéete sleepe, but when the operation is
perfect & done, hée returneth into his first estate. Now
then Iulietta receiue mine instruction, and put of all fe-
minine affection by taking vpon you a manly stomake,
for by the only courage of your minde consisteth ỳ hap
or mishap of your affaires. Beholde héere I giue you a
viole which you shal kéepe as your owne proper heart,
and the night before your mariage, or in the morning

" before day, you shal fil the same vp with water, & drink
" so much as is contained therin. And then you shall fele
" a certain kinde of pleasant sleepe, which incroching by
" litle & litle all the parts of your body, wil constrain the
" in such wise, as vnmoueable they shal remaine: and by
" not doing their accustomed duelies, shall lose their na-
" tural felings, and you abide in such extasie the space of
" xl. houres at the least without any beating of poulse or
" other perceptible motion, which shall so astõne them y
" come to see you, as they will iudge you to be dead, & ac-
" cording to the custome of our Citie, you shall be caried
" to the churchyard hard by our Church, where you shall
" be intombed in the common monument of the *Capellets*
" your ancestors, & in the meane time we wil send word
" to the Lord Rhomeo by a speciall messanger of the ef-
" fect of our deuise, who now abideth at *Mantua*. And the
" night following I am sure he will not faile to be here,
" then he and I togither will open the graue, and lift vp
" your body, and after the operatiõ of the pouder is past,
" he shall conuey you secretely to *Mantua*, vnknowen
" to all your Parents and friends. Afterwards (it may
" be) Time the mother of truthe shall cause concord be-
" twene the offended Citie of *Verona* and Rhomeo. At
" which time your common cause may be made open to
" the generall contentation of all your friendes. The
" words of the good Father ended, new ioy surprised the
" heart of Iulietta, who was so attentiue to his talke as
" she forgate no one poynt of his lesson. Then she sayde
" vnto him: Father, doubt not at all that my heart shall
" faile in performance of your commaundement: for
" were it the strongest poyson or moste pestiferous ve-
" nome, rather would I thrust it into my body, than to
" consent to fall in the hands of him, whome I vtterly
" mislike: with a right strong reason then may I fortifie

my

my self, and offer my body to any kinde of mortal dan-
ger to approche and draw neare to him, vpon whome
wholly dependeth my life & al the contentation I haue
in this world. Go your wayes then my daughter (quod
the Frier) the mighty hand of God keepe you, and his
surpassing power defend you, and confirme that will
and good mind of yours, for the accomplishment of this
worke. Iulietta departed from Frier Laurence, and re-
turned home to hir fathers palace about .vj. of the clock,
where she founde hir mother at the gate attending for
hir: and in good deuotion demaūded if she continued stil
in hir former follies? But Iulietta with more gladsome
chere than she was wont to vse, not suffering hir mo-
ther to aske againe, sayde vnto hir: Madame I come
from S. Frauncis Church, where I haue taried lon-
ger peraduenture than my duetie requireth: how be it
not without frute and great rest to my afflicted con-
science, by reason of the godly persuasions of our ghost-
ly father Frier Laurence, vnto whome I haue made a
large declaration of my life. And chiefly haue commu-
nicated vnto him in confession, that which hath past be-
twene my Lord my father and you, vpon the mariage
of Counte Paris and me. But the good man hath recon-
ciled me by his holy words and commendable erhor-
tations, that where I had minde neuer to marry, now
I am well disposed to obey your pleasure and com-
maundement. Wherefore Madame I beseeche you to
recouer the fauor & good will of my father, aske pardon
in my behalfe, and say vnto him (if it please you) that
by obeying his Fatherly request, I am ready to meete
the Counte Paris at *Villafranco*, and there in your pre-
sence to accept him for my Lord and husband: in assu-
rance wherof, by your pacience, I meane to repair into
my closet, to make choise of my most pretious iewels,

" that I being richly adorned and decked, may appeare
" before him more agreeable to his minde and pleasure.
The good mother rapte with exceeding great ioy, was not able to answer a word, but rather made spede to seeke out hir husband the Lord Antonio, vnto whome she reported the good will of hir daughter, and how by meanes of Frier Laurence hir minde was chaunged. Wherof the good olde man maruellous ioyfull, praised
" God in heart, saying: wise this is not ẏ first good turne
" which we haue receiued of that holy man, vnto whom
" euery Citizen of this Common wealth is dearly bound.
" I wold to God that I had redeemed, xx. of his yeres with
" the third parte of my goods, so grieuous is to me his ex-
" treme olde age. The self same houre the Lord Antonio went to seeke the Counte Paris, whome he thought to persuade to goe to *Villafranco*. But the Counte tolde him againe, that the charge would be to great, and that better it were to reserue that cost to the mariage day, for the better celebration of the same. Notwithstanding if it were his pleasure, he would himself goe visite Iulietta: and so they went together. The mother aduertised of his comming, caused hir Daughter to make hir self ready, and to spare no costly iewels for adorning of hir beautie against the Countes cõming, which she bestowed so wel for garnishing of hir personage, that before the Counte parted frõ the house, she had so stolne away his heart, as he lined not frõ that time forth, but vpon meditation of hir beautie, and slacked no time for acceleration of ẏ mariage day ceasing not to be importunate vpon father and mother for the ende and consummation thereof: And thus with toy inoughe passed forth this day and many others vntill ẏ day before the mariage, against which time the mother of Iulietta did so well prouide, that there wanted nothing to set forth

the

the magnificence and nobilitie of their house. *Villafranco* wherof we haue made mention, was a place of pleasure, where the lorde Antonio was wont many times to recreate him self a mile or two from *Veronna*, there the dynner was prepared, for so muche as the ordinarie solemnitie of necessitie muste be done at *Veronna*. Iulietta perceiuing hir time to approach, dissembled the matter so well as shée coulde: and when time forced hir to retire to hir chambre, hir woman wold haue waited vpon hir, and haue lyen in hir chambre, as hir custome was: But Iulietta sayde vnto hir: God and faithfull mother, you know that to morow is my mariage day, and for that I would spende the most parte of the night in prayer, I pray you for this time to let me alone, and to morow in the morning about. vj. of the clocke come to me againe to helpe me make me redie. The good olde woman willing to folow hir mind, suffred hir alone, and doubted nothing of that whiche she did meane to do. Iulietta being within hir chambre hauing an eawer ful of water standing vpon the table filled the viole which the Frier gaue hir: and after she had made the mixture, she set it by hir bed side, & went to bed. And being layde, new thoughts began to assaile hir, with a conceipt of grieuous death, which brought hir into such case as she coulde not tell what to doe, but playning incessantly sayd: Am not I the most vnhappie and desperat creature, that euer was borne of woman? for me there is nothyng leftę in this wretched worlde but mishap, miserie, and mortall woe, my distresse hath brought me to such extremitie, as to saue mine honor and conscięce, I am forced to deuoure the drinke wherof I know not the vertue: but what know I (sayd she) whether the operation of this ponder will be to soone or to late, or not correspondent to the due time,

" time, and that my faulte being discouered, I shall re-
" mayne a iesting stocke and fable to the people? what
" know I moreouer, if the serpents and other venomous
" and crauling wormes, which commonly frequent the
" graues and pittes of the earth will hurt me, thinkyng
" that I am dead? But how shal I indure the strinche of
" so many carions and bones of myne auncestors which
" rest in the graue, if by fortune I do awake before Rho-
" meo & Frier Laurence doe come to help me? And as she was thus plunged in the deepe contẽplation of things, she thought that she sawe a certaine vision or fansie of hir cousin Thibault, in the very same sort as she sawe him wounded and imbrued with blod, and musyng howe that she must be buried quicke amongs so many dead carcases and deadly naked bones, hir tender and delicate body began to shake and tremble, and hir yelowe lockes to stare for feare, in suche wise as frighted with terrour, a colde sweate beganne to pierce hir heart, and bedew the rest of all hir membres, in suche wise as she thought that an hundred thousand deathes did stande about hir, haling hir on euery side, and plucking hir in pieces, & feelyng that hir forces diminyshed by litle and litle, fearing that through to great debilitie she was not able to do hir enterprise, like a furious and insensate womã, without further care, gulped vp the water within the viol, then crossing hir armes vpon hir stomacke, she lost at that instant al the powers of hir body, and remained in a traunce. And when the mornyng light began to thrust his head out of his Orient, hir chamber woman which had lockte hir in with the key, did open the doore, and thinking to awake hir, called hir many times, and sayde vnto hir: Mistresse, you sleepe to long, the Counte Paris will come to raise you. The poore olde woman spake vnto the wall, and

sang

sang a song vnto the deafe. For if all the horrible and tempestuous soundes of the worlde had bene canoned forth oute of the greatest bombardes, and sounded through hir delicate eares, hir spirits of lyfe were so fast bounde and stopt, as she by no meanes coulde awake, wherewith the poore olde woman amazed, beganne to shake hir by the armes and handes, which she founde so colde as marble stone. Then puttyng hande vnto hir mouthe, sodainely perceyued that she was deade, for she perceyued no breath in hir. Wherfore lyke a woman out of hir wyttes, she ranne to tell hir mother, who so madde as Tigre, bereft of hir saons, hyed hir selfe into hir daughters chaumber, and in that pitifull state beholdyng hir daughter, thinking hir to be deade, cried out: Ah cruell death, which hast ended all my ioye and blisse, vse thy lasse scourge of thy wrathfull ire against me, least by suffering me to lyue the rest of my wofull dayes, my tormente do increase: then she began to fetch such straining sighes, as hir heart dyd seeme to cleaue in pieces. And as hir cries beganne to encrease, beholde the father, the Counte Paris, and a greate troupe of Gentlemen and Ladies, which were come to honour the feast, hearing no soner tell of that which chaunced, were stroke into such sorowfull dumpes as he whiche had beheld their faces wold easily haue iudged ẏ the same had bẽ a day of ire & pitie, specially the lord Antonio, whose heart was frapped with such surpassing wo, as neither teare nor word could issue forth, & knowing not what to doe, streight way sẽt to seke ẏ most expert phisitians of the towne, who after they had inquired of the life past of Iulietta, dẽmed by common reporte, that melancolie was the cause of that sodaine death, & then their sorowes began to renue a freshe. And if euer day was lamentable, pi-

teous

teous, vnhappie and fatall, truely it was that whe
Iulietta hir death was published in *Verona*: for shee w
so bewailed of great & small, that by the cõmon pla
tes the common wealth seemed to be in daunger, & n
without cause. For besides hir natural beautie acco
panied with many vertues wherewith nature had e
riched hir) she was else so humble, wise and debonai
as for that humilitie and curtesie she had stollen aw
the heartes of euery wight, and there was none b
did lamente hir misfortune. And whilest these thin
were in this lamented state, Frier Laurence with di
gence dispatched a Frier of his Couent, named Fri
Anselme, whome he trusted as himselfe, and deliuer
him a letter written with his owne hande, comman
ding him expressely not to gyue the same to any oth
but to Rhomeo, wherein was conteyned the chaun
which had passed betwene him and Iulietta, specially
vertue of the pouder, and commaunded him the ne
ensuing night to spede him self to *Verona*, for that t
operation of the pouder that time would take ende,
that he should cary with him back again to *Mantua* h
beloued Iulietta, in dissembled apparell, vntill Fortu
had otherwise prouided for them. The frier made su
haste as (too late) he arriued at *Mantua*, within a while a
ter. And bicause the maner of *Italie* is, that the Fri
trauailing abroade ought to take a companion of h
couent to doe his affaires within the Citie, the Fri
went into his couent, but bicause he was entred in,
was not lawfull for him to come out againe that da
for that certain dayes before, one religious of that c
uent as it was sayd, did die of the plague. Wherefor
the magistrates appointed for the healthe and visit
tion of the sicke, commaunded the warden of the hou
that no Friers shold wander abrode the Citie, or talk
wit

with any citizen, vntill they were licenced by the officers in that behalfe appointed, which was the cause of the great mishap, which you shal heare hereafter. The Frier being in this perpleritie, not able to goe forth, and not knowing what was cõtained in the letter, deferred his iorney for that day. Whilest things were in this plight, preparation was made at *Veronna*, to doe the obsequies of Iulietta. There is a custome also (which is common in *Italie*,) to place all the beste of one lignage and familie in one Tombe, wherby Iulietta was layde in the ordinarie graue of the *Capellettes*, in a Churcheyarde, harde by the Churche of the Friers, where also the Lorde Thibault was interred. And hir obsequies honourably done, euery man returned: whereunto Pietro, the seruant of Rhomeo, gaue hys assistance. For as we haue before declared, his master sente him backe againe from *Mantua* to *Verona*, to do his father seruice, and to aduertise hym of that whiche shoulde chaunce in his absence there: who seeing the body of Iulietta, inclosed in tombe, thinkyng with the rest that she had bene dead in deede, incontinently toke poste horse, and with diligence rode to *Mantua*, where he founde his maister in his wonted house, to whome he sayde, with his eyes full of teares: Syr, there is
„ chaunced vnto you so straunge a matter, as if so bee
„ you do not arme your selfe with constancie, I am a-
„ frayde that I shal be the cruell minister of your death.
„ Bee it knowne vnto you syr, ỳ yesterday morning my
„ mistresse Iulietta left hir lyfe in this worlde to seke rest
„ in an other: and wyth these eyes I saw hir buried in
„ the Churchyarde of *S. Frauncis*. At the sounde of which
„ heauie message, Rhomeo began wofully to lamente,
„ as though his spirites grieued with the tormente of
„ his passion at that instant woulde haue abandoned his

bodie. But ſtrong Loue whiche woulde not permitte hym to faint vntill the extremitie, framed a thoughte in his fantaſie, that if it were poſſible for hym to dye beſides hir, his death ſhoulde be more glorious, and ſhe (as he thought) better contented. By reaſon whereof, after hée had waſhed his face for feare to diſcouer hys ſorrow, he went out of hys chamber, and commaunded hys man to tarrie behynde hym, that hée might walke thorough oute all the corners of the Citie, to fynde proper remedie (if it were poſſyble) for hys griefe. And amonges others, beholdyng an Apoticaries ſhoppe of lytle furniture and leſſe ſtore of boxes and other thynges requiſite for that ſcience, thought that the verie pouertie of the mayſter Apothecarye woulde make hym wyllyngly yelde to that whych he pretended to demaunde. And after hée hadde taken
" hym aſide, ſecretely he ſayd vnto hym: Syr, if you bée
" the mayſter of the houſe, as I thynke you be, beholde
" here Fiftie Ducates, whych I gyue you, to the intent
" you delyuer me ſome ſtrong and violent poyſon that
" within a quarter of an houre is able to procure death
" vnto hym that ſhall vſe it. The couetous Apothecarie entiſed by gayne, agréed to hys 'requeſt, and faynyng to gyue hym ſome other medicine before the peoples face, he ſpédily made ready a ſtrong and cruel poyſon,
" afterwardes hée ſayd vnto hym ſoftely: Syr, I gyue
" you more than is néedefull, for the one halfe in an
" houres ſpace is able to deſtroye the ſtrongeſt manne
" of the worlde: who after he hadde receyued the poyſon, returned home, where he commaunded his man to depart with diligence to *Veronna*, and that he ſhould make prouiſion of candels, 'a tynder bore, and other inſtrumentes méete for the openynge of the graue of Iulietta, and that aboue all things he ſhoulde not faile

to

to attende hys commyng beſides the Churchyarde of *S.Frauncis*, and vpon paine of life to kéepe his intente in ſcilence. Which Pietro obeyed in order as his maſter had commaunded hym, and made therin ſuch expedition, as he arriued in good tyme to *Verona*, taking order for all thinges that were commaunded him. Rhomeo in the meane whyle beyng ſolicited wyth mortall thoughtes, cauſed incke and paper to be brought vnto hym, and in fewe wordes put in writing all the diſcourſe of his loue, the mariage of hym and Iulietta the meane obſerued for conſummation of the ſame, the helpe that he hadde of Frier Laurence, the buying of his poyſon, and laſt of all his death. Afterwardes, hauing finiſhed his heauie tragedie, hée cloſed the letters, and ſealed the ſame with his ſeale, and directed the Superſcription thereof to hys father: and puttyng the letters into his purſſe, he mounted on horſebacke, and vſed ſuche diligence, that he arriued vppon darke night at the Citie of *Veronna*, before the gates were ſhut, where he found his ſeruant tarying for him there, with a Lanterne and inſtruments beforeſayd, méete for the openyng of the graue, vnto whome hée ſayde: Pietro, helpe mée to open this Tombe, and ſo ſone as it is open, I commaunde thée vpon payne of thy lyfe, not to come néere me, nor to ſtay me from the thyng I purpoſe to doe. Beholde, there is a letter which thou ſhalt preſent to morow in the morning to my father at hys vpriſyng, which peraduenture ſhall pleaſe him better than thou thynkeſt. Pietro, not able to imagine what was his maiſters intent, ſtode ſomewhat aloſe to beholde his maiſters geſtes and countenaunce. And when they hadde opened the vaulte, Rhomeo deſcended downe two ſteppes, holdyng the

candell in his hande, and beganne to beholde wyth pitifull eye, the body of hir, which was the organ of his lyfe, and washt the same with the teares of his eyes, and kyst it tenderly, holding it harde betwene his armes, and not able to satisfie him selfe wyth hir sight, put his fearefull handes vpon the colde stomacke of Iulietta. And after he had touched hir in manye places, and not able to feele any certaine iudgement of lyfe, he drewe the poyson out of his bore, and swalowyng downe a greate quantitie of the same, cried out: O Iulietta, of whome the worlde was vnworthie, what death is it possible my heart coulde chose out more agreable than that whiche it suffereth hard by thée? What graue more glorious, than to bée buried in thy tombe? What more worthie or excellent Epitaph can bée bowed for memorie, than the mutuall and pitifull sacrifice of our lyues? And thinking to renue his sorowe, his hearte began to frette thorough the violence of the poyson, which by litle and little allayled the same, and lokyng aboute hym, espyed the bodie of the Lorde Thibault, lying nexte vnto Iulietta, whyche as yet was not altogether putrified, and speakyng to the bodye, as though it hadde bene alyue, sayde: In what place so euer thou arte (O cousyn Thibault) I moste heartily doe crye thée mercy for the offense whyche I haue done by depriuyng of thy lyfe: and if thy ghost doe wyshe and crye oute for vengeaunce vpon mée, what greater or more cruell satisfaction canste thou desyre to haue, or henceforth hope for, than to sée hym which murdered thée, to bée empoysoned wyth hys owne handes, and buryed by thy syde? Then endyng hys talk, feling by litle and litle that his life began to faile falling prostrate vpon his knées, with feeble voice hée softely

softly said: O my Lord God, which to redéme me didst descēd from the bosome of thy father, & tokest humane flesh in the wombe of the virgine, I acknowledge and cōfesse, that this body of mine is nothing else but earth and dust. Then seased vpon with desperate sorow, he fell downe vpon the body of Iulietta with such vehemēce, as the heart faint and attenuated with so great torment, not able to beare so hard a violence, was abādoned of all his sense and naturall powers, in such sort as the siege of his soule failed him at that instant, and his membres stretched forth, remained stiffe and colde. Frier Laurence which knew the certaine time of the pouders operation, maruelled that he had no answere of the letter which he sent to Rhomeo by his fellow Frier Anselme, departed from *S. Francis*, and with instruments for the purpose, determined to open the graue to let in air to Iulietta, which was redy to wake: and approching ỳ place, he espied a light within, which made him afraid, vntill that Pietro which was hard by, had certified him that Rhomeo was within, & had not ceased there to lament and complaine the space of halfe an houre. And then they two were entred the graue, & finding Rhomeo without life, made such sorow as they can well conceiue which loue their deare friend with like perfection. And as they were making their complaints, Iulietta rising out of hir traunce, and beholding light within the tombe, vncertaine whether it were a dreame or fantasie that appeared before hir eyes, comming againe to hir selfe, knew Frier Laurence, vnto whom she sayd: Father I pray thee in the name of God to perfourme thy promise, for I am almost deade. And then Frier Laurence concealing nothing from hir, (bicause he feared to be taken through his so long abode in that place) faithfully rehearsed vnto hir, how he had

sent Frier Anselme to Rhomeo at *Mantua*, frō whome as yet he had receiued no answer. Notwithstanding he found Rhomeo dead in the graue, whose body he pointed vnto, lying hard by hir, praying hir sith it was so, patiently to beare that sodaine misfortune, & that if it pleased hir, he wold conuey hir into some monastery of women where she might in time moderate hir sorow, and giue rest vnto hir minde. Iulietta had no soner cast eye vpon the dead corpse of Rhomeo, but began to breake the fountaine pipes of gushing teares, which ran forth in such aboundance, as not able to suppost the furor of hir grief, she breathed without ceasing vpō his mouth, and then throwing hir self vpon his body, & embracing it very hard, seemed that by force of sighs and sobs, she wold haue reuiued, and brought him againe to life, and after she had kissed and rekissed him a million of times, "she cried out: Ah the swete rest of my cares, & the only "porte of all my pleasures and pastymes, hadst thou so "sure a heart to chose thy Churchyarde in this place be"twene the armes of thy perfect louer, and to ende the "course of thy life for my sake in the floure of thy youth "whē life to thee shold haue bene most dear & delectable? "how had this tender body power to resist ẏ furious cō"bat of death, very death it self being here present? How "could thy tender & delicate youth willingly permit that "thou shouldest approch into this filthy & infected place, "where frō henceforth thou shalt be ẏ pasture of worms "vnworthy of thee? Alas, alas, by what meanes shall I "now renew my plaints, which time and long pacience "ought to haue buried and clearly quenched? Ah I mi"serable and caitife wretch, thinking to finde remedie "for my griefs, I haue sharpned the knife that hath giue "me this cruel blow, wherof I receiue the cause of mor"tall wound. Ah happy and fortunate graue which shalt

serue

ſerue in woꝛld to come foꝛ witneſſe of the moſt perfect
aliãce that euer was betwene two moſt foꝛtunate lo-
uers, receiue now the laſt ſobbing ſighes, & intertain-
ment of the moſt cruel of all the cruell ſubiects of ire &
death. And as ſhe thought to cõtinue hir cõplaints, Pie-
tro aduertiſed Frier Laurence ẏ he heard a noiſe biſides
the citadel, wherwith being afraid, they ſpedily depar-
ted, fearing to be taken. And then Iulietta ſeing hir ſelf
alone, & in full libertie, toke againe Rhomeo betwene
hir armes, killing him with ſuch affection, as ſhe ſemed
to be moꝛe attainted with loue thã death, and dꝛawing
out ẏ dagger which Rhomeo ware by his ſide, ſhe pꝛic-
ked hir ſelf with many blowes againſt the hart, ſaying
with feble & pitiful voyce: Ah death ẏ end of ſoꝛow, and
beginning of felicity, thou art moſt heartily welcome:
feare not at this time to ſharpen thy dart: giue no lon-
ger delay of life, foꝛ fear that my ſpꝛite trauaile not to
finde Rhomeos ghoſt amonges ſuch numbꝛe of carion
coꝛpſes. And thou my deare Loꝛd and loyall huſbande
Rhomeo, if there reſt in thée any knowledge, receiue
hir whome thou haſt ſo faithfully loued, the only cauſe
of thy violent death, which frankely offreth vp hir
ſoule that none but thou ſhalt ioy the loue wherof thou
haſt made ſo lawfull conqueſt. And that our ſoules paſ-
ſing from this light, may eternally liue together in the
place of euerlaſting ioy: and when ſhe had ended thoſe
woꝛds ſhe yelded vp hir goſt. While theſe things thus
were done, the garde & watch of the Citie by chãce paſ-
ſed by, & ſeing light wĩ the graue, ſuſpected ſtraight ẏ
they were Necromãcers which had opened ẏ tõbe to a-
buſe the dead bodies foꝛ aide of their arte: & deſirous to
know what it mẽt, wẽt downe into ẏ vaut, where they
foũd Rhomeo & Iulietta, w̃ their armes imbꝛacing eache
others neck, as though there had ben ſome tokẽ of life.

And

And after they had well viewed them at leisure, they knew in what case they were. And thé all amazed they sought for the theues which (as they thought) had done the murder, and in the end found the good father Frier Laurence and Pietro ẏ seruaunt of dead Rhomeo (which had hid themselues vnder a stall) whome they caried to prison, and aduertised the Lord of *Escala*, and the Magistrates of *Verona* of that horrible murder, which by and by was published throughout the Citie. Then flocked together all the Citezens, women & children, leauing their houses, to looke vpon that pitifull sight, and to the ende that in presence of the whole Citie, ẏ murder should be knowne, the Magistrates ordained that the two deade bodies should be erected vpon a stage to the view and sight of the whole world, in such sort and maner as they were found within the graue, and that Pietro and Frier Laurence should publikely be examined, that afterwardes there might be no murmure or other pretended cause of ignorance. And this good olde Frier being vpon the scaffold, hauing a white beard all wet & bathed w̄ teares, the iudges cōmaūded to declare vnto them who were the authors of that murder, sith at vntimely houre he was apprehended with certaine irons bisides the graue. Frier Laurence a rounde and franke man of talke, nothing moued with that accusation, sayd vnto them with stoute and bolde voyce: My
" maisters, there is none of you all (if you haue respect vn-
" to my forepassed life, and to my aged yeres, and there-
" withall haue cōsideration of this heauy spectacle, wher-
" vnto vnhappy fortune hath presently brought me) but
" doeth greatly maruell of so sodaine mutation & change
" vnlooked for, for so much as these thrée score and ten or
" twelue yeares sithens I came into this world, and be-
" gan to proue the vanities thereof, I was neuer suspec-

ted,

ted, touched, or found gilty of any crime which was a-
ble to make me blush, or hide my face, although (before
God) I doe confesse my self to be the greatest and most
abhominable sinner of al the redeemed flock of Christ.
So it is notwithstanding, that sith I am prest & ready
to render mine accompt, and that death, the graue and
wormes do daily summō this wretched corps of mine
to appeare before the iustice seate of God, still waigh-
ting and attēding to be caried to my hoped graue, this
is the houre I say, as you likewise may thinke wherin
I am fallen to the greatest damage & preiudice of my
life and honest port, and that which hath ingēdred this
sinister opinion of me, may peraduēture be these great
teares which in abundance trickle downe my face, as
though the holy scriptures do not witnesse, that Iesus
Christ moued with humane pitie and compassion, did
wepe and pour forth teares, & that many times teares
be the faithfull messengers of a mans innocency. Or
else the most likely euidence and presumption, is the
suspected houre, which (as the magistrate doth say) doe
make me culpable of the murder, as though all houres
were not indifferently made equall by God their crea-
tor, who in his owne person declareth vnto vs ý there
be twelue houres in the day, shewing therby that there
is no exception of houres nor of minutes, but that one
may doe either good or yll at all times indifferently, as
the partie is guided or forsaken by the spyte of God:
touching the yrons which were found about me, nede-
full it is not now to let you vnderstand for what vse
Iron was first made, and that of it self it is not able to
increase in man either good or euill, if not by the mis-
cheuous minde of him which doth abuse it. Thus much
I haue thought good to tell you, to the intent that ney-
ther teares, nor iron, ne yet suspected houre, are able

" to make me guiltie of the murder, or make me other-
" wise than I am, but onely the witnesse of mine owne
" conscience, which alone if I were guilty should be the
" accuser, the witnesse, and the hangman, which (by rea-
" son of mine age and the reputation I haue had amongst
" you, and the litle time that I haue to liue in this world
" should more torment me within, than all the mortall
" paines that could be deuised. But (thankes be to mine
" eternall God) I feele no worme that gnaweth, nor any
" remorse that pricketh me touching that fact, for which
" I see you all troubled & amazed. And to set your hearts
" at rest, and to remoue the doubts which hereafter may
" torment your consciences, I sweare vnto you by al the
" heauenly parts wherein I hope to be, that forthwith I
" will disclose frō first to last the entire discourse of this
" pitifull tragedie, which peraduenture shall driue you
" into no lesse wonder and amaze, than those two por-
" passionate louers were strong and patient, to expone
" themselues to the mercy of death, for the feruent and
" indissoluble loue betwene them. Then the Fatherly
" Frier began to repeate the beginning of the loue be-
" twene Iulietta and Rhomeo, which by certaine space
" of time confirmed, was prosecuted by wordes at the
" first, then by mutuall promise of mariage, vnknowne
" to the world. And as wythin fewe dayes after, the two
" louers feeling themselues sharpned and incited with
" stronger onset, repaired vnto him vnder colour of con-
" fession, protesting by othe that they were both mari-
" ed, and that if he would not solempnize that mariage
" in the face of the Church, they should be constrained to
" offend God to liue in disordred lust. In consideration
" whereof, and specially seeing their alliance to be gad
" and conformable in dignitie, richelle and Nobilitie on
" both sides, hoping by that meanes perchance to recon-

cile

elle the *Monteſches* and *Capellets*, and that by doing ,,
ſuch an acceptable woꝛke to God, he gaue them the ,,
Churches bleſſing in a certaine Chappell of the Fri- ,,
ers Church, whereof the night following, they did con- ,,
ſummate the mariage fruites in the Palace of the *Ca-* ,,
pellets. Foꝛ teſtimony of which copulation, the woman ,,
of Iuliettaes chamber was able to depoſe: Adding moꝛe- ,,
ouer, the murder of Thibault, which was coſin to Iuli- ,,
etta: by reaſon whereof the banithment of Rhomeo ,,
did foloꝛwe, and how in the abſence of the ſaid Rhomeo, ,,
the mariage being kept ſecrete betwene them, a new ,,
Patrimonie was intreated wyth the Counte Paris, ,,
which miſliked by Iulietta, ſhe fell downe pꝛoſtrate at ,,
his fete in a Chappell of *S. Frauncis* Church, with full ,,
determination to haue killed hir ſelfe with hir owne ,,
hands, if he gaue hir not councel how ſhe ſhould auoide ,,
the mariage agꝛeed betwene hir father and the Counte ,,
Paris. Foꝛ concluſion, he ſayd, that although he was re- ,,
ſolued by reaſon of his age and nearenelle of death to ,,
abhoꝛre all ſecrete Sciences, wherein in his yonger ,,
yeares hee had delight, notwithſtanding, pꝛeſſed with ,,
impoꝛtunitie, and moued with pitie, fearing leaſt Iuli- ,,
etta ſhould doe ſome crueltie againſt hir ſelf, he ſtained ,,
his conſcience, and choſe rather with ſome little fault ,,
to grieue his minde, than to ſuffer the yong Gentle- ,,
woman to deſtroy hir body, and hazarde the daunger ,,
of hir ſoule. And thereſoꝛe he opened ſome part of his ,,
auncient cunning, and gaue hir a certaine pouder to ,,
make hir ſléepe, by meanes wherof ſhe was thought to ,,
be deade. Then he tolde them how he had ſent Frier ,,
Anſelme to cary letters to Rhomeo of their enterpꝛiſe, ,,
whereof hitherto he had no anſwere. Then bꝛiefly he ,,
concluded how hée founde Rhomeo deade within the ,,
graue, who as it is moſt likely did impoiſon himſelfe, ,,

" or was otherwise smothered or suffocated with sorow
" by finding Iulietta in that state, thinking she had bene
" dead. Then he tolde them how Iulietta did kill hir selfe
" with the dagger of Rhomeo, to beare him company af-
" ter his death, and howe it was impossible for them to
" saue hir for the noise of the watche which forced them
" to flee from thence. And for more ample approbation
" of his saying, he humbly besought the Lord of *Verona*
" and the Magistrates to send to *Mantua* for Frier An-
" selme to know the cause of his slacke returne, that the
" content of the letter sent to Rhomeo might be seene.
" To examine the woman of the chamber of Iulietta, and
" and Pietro the seruaunt of Rhomeo, who not attending
" for further request, sayd vnto them: My Lordes when
" Rhomeo entred the graue, he gaue me this Packet,
" written as I suppose with his owne hand, who gaue
" me expresse commaundemēt to deliuer them to his fa-
" ther. The packet opened, they found the whole effect
of this story, specially the Apothecaries name, which
solde him the poyson, the price, and the cause wherfore
he vsed it, and all appeared to be so cleare and euident,
as there rested nothing for further verification of
the same, but their presence at the doing of the parti-
culers therof, for the whole was so wel declared in or-
der, as they were out of doubt that the same was true.
And then the Lord Bartholomew of *Scala*, after he had
debated with ỳ Magistrates of these euents, decred ỳ
the woman of Iulietta hir chamber should be banished,
bicause she did conceyle that priuie mariage from the
father of Rhomeo, which if it hadde bene knowne in
time, had bred to the whole Citie an vniuersal benefit.
Pietro bicause he obeyed his maisters commaundemēt,
and kept close his lawful secrets, according to the wel
cōditioned nature of a trusty seruāt, was set at liberty.

The

The Poticarie taken, rackt, and founde guiltie, was hanged. The good olde man Frier Laurence (as well for respect of his auncient seruice which he had done to the common wealth of *Veronna*, as also for his vertuous lyfe (for the which he was specially recõmended) was let goe in peace, withoute any note of infamie. Notwithstandyng by reason of his age, he voluntarily gaue ouer the worlde, and closed him selfe in a hermitage, two miles from *Veronna*, where he lined .v. or .vj. yeares, and spente his tyme in cõtinuall prayer, vntil he was called out of this transitorie worlde, into the blissfull state of euerlastyng ioy. And for the compassion of so straunge an infortune, the *Montesches* and *Capellettes* poured forth such abundance of teares, as with the same they did enacuate their auncient grudge and choler, whereby they were then reconciled. And they which coulde not bee brought to attonement by any wisedome or humane councell, were in the ende vanquished and made friendes by pitie. And to immortalizate the memorie of so intier and perfect amitie, the lorde of *Veronna* ordeined, that the two bodies of those miraculous louers shold be fast intombed in the graue where they ended their liues, where was erected a high marble piller, honoured with an infinite numbre of excellent Epitaphes, which to this day be apparant, with such noble memorie, as amongs all the rare excellencies, wherewith the Citie is furnished, there is none more famous than the monument of Rhomeo & Iulietta.

Two Gentlewomen of Venice.

¶ Two Gentlemen of VENICE were honourably deceiued of their wiues, whose notable practises, and secrete cõference for atchieuing their desire, occasioned diuers accidentes, and ingendred double benefite: wherin also is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and state of that Citie: with other chances and actes concerning the same.

The.xxvj.Nouel.

HEre haue I thoughte good to summon.ij.gentlewomen of *Venice* to apeare in place, and to mount on stage amonges other *Italian* dames to shewe cause of their bold incountrie against the follie of their two husbandes, that vncharitably against order of neighbourhode, wente about to assayle the honestie of eythers wife, and weening they had enioyed others felicitie, by the womens prudence, foresyghte and ware gouernement, were bothe deceiued, and yet attayned the chiefest benefite that mariage state doth lwke for: so that yf searche be made amonges antiquities, it is to be doubted whether greater chastitie, and better policie coulde be founde for accomplishement of an intended purpose. Many dedes haue bene done

done by women for sauegarde of their husbands liues, as that of *Minya*, a sorte of women whose husbands wer imprisoned at *Lacedæmon*, & for treason cõdemned who to saue their husbãds, entred into prison the night before they shold die, & by exchange of apparell, deliuered them, and remained there to suffre for them. Hipsicratea also ỳ Quene & wife of Mithridates king of *Pontus*, spared not hir noble beautie and golden lockes to manure hir self in the vse of armes to keepe hir husbãd company in perils and daungers: and being ouercome by Pompeius, and flying away, neuer left him vnaccõpanied, ne forsoke such trauel as he him self sustained. The like also of Æmilia, Turia, Sulpitia, Portia, & other *Romane* dames. But that such haue preuẽted their husbands follie, seldome we reade, saying of Quene Marie, ỳ wife of Don Pietro king of *Arragon*, who marking the folie of hir husband, and sorie for his disordred life, honest iealousie opening hir cõtinẽt eyes, forced hir to seke meanes to remoue his wanton acts, or at lest wise by policie & wise foresight to make him husband & culture his own soile, that for want of seasonable tillage was barren & voide of fruite. Wherefore consulting with the lorde Chamberlain, who of custome, brought whom the king liked best, was in place of his woman, bestowed in his bed, and of hir that night begate the yong Prince Giacomo, that afterwardes proued a valiaunt and wise king. These passyng good policies of women many times abolish the frantik lecherous fits of husbands giuen to superfluous lustes, when first by their chast behauior & womãly pacience they containe that, whiche they be lothe to see or heare of, and then demaunding counsell of sobrietie and wisedome, excogitate sleightes to shunne follie, and expell discurtesie, by husbandes carelesse vse. Suche practyses

and

and deuises, these two Gentlewomen whome I now bring forth, disclose in this discourse ensuing.

In the Citie of *Venice*, (whiche for riches and faire women excelleth al other within the region of *Italie*) in the time that Francesco Foscari, a very wise Prince, did gouerne the state, there were two yong gentlemen, the one called Girolamo Bembo, and the other Anselmo Barbadico, betwene whome as many times chaunceth amongs other, grew such great hatred and cruel hostilitie, as eche of them by secrete and al possible meanes deuised to do other shame and displeasure, which kindled to such outrage, as it was thought impossible to be pacified. It chaunced that at one time both of them did marie two noble yong Gentlewomen, excellēt & faire, both brought vp vnder one nurse, and loued eche other like two sisters, and as though they had ben both born of one bodie. The wyfe of Anselmo, called Isotta, was the daughter of Messer Mareo Gradenigo, a mā of great estimation in that citie, one of the procuratours of San Marco, wherein there were not so greate numbre in those dayes as there be now, bicause the wisest men & best approued of life were chosen to that great and noble dignitie, none allotted thereunto by bribe or ambition. The wife of Girolamo Bembo was called Lucia, ỳ daughter of Messer Gian Francesco Valerio Caualiere, a Gentleman very well learned, and many times sent by the State, ambassador into diuers countreyes, and after he had bene Orator with the Pope, for his wisedome in the execution of the same was in great estimation with the whole citie. The two Gentlewomen after they were maried, & heard of the hatred betwene their husbandes, were very sorowfull and pensiue, bicause they thought the friendshyppe and loue betwene them twaine, continued from their tender yeres, could

not be,

not be, but with great difficulty kept, or else altogither dissolued & broken. Notwithstãding being discrete and wise, for auoiding occasion of their husbands office, determined to cease their accustomed conuersation & louing familiaritie, & not to frequent eche others cõpany, but at places & times conuenient. To whome Fortune was so fauorable, as not only their houses were nære together but also ioyning, in the backsides wherof their gardens also cõfined, seperated only with a litle hedge, ỳ euery day they might sée one another, & many times talke togither: Moreouer the seruãts & people of either houses were friendly & familiar, which did greatly cõtent the two louing Gẽtlewomen, bicause they also in the absence of their husbãds, might at pleasure in their gardens disport thẽselues. And continuing this order ỳ space of. iij. yeres neither of thẽ both were with childe. In which space Anselmo many times viewing and casting his eyes vpõ Madonna Lucia, fel earnestly in loue with hir, & was not that day wel at ease, wherin he had not beholden hir excellẽt beautie: she that was of sprite and wit subtil, marked the lokes & maner of Anselmo, who neither for loue, ne other cause did render like lokes on him, but to sée to what end his louing chære & countenãce wold tẽd. Notwithstanding she séemed rather desirous to behold him, thã elswher to imploy hir lokes. On the other side the good behauior, the wise order and pleasant beautie of Madonna Isotta was so excellent & plausible in the sight of master Girolamo, as no louer in the world was better pleased with his Ladie than he with hir: who not able to liue without the swete sight of Isotta (ỳ was a crafty & wily wẽch) was by hir quickly perceiued. She being right honest & wise, and louing hir husband very dearly, did beare that countenance to Girolamo, that she generally did to any of the Citie, or

to other ſtranger ẏ ſhe neuer ſaw before. But hir huſbād more & more inflamed, hauing loſt ẏ liberty of him ſelf, wounded & pierced with the amorous arowes of Loue, could not conuert his minde to any other but to miſtreſſe Lucia. Theſe two womē wonted to heare ſeruice euery day ordinarily at the church of *Sanfantino*, bicauſe they lay lōg a bed in the mornings, & commonly ſeruice in ẏ church was ſaid ſomwhat late: their pewes alſo ſomwhat diſtant one frō an other. Whether their ẏ amorous huſbāds cōtinually vſed to folow thē aloſe off, & to place themſelues wher either of thē might beſt view his beloued: by which cuſtome they ſæmed to the cōmon people to be iealous ouer their wiues. But they proſecuted ẏ matter in ſuch wiſe, as either of thē wont ſhipping, ſought to ſend other into *Cornouale*. It came to paſſe then, ẏ theſe. ẏ. beloued gētlewomē one knowing nothing of another, determined to cōſider better of this loue, bicauſe ẏ great god wil lōg time borne, ſhold not be interrupted. Upō a certain day when their huſbāds were abrode, reſorting together to talk at their garden hedge according to their wōted maner, they begā to be pleaſāt & mery: and after louing ſalutations, miſtreſſe Lucia ſpake theſe words vnto hir companion. Iſotta my dear beloued ſiſter, I haue a tale to tel you of your huſband, ẏ perchaunce wil ſeme ſtranger thā any newes that euer you heard. And I (anſwered miſtreſſe Iſotta) haue a ſtory to tel you, ẏ will make you no leſſe to wōder thā I at ẏ which you haue to ſay, and it may be wil put you into ſome choler & chafe. What is that quod ẏ one and other. In the end either of thē told what practizes & loue their huſbands wēt about. Wherat although they were in great rage with their huſbands, yet for ẏ time they laughed out the matter, and thought ẏ they were ſufficient (as in very deede they were, a thing not

to

to be doubted) and able to satisfie their husbands hūger and therwithal began to blame them, and to say ẏ they deserued to learn to play of the *Cornets*, if they had no greater feare of God, and care of honesty thā their husbands had. Then after much talke of this matter, concluded that they shold do well to expect what their husbands would demaunde. Hauing taken order as they thought méete, they agréed daily to espie what shoulde chaunce, and purposed first with swéete and pleasant lokes to baite and lure eche other féere, to put them in hope thereby that they should satisfie their desires, which done for that time they departed. And when at the Church of *Sanfantino* or other place in *Venice*, they chaūced to méete their louers, they shewed vnto them chearefull and mery countenaunce: which the louers well noting, were the gladdest men of the worlde: and saing that it was impossible in speache to vtter their mindes, they purposed by letters to signify the same. And hauing founde Purciuaunts to goe betwene parties, (whereof this Citie was wont to be full) either of them wrote an amorous letter to his beloued, the content whereof was, that they were very desirous secretely to talke with them, thereby to expresse the burning affectiōs that inwardly they bare them, which without declaration and vtterance by mouthe in their owne presence, woulde brēde them torments more bitter than deathe. And within fewe dayes after (no great difference of time betwéene,) they wrote their letters. But Girolamo Bembo hauing a pregnant wit, who coulde wel endite both in prose and Rime, wrote an excellent song in the praise of his darling in *Italian* Peter, and with his letter sent the same vnto hir, the effect wherof doth folow.

Two Gentlewomen

A Liuely face and pearcing beautie bright
Hath linkt in loue my ſely ſences all:
A comely porte, a goodly ſhaped wight
Hath made me ſlide that neuer thought to fall:
Hir eyes, hir grace, hir dedes and maners milde,
So ſtraines my heart, that loue hath wit begilde.

But not one darte of Cupide did me wounde,
A hundred ſhafts lights all on me at ones:
As though dame kinde ſome new deuiſe had founde,
To teare my fleſh, and traſh a two my bones:
And yet I feele ſuch ioy in theſe my woes
That as I die, my ſprite to pleaſure goes.

Theſe new found fits, ſuch change in me doe breede,
I hate the day, and draw to darkneſſe lo:
Yet by the lampe of beautie doe I feede
In dimmeſt dayes and darkeſt nights alſo,
Thus altring ſtate and changing diet ſtill,
I feele and know the force of Venus will.

The beſt I finde, is that I doe confeſſe,
I loue you dame, whoſe beautie doth excell:
But yet a toy doth brede me ſome diſtreſſe,
For that I dread you will not loue me well,
That loue ye wot ſhall reſt in me alone:
And fleſhly breſt, ſhall beare a heart of ſtone.

O Goddeſſe mine, yet heare my voyce of ruthe,
And pitie him, that heart preſents to thee:
And if thou want a witneſſe for my truthe
Let ſighs and teares my iudge and record be,
Vnto the end a day may come in haſt,
To make me thinke I ſpend no time in waſt.

For

For nought prenailes in loue to ſerue and ſue
If full effect ioyne not with words at nede,
What is deſyre or any fanſies newe
More than the winde? that ſpreades abrode in deede,
My words and works, ſhall bothe in one agree
To pleaſure hir, whoſe ſeruant would I bee.

The ſubtill dames receiuing thoſe amorous letters and ſong diſdainfully, at the firſt ſeemed to take them at the bringers hands, as they had determined, yet afterwardes they ſhewed better countenaunce. Theſe letters were tolled one from an other, whereat they made great paſtime, and thought that the ſame would come to very good ſucceſſe, either of them keping ſtyll their huſbandes letter, and agreeing without iniurie done one to an other trimly to deceiue their huſbands. The maner how, you ſhal perceiue anone. They deuiſed to ſende worde to their louers, that they were readie at all times to ſatiſfie their ſutes, if the ſame might be ſecretely done, and ſafely might make repaire vnto their houſes, when their huſbands were abſent, which in any wiſe they ſayde, muſte be done in the night, for feare leaſt in the day time they were diſcried. Againe theſe prouident and ſubtill women had taken order with their maydes, whome they made priuie to theyr practiſe, that through their gardens they ſhould enter into others houſe, and be ſhut in their chambers without light, there to tarie for their huſbands, and by any meanes not to be ſeene or knowne. This order preſcribed and giuen, Miſtreſſe Lucia firſt did hir louer to vnderſtand, that the night inſuing at. iiij. of the clock at the poſterne dore, which ſhould be left open, he ſhoulde come vnto hir houſe, where hir maide ſhould be redy to bring him vp into the chaumbre, becauſe hir huſbande

maister Girolamo woulde that night imbarke himselfe to goe to *Padoua*. The like mistresse Isotta did to maister Girolamo, appointing him at. v. of the clock which she sayd was a very conuenient time, bicause maister Anselmo that night would sup and lie with certaine of his friendes at Murano, a place beside *Venice*. Upon these newes, the two louers thought them selues the most valiant and fortunate of the world, no enterprise now there was but seemed easie for them to bring to passe, yea if it wer to expel the Saracēs out of *Hierusalem*, or to deprive the great Turke of his kingdome of *Constantinople*. Their ioy was such, as they coulde not tell where they were, thinking euery houre a whole day before night came. At length the tyme was come so long desired, and the husbandes accordingly gaue diligent attendance, and let their wiues to vnderstand, (or at lest wise beleued they had) that they coulde not come home that night for matters of great importāce. The women that were very wise, seeing their shippe saile with so prosperous winde, fained them selues to credite all that they offered. These yong men toke either of them his Gondola (or as we term it their barge) to disport themselues, & hauing supped abrode, rowed in the *Canals*, which is ẏ water that palleth through diuers stretes of the citie, expecting their apointed hour. The womē redy at. iij. of the clocke, repaired into their gardens, & after they had talked & laughed together a pretie while, wēt one into an others house, & wer by ẏ maids brought vp to ẏ chābres. There either of them ẏ candle being light, began diligently to view ẏ order & situation of the place, & by litle & litle marked the chiefest things they loked for, cōmitting ẏ same to memorie. Afterwards they put out ẏ candle, & both in trembling maner expected ẏ cōming of their husbands. And

iust

.252

ſtill at .iiij. of ỹ clock ỹ maiden of Madõna Lucia ſtode at the doꝛe to wait foꝛ ỹ cõming of maſter Anſelmo, who vñ a while after came, & gladly was let in by ỹ maid, & by hir cõducted vp to ỹ chãber euẽ to the bed ſide. The place there was ſo dark as hell, & impoſſible foꝛ hym to know his wife. The .ỹ. wiues wer ſo like of bigneſſe & ſpech, as by dark without great difficultie they coulde, be knowne. When Anſelmo had put of his clothes, he was of his wife amoꝛouſly intertained, thynking the wife of Girolamo had receiued him betwene hir armes, who aboue a .M. times killed hir very ſwetely, and ſhe foꝛ hir parte ſwẽtely rendꝛed againe to hym ſo many. What folowed it wer folie to deſcribe. Girolamo lykewiſe at .v. of the clock appered, and was by the mayde conueyd vp to the chambꝛe, where he lay with his own wife, to their great contentations. Now theſe .ỹ. huſbands thinking they had bẽ imbꝛaced by their beloued ladies, to ſẽme bꝛaue and valiant men of warre, made greater pꝛoſe of their manhod, than they wer wont to do. At what time their wiues (as it pleaſed God to manifeſt by their deliuerie) wer begoten with child of .ỹ. faire ſons, & they ỹ beſt contented women of ỹ woꝛlde. This pꝛactiſe cõtinued betwene thẽ many times, fewe wekes paſſing but in this ſoꝛt they lay together. Neyther of them foꝛ al this, perceiued themſelues to be deluded, oꝛ cõceiued any ſuſpitiõ of collution, by reaſon ỹ chãber was ſtil without light, & in the day ỹ womẽ cõmonly failed not to be togither. The time was not lõg but their bellies began to ſwel, wherat their huſbands were exceding ioiful, beleuing verily that one of them had fixed hoꝛnes vpon an others head. Howbeit ỹ poꝛe mẽ foꝛ al their falſe belief had beſtowed their laboꝛ vpon their own ſoil, watred only wt ỹ courſe of their pꝛoꝛe foũtain. Theſe .ỹ. ioly wẽches ſeing thẽſelfs by this

amoꝛous

amorous practise to be with childe, beganne to deuise how they might breake of the same, doubting lest some slaunder and ill talke shoulde rise: and thereby the hatrede and malice betwene their husbandes increase to greater furie. And as they wer about this deuise, an occasion chaunced, vtterly to dissolue their accustomed mætings, but not in that sort as they wold haue had it. For the women determined as merily they had begon so iocundly to ende: but Fortune the guide of humane life disposeth all enterprises after hir owne pleasure, who like a puissant Ladie carieth with hir the successe of eche attempt. The beginnyng she offereth freely to him that list, the end she calleth for, as a ransom or tribute payable vnto hir. In ỳ same streate, or as they cal it *Rio, ẏ Canale*, not farre from their houses, there dwelled a yong woman very faire and comely, not fully xx. yeares of age, which then was a widow, and a litle before the wife of M. Niccolo Delphino, and the daughter of M. Giouanni Moro, called Gismonda. She besides hir fathers dowrie (which was more thã a thousand pouñ) had left hir by hir husband, a greate porcion of money, iewels, plate, and houshold furnitures. With hir fell in loue Aloisio Foscari, the nephew of the Duke, who making great sute to haue hir to wyfe, consumed the time in beholding his Ladie, and at length had brought the matter to so good passe, as one nighte she was contented at one of the windowes of hir house directly ouer againste a little lane, to heare him speake. Aloisio maruellous glad of those desired newes at the appointed night about v. or vj. of the clock with a ladder made of roapes (bicause the window was very high, wente thither alone. Beyng at the place making a signe concluded vpon betwene them, attended when the gentle woman should throwe downe a litle corde to draw vp

the

the ladder accordingly as was appointed, which not long after was done. Gismonda when she had receiued the ende of the ladder, tied it fast to the iawme of the windowe, and gaue a token to hir louer to mount, he by force of loue being very venturous, liuely and lustely scaled the windowe. And when he was vpon the top of the same, desirous to cast himself in, to embrace his Ladie, and she not ready to receiue him, or else vpon other occasion, he fel downe backward, thinking as he fell to haue saued himself twice or thrice by catching hold vpō the ladder, but it wold not be. Notwithstāding, as God wold haue it, the poise of his body fel not vpō the pauement of the streate fully, but was stayed by some lets in the fal, which had it not bene so, no doubt he had ben slaine out of hand, but yet his bones were sore brused, and his head deepely wounded. The infortunate Louer seing himself sore hurt with that pitifull fall, albeit he thought that he had receiued his deaths woūde, and impossible to liue any longer, yet the loue that he bare to the widowe, did so far surmoūt the paine by him sustained and the griefe of his body sore crushed and broken, that so well as he could, he raised himself vp, and with his hands stayed the bloud that ranne from his head, to the intent it might not raise some slaunder vpon the widow that he loued so wel: and wēt alongs the streat towarde the houses of Girolamo and Anselmo aforsaid. Being come thither with great difficultie, not able to goe any further for very paine and griefe, he fainted and fell downe as deade, where the bloud issued in such aboundance, as the ground therewith was greatly imbrued and arayed, and euery one that saw him thought him to be void of life. Mistresse Gismonda exceeding sorowful for this mischaunce, doubted that he had broken his necke, but when she saw him depart, she comforted

him so wel as she could, and drew vp the ladder into his chãber. Such chaunces happen to earnest louers, who when they think they haue scaled ẏ top of their felicity sodainly tõble down into the pit of shame or reproche, that better it had bene for them leisurely to expect the grace of their Ladies at conuenient place and hour, thã hardily without prouidẽce to aduenture like desperate soldiers to clim the top of the vamure, without measuring the height of the wals, or viewing the substãce of their ladders, do receiue in the end cruel repulse, & fall downe hedlong either by prẽsẽt death or mortal wound, to receiue euerlasting reproche and shame. But turne we againe now to this disgraced Louer, who lay gasping betwæne life and death. And as he was in this sorowful state, one of the captaines, a Noble man apointed to sée orders obserued in the night, with his bande (which they call Zaffi) came thither. And finding him lying vpon the grounde, knew that it was Aloisio Foscari, & causing him to be taken vp from the place where he lay, thinking he had bene dead, commaunded that he should be conueyed into the Church harde adioyning, which immediately was done. And when he had well considered the place where he was founde, he doubted that either Girolamo Bembo or Anselmo Barbadico, before whose dores he thought the murder cõmitted, had killed him, which afterwards he beleued to be true, because he heard a certaine noise of mennes fæte at one of their dores. Wherfore he deuided his company, placing some on the one side of their houses, and some on the other besieging the same so wel as he could. And as fortune wold, he found by negligence of the maids, the dores of ẏe. ẏ. houses open. It chaunced also that night that the two louers one in others house were gone to lie with their Ladies, who hearing the hurly burly, &

ſtur made in the houſe by ẏ ſergeants ſodainly the women lept out of their beds, & bearing their apparel vpõ their ſhoulders, wẽt home to their houſes throughtheir gardeins vnſeene of any, and in fearful wiſe did attẽd what ſhould be the end of ẏ ſame. Girolamo & Anſelmo not knowing what rumor & noiſe that was, although they made haſt in ẏ darke to cloth themſelues, were by the officers wout any field fought, apprehended in eche others chamber, & remained priſoners at their mercy: wherat the captaine and his band did greatly maruell, knowing the hatred betwene them. But when Torches and lights were brought, and the two Gentlemen caried out of dores, the wonder was the greater for that they perceiued them almoſt naked, and priſoners taken in eche others houſe. And beſides this admiration, ſuch murmur and ſlaunder was raiſed, as the qualitie of euery vulgar head could ſecretely deuiſe or imagine, but ſpecially of the innocent women, who how faultleſſe they were, euery man by what is ſayd before may conceiue, and yet the cancred ſtomakes of that troupe conceiued ſuch malice againſt them, as they iarred and brawled againſt them like curres at ſtraunge Dogges whome they neuer ſaw before. The Gentlemen immediately were caried to priſon, ignorant vpon what occaſion. Afterwards vnderſtãding that they were committed for the murder of Aloiſio Foſcari, and impriſoned like theues, albeit they knew themſelues guiltleſſe of murder or Theft, yet their griefe and ſorowe was very great, being certaine that all *Venice* ſhoulde vnderſtand howe they betwéene whome had bene mortall hatred, were nowe become copartners of that which none but the true profeſſours ought to enioy. And although they coulde not abide to ſpeake

together, like those that deadly did hate one another, yet both their mindes were fixed vpon one thought. In ỳ end, cõceiuing fury & despite against their wiues, the place being so dark ỳ no light or sunne could pierce into the same, whereby without shame or disdaine one of them began to speake to another, and with terrible othes they gaue their faith to disclose ỳ trothe in what sort either of them was taken in others chamber, and frãkly tolde the way and meane how eche of them enioyed his pleasure of others wife: wherupon the whole mater (according to their knowledge) was altogether by little & little manifest and knowne. Then they acõpted their wiues to be the most arrant strũpets vnder the whole Citie, by disprailing of whome their olde rãcor began to be forgotten, & they agrẽd together like two friends, who thought ỳ for shame they shold neuer be able to loke mẽ in the face, ne yet to shew thẽselues openly within the City, for sorow wherof they dẽmed death the greatest good turne and benefit ỳ could chãce vnto them of any thing in ỳ world. To be short, seeing no meanes or occasion to cõfort & relieue their penfine and heauy states, they fell into extrẽme dispaire, who ashamed to liue any longer, deuised way to rid themselues of life, concluding to make themselues guilty of the murder of Aloiso Foscari. And after much talke dyfred betwene them of that cruell determination, still approuing the same to be their best refuge, they expected nothing else, but when they should be examined before the Magistrates.

Foscari as is before declared was layd into ỳ Church for dead, and ỳ Priest straitly charged wt the keping of the same, who caused him to be cõueyed into ỳ mids of the church, setting .ỳ. torches a light, ỳ one at his head, & the other at his feete, & when the cõpany was gon, he after-

determined to goe to bed the remnant of the night to take his rest. But before he went, seeing ỹ the Torches were but short, and could not last past .y. or .iij. houres, he lighted two other, and set them in the others place, for that it shoulde seeme to his friends, if any chaunced to come, what care and worship he bestowed vpō him. The priest readie to depart, perceiued the bodie somewhat to moue, with that looking vpon his face, espied his eyes a litle to begin to open. Wherewithal somewhat afraid, he crying out, ran away: Notwithstāding his courage began to come to him again, and laying his hand vpon his breast, perceiued his heart to beate, and then was out of doubt that he was not dead, although by reason of losse of his blood, he thought litle life to remain in him. Wherfore he with one of his felow priestes which was a bed, and the clerke of the parishe, caried maister Foscari so tenderly as they coulde into the priests chamber, which adioined next the church. Then he sent for a surgeon that dwelt hard by, and required him diligently to search the wounde, who so wel as he coulde, purged the same from the corrupte blood, and perceiuing it not to be mortall, so dressed it with oiles and other precious oyntments, as Aloisio came again to himselfe. And when he had anointed that recouered bodie with certaine precious and comfortable oyles, he suffred him to take his rest. The priest also wente to bed and slepte till it was daye, who so sone as he was vp, went to seeke the Captaine to tell him of the good newes that maister Aloisio Foscari was recouered againe, who by the sayde Captaine was committed to him in charge. The Captain at that time was gone to the pallace at *San Marco*, to giue the Duke aduertisement of this chaunce, after whome the priest went, & was let in to the dukes chamber, to whom he declared

what he had done to maister Aloisio. The Duke verie glad to heare tell of his nephewes life, although then verie pensiue for the newes brought vnto him by the Captaine, intreated one of the Signor de notte, to take with him two of the best surgions, and to call him that had alreadie dressed his nephew, to go visite the wounded Gentleman, that he might be certified of the truth of that chaunce. All whiche together repaired to the priestes chamber, where finding hym not a sleepe, and the wounde faire ynough to heale, dyd thervnto what their cunning thoughte meete and conuenient. And then they began to inquire of hym, that was not yet full recouered to perfecte speache, howe that chaunce happened, tellyng him that he myght frankly confesse vnto them the trouthe. The more diligent they were in thys demaunde, bicause the Surgeon that dressed hym fyrst, alleaged, that the wounde was not made wyth swoorde, but receyued by some great fal or blow with mace or clubbe, or rather seemed to come of some high fall from a wyndowe, by reason his head was so grieuously bruised. Aloisio hearyng the Surgeons sodaine demaunde, presentely aunswered, that he fell downe from a windowe, and named also the house. And he had no sooner spoken those woordes, but he was very angry with hym selfe and sorie: And therewithal hys dismayde spirites began to reuiue in such wyse, as sodainly he chose rather to die than to speake any thyng to the dishonour of mistresse Gasmonda. Then the Signior di notte, asked him what he dyd there aboute that time of the night, and wherfore he did climbe vp to the windowe, being of so great a height: which he could not keepe secrete, by reason of the authoritie of the Magistrate that demaunded the question, albeit he thought that if his tongue hadde runne at large, and

com-

committed a fault by rashe speaking, his body should therfore suffer the smart. Wherfore before he wold in any wyse spot the name of hir, whom he loued better than his owne life, determined to hazarde his lyfe and honour, to the mercie of Iustice, and sayd: I declared euen now, whyche I can not denye, that I fell downe from the windowe of mistresse Gismonda Mora. The cause thereof (beyng nowe at state, wherein I know not whether I shall lyue or die) I wyll truly disclose. Mistresse Gismonda being a widow, & a yong woman, without any man in hir house, bycause by reporte she is verie rych of iewels and money, I purposed to robbe and dispoyle. Wherfore I deuised a ladder to climbe vp to hir wyndowe, wyth myndе full bent to kyll all those that shoulde resiste me. But my misshappe was suche, as the ladder beyng not well fastened fell, and I my selfe therwithall, and thinking to recouer home to my lodgyng with my ladder made of corde, my spirites beganne to faile, and fell downe I wotte not where. The Signor de notte, whose name was Domenico Mariperto, hearyng him say so, marueiled greatly, and was very sorie, that all they in the chamber, which were a great number, as (at such chaunces commonly be) dyd heare those wordes: and bycause they were spoken so openly, he was forced to say vnto hym: Aloisio I am very sorie that thou hast committed suche follie, but for so muche as sorrow now will not serue to remedie the trespasse, I muste nedes shewe my self both faithfull to my countrey, & also carefull of mine honor, without respect of persõs. Wherfore thou shalt remain here in such safe custody as I shal apoint, & when thou art better amẽded, thou must accordyng to desert be referred to ỹ gaole. Leauing him then there vnder sure keping, he wẽt to the counsell of the *Dieci*,

(which

(which magistrates in that citie be of greatest authoritie) and finding the lordes in counsell, he opened the whole matter vnto them. The presidents of the Counsell which had heard a great number of complaintes of many thefts done in the night within the Citie, tooke order that one of the captains that were appointed to the diligent watche and keeping of Aloisio, remaining in the priests house, should cause him to be examined, & with tormentes forced to tell the truthe, for that they did verily beleue that he had cõmitted many robberies besides, or at lest wise was priuie and accessarie to the same, and knew where the theues wer become. Afterwardes the sayd Counsell did sitte vpon the matter of Girolamo Bembo and Anselmo Barbadico, found at midnight naked in eche others chambre, and committed to prison as is before remembred. And bicause they had many matters besides of greater importaunce, to intreate vpon, amongs which the warres betwene them and Philippo Maria Vesconte, duke of Milane, the aforesaid causes were deferred till an other time, notwithstanding in the mean while they were examined. The Duke himselfe that time being in counsell, spake most seuerely againste his nephew. Neuertheles he dide hardly beleue that his nephew being very rich, and indewed with great honestie, would abase him selfe to a vice so vile and abhominable as theft is, whereupon he began to consider of many thinges, and in the ende talked with hys nephewe secretely alone, and by that meanes lerned the trouth of the whole matter. In like maner Anselmo and Girolamo were examined by commissioners appointed by the state, what one of them did in an others chamber, at that houre of the night, who confessed that many times they had seene Aloisio Foscari, to passe vp & down before their houses at times incon-

inconuenient, & that night by chaunce one of them not knowing of another, espied Aloisio, thinking ý he lingered about their houses, to abuse one of their wines, for which cause they went out, and so sone as they had taken him, they killed him. Which confession they openly declared accordingly, as wherupō before they were agreed. Afterwardes with further circumstance being examined vpon the Article of being one in anothers chamber, it appeared ý their first tale was vtterly vntrue. Of al which contraditions the Duke was aduertised, and was driuē into extréme admiration, for that the truth of those disorders could not be vnderstanded and knowne. Whereupon the *Dieci*, and the assistants were againe assembled in cōsell according to the maner, at what time after all things throughly were debated and ended, the Duke being a very graue man, of excellent wit, aduaunced to the Dukedome by the cōsent of the whole state, as euery of thē were about to rise vp, sayd vnto them: My Lordes there resteth one thing yet to be moued, which peraduenture hitherto hath not bene thought vpon. There are before vs two complaints, the effect whereof in my iudgement is not throughly cōceiued in the opinions of diuers. Anselmo Barbadico and Girolamo Bembo, betwene whome there hath bene euer continuall hatred, left vnto them as a man may say euen by fathers enheritance, both of thē in either of their chambers, were apprehēded in a maner naked by our Sergeants, and without torments, or for feare to be racked vpon the onely interrogatories of our ministers, they haue voluntarily confessed that before their houses they killed Aloisio our Nephew. And albeit that our sayd Nephew yet liueth, & was not striken by them or any other as shold apeare, yet they confesse themselues guiltie of the murder.

" What shall be sayd the to the matter, doth it not seme
" doubtfull? Our Nephew againe hath declared, that in
" going about to robbe the house of Pistrelle Gismonda
" Mora, whome he ment to haue slaine, he fell downe to
" the ground from the toppe of a windowe, wherefore by
" reason so many robberies haue bene discouered with-
" in the Citie, it may be presumed that he was the theefe
" and malefactor, who ought to be put to the torments,
" that the truthe may be knowne, and being found guil-
" tie, to feele the seuere punishment that he hath deser-
" ued. Moreouer when he was founde lying vpon the
" ground, he had neither ladder nor weapon, whereupon
" may be thought that the fact was otherwise done, than
" hitherto is confessed. And bicause amongs morall ver-
" tues, temperãce is the chiefest and worthy of greatest
" commendation, and that iustice not righteously exerci-
" sed, is iniustice & wrong, it is meete and conuenient for
" vs in these strange accidents, rather to vse temperãce
" than the rigor of iustice. And that it may appere that I
" do not speake these words without good ground, marke
" what I shal say vnto you. These two most mortal ene-
" mies do cõfesse that which is impossible to be true, for
" that our Nephew (as is before declared) is a liue, and
" his wounde was not made by sworde, as he himself
" hath confessed. Nowe who can tell or say the contra-
" ry, but that shame for being taken in their seuerall
" Chambers, and the dishonesty of bothe their liues,
" hathe caused them to despise life, and to desire death?
" We shall finde if the matter be diligently inquired
" and searched, that it will fall out otherwise than is
" already supposed by common opinion. For the con-
" trariety of examinations, vnlikelihode of circum-
" stances, and the impossibility of the cause, renderth the

matter

matter doubtful. Wherefore it is very needeful diligent-
ly to examine these attempts, and thereof to vse more
aduised consideration. On the other side, our Nephew
accuseth himself to be a Theefe, and which is more, that
he ment to kill mistresse Mora when he brake into hir
house. Vnder this grasse my Lords as I suppose, some
other Serpent lieth hidden, that is not yet thought of.
The Gentleman ye know before this time was neuer
defamed of such outrage, ne suspected of the least offen-
se that may be obiected. Besides that, all ye doe knowe,
(thanks therefore be giuen to almightie God) that he
is a man of great richesse and possessions, and hath no
nede to robbe. For what necessitie should driue him to
robbe a widowe, that hath of his owne liberally to be-
stow vpon the succour of widowes? Were there none
else of substance in the Citie for him to giue attempt,
but to a widowe a comfortlesse creature, contented
with quiet life to liue amongs hir family within the
boundes of hir owne house? What if hir richesse, Jew-
els and plate be great, hath not Aloisio of his owne to
redouble the same? But truely this Robberie was
done after some other manner than he hath confes-
sed. To vs then my Lords it appertaineth, if it
so stande with your pleasures, to make further in-
quirie of the same, promising vnto you vpon oure
Faith, that we shal imploy our whole diligence in the
true examination of this matter, and hope to bring
the same to such good ende, as none shall haue cause to
blame vs, the finall sentence whereof shall be reser-
ued to your iudgement. This graue request and wise
talke of the Duke pleased greatly the Lords of the
Councel, who referred not only the examination, but
also the finall sentence vnto him.

Wherupon the wise Prince being fully enformed of ỹ chaunce happened to his Nephewe, attended only to make search, if he could vnderstand the occasion why Bembo and Barbadico so folishly had accused thẽselues of that which they neuer did. And so after much counsaile & sundry deuises examined and made, his nephew then was wel recouered, and able to goe abrode, being set at libertie. After sundry examinations I say, he also had learned the trothe of the case touching the other two prisoners which he cõmunicated to the Lords of the aforesaid councel called *Dieci*. Then he caused with great discretion, proclamation to be made throughout *Venice*, that Anselmo and Girolamo should be beheaded betwene the two Pillers, and Aloisio hanged, wherby he thought to know what sute the women wold make, either with or against their husbands, & what euidence mistrelle Gismonda would giue against Aloisio. The brute hereof dispersed throughe *Venice*, diuers talke therupon was raised, & no communication of any thing else in open streats and priuate houses, but of the putting to death of those men. And bicause all thẽ were of honorable houses, their kinsmẽ & friends made sute by all possible meanes for their pardon. But their confessions published, ỹ rumor was made worse, (as it daily chaũceth in like cases) than the mater was in deede, & the fame was noised how Foscari had confessed so many thefftes done by him at diuers times, as none of his friends or kin durst speake for him. Mistrelle Gismonda which bitterly lamented ỹ mischaunce of hir louer, after she vnderstode the confession he had made, and euidently knew that bicause he would not blemish hir honor, he had rather willingly forgo his own, and therwithall his life, felt hir self so inflamed wt feruent loue toward him, as she was ready presently to surrender hir ghost,

ghoſt. Wherfore ſhe ſent him word y he ſhold comfort himſelfe, becauſe ſhe was determined to manifeſt the very trouth of the matter, and hoped vpon hir declaration of true euidence, ſentence ſhoulde be reuoked, for teſtimonie wherof, ſhe had his louing letters yet to ſhewe, written to hir with his owne hands, and would bring forth in the iudgement place, the corded ladder, which ſhe had kept ſtill in hir chamber, Aloiſio hearing theſe louing newes, and of the euidēce which his Ladie would giue for his defenſe, was the gladdeſt man of the world, and cauſed infinite thanks to be rendred vnto hir, with promiſe that if he might be rid and diſcharged out of priſon, he woulde take hir for his louing ſpouſe and wife. Wherof the Gentlewoman conceyued ſingular contentation, louing hir dere friend with more entier affection than hir owne ſoule. Miſtreſſe Lucia and miſtreſſe Iſotta, hearing the diſpercled vaine of the death of their huſbands, and vnderſtanding the caſe of miſtreſſe Giſmonda by an other woman, layde their heades together likewiſe to deuiſe meanes for ſauing their huſbandes liues: and entring into theyr barge or Gondola, wente to ſeeke miſtreſſe Giſmonda, and when they had debated vpon the trouthe of theſe chaunces, concluded with one aſſente to prouide for the ſauegarde and deliuerie of their huſbands, wherin they ſhewed them ſelf both wiſe and honeſt. For what ſtate is more honorable and of greater comforte than the maried life, if in deede they that haue yoaked themſelues therin be conformable to thoſe delights, and contentation which the ſame conduceth? Wealth and riches maketh the true vnited couple to reioyce in the beneffites of Fortune, graunted by the ſender of the ſame, either of them prouiding for diſpoſing thereof, againſt the decrepite time of olde age, and for the be-

lowing of the same vpon the fruite accrined of their bodies. Pouerty in any wise doth not offend them, both of them glad to labor and trauaile like one body, to sustaine their poore and needy life, either of them comfortably doth minister comfort in the cruel time of aduersitie, rendring humble thanks to God for his sharp rod and punishment enflicted vpon thē for their manifolde sinnes committed against his maiestie, trauailing by night & day by sweating browes to get browne bread, & drink ful thin to cease the cries and pitifull cramings of their tēder babes, wrapt in cradle & instant on their mother to fill their hungry mouthes. Aduerse fortune maketh not one to forsake the other. The louing wife ceaseth not by painful sute to trot and go by night and day in heat & colde to relieue the misery of hir husband. He likewise spareth not his paine to get and gaine the liuing of them both. He abrode and at home according to his called state, she at home to saue the lucre of that labor, and to do such necessary trauaile incident to the maried kinde. He carefull for to get, she heedefull for to saue. He by traffique and Arte, she by diligence and howsholde toile. O the happy state of maried folke: O surpassing delites of mariage bed: which maketh these .ij. poore gentlewomen, that by honorable policie saued the honor of themselues and honesty of their husbands, to make hūble sute for their preseruation, who were like to be berieued of their greatest comforts.'

But come we againe to declare the last ate of this Tragedie. These maried women, after this chaūce befell, vpon their husbands imprisonment, began to be abhorred of their friends and parents, for that they were suspected to be dishonest, by reason wherof dolefully lamenting their misfortune, notwithstāding their owne conscience voide of fault, did bid thē to be of good cheere

and

and confesse. And when the day of execution came, they
bid their friends and parents to vnderstand that their
conceiued opinion was vntrue, & prayed them to for-
beare their disdaine and malice, till the truth should be
throughly manifested, assuring thē that in ẏ end their
owne innocencie and the guiltilesse crime of their hus-
bands should openly be reuealed to the worlde. In the
meane time they made request vnto their friends, that
one of the Lordes called Auogadori might be admitted
to vnderstand their case, the rest to be referred to thē-
selues, wherein they had no neede either of Proctor or
Aduocate. This request seemed very straunge to their
friends, deeming their cāse to be shameful and abhomi-
nable. Nevertheless diligently they accomplished their
request, & vnderstanding that the Counsel of the Dieci
had cōmitted the mater wholy to the Duke, they made
a supplication vnto him in ẏ name of ẏ. iij. Gentlewo-
men, wherin they craued nothing else but their mater
might be herd. The Duke perceiuing his malice like to
take effect, assigned a day when ẏ same shold be heard,
commaunding them at ẏ time before him & the Lordes
of the Councel & all the college of the state to appeare.
The day being come, all ẏ Lordes assembled, desirous to
se to what issue this matter would grow. On the morn-
ing the thre Gentlewomen honestly accompanied wt
other Dames, went to the palace, and going along the
strete of *San Marco*, diuerse people began to vtter many
railing words against thē. Some cried out (as we se by
vnstable order the vulgare people in like cases vse to
do) and doing a certaine curtesie by way of disdaine and
mockery: Beholde ẏ honest women, ẏ without sending
their husbāds out of *Venice*, haue placed thē in ẏ castell
of *Cornetto*, and yet the arrant whores be not ashamed
to shewe them selues abrode, as thoughe they had done
a thing

a thing that were honeſt and prayſe worthie. Other ſhot forth their bolts, and with their prouerbes proceding from their malicious mouthes, thwited the poore women at their pleaſure. Other alſo ſeyng miſtreſſe Giſmonda in their companie, thought that ſhe went to declame againſte maiſter Aloiſio Foſcari, and none of them all hapned on the trouth. Arriued at the palace, aſcending the marble ſtaires or ſteps of the ſame, they were brought into the great hall, where the Duke appointed the matter to bee heard. Thither repaired the friendes and thoſe of neereſt kinne to the three Gentlewomen, and before the matter did begin, the duke cauſed alſo the three priſoners to be brought thither. Thither alſo came many other Gentlemen, with great deſire to ſee the end of thoſe euents. Silence being made, the duke turning his face to ỹ wom̃, ſaid vnto them:

"Ye Gentlewomen haue made requeſt by ſupplicati-
"on to graunt you publike audiẽce according to iuſtice,
"ſo that you do alleage that laiwe and order doth re-
"quire, and that euery well ordred common wealth con-
"demneth no ſubiecte without due anſwere by order of
"laiwe. Behold therfore, that we deſirous to do iuſtice,
"be readie in place to heare what ye can ſay. The two husbands were very angrie and wrathful againſt their wiues, & the more their ſtomackes did freat with choler and diſdaine to ſee their impudent and ſhameleſſe wiues with ſuch audacitie to appeare before the maieſtie of a counſell ſo honorable and dreadfull, as though they had ben the moſt honeſt and chaſteſt women of the worlde. The ỹ. honeſt wiues perceiued the angre and diſpleſure of their husbands, and for all that were not afrayde ne yet diſmayde, but ſmiling to thẽ ſelues and ſomewhat moning their heads in decent wiſe, ſwemed vnto them as though they had mocked them. An-

ſelmo

selmo more angry and impacient than Girolamo, brake out into such furie, as had it not ben for the maiestie of the place, and the companie of people to haue stayed him, would haue killed them: and seyng he was not able to hurt them, he began to vtter the vilest wordes, that he possibly coulde deuise against them. Mistresse Lotta hearing hir husband so spitefully to spit forth his poison in the presence of that honourable assemblie, conceined courage, and craning licence of the Duke to speake, with mery countenance and good vttrance began thus to say hir minde:

Most excellent Prince, and ye right honorable lordes, perceiuing how my deare husband vncomely and very dishonestly doth vse himselfe against mée in this noble companie, I do thinke maister Girolamo Bembo to be affected with like rage & minde against this gentlewoman mistresse Lucie his wife, although more temperate in wordes, he do not expresse the same. Against whom if no replie be made, it may séeme that he hath spoken the trouthe, and that we by silence should séeme to condemne our selues to be those moste wicked women whom he alleageth vs to be. Wherfore by youre gracious pardon and licence (moste honourable) in the behalfe of mistresse Lucie and my selfe, for our defense I purpose to declare the effect of my mind although my purpose be cleane altered from that I had thought to say, beyng now iustly prouoked by the vnkinde behauiour of him, whome I doe loue better than my selfe, which had he bene silent and not so rashly runne to the ouerthrow of me and my good name, I wold haue conceiled and onely touched that, which shoulde haue concerned the purgation and sauegard of them both, which was the onely intent & meaning of vs, by making our humble supplication to your maiesties. Neuertheless, sa

" so farre as my feeble force shall stretch, I will assay to
" do both the one and the other, although it be not appro-
" priate to our kinde in publike place to declame, or yet
" to open such bold attempts, but that necessitie of mat-
" ter and opportunitie of time and place, dothe bolden vs
" to enter into these termes, wherof we craue a thousād
" pardons for our vnkindely dealings, and rēder double
" thanks to your honors, for admitting vs to speake. Be
" it knowne therfore vnto you, ỳ our husbandes against
" duetie of loue, lawes of mariage, and against all rea-
" son, do make their heauie complaints, which by ę by I
" will make plaine and euident. I am right well assured,
" that their extreme rage ę bitter heartes sorow do pro-
" cēde of .ij. occasions: The one, of ỳ murder wherof they
" haue falsly accused thē selues: ỳ other of iealosy, which
" grieuously doth gnawe their hearts, thinking vs to be
" vile ę abhominable womē, bicause they were surprised
" in eche others chāber. Concerning the murder, if they
" haue soiled their hāds therin, it appertaineth vnto you
" my lords to rēder their desert. But how can ỳ same be
" layd to our charge, forsomuch as they (if it wer done by
" thē) cōmited ỳ same without our knowlege, our help ę
" cōsel? And truly I sē no cause why any of vs ought to
" be burdened with ỳ outrage, and much lesse cause haue
" they to lay the same to our charge. For mete it is ỳ he
" that doth any vnlawful act, or is accessarie to the same,
" shold suffer ỳ due penaltie ę seuere chastisement accor-
" dingly as the sacred lawes do prescribe, as an example
" for other to abstein from wicked facts. But herof what
" nede I to dispute, wherin the blind may sē to be none
" offense, bicause (thanks be to God) Maister Aloisio li-
" ueth, which declareth the fond cōfession of our vngētle
" husbands, to be cōtrary to trouth? And if so be our hus-
" bāds in dede had done such an abhominable enterprise,

reason

reason and duetie had moued vs to sorowe and lament
them, bicause they be borne of noble blood, and be gen-
tlemen of this noble citie, which like a pure virgin in-
violably doth cõserue hir lawes & customs. Great cause
I say, had we to lamẽt them, if like homicides & murde-
rers they had spotted their noble blod with such foule
blemish, therby deserving death, to leaue vs yong wo-
mẽ widowes in woful plight. Now it behoueth mẽ to
speake of the iealousie they haue conceiued of vs, for
that they were in eche others chãber, which truly is the
doubtful knot & scruple that forceth al their disdaine &
griefe. This I knowe well is the naile that pierceth
their heart: other cause of offense they haue not: who
like men not well aduised, without examination of vs
and oure demeanour, bẽ fallen into despaire, and like
men desperate, haue wrongfully accused themselues.
But bicause I may not consume wordes in vain, to stay
you by my long discourse from matters of greater im-
portãce, I humbly beseech you (right excellent prince)
to cõmaunde them to tel what thing it is, which so bit-
terly doth tormẽt them. Then the Duke caused one of
the noble men assistant there, to demaund of them the
question: who answered, ỹ the chiefest occasion was,
bicause they knew their wiues to be harlots, whõ they
supposed to be very honest: & forsomuch as they knew
them to be such, they conceiued sorow and grief, which
with suche extremitie did gripe thẽ at ỹ heart, as not a-
ble to sustain ỹ great infamy, ashamed to be sene of mẽ
wer induced through desire of deth to cõfesse ỹ they ne-
uer did. Pistrelle Hotta hering thẽ say so, begã to speke
againe, turning hir self vnto them: Were you offen-
ded then at a thing which ye thought incõueniẽt & not
mete to be done? We then haue greatest cause to cõ-
plaine. Why then swẽte husbande went you to the

" chamber of mistresse Lucie at that time of the night?
" What had you to do there? what thyng thought you to
" finde there more than was in your own house? And you
" master Girolamo, what constrained you to forsake your
" wives bed to come to my husbands, wher no man ever
" had, or at this present hath to do but him self? were not
" ỹ shetes of the one so white, so fine, neat & swet as the
" other? I am (moste noble Prince) sorie to declare my
" husbands folie, and ashamed that he should forsake my
" bed to go to an other, that did accompt my selfe so wel
" worthy to entertaine hym in myne owne, as the best
" wife in *Venice*, and now through his abuse, I abstaine
" to shewe my selfe amongs the beautiful and noble da-
" mes of this Citie. The like misliking of hir selfe is in
" mistresse Lucie, who (as you see) may bee numbred a-
" mongs the fairest. Either of you ought to have ben co-
" tented with your wives, & not (as wickedly you have
" done) to forsake them, to seeke for better bread than is
" made of wheate, or for purer golde than whereof the
" Angel is made: O worthy dede of yours, that have the
" face to leave your owne wives, that be comely faire &
" honest, to seeke after strange carrion. O beastly order
" of men that can not content their lust within the bou-
" des of their owne house, but must go hunt after other
" women as beasts do after the next of their kinde that
" they chaunce upon. What vile affection possessed your
" harts to lust after others wife? You make complainte
" of us, but we with you have right good cause to be of-
" fended, you ought to be grieved with youre owne dis-
" order, and not with others offense, and this youre af-
" fliction paciently to beare, because you went about
" to beguile one an others love, like them that be weary
" and glutted with their owne fare, seeking after other
" dainties more delicate if they were to bee founde.

But

But praised be God and our prouident discretion, if a-
ny hurt or shame hath chaunced, the same doth light on
you. Moreouer I know no cause why men should haue
more libertie to doe euil than we women haue: albeit
through the weakenesse and cowardise of our sexe, ye
men will doe what ye list. But ye be now no Lordes,
nor we seruaunts, and husbands we do you cal, bicause
the holy lawes of Matrimony (which was the first Sa-
crament giuen by God to men after the creation of the
world) doe require equall faith, and so well is the hus-
band bound to the wife as she vnto him. Goe to then &
make your complaint: the next Asse or beast ye méete,
take hir to be your wife. Why doe ye not know that
the balance of Iustice is equall, and wayeth downe no
more of one side than of other? But let vs nowe leaue
of to reason of this matter, and come to ý for which we
be come hither. Two things (most righteous Prince)
haue moued vs to come before your maiestie, & all this
honorable assembly, which had they not bene, we wold
haue bene ashamed to shew our faces, & lesse presumed
to speake or once to open our lippes in this Noble au-
dience, which is a place only méete for them ý be most
expert and eloquent orators, and not for vs, to whom
the needle & distaffe be more requisite. The first cause
that forced vs to come forth of our owne house, was to
let you vnderstand ý our husbãds be no murderers, as
is supposed, neither of this Gentleman present master
Aloisio, ne yet of any man else: and therof we haue suf-
ficient and worthy testimonie. But herein we néede
not to trauaile much, or to vse many words: for nei-
ther maister Aloisio is slaine, ne any other murdred, ý
is knowne or manifest hitherto. One thing resteth,
which is that Madonna Lucia and I do humbly beseeche
your excellent Maiestie, that your grace and the autho-

" rities of the right honourable Lords here present, and
" vouchsafe to reconcile vs to our husbãds, that we may
" obtaine pardon and fauor at their handes, bicause we
" haue so manifestly made their actes to appeare, and fa-
" that we be the offense, and they the offenders, and yet
" by their owne occasions, we haue committed the erro
" (if it may be so termed.) And now to come to the con-
" clusion, I doe remember sithens I was a childe, that I
" haue heard the Gentlewoman my mother saye (whose
" soule God pardon) many times vnto me, and other my
" sisters, & to mistresse Lucia, that was brought vp with
" vs, being by hir instructed in diuers good and vertuous
" lessons, that all the honor a womã can do vnto hir hus-
" band, whereby she beautifieth him and his whole race
" and familie, consisteth in hir honest, chast, and vertu-
" ous life, without which, she ought rather to die than
" liue. And that a Gentlemans wife when she hath gi-
" uen hir bodie to the vse of an other man, is the cõmun
" marke for euery man to point at in the streate, when
" she goth, hir husband therby incurring reproch & shame
" which no doubt is the greatest iniurie and scorne that
" an honest Gentleman can receiue, and the most shame-
" full reproche that can blemish his house. Which lesson
" we so wel remembring, desirous not to suffer the care-
" lesse and vnbrideled appetites of our husbandes to be
" vnrained, and runne at large to some dishonest ende,
" by a faithfull and commendable policie, did prouide for
" the mischiefe that myghte ensue. I nede not here re-
" herse the enimitie and debate that many yeares did
" raigne betwene our husbandes fathers, bycause it is
" knowne and manifest vnto the whole Citie. We two
" therfore here present, the wiues of those noble Gentle-
" men, brought vp together from our Cradle, perceiuing
" the malice betwene our husbandes, made a vertue of

necessi-

neceſſitie, deſiryng it better for vs to loſe our ſwete & auncient conuerſation, than to miniſter occaſiõ of diſquietneſſe. But the nereneſſe of our houſes would not that naturall hatred ſhoulde defraude and take awaye alle ingrafted amitie. Wherefore many tymes when our huſbands were gone forth, we met together, & talked in our gardens, betwene which there is but a thin hedge beſet with primme and roſes, which commoditie in their abſẽce we did diſcretely vſe. And as ſomtimes for pleaſure we walked with oure huſbandes there, ye (the turning vnto them) did caſt your eyes vpon eche others wife, and were ſtraighte waye in loue, or elſe perchance you fained your ſelues to be, which eſpied by vs, many tymes betwene our ſelues dyd cõmen of the ſame, and red your amorous letters and ſong ſent vnto vs. For which diſloyaltie & treſon towards vs your wiues, we ſought no diſhonour to your perſones, wee wer content to ſuffer you to be abuſed with your fond loue, we blabbed it not abrode to our goſſips, as many loude and fantaſticall women be wont to doe, therby to raiſe ſlaunder to our huſbandes, and to ſturre vp ill reporte vpon them, whoſe infirmities it becommeth vs to conceile and hide. We deuiſed meanes by ſome other way to let you vnderſtande your fault, and dyd caſt vpon you many times right louing lokes. Which although it were againſt our own deſire, yet the cauſe and full concluſion of the ſame, was to practiſe, if it were poſſible, to make you friends. But conſideryng that thys loue and allurementes of either parts, could not tend to other end, as we coniectured, but to increſe diſpleaſure, and to put the ſwords into your hands, we therfore conſulted betwene our ſelues, & vnifourmly in one mind did agree for ỳ appeaſing & ſatiſfaction of all partes, at ſuche nightes as ye fained to go into diuers

places

" places about earnest affaires as ye alleaged, Pistrus
" Lucio with the helpe of Cassandra my maid, through the
" Gardeine came into my chambre, and I by meanes of
" Iane hir maide by like way repaired vnto hirs. And ye
" poore mē guided by our maids were brought vnto your
" chambers where ye lay with your owne wiues, and so
" by tilthe of others land in strange soile (as ye beleeue)
" ye lost no labour. And bicause your embracemēts then
" were like to those atchieued by amorous Gentlemen,
" vsing vs with more earnest desire than you were wont
" to doe, both we were begotten with child: which ought
" to be very gladsome and gratefull vnto you, if ye were
" so faine to haue childrē as ye shewed your selues to be.
" If then none other offense doth grieue you, if remorse
" of conscience for other cause doth not offēd you, if none
" other sorow doth displease you: Giue ouer your griefe.
" Remit your displeasure. Be glad and ioyfull. Thanke
" vs for our policie, and pleasant disport ỹ we made you.
" If hitherto ye haue bene enimies, hēcefoorth be friends,
" put of that auncient malice so long cōtinued, mitigate
" your hatefull mode, and liue ye from henceforthe like
" friendly Gentlemen, yelde vp your rancor into the lap
" of your Countrey, ỹ she may put him in exile for euer,
" who like a pitifull and louing mother would gladly see
" all hir children of one accorde and minde. Which if ye
" doe, ye shall do singulare pleasure to your friendes, ye
" shal do great discōfort to your foes, ye shal do singular
" good to the cōmon wealth, ye shal do greatest benefit to
" your selues, ye shal make vs humble wiues, ye shal en-
" crease your posterity, ye shall be praised of all men, and
" finally shall depart the best contented men ỹ euer the
" world brought forth. And now bicause ye shall not
" thinke that we haue piked out this tale at our fingers
" ends, thereby to seeke your sauegard and our fame and

praise,

praise, beholde the letters which you sent vs, beholde your owne hands subscribed to the same, beholde your seales alligned therunto, which shall rendre true testimonie of that which vnfainedly we haue affirmed. Then both deliuered their letters, which viewed and seene, were wel knowen to be their own husbãds hãds, and the same so wel approued hir tale, as their husbãds were the gladdest men of the world, and the Duke and seignorie maruelously satisfied & contẽted. In so much as the whole assẽbly with one voice, cried out for their husbands deliueraunce. And so with the consent of the Duke & the whole seignorie they were clerely discharged. The parents, cosins and friends of the husbands & wiues were wonderfully amazed to here this long history, and greatly praised the maner of their deliuery, accompting the women to be very wise, and mistresse Isotta to be an eloquent gentlewoman, for that she had so well defended the cause of their husbands & of themselues. Anselmo and Girolamo openly in the presence of all the people embraced and killed their wiues with great reioysing. And then the husbandes shaked one an other by the hands, betweene whome began a brotherly accorde, and from that time forth liued in perfect amitie and friendship, exchaunging the wanton loue that either of thẽ bare to others wife into brotherly friendship, to the great cõtentation of the whole Citie. Whẽ the multitude assembled to heare this matter throughly was satisfied, the Duke with chéereful countenance loking towarde Gismonda, sayd thus vnto hir: And you faire Gentlewoman, what haue you to say? We bolde to vtter your minde, and we will gladly heare you. Mistresse Gismonda bashful to speake, began wonderfully to blush, into whose chekes entred an orient rud, intermixed with an Alablaster white, which made hir countenaunce

tenãce moze amiable thã it was wont to be. After she had stoze still a while wt hir eyes declined towards the ground, in comly wise lifting thẽ vp again wt shamfast
" audacitie she begã to say: If I most noble prince, in opẽ
" audiẽce should attẽpt to speake of loue, wherof I neuer
" had experience, oz knew what thing it was, I should be
" doubtful what to say therof, and peraduẽture durst not
" open my mouth. But hering my father (of woꝛthy me-
" moꝛie) many times to tel ẏ your maiestie in ẏ time of
" your youth disdained not to opẽ your hert to receiue ẏ
" amoꝛous flames of loue, & being assured ẏ ther is none
" but that both loue litle oꝛ much, I do not doubt but foꝛ
" the woꝛds which I shal speake, to obtain both pitie and
" pardon. To come then to ẏ matter: God I thank him of
" his godnesse, hath not permitted me to be one of ẏ soꝛt
" of women, ẏ like hipocrites do mumble their *Pater nos-*
" *ters* to saincts, appering outwardly to be deuout & holy
" and in fruite do bꝛing foꝛth deuils, and all kindes of vi-
" ces, specially ingratitude, whiche is a vice that dothe
" suck & dꝛie vp the fountain of godly pietie. Life is deaꝛ
" to me (as naturally it is to all) next which I esteme
" mine honoꝛ, that peraduẽture is to be pꝛeferred beiꝛe
" life, bicause without honoꝛ life is of no reputatiõ. And
" where mã & woman do liue in shame notoꝛious to the
" woꝛld, ẏ same may be termed a liuing death rather thã
" a life. But ẏ loue ẏ I beare to mine onely beloued ma-
" ster Aloisio here pꝛesent, I do esteme aboue al ẏ iewels
" & treasures of the woꝛld, whose personage I do regard
" moꝛe thã mine owne life. The reson ẏ moueth me ther
" to is very great, foꝛ before ẏ I loued him, oꝛ euer mẽ
" to fiꝛe my minde ẏ way, he derely regarded me, conti-
" nually deuising which way he might win & obtain my
" loue, sparing no trauell by night & day to seke ẏ same.
" Foꝛ which tender affectiõ should I shew my self vnkind

and

and frowarde? God forbid. And to be plaine with your
honors, he is more deare & acceptable vnto me, than ẏ
balles of mine owne eyes, being the dereſt things that
appertaine to ẏ furniture of the body of man, without
which no earthly thing can be gladſom and ioyfull to ẏ
ſenſe and feeling. Laſt of all, his amorous and affectio-
nate demonſtration of his loue towards me, by decla-
ring him ſelf to be careful of mine honor, rather more
willing to beſtow his owne, than to ſuffer the ſame to
be touched with the leſt ſuſpicion of diſhoneſtie, I can
not chuſe, but ſo faithfully imbrace, as I am readie to
guage my life for his ſake, rather than his finger ſhold
ake for ẏ offenſe. And where hath there ben euer foũd
ſuch liberalitie in any louer? What is he that hath ben
euer ſo prodigall, to employ his life, the moſte ſpeciall
pledge in this worlde, rather than he would ſuffer his
beloued to incurre diſhonoure? Many hiſtories haue I
red, and Chronicles of our time, and yet I haue founde
ſewe or none comparable vnto thys Gentleman, the
like of whom be ſo rare and ſeldome as white crowes
or ſwannes of color blacke. O ſingular liberalitie, ne-
uer heard of before. O fact that can neuer be ſufficient-
ly praiſed. O true loue moſt vnfained. Maiſter Aloi-
ſio rather thã he wold haue my fame any one iote to be
impaired, or ſuffer any ſhadow of ſuſpition to blemiſh
the ſame, frankly hath confeſſed himſelf to be a theefe,
regarding me & mine honor more than himſelfe & life.
And albeit that he might a thouſand wayes haue ſaued
himſelf without the impriſonment & aduerſitie which
he hath ſuſtained: neuertheleſſe after he had ſaid, being
then paſt remẽbrãce through the fal, that he fel downe
frõ my windowe, & perceiued how much that confeſſion
would preiudice and hurt my good name, and ſpotte the
knowen honeſtie of the ſame, of his good will chuſe to die
rather than to ſpeake any words that might brẽde yll

" opinion of me, or the least thing of the worlde ỳ might
" ingendre infamie & slaunder. And therefore not able to
" cal back the words he had spoken of the sal, nor by any
" meanes could coloure ỳ same, he thought to saue ỳ good
" name of another by his own hurt. If he then thus read-
" ly & liberally hath protruded his life to manifest dáger
" for my benefit & sauegard, preferring min honor above
" the care of himself, shall not I abandon all that I haue,
" yea & therwithall hazard mine honor for his saluation?
" But what? Shal I disdaine bountifully to imploy my
" self & al the endeuor of my friends for his deliuery? Na
" no (my Lords) if I had a thousand liues, & so many ho-
" nors at my commaundement, I wold giue them al for
" his relief and comfort, yea if it were possible for me to
" recouer a fresh .x. C. M. liues, I wold so frankly bestow
" them all, as euer I desired to liue, that I might enioy
" mine own Aloisio. But I am sory, and euer shalbe sory,
" for that it is not lawful for me to do more for him, than
" which my final power and possibilitie is able. For if he
" shold die, truly my life could not endure: if he were de-
" priued of life, what pleasure should I haue to liue in this
" world after him? wherby (most honorable & righteous
" iudge,) I beleue before the honest, not to lose any one
" iote of mine honor, because I being (as you may see) a
" yong woman & a widow desirous to mary againe, it is
" lawful for me to loue and to be beloued for none other
" intent (whereof God is the only iudge) but to attaine
" a husband according to my degree. But if I should lose
" my reputation and honor, why should not I aduenture
" the same for him, that hath not spared his owne for
" my sake? Nowe to come to the effect of the matter, I
" doe say with all duetifull reuerence, that it is an accu-
" sation altogither false and vntrue, that euer master A-
" loisio came to my house as a Theefe against my will.

For

For what nede he to be a theefe, or what would he doe with my goodes, that is a lorde and owner of. xx. times so muche as I haue? Alas good Gentleman, I dare depose and guage my life, that he neuer thoughte, much lesse dyd any robberie or thing vnlawfull, wherewith iustly he may be charged. But he repaired to my house with my consent, as a louing and affectionate louer, the circumstance whereof, if it be duely marked, must aduouch the same to be of trouthe infallible. For if I had not giuen him licence to come, how was it possible for him to conuey his ladder so high, that was made but of ropes, and to fasten the same to the iaume of the window, if none within did helpe hym. Againe, how could the window of the chamber be open at that time of the night, which is still kept shut, if it had not bene by my consent. But I with the helpe of my mayde threwe downe to him a litle rope, whervnto he tied his ladder and drew the same vp, and making it so fast, as it could not vndo, and then made a signe for maister Aloisio to come vp. But as bothe our ill fortune wold haue it, before I could catch any hold of him, to mine inestimable grief and hearts sorrowe he fell downe to the ground. Wherfore (my lordes) I beseeche your honours to reuoke the confession wherein he hath made him selfe to be a theefe. And you maister Aloisio declare the trouth as it was, sith I am not ashamed in this honorable assemblie to tel the same. Behold the letters (my lords) whiche so many times he wrote vnto me, wherein he made sute to come to my speach, and continually in the same doth call me wife. Behold the ladder, which till nowe, did still remaine in my chamber. Beholde my maide, which in all mine affaires, is as it were myne owne hande and helper. Maister Aloisio being herevpon demaunded of the Lords of the articles, which she

in hir tale had recited, cõfessed them all to be true: who at the same instant was discharged. The Duke greatly commended them both, hir for hir stoute audacitie, in defense of an innocent Gentleman, and him for his honor and modestie, seeking to preserue the fame and good reporte of the Gentlewoman. Whiche done, the Counsell dissembled and brake vp. And the friendes of bothe the parties accompanied them home to the house of mistresse Gismonda, where to the greate reioyce and pleasure of al men, they were solemnely maried in sumptuous and honorable wise, and maister Aloisio with his wyfe liued in greate prosperitie long time after. Mistresse Lucia and mistresse Isotta, at the expired time were deliuered of two goodly sonnes, in whome the fathers take great ioy and delight. Who with their wiues after that tyme lyued very quietly and well, one louing an other like naturall brethren, many times sporting among them selues discretely at the deceipts of their wiues. The wisedom of the Duke also was wonderfully extolled and cõmended of all men, the fame whereof was increased and bruted throughout the region of *Italy*. And not without cause. For by hys prudence and aduise, the dominion of the state and Common wealth was amplified and dilated. And yet in the ende being olde and impotent, they vnkindely deposed hym from his Dukedome.

(.·.)

The Lorde of Virle

¶ The Lorde of VIRLE, by the commaundement of a a faire yong widow called ZILIA, and for his promyse made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remaine dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what meanes he was reuenged, and obtained his fute.

The. xxvij. Nouel.

THey that haue passed the most parte of their youth in humain folies, and haue rather followed the vanities of fooles & insensate louers, in matters of loue, and that the contemplation of heauenly things, or elle of those that here on erth may giue some entrie for man to attayne glorie and honor of his name, they I say, shall serue me for witnesses, to confirme the opinion of long time rooted in the fansies of men: which is, that the beautie and comely fauor of a woman, is the very true & naturall Adamant that can be found, sith the same stone (for a certain attractiue power and agreable qualitie therin inclosed) doth not better draw the iron, than ỹ woman doth, by a certain hidde force, which resting vnder ỹ allurem̃et of hir eye, draweth vnto it ỹ hearts & affectiõs of men, which hath made many beleeue, that the same onely essence was

was sent to vs below, to serue both for mens torment and ioy together. But yet there is an other thyng of greater wonder it is not to heare tel that Paris forsoke *Troy*, to go visite Helena in *Greece*, that Hercules had giuen ouer his mace, to handle the distaffe at the cõmandement of a woman, or that Salomon was sotted in his wisedom to dalie with those that made hym a voluntarie slaue. But that a woman of whom a man had receiued no fauour and curtesie at all, had forgotten hir owne duetie to hir seruant, if it seeme not straunge, I can not tell what to call wonderfull or maruellous: if defense of speach for loue, is not deemed such, whereby man is different from brute beastes: (for reason is altogether refused by louers, and notwithstanding ours fathers haue seene the example of that vertue no long time past in the person of a Gentleman, very wise and well trained vp in other things. A case so straunge as declaring the singular force of nature in that matter, wherin she seemeth to haue giuen ỳ preferment aboue all things in earth. Examples hereof, is the effemination of Hercules, the depriuation of Samsons strength, the losse of sense, and the idolatrie of the famous and wise king Salomon, and the simplicitie of a wareles and vncircumspect Gentleman, of whom ye shal reade the Hystorie.

Thurin (as is well knowne to them that haue travelled *Piedmont*) is the ornament & bulwarke of al the countrey, so well for the naturall site of the place, as for the artificial and industrious worke of mans hand, which hath instaured and furnished with great magnificence, that which nature had indifferently enriched, for the rudenesse and litle knowledge of the time past. Now besides this stately & strong citie, there standeth a litle town named *Montcall*, a place no lesse strong,

and

and of good defense, than well plated in a faire and rich soyle. In this towne there dwelt a Gentlewoman a widowe called Zilia, beautifull amongst the most excellent faire Gentlewomen of the countrey, which countrey (besides the other happie & heauenly influences) seemeth to be specially fauoured, for hauing the most faire & curteous Gentlewomē, aboue any other within the compasse of *Europa*. Notwithstanding this faire Zilia, degenerating frō the nature of hir climate, was so haggarde and cruell, as it might haue ben thoughte, she had bene rather nourished and brought vp amidde the most desert mountains of *Sauoy*, than in the pleasant and rich champayn countrey, watered and moistened with *Eridanus*, the father of riuers, at this day called the *Pau*, the largenesse whereof doth make men to maruel, and the fertilitie alloureth euery man to be desirous to inhabite vpon thesame. This faire rebellious widow, albeit that she was not aboue .xxiiij. or .xxv. yeres of age, yet protested neuer more to be subiecte to man, by mariage, or otherwise, thinking hir self wel able to liue in single life: A minde truly very holy and cōmendable, if the pricks of ỹ flesh do obey the first motions and adhortations of the spirite, but where youth, pleasure, and multitude of suters do addresse their endeuour against that chastitie (lightly enterprised) the Apostles counsell ought to be followed, who willeth yong widowes to marie in Christ, to auoide the temptations of the flesh, and to flee offensiue slaunder and dishonor before men. Now mistresse Zilia (hir husbād being dead) only bent hir selfe to enrich hir house, and to amplifie the possession of a litle infant which she had by hir late departed husbande. After whose death she became so couetous, as hauing remoued, and almoste cut off quite the wonted port she vsed in hir husbandes

dayes, imployed hir maids in houshold affairs, thinking nothing to be well done y passed not through hir owne handes. A thing truely more praise worthy, than to be a sorte of effeminate, fine, and daintie fingred dames, which thinke their honor diminished if they holde but their nose ouer their housholde matters, where their hande and diligence were more requisite, for so much as the mistresse of the house is not placed the chiefe to heare only the reasons of them that labor, but therunto to put hir hands, for hir present eye semeth to giue a certaine perfection to the worke which the seruauntes do by hir commaundement. Which caused the Historians in times past, to describe vnto the posterity a gentlewoman called Lucretia, not babbling amongs yong foolish girles, or running to feastes and Paigames, or Masking in the night, without any regard of the honor and dignitie of hir race and house, but in hir Chamber sowing, spinning, and carding, amids the troupe of hir maiden seruants: wherin our mistresse Zilia passed the most parte of hir time, spending no minute of the day, without some honest exercise, which she did for that she liked not to be seen at feasts and bankets, or to be gadding vp and downe the streats, wandring to gardeins or places of pleasure, although to suche places youth sometimes may haue honest repaire to refreshe their wearied bodies with some vertuous recreation, & thereby to reioyce the heauinesse of the minde. But this Gentlewoman was so seuere in following the rigorous and constrained maners of our auncients, that impossible it was, to see hir abrode, except it were when she went to Mattens or other deuine seruice. This Gentlewoman seemed to haue studied the diuinitie of the *Egiptians*, which paint Venus holding a key before hir mouth, & setting hir foote vpon a *Tortus*, signifying vnto

ds therby, ỹ duety of a chast woman, whose tong ought to be locked, that she speake not but in time and place, and hir fete not straying or wãdering, but to kepe hir self within the limits of hir owne house, except it be to serue God, and sometimes to render our bounden duty to them which haue brought vs into light. Notwithstanding Zilia was so religious (I wil not say superstitious) and rigorous to obserue customs, as she made it very squeimish and straunge to kisse Gentlemen that met hir, a ciuilitie which of long time hath bene obserued, and yet remaineth in the most part of the world, that Gentlewomen doe welcome straungers and guestes into their houses with an honest and chaste kisse. Notwithding the institution and profession of this widow had wiped away and deferred this poynt of hir youthe: whither it were for that she estéemed hir self so faire, as all men were vnworthy to touche the vtter partes of so rare and precious a vessell, or that hir great and inimitable chastitie made hir so strange, to refuse that which hir duetie and honor would haue permitted hir to graunt. There chaunced about this time that a gentleman of the Countrey called Sir Philiberto of *Virle*, estéemed to be one of the most valiant Gentlemen in those partes, repaired vpon an holy day to *Montcall*, (whose house was not very farre off the Towne) and being at diuine seruice, in place of occupying his sense and minde in heauenly things, and attending the holy words of a Preacher, which that day declared the worde of God vnto the people, hée gaue himselfe to contemplate the excellent beautie of Zilia, who hadde put off for a while hir mourning vaile, that she might the better beholde the good father that preached, and receiue a little aire, bicause the day was extreame hotte. The Gentleman at the first blushe, when hée saiwe

that ſweete temptation before his eyes, thought hym ſelfe rapt aboue the third heauen, and not able to with-draw his looke, he fed hymſelfe with the venome which by litle and litle, ſo ſeaſed vpon the ſoundeſt partes of his minde, as afterwards being liuely roted in heart, the Gentleman was in daunger ſtill to remaine there for a guage, without any hope of eaſe or comforte, as more amply this folowyng diſcourſe, ſhall giue you to vnderſtande. Thus all the morning hee behelde the Gentlewoman, who made no more accompt of them, that with great admiration did beholde hir, than they themſelues did of their life, by committing the ſame to the hands of a woman ſo cruell. This Gentleman being come home to his lodging, enquired what faire widow that was, of what calling, and of what behauior, but he heard tell of more truely, than he would of god will haue knowne or deſired to haue ben in hir, whom he did preſently chooſe to be the onely miſtreſſe of his moſte ſecrete thoughts. Now vnderſtanding wel the ſtubburne nature and vnciuile maner of that widow, hee coulde not tell what parte to take, nor to what Saint to vow his deuotion, to make ſute vnto hir he thought it time loſt, to be hir ſeruant, it was not in his power, hauing already inguaged his libertie into the handes of hir, which once holdyng captiue the hearts of men, will not infraunchiſe them ſo ſone as thoughts and will deſire. Wherefore baiting hymſelfe with hope, and tickled with loue, hee determined what ſoeuer chaūced, to loue hir, and to aſſay if by long ſeruice he coulde lenifie that harde hearte, and make tender that vnpliant will, to haue pitie vpon the paine which ſhe ſaw him to endure, & to recompenſe his laborſome trauels, which he thought were vertuouſly imployed for gayning of hir good grace. And vpon this ſettled de-

libera-

liberation, he retired againe to *Virle* (so was his house named) where disposing his things in order, he returned again to *Montcali* to make his long resiance there, to put in readinesse his furniture, and to welde his artillerie with suche industrie, as in the ende he mighte make a reasonable breach to force and take the place: For surprising whereof, he hazarded great dangers, the rather, that he hym selfe might first be taken. And where hys assaultes and pollicies could not prevaile, he mynded to content him selfe with the pleasure and passetyme that hée myght receiue in the contemplation of a thyng so fayre, and the ordinarie sight of an image so excellent. The memorie of whome rather increased hys paine than yelded comfort, dyd rather ministre corrosiue poyson, than gyue remedie of ease, a cause more of cruel and sodaine death, than of prolonged life. Philiberto then being become a citizen of *Môtcall*, vsed to frequent the Churche more than hée was wont to doe, or his deuotion serued hym, and that bycause he was not able elsewhere to enioy the presence of his Sainct, but in places and temples of deuotion: whiche no doubt was a very holie and worthie disposition, but yet not méete or requisite to obserue suche holy places for those intentes, whiche oughte not to be prophaned in thyngs so fonde and soliishe, and actes so contrary to the institution and mynde of those, which in tymes paste were the fyrst founders and erectours of temples. Signior Philiberto then moued with that religious superstition, made no conscience at all to speake vnto hir within the Churche. And true it is, when she wente out of the same, he (moued with a certaine familiar curtesie, naturall to eche Gentleman of good bryngyng vp) many tymes conducted hir home to hir owne house, not able for all that (what so

soeuer he sayd) to winne the thing that was able to in-
gender any litle contentation, which grieued him ve-
ry much: For the cruell woman fained as though she
vnderstode nothing of that he sayde, and turnyng the
wayne against the oxen, by contrary talke she began
to tell him a tale of a tubbe, of matters of hir house-
holde, whervnto he gaue so good heede, as she did to the
hearing of hys complaintes. Thus these two, of dy-
uers affections, and moued with contrary thoughtes,
spake ons to an other, without apt answere to eithers
talk. Wherby ỳ Gentleman cõceiued an assured argu-
ment of his ruine, which voide of al hope ẽ meanes, he
sawe to be inevitable, and therfore practised with cer-
taine dames of the Citie, that had familiar resort vn-
to hir house, and vsed frequent conuersation with his
rebellious lady Zilia. To one of them then he determi-
ned to communicate his secrets, and to do hir to vnder-
stande in dede the only cause that made him to soiorne
at *Montcall*, and the griefe which he sustained, for that
he was not able to discouer his torment to hir, that had
giuen him the wounde. This Gentleman therfore, re-
paired to one of his neighbors, a woman of good corage,
which at other times had experimented what meates
they fede on, which sit at Venus table, and what bitter-
nesse is intermingled, amid those drinkes that Cupido
quaffeth vnto his guestes. Vnto whom (hauing before
coniured hir to kepe secret that which he wold declare)
he disclosed the secrets of his minde, expressing his loue
without naming of his lady before he herd the answer
of his neighbor, who vnderstanding almoste to what
purpose the affections of the pacient were directed, said
" vnto him: Sir, needfull it is not to vse long orations,
" the loue that I bear you for the honest qualities which
" hitherto I haue knowne to be in you, shall make me

to kepe

to kepe silent, that wherof as yet I do not knowe the matter, and the assurance you haue, not to be abused by me, constraineth me to warrant you, that I will not spare to do you all the pleasure & honest seruice I can. Ah mistresse (answered sir Philiberto) so lõg as I lyue, I will not faile to acknowledge the liberalitie of your endeuour, by offering your selfe pacientely to beare, and secretely to kepe the wordes I speake, accordingly as they deserue: and that (which is more than I require) you doe assure me that I shall finde suche one of you, as will not spare to giue your ayde. Alas, I resemble the good and wyse Captaine, who to take a forte doth not onely ayde himselfe with the forwardenesse and valiance of his souldiers, but to spare them, and to auoyde slaughter for making of way, planteth his cannon, and battereth the wall of the fort, whiche he woulde assayle, to the intent that both the souldier and the ordinaunce maye perfourme and suffise the perfection of the platte, whyche hée hath framed and deuised within his politike heade. I haue already encouraged my souldiers, and haue lost the better part truly in the skirmish which hath deliuered vnto me my swéete cruell enimie. Now I am driuen to make redy the fire, which resteth in the kindled match of your cõcripts, to batter ẏ fort hitherto inexpugnable, for any assault which I can make. I vnderstand not (sayde she smiling) these Labyrinthes of your complaints, except you speake more plain. I neuer haunted the warres, ne knewe what thing it is to handle weapons, improper and not seemely for myne estate and kynde. The warre (quod he) whereof I speake, is so naturall and common, as I doubt not, but you haue somtymes assayed, with what sleights and camisados men vse to take

" take their enimies, how they plant their ambushes, &
" what meanes bothe the assayliant and defendant ought
" to vse. So far as I see (sayd she) there resteth nothing
" for vs, but the assurance of the fielde, sith we be ready
" to enter in combat: and do thinke that the fort shal not
" be hard to winne, by reason of the walles, dikes, ram-
" pars, bulwarks, platformes, counterforts, curtines,
" vamewres & engins which you haue prepared, besides
" a number of false brayes and flanks, placed in good or-
" der, and the whole defended from the thundryng can-
" nons and bombardes, which doe amaze the wandring
" enimie in the field. But I pray you leaning these war-
" like tumults, to speake more boldly without these ex-
" travagantes and digressions, for I take pitie to see you
" thus troubled, and ready to excede the bounds of your
" modestie and wonted wisedom. Do not maruell at all
" mistresse (quod he) sith according to newe occurrents
" and alterations, bothe the purpose, talke, and counsell
" ordinarily do change, I am become the seruant of one
" which maketh me altogether lyke vnto those that be
" madde, and bounde in chains, not able to speake or say
" any thing, but what the spirites which be in them, doe
" force them to vtter. For I neither wil, thinke, or speke
" any thing, but that which the enchaunter Loue doth
" commaunde and suffer to erpresse, who, so rigorously
" doth vexe my heart, that in place where boldenesse is
" most requisite, he depriueth me of force, and leaueth me
" without any countenance. And being alone, God kno-
" weth how frankly I doe wander in the place, where
" myne enimie may commaunde, and with what barde-
" nesse I do inuade hir prouince. Alas, is it not pitie then
" to see these diuersities in one self matter, and vpon one
" very thing? Truely I would endure willyngly all
" these trauailes, if I wyst in the end my seruice might

be ac-

be accepted, and hoped that my Martirdome sholde finde
relief: but liuing in this vncertainty, I must nedes nou-
rish the hunger and the solace of the vnhappy, which are
wishes and vaine hope, trusting that some God will
graunt me a faithfull friend that will assaye to rid me
from the hell wherinto I am throwne, or else to shorte
this miserable life, which is a hundred times more pain-
full than death. In saying so, he began to sigh so strange-
ly as a man would haue thought that two smithes fel-
lowes working at the forge, had giuen two blowes at his
breake, so vehement was the inclosed winde within
his heart, that made him to fetche forth those terrible
sighes, the eyes not forgetting to yelde forth a riuer of
teares, which gushing forth at the centre of his heart,
mounted into his braines, at length to issue forth,
through the spout proper to the chanell of such a foun-
taine. Which the gentlewoman seing, moued with com-
passion, could not contain to kepe him company in wee-
ping, and therewithall sayd vnto him. Although mine
estate and reputatiõ, which to this day I haue kept vn-
spotted, defend the vse of my good will in things y may
defame mine honour, yet sir by seeing the extremitie
which you suffer, to be vnfained, I wil somwhat stretch
my conscience, & assay to succour you with so good heart,
as frankly you truste me in the secretes of your thought.
There resteth only for me to know, the thing that you
will haue me to doe, and towardes what woman your
desyres be inclined: for sure I am to giue hir suche
tast of that which I haue seene and knowen of your good
will & service towardes the mistresse of your heart, that
she shalbe altogether out of tast, and voide of appetite,
if she do not accept that affectionate offred wil, the like
wherof shall neuer be profered againe. And truly such
a womã may iudge hir self right happy to haue a Gen-

" friendship, so honest, vertuous and faithfull, for seruant
" and louer, which by louing and seruing his beauties in
" your gentes, is the admiration and ornaments of the
" the dayes Ladie. Wrongfully the earth seldome bringes
" forth in these vayes like fowles, men being growne
" to such disloyaltie, as in the ende it will defraude the
" vertue of Fidelitie from them, and wholly plant the
" same, in the hyds of womens hearts: and they not
" like to depart the force and effectes thereof, will put
" vpon them conditions that be cruell, to punish the fo-
" lish indiscreation of trifling Louers, who disguised
" with the visard of fained friendships, and painted with
" coloured amitie, languishing in sighes and sorowes, to
" say to deceiue them that prodigally employ their ho-
" nor into the handes of those cruell, inconstant and
" foolish sutors. Ah Pistrelle answered the Gentleman:
" how may I be able to recompense that onely benefite
" which you doe promise me now? But be sure that you
" see here a Souldier and Gentleman which shall no
" lesse be prodigall of his life to doe you seruice, then
" you be liberall of your reputation to ease his paine.
" Now sith it pleaseth you to shew such fauoure to
" me your helpe and support in that which paineth me, I
" require no more at your handes, but to beare a Letter
" which I shall write to Pistrelle Zulia, with whom I
" am so farre in loue, as if I doe receiue no solace of my
" griefe, I know not howe I shall auoide the cutting of
" my threde, which the spinning sisters haue twisted to
" prolong my life, that henceforth can receiue no succor,
" if by your meanes I doe not atchiene the thing that
" holdeth me in such bondage. The Gentlewoman was
" very pensiue, when she vnderstode that Seignor
" Philbetto had bent his Loue vpon such one, as would
" not consent to that request, and much lesse would ren-

der

der any reſt vnto his miſeries, and therefore enfor-
ced hir ſelfe to moue that folithe fantaſie out of his
hed. But he was already reſolued in his miſehappe,
which perceiuing in the ende ſhe ſayd: To the intent
hir that you doe not thinke that I doe meane to er-
cuſe the ſatiſfaction of my promiſe, make your letters,
and of my Faith I will deliuer them. And albeit I
know very well what be the honoures and glory of
that Pilgrime, yet I will render to you againe the
true anſwere of hir ſpeche which ſhe ſhall vſe to me,
whereby you maye conſider the gaine you are lyke
to make by purſuing of a woman (although faire)
of ſo ſmall deſerte. The Gentleman failed not to
giue hir heartie thankes, praying hir to tary vntill
he had wrytten his letters: whereunto ſhe moſt wil-
lingly obeyed. He then gone into his Chamber, be-
gan to fantaſie a hundred hundred matters to write
vnto his Ladie, and after he had fired them in minde,
toke incke and paper wryting as foloweth.

The Letters of Seignior Philiberto of *Virle*, to Miſtreſſe Zilia of *Montcall*.

The paſſion extreme which I endure (Madame)
through feruent loue of you, is ſuch, as bilides that
I am aſſured of the little loue you beare me, in reſ-
pecte of the incredible ſeruitude which mine affection
and deſire is readye to employe, I haue no will to
chaunging my laite, ne yet to riddo my ſelfe from
my bonden ſeruitude and thrall to your incomparable

" beautie, although euen from the beginning I felt the
" pricks of the mortall shot which now tormenteth my
" minde? Alas I doe not knowe wherein what in finding I
" am borne, nor what fate weth sue my yeares, but I
" doe perceiue that heauen and time, and hir honour
" honor, doe conforme themselues with one accord to
" seeke mine ouerthrowe, who thinke my self of purpose
" borne and sustained in my first yong age, to be the faith-
" full name and perpetuall seruant of you my mistris
" deare, to whome alone, I yelde my heart afflicted as it
" is, and the ioy of hidden thoughts nourished in my mind,
" by the contemplation and remembraunce of your ex-
" cellent and perfect grace, wherof if I do not fauored, I
" waight for death, from which euen presently I flie: not
" for feare of that which she can doe, or of the vgly shape
" which I conceiue to be in hir, but rather to confirme
" my life, this body, for instrument to exercise the mans
" conceipts for doing of your commaundements, when
" I shall proue that vnworthy cruelty, both of your gen-
" tle nouriture, and of the body fraught ful of that, which
" dame Nature can departe of hir abounsant graces. Re
" sure madame that you shall shortly see the end of him,
" which attendeth yet to beare so much as in him doth
" lie, the vehement lone into an other world, which ma-
" keth me to pray you to haue pitie on him, who (atten-
" ding the rest and final sentence of his death or life) doth
" humbly kisse your white and delicate hands, beseeching
" god to giue to you like ioy as his is, who desireth to be,

Wholy yours or not to be at all.

Philiberto of Virle.

The letter written, closed and sealed, he deliuered
to his neighbour, who promised him, against to morrow
him answere at night. Thus thys messanger went

his

hir way, leauing this poꝛe languiſhing Gentleman hoping againſt his hope, and fainting by and by ſome ioy and pleaſure, wherin he bained himſelf with great contented minde. Then ſodainly he called againe vnto remembꝛance, the cruelties & inciuilitie of Zilia, which ſhewed beſoꝛe his eyes ſo many kindes of deathe, as times he thought vpon the ſame, thinking that he ſaw the choler wherewith his little courteous miſtreſſe furiouſly did intertaine the meſſanger, who found Zilia comming foꝛth of a gardein adioyning to hir houſe, and hauing ſaluted hir, and receiued like courteous ſalutation, ſhe would haue framed hir talke, foꝛ honeſt excuſe in that vnſeemely charge & meſſage: foꝛ hir alſo vnto whome ſhe was ſent, and foꝛ ſome eaſe to the poꝛe gentleman which apꝛoched nearer death than life. But Zilia bꝛake of hir talke ſaying: I marueil much gentle neighboꝛ to ſee you heere at this time of the day, knowing your honeſt cuſtome is to let paſſe no minute of the time, except it be employed in ſome vertuous exerciſe. Miſtreſſe anſwered the meſſanger, I thank you foꝛ the god opinion you haue of me, and doe pꝛay you to continue the ſame. Foꝛ I do aſſure you that nothing vaine & of little effect hath made me ſlacke my buſineſſe at this time, which me think I do not foꝛſlow, when I inforce my ſelf to take pitie and mercy vpon the afflicted ſoꝛt: and the cauſe therof I would diſcloſe, if I feared not to offend you, and bꝛeake the loue which of long time betweene vs two hath bene frequented. I know not (ſayd Zilia) wherunto your woꝛds do tẽd, although my heart doth thꝛobbe, and minde doth moue to make me thinke your purpoſed talke to be of none other effecte, than to ſay a thing which may redoũd to the pꝛeiudice of mine honor. Wherfoꝛe I pꝛay you, doe not open any thing y ſhall be contrary, be it neuer ſo little to the duetie of

" Dames of our degrée. Mistresse sayd the neighboure, I
" suppose that the little likelihoode which is in you with
" the thing for the helpe wherof I come to speake, hath
" made you feele the passion, contrary to the griefe of
" him that indures so much for your sake. Vnto whome
" not thinking therof I gaue my faith in pledge to beare
" this Letter. In saying so, she drew the same out of hir
" bosome, and presenting them to cruell Zilia, she sayde:
" I beseeche you to thinke that I am not ignorannt of
" the euill wherewith the Lorde of *Virle* is affected,
" who wrote these letters. I promised him the duetie
" of a messanger towardes you: and so constrained by
" promise I could doe no lesse, than to deliuer you that
" which he doeth send, with seruice such as shall endure
" for euer, or if it shall please you to accept him for such
" a one as he desireth. For my parte I pray you to reade
" the contents, and accordingly to giue me answere:
" for my faith is no further bound, but faithfully to re-
" porte to him the thing whereupon you shall be resol-
" ued. Zilia which was not wont to receiue very often
such embassades, at the first was in minde to breake
the letters, and to returne the messanger to hir shame.
But in the end taking heart, and chaunging hir affec-
tion, she red the letters not without shewing some ve-
ry great alteration outwardely, which declared the
meaning of hir thought that diuersly did striue within
hir minde: for sodainely she chaunged hir coloure twice
or thrice, now waxing pale like the increasing Mone,
Eclipsed by the Sunne, when she feeleth a certaine
darkening of hir borowed light, then the Vermilion
and coloured tainte came into hir face againe, with no
lesse beawe than the blomed Rose newly budded forth,
which encreased halfe so much againe, the excellencie
of that wherewith Nature had indued hir. And then

she paused a while. Notwithstanding, after that she had redde, and redde againe hir louers letter, not able to dissemble hir foolishe anger which vered hir hearte, she sayd vnto the mistresse messanger: I wold not haue thought that you, being suche as eche man knoweth, would (by abusing your duetie,) haue bene the ambassador of a thing so vncomely for your estate, and the house whereof you come, and towardes me which neuer was such one (ne yet pretend to be,) to whome sute should be made for doing of such follies. And trust to it that it is the loue I beare you, which shall make me dissemble that I thinke, and holde my peace, reserving in silence, that which (had it come from an other than you) I would haue published to the great dishonoure of hir which had made so little accompte of my chastitie. Let it suffise therfore in time to come for you to thinke and beleue, that I am chaste and honest: and to aduertise the Lord of *Virle* to procede no further in his sute: for rather will I die, than agree to the least point of that which he desires of me. And that he may knowe the same, be well assured that he shall take his leaue of that priuate talke which sometimes I vsed with him to my great dishonor, as farre as I can see. Get you home therefore, and if you loue your honoure so much, as you see me curious of my chastitie, I beseche you vse no further talke of him, whome I hate so much, as his follie is excelline, by louing hir which careth not for those amorous toyes and fained passions, whereunto such louing fooles do suffer themselues to be caried headlong. The messanger ashamed, to heare hir selfe thus pinched to the quicke, answered hir very quietly without mouing of hir pacience: I pray to God (mistresse) that he may remedy the different disease almost incurable in either of you twaine,

" the same béeing so vehement, as altered into a phrene-
" sie, maketh you in this wise, incapable of reasō. Fini-
shing these wordes she toke hir leaue of Zilia, and arri-
ued to the louers house, she founde him lying vpon his
bedde, rather dead than aliue: who séeing his neighbor
returned backe againe, with face so sadde, not tarying
for the answer which she was about to make, he began
" to say: Ah infortunate Gentleman, thou payest well
" the vsurie of thy pleasures past, when thou diddest liue
" at libertie, frée from those trauails which now do put
" thée to death, with out suffring thée to die. Oh happie,
" and more than right happie had I bene, if inconstant
" Fortune had not deuised this treason, wherein I am
" surprised and caught, and yet no raunsom can redeme
" me from prison, but the most miserable deth that euer
" poore louer suffred. Ah mistresse, I know well that Zi-
" lia esteemeth not my letters, ne yet regardeth my loue,
" I confesse that I haue done you wrong by thus abusing
" your honest amitie, for the solace of my pain. Ah fickle
" loue, what fole is he which doth commit himself to the
" rage and furie of the waues of thy foming and tempe-
" stuous seas? Alas I am entred in, with great gladsom
" chéere, through the glistering shew before mine eyes of
" the faint sunne beames, whereunto so sone as I made
" saile, the same denied me light to thrust me forth into
" a thousande windes, tempests, and raging stormes of
" raine. By meanes whereof I sée no meane at all to hope
" for end of my mishaps: and much lesse the shipwracke
" which sodainely may rid me from this daunger more
" intollerable, than if I were ouerwhelmed within the
" bottomlesse depth of the maine Ocean. Ah deceiuer, &
" wily souldier, why hast thou made me enterprise the
" voyage farre of from thy solitudes and wildernesse, to
" giue me ouer in the middest of my necessitie? Is this

thy

thy manner towardes them, which franckly follow the
by trace, and pleasantly subdue themselues to thy trai-
terous folies? At lest wise if I saw some hope of helth
I would indure without complaint therof: yea, and it
were a more daungerous tempest. But O good God,
what is he of whom I speake? Of whom do I attende
for solace and relefe? of him truely which is borne for
the ouerthrow of men? Of whom hope I for healthe?
Of the moste noysom poyson that euer was myngled
with the most subtile druggs that euer were. Whome
shall I take to be my defender? He which is in ambush
traitrously to catch me, that he may martir me worse
than he hath done before. Ah cruell wenche, that thou
shouldest measure so euill the good will of him that ne-
uer purposed to trespasse the least of thy commaunde-
mentes. Ah, that thy beautie should finde a subiecte so
stubborn in thee, to torment them that loue and praise
thee. O maigre and vnkinde recompense, to expel good
seruantes that be affectionate to a seruice so iust and
good. Ah Basiliske, coloured ouer with pleasure and
sweetenelle, howe hath thy sighte dispersed his poyson
throughout mine heart? At least wise if I hadde some
drugge to repell thy force, I should liue at ease, & that
without this sute and trouble. But I fele and proue
that this sentence is more than true:

No physike herbes the griefe of loue can cure,
Ne yet no drugge that paine can well assure.

Alas, the seare clothe will not serue, to kepe the
wounde the time shall be but lolte, to cut the same is
but increase of paine, to salue the same bredeth matter
to cause mine ouerthrow. To be short, any dwelling can
not auaile, except the hand of hir alone which gaue the
wounde. I would to God she sawe the bottome of my
heart, and viewed the closet of any minde, ỳ she might

" iudge my firme faith and know the wrong she doth me
" by hir rigor and froward wil. But O vnhappie man, I
" fele that she is so resolued in obstinate mynde, as hir
" rest semeth only to depend vpon my paine, hir ease vp-
" on my griefe, and hir ioy vpon my sadnesse. And saying
" so, began strangely to wepe, and sighing betwene, la-
" mented, in so much as, ỳ mistresse messanger not able
" to abide the grief and painful trauaile wherin she saw
" the poore gentleman wrapped, went home to hir house:
" notwithstanding she told afterward the whole successe
" of his loue to a Gentleman, the friende of Philiberto.
" Nowe this Gentleman was a companion in armes to
" the lorde of *Virle*, and a very familiar friend of his, for
" which cause he went about by all meanes to put away
" those folish and frantike conceits out of his fansie, but
" he profited as much by his endeuour, as the passionate
" gained by his beninesse: who determining to die, yelded
" so much to care and griefe, as he fel into a greuous sick-
" nesse, which hath hindred him from slepe, and also of his
" appetite to eate and drinke, giuing himself to muse vp-
" on his folies and fansied dreames, without hearing or
" admitting any man to speake vnto him. And if he vp-
" heare them, his words tended to the complainte of the
" cruoltie of one, whom he named not, and sounded of no
" lire he had to end his life vpon that cõplaynt. The phy-
" sitians round about wer sought for, who could giue no
" iudgement of that disease (neither for al the signes they
" saw, or any inspection of the vrine, or touching of the
" pulse) but saide that it was a melancholie humor distil-
" ling from the braine, which caused the alteration of his
" sense: howbeit their arte and knowledge were void of
" fail to enacuate the grosse blood that was congeled of
" melancholie. And therfore dispairing of his helth, with
" handes full of money they gaue him ouer. Whiche his

friende

friend and companion perceiuing, marueilous sorry for the affliction of his friend, ceased not to practise al that he could by letters, gifts, promises and complaintes to procure Zilia to visite the pacient. For he was assured that the only presence of hir was able to recouer hys friend. But the cruell woman excused hir self through hir widdowhed, that it should be vnseemely for one of hir degree (of intent) to visite a Gentleman, whose parentage and aliance she knew not. The soliciter of the Lord of *Virle* his health, seing how litle his prayers auailed with his implacable furie, knewe no longer to what saint he might vow himself for counsell, in the ende resolued to sollicite hir which hadde done the first message, that she might deuise some meanes to bring them to speake together. And fyndyng hir for his purpose, thus he sayd vnto hir: Mistresse, I maruel much that you make so litle accompt of the poore lord of *Virle* who lieth in his bedde attending for death. Alas, if ever pitie hadde place in womans hearte, I beseech you to geue your ayde to helpe hym, the meane whereof in whome it lyeth, is not ignorant vnto you. God is my witnesse (quod she) what trauaile I could take, to help him: but in thynges impossible, it is not in man to determin, or rest assured in iudgemẽt. I wil go vnto him and comfort him so well as I can, that peraduenture my promises maye ease some parte of his payne: and afterward we wil at leisure better consider vpon that which we shall promise. Hereuppon they went together to see the pacient, that beganne to wake vp more chearefull than he was wonted: who seyng the Gentlewoman, sayde vnto hir: Ah mystresse, I woulde to God I had neuer proued youre fine litie, to feele the passing cruell hearte of hir, that rather dothe esteeme hir honour, to practyse rygour and tyrannie vpon me,

" than with gentlenesse to maintaine the life of a pore
" feble knight. Sir (sayde she) I can not tell what you
" meane thus to torment your self: for I trust to cure you
" betwene this and to morow, and wil do mine endeor
" to cause you speake with hir, vpon whom wrongfully
" perchaunce you doe complaine, and who dareth not to
" come vnto you, lest some occasion be giuen of suspition
" to yll speakers, which wil make the report more slan-
" derous, when they know the cause of your disease. Ah
" (sayd the pacient) howe toysull and pleasant is your
" talke? I see wel that you desire my helth, and for that
" purpose, would haue me drinke of those liquors, which
" superficially do appeare to be sweete, afterwardes to
" make my life a hundred times more faynte and feble
" than now it is. Be you there sayde she? And I sweare
" vnto you by my faith not to faile to keepe my promise,
" to cause you speke alone with mistresse Zilia. Alas my
" stresse sayd the louer, I aske no more at your handes,
" that I may heare with myne owne eares the last sen-
" tence of hope or desiance. Well put your trust in me,
" sayd she, and take you no thought but for your health.
" For I am assured ere it be long, to cause hir to come
" vnto you, and then you shall see whether I am diligent
" in thes matters I take in hande, and to what effect
" myne attemptes do prone. We think already (quod he)
" that my sicknesse is not able to stay me from going to
" hir that is the cause of my debilitie, when it shal please
" hir to commaunde me, where soeuer it be, sith hir ma-
" ny remembrance will be of no lesse force in me, than the
" clerenesse of the sun beames is to euaporate the thick-
" nesse of the morning mistes. Euen so is she (if such be
" hir cheere to me) the brightnesse wherein my day shall
" take increase, or the night which eclipseth and obsc-
" reth the braidishing brightnesse of my first sunbeames.

With

Wlith that the Gentlewoman toke hir leaue of him, (who without let of his companion (immediately rose vp) and she went home attending opportunitie to speke to Zilia, whome two or three dayes after shée mette at Church, and they two beyng alone together in a Chapell, sayd vnto hir with fained teares, forced from hir eyes, and sending forth a cloude of sighes: Madame, I nothing doubt at al, but ỳ last letters which I brought you, made you conceiue some yll opinion of me, which I do gesse by the frowning face that euer sithens you haue borne me. But when you shall knowe the hurte which it hath done, I thinke you will not be so harde, and voyde of pitie, but with pacience to hearken that which I will say, and moued to pitie the state of a poore Gentleman, who by your meanes is in the pangs of death. Zilia, whiche til then neuer regarded the payne and sickneslle of the pacient, began to sorow, with such passion, not to graunt him further fauour than he had alreadie receiued, but to finde some meanes to ease him of his griefe, and then to giue him ouer for euer. And therfore she said vnto hir neighbor: Mistresse I thought that all these sutes had bene forgotten, vntil the other day, a Gentlemã prayed me to go sée the Lord of *Virle*, who told me as you do now, that he was in great danger. But seeing that he waxeth worse and worse, I will be ruled by you, beyng well assured of your honestie and vertue, and that you wil not aduise me to that which shall be hurtfull to myne honour. And when you shall do what you can, you shall winne so much as nothing, & yet shall ease him nothing at all, which wrongfully plaineth of my crueltie. For I do not purpose to do any priuate face with him, but that which shall be mete for an honest Gentlewoman, and such as a faithfull tutor of hir chastitie, may graunt to an honest and

" vertuous gentleman. His desire is none other (saide the
" gentlewoman) for he intreateth but your presence, to
" let you wit by word, ỳ he is redy to do the thing which
" you shall cõmand him. Alas, said Ziha, I know not how
" I shal be able to do the same: for it is impossible to go to
" him without suspition, which the common people wyl
" lightly conceiue of such light & familiar behauiour. And
" rather wold I die than aduẽture mine honor, hitherto
" conserued with great seueritie & diligẽce. And sith you
" say, ỳ he is in extremes of deth, for your sake I wil not
" stick to go vnto him, ỳ hereafter he may haue no cause
" to cõplaine of my rudenesse. I thank you (said the mes-
" sanger) for the good wil you beare me, & for the help you
" promise vnto the poore passionate gentleman, whome
" these newes wil bring on foote againe, & wil do you re-
" uerence for that good turne. Sith it is so (saide Ziha) to
" morow at none let him come vnto my house, where in
" a low chamber, he shall haue leisure to saye to me his
" minde. But I purpose by Gods helpe, to suffer him no
" further than that whiche I haue graunted. As it shall
" please you (sayd his neighbour) for I crane no more of
" you but that only fauour, which as a messanger of good
" newes, I goe to shew him, recommending my selfe in
" the meane time to your cõmaunde. And then she went
" vnto the pacient, whom she found walking by & downe
" the chamber, indifferently lusty of his persone, and of
" colour meetely fresshe for the tyme he lefte his bedde.
" Now when sir Philiberto sawe the messanger, he sayd
" vnto hir: And howe nowe mystresse, what newes?
" Is Ziha so stubborne as she was wonte to be? You
" may see his (sayde she) if to morowe at none you
" haue the hearte and dare goe vnto his house. Is it pos-
" sible (sayde he imbracynge hir) that you haue procu-
" red for me that good tourne, to deliuer me from the

miserie

miserie, wherein I haue so long tyme bene wrapte? »
My trustie and assured friende, all the dayes of my life »
I will remember that pleasure and benefite, and by »
acknowledgyng of the same, shall be readie to render »
lyke, when you please to commaunde, or else let me »
be counted the moste vnkynde and vncurteous Gen- »
tleman that euer made profession of loue: I wyll goe »
by Gods helpe to sée my Lresse Zalia, with intent to en- »
dure all trouble that Fortune shall send vnto me, pro- »
testing to vexe my self no more, although I sée my wi- »
shed happe otherwise to ende than my desert required »
and that good lucke hath cause to worke against me. »
But yet against Fortune to contend, is to war against »
my self, wherof the victorie can be but dãgerous. Thus »
he passed al the day, which seemed to last a thousand ye-
res to him, that thought to receiue some good intertain-
mẽt of his lady, in whose bonds he was catched before
he thought that womãs malice could so farre extende, or
display hir venomous sting. And truly that mã is void
of sense, whych suffreth him selfe so fondly to be char-
med, sith the peril of the abused ought to serue him for
example. They be to the masculine kinde a great con-
fusion, and vnwares for want of due forsight, the same
doth suffer it self to be bound & taken captiue by ẏ very
thing which hath no being to worke effecte, but by his
own fréwil. But this inchantmẽt which riseth of wo-
mens beautie, being to men a pleasant displeasure, I
thinke to be decked with that drawing vertue and al-
lurement, to punish and torment the faults of men, for
they once fed and baited with a fading fauor & poisoned
swetenesse, forget their owne perfection, and nousled
in their folishe fansies, séking felicitie and soueraigne
gylte, in the matter wherein dothe lie the summe of
their vnhappes. In like maner the vertuous and sham-
fast dames, haue not their eyes of mynd so blindfolde,

but

but that they ſée whervnto thoſe franke ſeruices, thoſe diſloyal faithes and vices coloured and ſtuffed with ſuperiour vertue do tende: and doubt not but thoſe louers do imitate the Scorpion, whoſe venome lyeth in hys taile, the ende of ſuch loue, beyng the ruine of good renoume, and the decay of former vertues. For which cauſe the heauens, the friende of their ſexe, haue gyuen them a prouidence, which thoſe gentle, vnſauoured louers terme to be rigour, that by thoſe meanes they may proue the deſert of a ſuter, both for their great contentation and praiſe, and for the reſt of them that do them ſeruice. This iuſte right and modeſte prouidence, that cruell Gentlewoman vſed not to the good and faithfull louer, the Lord of *Virle*, who was ſo humble a ſeruant of his vnkinde miſtreſſe, as his goodneſſe redounded to his great miſſehap and folie, as manifeſtly may appere by that which foloweth.

Sir Philiberto then thinkyng to haue gained much by hauing made promiſe, liberally to ſpeake to his Ladie, went vnto hir at the appointed time, ſo wel a contented man truely of that grace, as al the vnkindneſſe paſt was quite forgot. Nowe being come to the lodging of miſtreſſe Zilia, he found hir in the deuiſed place with one of hir maides wayting vpon hir. When ſhe ſaw him after a litle colde entertainement, ſhe begin to ſay vnto hym with fained ioy, that neuer moued hir within, theſe wordes: Nowe ſyr, I ſée that youre late ſickneſſe was not ſo ſtraunge as I was giuen to vnderſtande, for the good ſtate wherin I ſée you preſently to be, which from henceforth ſhall make me beleue, that the paſſions of men endure ſo long as the cauſe of their affections continue within their ſanſies, much like vnto looking glaſſes, which albeit they make the equalitie or excelle of things repreſented to apere, yet when the

thing

thing ſeene doth paſſe & vaniſh away, the formes alſo do
voide out of remembraunce, like the wind which light-
ly whorleth to & fro through the plain of ſome depe va-
ley. Ah madame anſwered he, how eaſie a matter it is
for the grieſeleſſe perſon to counterfait both ioy & diſſi-
mulatiõ in one very thing, which not only may forget
ẏ conceit that moueth his affections, but the obiect muſt
continually remaine in him, as painted and grauen in
his mind. Which truly as you ſay is a loking glaſſe, not
ſuch one for all that, as the counterfaited apparance of
repreſented formes hath like vigor in it, ẏ the firſt and
true *Idees* & ſhapes can ſo ſoone vaniſh without leauing
the trace of moſt perfect impreſſion of ſuch formes wiñ
the mind of him, which liueth vpon their only remem-
brance. In this mirror then (which by reaſon of ẏ hiddẽ
force I may wel ſay to be ardent & burning) haue I lo-
ked ſo wel as I can, thereby to forme ẏ ſuſtentation of
my good hap. But ẏ imagined ſhape not able to ſuppoꝛt
ſuche perfection, hath made the reſt of the body to faile
(weakned through ẏ minds paſſions) in ſuch wiſe as if
ẏ hope to recouer this better part halfe loſt, had not cu-
red both, ẏ whole decay of the one had followed, by thin-
king to giue ſome accõpliſhmẽt in the other. And if you
ſeeme Madame, attain to ſome good ſtate, impute not ẏ
ſame I beſeeche you, but to the good will & fauor which
I receiue by ſeing you in a priuate place, wherin I cõ-
ceiue greater ioy than euer I did, to ſay vnto you the
thing which you would not beleue, by wordes at other
times proceãding from my mouth, ne yet by aduertiſe-
mẽt ſignified in my writtẽ letters. Notwithſtãding I
think ẏ my Partyrdome is knowen to be ſuch as euery
man may perceiue ẏ the ſumme of my deſire is only to
ſerue and obey you, for ſo muche as I can receiue no
greater comfort, thã to be cõmaunded to make repaire

" to you, to let you know that I am hole (although giuen
" ouer by Phyſitians) whē you vouchſafed to employ me
" in your ſeruice, and thinke my ſelf raiſed vp againe to
" one hundred thouſande deathes at once, when it ſhall
" pleaſe you to haue pitie vpon the griefe & paſſion, which
" I endure. Alas what cauſeth my miſſehap to ſee ỹ beau-
" ty of yours to make the proofe of a crueltie ſo
" great? Haue you determined Madame thus to torment
" the poore gentleman that is ready to ſacrifice himſelf in
" your ſeruice, whē you ſhal depart to him ſome fauor of
" your grace? Do you thinke that my paſſions be diſſem-
" bled or fained? Alacke, alacke, the teares which I haue
" ſhed, the loſſe of luſt to eate and drinke, the wearie paſ-
" ſed nights, the long contrined ſléepeleſſe time, the reſt-
" leſſe turmoile of my ſelf, may well aſſure that my lo-
" all heart is of better merite than you eſtéme. Then
ſéeing hir to fire hir eyes vpon the grouñd, and thinking
that he had already wonne hir, he reinforced his fain
talke, & ſighing at ãts betwéene, not ſparing the teares
which trickled downe alongs his face, he proſecuted his
" talke, ſaying: Ah faire amongs the faireſt, would you
" blot that diuine beautie with a cruelty ſo furious, as to
" cauſe the death of him which loueth you better thā him
" ſelfe? Ah mine eyes, which hitherto haue bene ſerued
" with two liuely ſprings to expreſſe the hidden griefes
" within my heart, if your vnhappe be ſuch, that the only
" dame of your contemplatiõs, and cauſe of your teares,
" doe cauſe the humor to encreaſe, which hitherto in ſuch
" wiſe hath emptied my braine, that there is no more in
" me to moiſten your drouthe, I am content to endure
" the ſame, vntill my hearte ſhall féele the laſte pangue,
" depriuing thée of nouriſhment, and me of mine affec-
" ons. The Gentlewoman, whether ſhe was weary of
" that Oration, or rather doubted that in the end hir che-

ſtitie

stitie should receiue some assault through the dismesured passiō which she saw to endure, sayd vnto him with rigorous wordes: You haue talked and written inough, you haue indifferently well sollicited hir, which is throughly resolued by former minde, to kepe hir honor in ỳ worthy reputacion of degrée, wherin she maintaineth the same amongs the best. I haue hitherto suffred you to abuse my pacience, and haue vsed that familiaritie which they deserue not that goe aboute lewdly to assaile the chastitie of those women that pacientlye giue them eare, for the opinion they haue conceiued of some shadowing vertue of such folish suters. I now doe sée ỳ all your wordes doe tend to beguile me, and to depriue me of that you cannot giue me: which shall be a warning for me hencefoorth, more wisely to loke about my businesse and more warely to take hede of the charmes of suche as you be, to the ende that I by bending mine open eares, be not both surprised and ouercome with your enchauntments. I pray you then for conclusion, and the last sentence of my will, that I heare no more these wordes, neither from you, nor yet from the Ambassadour that commeth from you. For I neither will, ne yet pretend to depart to you any other fauoure than that which I haue enlarged for your comfort: but rather do protest, that so long as you abide in this Countrey, that I will neither goe forth in streate, nor suffer any Gentleman to haue accesse into this place except he be my neare kinsman. Thus for your importune sute. I wil chastise my self, for hearkening vnto you in those requests which duety & womanhode ought not to haue suffred. And if you do procéde in your folly, I wil séeke redresse according to your desert, which til now I haue deferred, thinking ỳ time would haue put out the ardent heat of your folly and wanton youth.

The infortunate Lord of *Virle*, hearing this sharpe sentence, remained long time without speach, so astonned as if he had bene falne from the clouds. In the end for all his despaire he sayd to Zilia with countenance indifferent mery: "With it is so madame, that you take "from me all hope to be your perpetual seruaunt, & that "without other comfort or contentation I must nedes "depart your presence, neuer (perchaunce) hereafter to "speake vnto you again, yet be not so squeimish of your "beautie, and cruell towards your languishing louer, as "to deny him a kisse for a pledge of his last farewell. I "demaund nothing here in secrete, but that honestly you "may performe openly. It is all that alone which I crane "at your hands in recompense of all the trauails, paines, "& afflictions suffred for your sake. The malitious dame "full of rancor and spitefull rage sayd vnto him: I shall "see by and by sir, if that loue which you vaunt to beare "me, be so vehement as you seeme to make. Ah Madame "(sayd the vnaduised louer) commaund only, and you shal "see with what deuotion I wil performe your wil, were "it that it should cost me the price of my proper life. You "shall haue (quod she) the kisse which you require of me "if you will make promise, and sweare by the fayth of a "Gentleman, to doe the thing which I shall commaund, "without fraud, couin, or other delay. Madame (sayd the "ouer wilfull louer) I take God to witnesse that of the "thing which you shall commaund I will not leaue one "iote vndone, but shall be executed to the vttermost of "your request and will. She hearing him sweare with "so good affection, sayd vnto him smiling: Now then vp- "on your othe which I beleue, and assured of your ver- "tue and Noble nature, I wil also performe and kepe "my promise: And saying so, she embraced him & kissed him very louingly. The poore gentleman not knowing how

howe dearely he had brought that disfauorable fauour, and bitter sweetenesse, helde hir a whyle betweene his armes, doublyng kisse vpon kysse, with such pleasure, as his soule thought to flie vp to the heauens with that impoisoned baulme which he sucked in the sweete and sugred breath of his cruel mistresse: who vndoyng hir selfe out of hir louers armes, sayde vnto hym: Sith
» that I haue made the first disclosure bothe of the pro-
» mise and the effect therof, it behoueth that you perform
» that whiche resteth, for the full accomplishment of the
» same. Come on hardily (saith he) ¶ God knoweth how
» spedily you shal be obeyd. I wil then (quod she) ¶ com-
» maund you vpon your promised faith, ỳ frō this prefēt
» time, vntil ỳ space of thrée yeres be expired, you speake
» to no liuing person for any thing that shal happen vnto
» you, nor yet expresse by tongue, by sounde of worde,
» or speach, the thyng you want or desyre, otherwise if
» you shall doe, I will neuer trust liuing man for youre
» sake, but will publishe your fame to be villanous, and
» your person periured, and a promise breaker. I leaue
» for you to thinke whether this vnhappie louer were a-
mazed or not, to heare such a straunge requeſt and cō-maundement so vniust, and therwithall the difficultie in the performance. Notwithstanding he was so stout of heart, and so religious an obseruer of his othe, that at that very time he began to do the part which she had commaunded, playing Pumchaunce, and vsing other signes, that he would do his duetie, accordynge to hir demaund. Thus after his right humble reuerence vnto hir, he went home, wher fayning that he had lost his speach by meanes of a Catarre or reume which distilled from his braine, he determined to forsake his countrey vntil the time of his penance was expired. Wherfore settyng staye in his affaires, and prouidyng for

his traine, he made hym redie to depart. Notwithstanding, he wrote a Letter vnto Zilia, before he toke his iourney, which was towards the countrey of *France*, that in olde tyme hathe bene the solace and refuge of the miserable, as well for the pleasantnesse and temperature of the ayre, the greate wealthe and the abundaunce of all thyngs, as for the curtesie, gentlenesse, and familiaritie of the people: whyche maye compare with any other Nation vppon the earth. Nowe the Letter of Philiberto, fell into the handes of Ladie Zilia, by meanes of hys Page instructed for that purpose: who aduertised hir of the departure of his mayster, and of the despaire wherein hee was. Whereof shee was somewhat sorye, and offended: but yet puttyng on hir aunciente seueritie, toke the Letters, and breakyng the seale, found that which followeth.

THE very euill that causeth mine anoy
The matter is that bredes to me my ioy,
Which doth my wofull heart full sore displease,
And yet my hap and hard yll lucke doth ease.
I hope one day when I am franke and free,
To make hir do the thing that pleaseth me,
Whereby gaine I shall some pleasaunt gladnesse,
To supply mine vndeserued sadnesse,
The like whereof no mortall Dame can giue
To louing man that here on earth doth liue.
This great good turne which I on hir pretende,
Of my conceites the full desired ende,
Proceedes from thee (O cruell mystres mine)
Whose froward heart hath made me to resigne
The full effect of all my libertie
(To please and ease thy fonde fickle fansie)

My

My vſe of ſpeach, in ſilence to remaine:
To euery wight a double helliſh paine.
Whoſe faith hadſt thou not wickedly abuſde
No ſtreſſe of paine for thee had bene refuſde,
Who was to thee a truſtie ſeruaunt ſure,
And for thy ſake all daungers would endure.
For which thou haſt defaced thy good name,
And therevnto procurde eternall ſhame.
¶ That roaring tempeſt huge which thou haſt made me felt,
The raging ſtormes whereof, well nere my heart hath ſwelt
By paineſull pangs: Whoſe waltering waues by troubled skies
And thouſand blaſtes of winde that in thoſe ſeas do riſe
Do promiſe ſhipwracke ſure of that thy ſayling Barke
When after weather cleare doth riſe ſome tempeſt darke.
For eyther I or thou which art of Tygres kinde,
In that great raging gulfe ſome daunger ſure ſhalt finde,
Of that thy nature rude the deſt'nies en'mies be,
And thy great ouerthrow full well they do foreſee.
The heauens vnto my eſtate no doubt great friendſhip ſhoe
And do ſeeke wayes to ende, and finiſh all my woe.
This penance which I beare by yelding to thy heſt
Great ſtore of ioyes ſhall heape, and bring my minde to reſt.
And when I am at eaſe amids my pleaſaunt happes,
Then ſhall I ſee thee fall, and ſnarle in Fortunes trappes.
Then ſhall I ſee thee banne and curſe the wicked time
Wherin thou madeſt me gulpe ſuch draught of poyſoned wine.
By which thy mortall cuppe, I am the offred wight,
A vowed ſacrifice, to that thy cruell ſpight.
Wherefore my hoping heart, doth hope to ſee the daie,
That thou for ſilence newe, to me ſhalt be the praie.
¶ O bleſſed God moſt iuſt, whoſe worthy laude and praiſe
With vttered ſpeach in Skies aloft I dare not once to riſe,
And may not wel pronoũce & ſpeak what ſuffrance I ſuſtain,
Ne yet what death I do indure, whiles I in life remaine.

Take

Take vengeance on that traitreſſe rude, afflict hir corps with woe,
Thy holy arme redreſſe hir fault, that ſhe no more do ſoe.
My reaſon hath not ſo farre ſtrayed, but I may hope and truſt
To ſee hir for hir wickedneſſe, be whipt with plague moſt iuſt:
In the meane while, great hauineſſe my ſenſe and ſoule doth bite,
And ſhaking feuer vexe my corps for grief of hir deſpite.
My mynde now ſet at libertie, from thee (O cruell dame)
Doth giue defiance to thy wrath, and to thy curſed name,
Proclamyng mortall warre on thee, vntill my tongue vntide
Shall ioy to ſpeake to Zilia faſt wepyng by my ſide.
The heuẽs forbid, that canſeleſſe wrõg abrode ſhold make his vaũt,
Or that an vndeſerued death, forgetfull tombe ſhoulde haunt:
But that in written boke and verſe their names ſhould euer liue,
And eke their wicked dedes ſhould die, and vertues ſtill reuiue.
So ſhall the pride and glorie both, of hir be puniſht right,
By length of yeares, and tract of time. And I by vertues might
Full recompenſe therby ſhall haue, and ſtande ſtill in good fame,
And ſhe like caitiſe wretche ſhall liue, to hir long laſting ſhame.
Whoſe fond regarde of beauties grace, contemned hath the force
Of my true loue full fixt in hir: hir heart voide of remorſe,
Eſteemed it ſelfe right fooliſhely, and me abuſed ſtill,
Uſurping my good honeſt faith and credite at hir will.
Whoſe loyall faith doth reſt in ſoule, and therin ſtill ſhall bide,
Vntill in filthie ſtincking graue, the earth my corps ſhall hide.
Then ſhal that ſoule fraught with that faith, to heuẽs make his re-
And reſt amõg the heuenly rout, bedeckt with ſacred aire. (paire,
And thou for thy great crueltie, as God aboue doth know,
With rufull voice ſhalt weepe and waile for thy great ouerthrow,
And when thou wouldeſt fain purge thy ſelf for that thy wretched
No kindneſſe ſhal to thee be done, extreme ſhal be thy mede (dede
And where my tongue doth want his will, thy miſchief to diſplay
My hande and penne ſupplies the place, and ſhall do ſo alway.
For ſo thou haſt conſtrainde the ſame by force of thy behеſt:
In ſilence ſtill my tong to kepe, t'accompliſhe thy requeſt.

Adieu

Adieu, farewell my tormenter, thy friend that is full mute,
Doth bid thee farewell once againe, and so he ends his sute.

He that liueth only, to be reuenged of thy cruelty,
Philiberto of Virle.

Zilia like a disdainfull woman made but a iest at the letters and complaints of the infortunat louer, saying that she was very well content with his seruice. And that when he should performe the time of his probation, she should see if he were worthy to be admitted into the felowship of them which had made sufficient proofe of the order and rule of loue. In the meane time Philiberto rode by great iourneys (as we haue sayd before) towards the goodly and pleasant Countrey of *Fraunce*, wherein Charles the seuenth that time did raigne, who miraculously (but giue the French man leaue to flatter & speake vvel of his ovvne Countrey, according to the flattering and vaunting nature of that Nation) chased ỹ Englishmen out of his lands and auncient Patrimonie in the yeare of our Lord. 1451. This king had his campe then warfaring in *Gascoine*, whose lucke was so fortunate as he expeld his enimies, and left no place for thẽ to fortifie in the sayd Countrey, which incouraged the king to folow that good occasion, and by prosecuting his victorious fortune, to profligat out of *Normandie*, & to dispatch himself of that enimy, into whose handes and seruitude the Coũtrey of *Guiene* was rightly deliuered and victoriously wonne and gottẽ by the Englishmen. The king then being in his Campe in *Normandie*, the *Piedmont* Gentleman the Lord of *Virle* aforesayd, repaired thereunto to serue him in his person, where hée was well knowne of some Captaines which had seene him at other times, and in place where worthy Gentlemen are wont to frequent, and in the Duke of *Sa-*

noyes court, which the Frenchmen did very much hate, bicause the Earle of *Piedmont* that then was Duke of *Sauoy* had maried Iolanta the second daughter of Charles the seuenth. These Gentlemen of *Fraunce* were very much sory for the misfortune of the Lord of *Virle*, and knowing him to be one of the braueſt and luſtieſt men of armes that was in his time within the Country of *Piedmont*, preſented him before the King, commending vnto his grace the vertue, gentleneſſe, and valiance of the man of warre: Who after he had done his reuerence according to his duetie, which he knew ful well to doo, declared vnto him by ſigns that he was come for none other intent, but in thoſe warres to ſerue his maieſty: whom the king heard and thankfully receiued, aſſuring himſelf and promiſing very much of the dumbe Gentilmã for reſpect of his perſonage which was comely and wel proportioned, and therfore repreſented ſome force and great dexteritie: and that which made the king the better to fantaſie ỹ gentlemã, was ỹ report of ſo many worthy mẽ which extolled euen to ỹ heanẽs ỹ prowes of ỹ *Piedmont* knight. Wherof he gaue aſſured teſtimony in ỹ aſſault which ỹ king made to deliuer *Roane* the chief Citie & defenſe of all *Normandie* in ỹ yeare of our Lord. 1451. wher Philiberto behaued himſelf ſo valiantly as he was ỹ firſt ỹ moũted vpon ỹ wals, & by his dexteritie & inuincible force, made way to the ſoldiers in the breche, wherby a litle while after they entred & ſacked ỹ enimies, driuing thẽ out of ỹ Citie, & wherin not long before, ỹ is to ſay. 1430. ỹ Duke of Somerſet cauſed loane ỹ *Pucelle* to be burnt. The King aduertiſed of ỹ ſeruice of the dũbe Gentleman, wold recõpenſe him according to his deſert, and bicauſe he knewe him to be of a good houſe, he made him a Gentlemã of his chãbre, and gaue him a good penſion, promiſing him moreouer to cõtinue his liberality, whẽ he ſhold ſe him proſecute in time to

come

come, ẏ towardnesse of seruice which he had so haply be-
gon. The dūke Gentleman thanking the king very hū-
bly, both for ẏ present princely reward, & for promise in
time to come, lifted vp his hād to heauē, as taking God
to witnesse of the faith, which inuiolable he promised to
kepe vnto his Prince: which he did so earnestly, as har-
dely he had promised, as well appered in a skirmish be-
twene ẏ French, & their auncient enimies the English
men, on whose side was ẏ valiāt & hardy Captain the
Lord Talbot, who hath eternized his memory in ẏ vic-
tories obtained vpon ẏ people, which sometimes made
Europa & *Asia* to trēble, & appalled ẏ monstrous & war-
like Countrey of *Affrica*. In this conflict the *Piedmont*
knight ioyned wᵗ the lord Talbot, against whō he had so
happy successe, as vpō ẏ shock & incoūtre, he ouerthrew
both man & horse, which caused ẏ discōfiture of ẏ Eng-
lish mē: who after they had horsed again their captain,
fled amain, leauing the field despred wᵗ dead bodies and
blushed of their cōpanios. This victory recouered such
courage & boldnesse to ẏ Frēch, as from ẏ time forth the
English mē began wᵗ their places and forts to lose also
their hearts to defēd themselues. The king exceedingly
wel cōtented with the prowesse & valiāce of the dumbs
gentlemā, gaue him for seruice past the charge of v. C.
men of armes, & indued him with some possessions, at-
tending better fortune to make him vnderstand howe
much ẏ vertue of valiance ought to be rewarded & che-
rished by Princes that be aided in their necessitie with
the diligence of such a vertuous & Noble Gentleman.
In like manner when a Prince hath something good in
himself, he can do no lesse but cherish ẏ which resēbleth
himself by Princely conditions, sith ẏ vertue in what
so euer place it taketh rote, can not chose but produce
good frute, ẏ vse wherof far surmounts them all which
aproche ẏ place, where these first seedes were thrown.

CCCc.ij. Certaine

Certaine dayes after, the king desirous to reioyce his Knights and Captaines that were in his train, and desirous to extinguish quite the wofull time which so long space helde *Fraunce* in fearful silence, caused a triumph of Turney to be proclaimed within the City of *Rome*, wherin the Lord of *Virle* was deemed and esteemed one of the best, which further did increase in him the good will of ỹ king, in such wise as he determined to procure his health, and to make him haue his speache againe. For he was very sory that a gentleman so valiãt was not able to expresse his minde, which if it might be had, in councel would serue the state of common wealth, as well as the force and valor of his body had til then serued for defense and recouery of his places. And for that purpose he made Proclamation by sound of Trumpet throughout the Coũtreis aswel within his owne kingdome, as the regions adioyning vpon the same, ỹ who so euer could heale that dumbe Gentleman, shold haue ten thousande Frankes for recompense. A man might haue then seene thousandes of Physitians assembled in field, not to skirmish with the English mẽ, but to combate for reward in recouery of the Pacients speache, & begon to make such warre against those ten thousand Franks, as the King was afraide that the cure of that disease could take no effect: and for that cause ordained furthermore, that who so euer would take in hande to heale the dumbe, and would not kepe promise within a certaine prefixed time, shold pay the sayd summe, or for default thereof should pledge his head in gage. A man might then haue seene those Physicke maisters, aswell beyond ỹ Mountaines, as in *Fraunce* it self, retire home againe, bleeding at the nose, cursing with great impiety their Patrones, Galen, Hypocrates and Auicen, and blamed with more than reprochful words, the Arte wher-

with

with they aſhed for honor and richeſſe. This bruite was ſpred ſo far, and babbling Fame had already by mouth of Trumpe publiſhed ỹ ſame throughout the moſt part of the Prouinces, Townes, and Cities neare and far off to *Fraunce*, in ſuch wiſe as a man wold haue thought that the two yong men (which once in the time of the *Macedonian* warres broughte tidings to Vatinius that the King of *Macedon* was taken by the Conſull Paulus Emilius) had bene vagant and wãdering abrode to cary newes of the Kings edicte for the healing of the Lord of *Virle*. Wlhich cauſed that not only the bruite of the Proclamation, but alſo the credite and reputation wherin the ſayd Lord was with the *French* King, came euen to *Montcall*, and paſſed from mouth to mouth, til at length Zilia the principall cauſe thereof vnderſtode the newes, which reioyſed hir very much, ſeeing ỹ firme amitie of the dumbe Lord, and the ſincere faith of him in a promiſe vnworthy to be kept, for ſo much as, wher fraude and feare beare ſwinge in hearts of men, religion of promiſe, ſpecially the place of the giuen fayth, giueth ouer his force and reuolteth, and is no more bound but to that which by good will he would obſerue. Now thought ſhe, thought? nay rather ſhe aſſured hir ſelfe, that the Gentleman for all his wrytten letter was ſo ſurpriſed with hir loue, and kindled with hir fire in ſo ample wiſe, as when he was at *Montcall*: and therfore determined to goe to *Paris*, not for deſire ſhe had to ſee hir pacient and penetenciarie, but rather for couetiſe of the ten thouſand Frãks, wherof already ſhe thought hir ſelfe aſſured, making good accompt that the dumbe Gentleman ſeeing himſelf diſcharged by hir of his promiſe, for gratifying of hir, wold make no ſtay to ſpeak, to the intent ſhe might beare away both the praiſe and money which all others had failed till that time. Thus

you ſee that ſhe whome honeſt amitie and long ſeruice could little induce to cõpaſſion and deſire to giue ſome eaſe vnto hir moſt earneſt louer, yelded hir ſelfe to couetous gain and gredineſſe for to encreaſe hir richeſſe. O curſſed hunger of Money, how long wilt thou thus blinde the reaſon and ſpirites of men? Ah perilous gulfe how many haſt thou ouerwhelmed within thy bottõleſſe throte, whoſe glory, had it not bene for thee, had ſurpaſſed ỳ clouds, and bene equal with the brightneſſe of the Sunne, where now they be obſcured with the thicknеſſe of thy fogges and palpable darkneſſe. Alas the fruites which thou bringeſt forth for all thine outwarde apparance, conduce no felicitie to them that be thy poſſeſſors, for the dropſey that is hidden in their mind, which maketh them ſo much the more thirſty, as they drinke oft in that thirſty Fountaine, is cauſe of their alteration: and moſt miſerable is that inſaciable deſire the Couetous haue to glut their appetite, which can receiue no contentation. This only Couetouſneſſe ſomtimes procured the death of the great and rich *Romane* Craſsus, who through Gods punithment fell into the hands of the *Perſians*, for violating and ſacking the Temple of God that was in *Hieruſalem*. Sextimulcus burning with Couetouſneſſe and gredineſſe of money, did once cut of the head of his patron and defender Caius Gracchus the *Tribune* of the people, incited by the Tyrant, which tormenteth the hearts of the couetous. I will not ſpeake of a god number of other examples in people of all kindes, and diuers nations, to come againe to Zilia. Who forgetting hir vertue, the firſt ornament and ſhining quality of hir honeſt behauior, ſcorned not the wearineſſe and trauaile of way, to commit hir ſelf to the danger of loſſe of honor, and to yeld to the mercy of one, vnto whom ſhe had done ſo great iniury,

All

as hir conſcience (if ſhe hadde not loſt hir right ſenſe) ought to haue made hir thinke that hee was not without deſire to reuenge ỹ wrõg vniuſtly done vnto him, & ſpecially being in place where ſhe was not knowne, and he greatly honoured and eſteemed, for whoſe loue that Proclamation and ſearche of Phyſicke was made and ordained. Zelia then hauing put in order hir affairs at home, departed from *Montcall*, and paſſing the Mountes, arriued at *Paris*, at ſuch time as greateſt diſpaire was had of the dumbe Knights recouery. When ſhe was arriued there, within fewe dayes after ſhe inquired for them that had the charge to entertaine ſuch as came, and would take vpon them the cure of the ſayd pacient. For (ſayd ſhe) if there be any man in the world, through whome the Knight may get his health, I hope in God that I am ſhe which ſhal haue the praiſe. Whereof the Commiſſaries deputed hereunto, were aduertiſed, who cauſed the faire Phyſician to come before them, and aſked hir if it were ſhe, that wold take vpon hir to cure this dumbe Gentleman. To whome ſhe anſweared, my maſters it hath pleaſed God to reueale vnto me a certain ſecrete very proper and meete for the cure of his malady, wherewithall if the pacient will, I hope to make him ſpeake ſo well, as he did theſe two yeres paſt & more. I ſuppoſe ſayd one of the Commiſſaries, that you be not ignorant of the circumſtãces of the Kings Proclamation. I know ful (quod ſhe) the effect therof, & therfore do ſay vnto you, that I wil loſe my life if I doe not accompliſh that which I doe promiſe, vpon condition that I may haue licence to tary with him alone, becauſe it is of no leſſe importance than his health. It is no maruell ſayde the Commiſſary, conſidering your beauty, which is ſufficiẽt to frame a new tong in the moſt dumbe perſon, ỹ is vnder the

heauens.

" heauens. And therefore do your indeuor, assuring you,
" that you shall doe a great pleasure vnto the King, and
" besides the prayse which you shall acquire, gette the
" good will of the dumbe gentleman which is the most ex-
" cellent man of the world, and therefore shall be so wel
" recompensed, as you shal haue good cause to be content-
" ted with the Kings liberalitie. But (to the intent you
" be not deceiued) the meaning of the Proclamation is,
" that within .xv. dayes after you begin ỳ cure, you must
" make him hole, or else to satisfie the paines ordained in
" the same. Wherunto she submitted hir self, blinded by
Auarice and presumptiõ, thinking that she had like po-
wer ouer the Lord of *Virle*, as when she gaue him that
sharpe and cruel penance. These conditions promised,
the Commissaries went to aduertise the Knight, how a
Gentlewoman of *Piedmont* was of purpose come into
Fraunce to helpe him: whereof he was maruellously a-
stonned. Now he would neuer haue thought that Zila
had borne him so great good will, as by abasing the pride
of hir corage, would haue come so farre to ease ỳ grief
of him, whome by such great torments she had so won-
derfully persecuted. He thought againe that it was the
Gentlewoman his neighboure which sometimes had
done hir endeuor to helpe him, and had prouoked Zila
to absolue him of his faithe, and acquite him of his pro-
mise. Musing vpon the diuersitie of these things, & not
knowing wherupon to settle his iudgement, the depu-
ties commaunded that the woman Phylitian shold be
brought to speake with the patient. Which was done:
and brought in place, the Commissaries presently with
drew themselues. The Lord of *Virle* seing his enimie
come before him, whom sometimes he loued very dere-
ly, iudged by and by the cause wherefore she came, that
onely auarice and greedy desire of gaine had rather pro-

cured

cured hir to passe the mountains trauail, than due and honest amitie, wherwith she was double bound through his perseuerance and humble seruice, wherby hee was estraunged of himselfe, as he fared like a shadowe and image of a dead man. Wherfore callyng to mynd the rigour of his Ladie, hir incimilitie and fonde commandement, so long time to forbidde his speache, the loue which once he bare hir, with a vehement desire to obey hir, sodainly was so coled and qualified, that loue was turned into hatred, and will to serue hir, into an appetite of reuenge: wherupon he determined to vse that present fortune, and to playe his parte with hir, vpon whom he had so foolishly doted, and to pay hir with that mōney wherwith she made him feele the fruites of vnspeakable crueltie, to giue example to fonde and presumptuous dames, how they did abuse Gentlemen of such degree whereof the Knyght was, and that by hauing regarde to the merite of such personages, they be not so prodigall of themselues, as to set their honoure in sale for vile reward and filthy mucke: which was so constantly conserued and defended by this Gentlewoman, against the assaultes of the good grace, beautie, valour, and gentlenesse, of that vertuous and honest suter. And notwithstanding, in these dayes we see some to resist the amitie of those that loue, for an opinion of a certaine vertue, which they thinke to be hidden within the corps of excellent beautie, who afterwards do set them selues to sale to him ỳ giueth most, and offreth greatest reward. Such do not deserue to be placed in ranke of chast Gentlewomen, of whom they haue no smack at all, but amongs the throng of strumpets kynde, that haue some sparke and outward shew of loue: for she which loueth money, and hunteth after gaine, will make no bones, by treasons trap to betray

that vnhappie man, which shall yelde himselfe to hir: hir loue tending to vnsensible things, and such in deede, as make the wysest sorte to falsifie their faithe, and sell the righte and equitie of their Judgemente. The Lorde of *Virle*, seeing Zilia then in his companie, and almost at his commaundement, fayned as though he knew hir not, by reason of his small regarde and lesse intertainment shewed vnto hir at hir first comming: Which gretly made the poore Gentlewoman to muse. Neuertheless she making a vertue of necessitie, and seeing hir selfe to bee in that place, from whence she coulde not departe, without the losse of hir honor and lyfe, purposed to proue Fortune, and to committe hir selfe vnto his mercie, for all the mobilitie whiche the auncient attribute vnto Fortune. Wherfore shutting fast the doore, shee went vnto the Knight, to whom she spake these wordes: "And what is the matter (sir knight) "that now you make so litle accompte of your owne Zi- "lia, who in tymes past you sayde, had greater power "and authoritie ouer you? What is the cause that mo- "ueth you herevnto? Haue you so sone forgotten hir? "Behold me better, and you shal see hir before you, that "is able to acquite you of youre promise, and therefore "prayeth you to pardon hir committed faultes done in "tymes past by abusing so cruelly the honest and firme "loue which you bare hir. I am she, which through follie "and temeritie did stoppe your mouth, and tied vp your "tong. Giue me leaue I beseeche you, to open the same "agayne, and to breake the lyne, which letteth the li- "bertie of your speache. She seeyng that the dumbe Gentleman woulde make no aunswere at all, but Mumme, and shewed by signes, that hee was not a- ble to vndoe his tong, weepyng began to kysse hym, imbrace

imbrace hym, & make much of him, in such wyse, as he whiche once studied to make eloquent orations before his Ladie, to induce hir to pitie, forgat then those ceremonies, and spared his talke, to shewe hymselfe to bée suche one as shée had made at hir commaundement, mused and devysed altogether vpon the execution of that, whiche sometyme hée hadde so paynefully pursued, both by words and continuall seruice, and coulde profite nothyng. Thus waked agayne by hir, whiche once had mortified hys mynde, allayed to renue in hir that, whyche long tyme before, séemed to bée a slepe. Shee more for feare of losse of lyfe, or the price of the reward, than for any true or earnest loue, suffered hym to receyue that of hir, which the long suter desireth to obtaine of his mistresse. They lyued in this ioy and pleasure the space of. xv. dayes ordayned for the alligned terme of hir cure, wherein the poore Gentlewoman was not able to conuert hir offended frend, to speake, although she humbly prayed hym to shewe so muche fauour, as at least she might go frée, from eyther losse: tellyng hym howe litle regarde shée hadde to hir honour, to come so farre to doe hym pleasure, and to discharge hym of his promise. Muche other gay and lowlye talke shée hadde to moue the Knyghte to take no regarde of that she sayde, for he determined to bryng hir in suche feare, as he had bene heaped full of beauinesse, whiche came to passe at the expired time. For the cõmissaries seing that their pacient spake not at all, summoned the gentlewomã to pay the penaltie pronounced in the edict, or else to lose hir lyfe. Alas, howe bytter séemed this drinke to thys poore Gentlewoman, who not able to dissemble the griefe that prest hir on euery side, beganne to say: Ah I wretched and

" Caitife woman, by thinkyng to deceiue an other, hath
" sharpened the swoorde to finishe mine owne life. Was
" it not enough for me to vse such crueltie towardes this
" myne enimie, which moste cruelly in double wise ta-
" keth reuenge, but must I come to be thus tangled in
" his snares, and in the hands of him, who inioying the
" spoiles of mine honour, will with my life, deprime me
" of my fame, by making me a common fable, to all po-
" steritie in time to come? O what hap had I that I was
" not rather deuoured by some furious and cruell beast,
" when I passed the mountains, or else that I brake not
" my neck, down some steepe & headlong hil, of those high
" and hideous mountaines, rather than to be set here in
" stage, a pageant to the whole citie to gaze vpon, for en-
" terprising a thing so fondely, done of purpose by hym,
" whome I haue offended. Ah Signior Philiberto, what re-
" uill rewardest thou for pleasures receiued, and fauors
" felt in hir, whom thou didst loue somuch, as to make hir
" die such shamefull and dreadfull death. But O God, I
" know that it is for worthie guerdon of my foolishe and
" wicked life. Ah disloyaltie and fickle trust, is it possi-
" ble that thou be harbored in the hearte of hym, whiche
" hadde the brute to bee the moste loyall and curteous
" Gentleman of his countrey? Alas, I see well nowe
" that I must die through mine only simplicitie, and that
" I muste sacrifice myne honoure to the rigour of hym,
" which with two aduantages, taketh ouer cruel reuẽge
" of the litle wrong, wherwith my chastitie touched him
" before. As she thus had finished hir complaint, one came
for hir to cary hir to prison, whether willingly she wil
for that she was already resolued in desire, to liue no
longer in that miserie. The gentlemã contented with
that payne, and not able for to dissemble the griefe,
whyche hee conceyued for the passion which he sawe

hys

his welbeloued to endure, the enioying of whome re-
nued the heate of the flames forepaſt, repaired to the
kyng, vnto whom to the great pleſure of the ſtanders
by, and exceding reioyſe of his maieſtie (to heare him
ſpeake) he tolde the whole hiſtorie of the loue betwene
him and cruell Zilia, the cauſe of the loſſe of his ſpech,
and the ſumme of his reuenge. By the faith of a Gen- »
tleman (ſayd the King) but here is ſo ſtraunge an hi- »
ſtorie as euer I heard: and verily your faith and loyal- »
tie is no leſſe to be praiſed and cõmended than the cru- »
eltie and couetouſneſſe of the woman worthye of re- »
proch and blame, which truly deſerueth ſome greuous »
and notable iuſtice, if ſo be ſhe were not able to ren- »
der ſome apparant cauſe for the couerture and hidyng »
of hir follie. Alas ſir (ſayde the Gentleman) pleaſeth »
your maieſtie to deliuer hir (although ſhe be worthy of »
punithment) and diſcharge the reſte that be in priſon »
for not recouerie of my ſpeache, ſith my onely helpe »
did reſt, either at hir comandement which had bounde »
me to that wrong, or elſe in the erpired time, for which »
I had pledged my faith. To whiche requeſt, the King »
very willingly agreed, greatly praiſyng the wiſedome,
curteſie, and aboue all the fidelitie of the lord of *Virle*,
who cauſing his penitenciarie to be ſette at libertie,
kept hir compante certaine dayes, as well to feaſt and
banket hir, in thoſe landes and poſſeſſions whiche the
kings maieſtie had liberally beſtowed vpon him, as to
ſaciate his appetite with the frutes whereof he had ſa-
noured the taſt when he was voluntarily dumbe. Zilia
founde that ſauour ſo pleaſaunt, that in a maner ſhe
counted hir impriſonment happie, and hir trauel reſt,
by reaſon that diſtreſſe made hir then feele more liuely
the force and pleaſure of libertie, whiche ſhe had not
founde to be ſo pleaſant, had ſhe not receiued the erpe-

rience and pain therof. Marke here how fortune dea-
leth with them whiche trusting in their force, despise
(in respect of that which they do them selues) the litle
porciõ that they iudged to be in others. If the vaingla-
rie and arrogant presumption of a chastitie impregna-
ble had not deceiued this Gentlewoman, if the sacred
hunger of golde had not blinded hir, it coulde not haue
bene knowne, wherin hir incontinencie consisted, not
in the minion delightes and alluring toyes of a passio-
nate louer, but in ỹ couetous desire of filling hir purse,
and hypocritical glorie of praise among men. And not-
withstanding, ye see the gaine which she made, to serue
hir turne nothing at all, but to the perpetuall reproch
of hir name, and raised a slaunder, such as yll speakers
and enimies of womenkind, do burden that sexe with
all. But the fault of one which by hir owne presump-
tion deceiued hir selfe, ought not to obscure the glorie
of so many vertuous, faire and honest dames, who by
their chastitie, liberalitie and curtesie, be able to deface
the blot of folie, couetousnesse, and crueltie of this gen-
tlewoman here, and of all other that do resemble hir.
Who taking leaue of hir louer, went home agayne to
Piedmont, not without an ordinarie griefe of hearte,
which serued hir for a spurre to hir cõscience, and con-
tinually forced hir to thinke, that the force of man is
lesse thã nothing, where god worketh not by his grace,
which failyng in vs, oure workes can sauor but of the
stench & corruption of our nature, wherin it tumbleth
and tolleth like the Sow that walowreth in the puddle
full of filth and dirte. And bicause ye shall not thinke
in general termes of womans chastitie and discretion,
that I am not able to vouche some particular exãple of
later yeares, I meane to tel you of one, that is not on-
ly to be praysed for hir chastitie in the absence of hir

husband

husband, but also of hir corage and policie in chastizing & vaunting natures of two *Hungarian* lords that made their braggs they would winne hir to their willes, and not onely hir, but also al other, what soeuer they wers of womankinde.

A Lady of Boeme

¶ Two Barons of HVNGARIE assuring them selues to obtaine their sute made to a faire Ladie of BOEME, receyued of hir a straunge and maruellous repulse, to their great shame and infamie, cursseyng the time that euer they aduentured an enterprise so foolish.

The. xxviij. Nouel.



Enelope, the wofull wife of absent Vlisses, in hir tedious lõging for the home returne of that hir aduenturous knight, assailed wyth carefull hearte amidde the troupe of amorous suters, and within the bowels of hir royal palace, deserued no greter fame for hir valiãt encountries & stoute defense of the inuincible and Adamante forte of hir chastitie, than thys *Boeme* Ladie doth

doth by reſiſting two mighty barons, that canoned the walles and well mured rampart of hir pudicitie. For being threatned in his Princes courte, whether all the well trained crew of eche ſcience and profeſſion, dyde make repaire, beyng menaced by Venus bande, whiche not onely ſummoned hir forte, and gaue hir a camiſado by thick Al'Armes, but alſo forced the place by fierce aſſaulte, ſhe like a couragious and politike captaine, gaue thoſe braue and luſtie ſouldiers, a foule repulſe, and in ende taking them captines, urged them for their victuals to fall to womans toyle, more ſhamefull than ſhameleſſe Sardanapalus amidde his amorous troupe. I neede not aggrauate by length of preamble, the fame of this, *Boeme* Lady, nor yet briefly recoũt the triumph hir victorie: bayne it were alſo by glorious hymnes to chaunt the wiſedome of hir beleuyng Make, who not careleſſe of hir lyfe, employed hys care to ſerue hys Prince, and by ſeruice atchieued the cauſe that drawe him to a ſouldiers ſtate. But yet for truſtleſſe faith in the prime conference of his future porte, he conſulted with Pollaco, for a compounded drugge, to eaſe his ſuſpect minde, whiche medicine ſo eaſed his maladie, as it not onely preſerued him from the infected humour, but alſo made him happie for euer. Such fall the euentes of valiant mindes, though many times mother iealoſie y cancred wyteh keppeth in hir fote to anoy the wel diſpoſed heart. For had he toyned to his valiaunce credite of his louing wife, without the blinde aduiſe of ſuch as profeſſe that blacke and lying ſcience, double glorie he had gained: once for endeuoring by ſeruice to ſeeke honour: the ſeconde, for abſolute truſte in hir, that never ment to beguile him, as by hir firſte aunſwere to his firſt motion appeareth. But what is to be obiected againſt the Barons: Let them anſwere for their fault,

in this

in this discourse ensuing: whiche so lesloneth all noble myndes, as warely they ought to beware howe they aduenture vppon the honoure of Ladies, who be not altogether of one selfe and yeldyng trampe, but well forged and steeled in the shamefast shoppe of loyaltie, which armure defendeth them against the fonde skirmishes and vnconsidred conflicts of Venus wanton band. The maiesties also of ỳ King and Quéene, are to be aduaunced aboue the starrs for their wise dissuasion of those noble men from their hot & hedlesse enterprise and then their iustice for due execution of their forfait, the particularitie of which discourse in this wyse doth begynne.

Mathie Coruine sometime kyng of *Hungarie*, aboute the yeare of oure Lorde. 1458. was a valiant man of warre, and of godly personage. He was the first that was famous, or feared of the Turks, of any prince that gouerned that kingdome. And amongs other his vertues, so well in armes and letters, as in liberality and curtesie he excelled all that raigned in his time. He had to wife Quéene Beatrice of *Arragon*, the daughter of olde Ferdinando, kyng of *Naples*, and sister to the mother of Alphonsus, Duke of *Ferraria*, who in learnyng, good conditions, and al other vertues generally dispersed in hir, was a surpassing Princelle, & she wed hirselfe not onely a curteous & liberall Gentlewoman to king Mathie hir husband, but to al other, that for vertue seemed worthy of honour and reward: in such wise as to the court of these two noble princes, repaired the most notable men of al nations that wer giuen to any kind of good exercise, and euery of them according to their desert and degree were welcomed and entertained. It chaunced in this time, that a knight of *Boeme*, the vassall of King Mathie, for that he was likewise king of

that countrey, borne of a noble house, very valiant and well exercised in armes, fell in loue with a passing faire Gentlewoman of like nobilitie, and reputed to be the faireſt of all the countrey, and had a brother that was but a poore Gentleman, not luckie to the gods of Fortune. This *Boemian* knight was also not very rich, hauing onely a castle, with certaine reuenues thereunto, which wer scarce able to yeld vnto him any gret maintenance of liuing. Fallyng in loue then with this faire Gentlewoman, he demaũded hir in mariage of hir brother, & with hir had but a very litle dowrie. And thys knight not wel forseeing his poore estate, brought his wife home to his house, & there, at more leisure cõsidering ẏ same, begã to fele his lack & penurie, & how hardly & scant his reuenues wer able to maintein his port. He was a very honeſt & gentle person, & one that delited not by any meanes to burden & fine his tenants, cõtenting himself with ẏ reuenue whiche his aunceſters left him, the same amounting to no great yerely rent. Whẽ this gentlemã perceiued ẏ he stode in nede of extraordinarie relefe, after many & diuers cõsiderations with himself, he purposed to folow the court, & to serue king Mathie his soueraine lord & maſter, there by his diligence & experience, to seke meanes for abilitie to sustain his wife & him self. But so great & feruent was ẏ loue that he bare vnto his lady, as he thought it impossible for him to liue one houre wout hir, & yet iudged it not beſt to haue hir with him to ẏ court, for auoiding of further charges incidẽt to courting ladies, whose delite & plesure resteth in the toys & tricks of ẏ same, ẏ cannot be wel auoided in poore gẽtlemẽ, without their names in the Mercers or Drapers Iournals, a heauy thing for them to conſider if for their disport they like to walk ẏ stretes. The daily thinking thervpon, brought ẏ poore

Gentle-

Gentleman to great sorow & heauinesse. The Lady that was yong, wise & discrete, marking ỳ maner of hir husband, feared ỳ he had some misliking of hir. Wherfore vpon a day she thus said vnto him: Dere husband, willingly wold I wish & desire a good turne at your hand, if I wist I should not displease you. Demaund what you will (said the knight) if I can I wil gladly performe it, bicause I doe esteeme your satisfaction, as I doe mine owne lyfe. Then the Ladie very sobrely prayde hym, that he wold open vnto hir the cause of that discontenment, whiche he shewed outwardly to haue, for that hys mynde and behauiour seemed to be contrary to ordinarie custome; & contrined day and night in sighes, auoidyng the companie of them that were wont specially to delight him. The knight hearing his ladies request, pansed a while, and then sayd vnto hir: My welbeloued wyfe, for so much as you desire to vnderstand my thoughte and mynde, and whereof it commeth that I am so sad and pensife, I will tell you: All the beauynesse wherwith you see me to be affected, dothe tend to this ende. Fayne would I deuise that you and I, may in honour lyue together, according to our calling. For in respect of our parentage, our liuelode is very poore, the occasion whereof were our parentes, who morgaged their lands, & consumed a great part of their goods that our auncestors left them. I daily thinkyng herevpon, and conceiuing in my head diuers imaginations, can deuise no meanes but one, ỳ in my fansie seemeth best, which is, ỳ I go to the Court of our soucrain lord Mathie, who at this present is inferring warrs vpon ỳ Turk, at whose hãds I do not mistrust to receiue good intertainment, being a most liberal prince, and one that esteemeth al such as be valiant and actiue. And I for my parte will so gouerne my selfe (by Gods grace) that

" by deserte I will procure suche honyng and fauoure,
" as hereafter we may liue in our olde dayes a quiet life
" to our great stay and comfort: For although Fortune
" hitherto hath not fauored that state of parentage, wher-
" of we be, I doubt not with noble courage to win that
" in despite of Fortunes teeth, whiche obstinately hi-
" therto she hath denied. And the more assured am I
" of thys determination, bycause at other tymes, I
" haue serued vnder the Lorde Vaiuoda in *Transyluania*,
" against the Turk, where many times I haue bene re-
" quired to serue also in the Courte, by that honora-
" ble Gentleman, the Counte of *Cilia*. But when I
" dyd consider the beloued companie of you (dere wife)
" the sweetest companion that euer wyght dydde pos-
" sesse, I thought it impossible for me to forbeare your
" presence, whych if I should do, I were worthy to sus-
" stayne that dishonour, which a great number of care-
" lesse Gentlemen doe, who followyng their priuate
" gayne and will, abandon their yong and faire wyues,
" neglecting the fyre whyche Nature hath instilled in
" the delicate bodyes of suche tender creatures. Fea-
" ring therwithall, that so sone as I shoulde depart, the
" lustie yong Barons and Gentlemen of the countrey
" woulde pursue the gayne of that loue, the price wher-
" of I doo esteme aboue the crowne of the greatest em-
" perour in all the worlde, and woulde not forgot for
" all the riches and precious Jewels in the fertile soile
" of *Arabie*, who no doubte woulde swarme together
" in greater heapes than euer dydde the wowers of Pe-
" nelope, wythin the famouse graunge of *Ithaca*, the
" house of wanderynge Vlisses. Whyche pursuite if
" they dydde attayne, I shoulde for euer hereafter be
" ashamed to shew my face before those that be of valour
" and regarde. And this is the whole effect of the scruple

(swete

(ſweete wife) that hindreth me, to ſeeke for our better
eſtate and fortune. When he had ſpoken thoſe words,
he held his peace. The Gentlewoman which was wiſe
and ſtout, perceiuing the great loue that hir husbande
bare hir, when he had ſtayed himſelfe from talke, with
good and merry countenaunce anſwered hym in thys
wiſe: Sir Vlrico (which was the name of the Gentle-
man) I in like manner as you haue done, haue deuiſed
and thought vpon the Nobilitie and birth of our ance-
ſtors, from whoſe ſtate and port (and that without our
fault and crime) we be farre wide and deuided. Not-
withſtanding I determined to ſet a good face vpon the
matter, and to make ſo much of our painted sheath as
I could. In deede I confeſſe my ſelf to be a woman, and
you men do ſay that womens hearts be faint & feeble:
but to be plaine with you, the contrary is in me, my
heart is ſo ſtoute and ambitious, as paraduenture not
mete and conſonāt to power and abilitie, although we
women will finde no lacke if our hearts haue pith and
ſtrength inough to beare it out. And faine would I ſup-
port the ſtate wherin my mother maintained me. How
be it for mine owne part (to God I yeld the thanks) I
can ſo moderate and stay my little great heart, that cō-
tented and ſatiſfied I can be, with that which your abi-
litie can beare, and pleaſure commaund. But to come
to the point, I ſay that debating with my ſelfe of our
ſtate as you ful wiſely do, I doe verily thinke that you
being a yong Gentleman, luſty and valiant, no better
remedy or deuiſe can be found, than for you to aſpire &
ſeeke the Kings fauor and ſeruice. And it muſt needes
riſe and redounde to your gaine and preferment, for
that I heare you ſay the Kings maieſtie doeth alrea-
dye knowe you. Wherefore I doe ſuppoſe that his
grace (a ſkilfull Gentleman to way and eſteeme the

" verſue & valor of echt man) cannot chuſe but reward
" & recompenſe the wel doer to his ſingular cõtentation
" & comfort. Of this mine opinion I durſt not before this
" time vtter word or ſigne for feare of your diſpleaſure.
" But now ſith your ſelf hath opened ẏ way & meanes, I
" haue preſumed to diſcouer ẏ ſame, do what ſhal ſeeme
" beſt vnto your good pleaſure. And I for my parte, al-
" though ẏ I am a womã (accordingly as I ſaid euẽ now)
" tha by nature am deſirous of honor, & to ſhew my ſelf
" abrode more rich and ſumptuous than other, yet in re-
" ſpect of our fortune, I ſhal be cõtented ſo long as I liue
" to continue with you in this our Caſtle, where by the
" grace of God I will not faile to ſerue, loue, and obey
" you, and to kẽpe your houſe in that moderate ſorte, as
" the reuenues ſhall be able to maintaine the ſame. And
" no doubt but that pore liuing we haue orderly vſed,
" ſhal be ſufficient to finde vs two, and. v. or. vj. ſeruants
" with a couple of horſſe, and ſo to liue a quiet and merie
" life. If God doe ſend vs any children, til they come to
" lawfull age, we will with our pore liuing bring them
" vp ſo well as we can, and then to prefer them to ſome
" Noble mennes ſeruices, with whome by Gods grace
" they may acquire honoure and liuing, to kẽpe them in
" their aged dayes. And I doe truſt that we two ſhall vſe
" ſuch mutuall loue, and reioyce, that ſo long as our life
" doeth laſt in wealth and woe, our contented mindes
" ſhal reſt ſatiſfied. But I waying the ſtoutneſſe of your
" minde, doe know that you eſteeme more an ounce of
" honor, than all the golde that is in the world. For as
" your birth is Noble, ſo is your heart and ſtomache.
" And therefore many times ſeeing your great beauti-
" neſſe, and manifolde muſes and ſtudies, I haue won-
" dred with my ſelfe whereof they ſhould proceade, and
" amongs other my conceits, I thought that either my

behauior

behauior and order of dealing, or my personage did
not like you: or else that your wonted gentle minde
and disposition had bene altered and transformed into
some other Nature: many times also I was content
to thinke that the cause of your disquiet minde, did
rise vpon the disuse of armes wherein you were wont
daily to accustome your self amongs the troups of the
honourable, a company in deede moste worthy of your
presence. Reuoluing many times these and such like
cogitations, I haue sought meanes by such louing al-
lurements as I could deuise, to ease and mitigate your
troubled minde, and to withdrawe the great impietie
and care wherewith I saw you to be affected. Wicause
I doe esteeme you aboue all the world, deeming your
onely griefe to be my double paine, your aking finger,
a feruent feuerfit, and the least woe you can sustaine
most bitter death to me, that loueth you more dearely
than my selfe. And for that I doe perceiue you are de-
termined to serue our Noble King, the sorowe which
without doubt will assaile me by reason of your ab-
sence, I will sweeten and lenifie with contentation,
to see your commendable desire appeased and quiet.
And the pleasant memorie of your valiant facts shall
beguile my penfife thoughts, hoping our next meeting
shal be more ioyful thã this our disiunction & departure
heauy. And where you doubt of ẏ confluence & repair of
the dishoneſt which shal attempt the winning & subdu-
ing of mine heart & vnspotted body hitherto inuiolably
kept from ẏ touch of any person, cast from you ẏ feare,
expel frõ your minde that fonde conceit: for death shall
sooner close these mortall eyes, than my chastitie shall
be defiled. For pledge wherof I haue none other thing
to giue, but my true and simple faith, which if you dare
truſt, it shall hereafter appeare so firme & inuiolable,

" as no sparke of suspition shall enter your careful
" minde, which I may well terme to be careful, becaus
" some care before hand doth rise of my behauior in your
" absence. The triall whereof shall yelde sure evidence
" and testimony, by passing my careful life which I may
" with better cause so terme, in your absence that God
" knoweth will be right pitie and careful vnto me, who
" ioyeth in nothing else but in your welfare. Neuertheles
" lesse all meanes and wayes shall be agreable vnto my
" minde for your assurance, and shal braede in me a won-
" derfull contentation, which lusteth after nothing but
" your satisfaction. And if you list to close me vp in one of
" the Castell towers till your returne, right glad I am
" there to cõtinue an Ankrelle life: so that the same may
" ease your desired minde.

The Knight with great delite gaue eare to the an-
swer of his wife, and when she had ended hir talke, he
" began to say vnto hir: My welbeloued, I doe like wel
" and greatly commende the stoutnelle of your heart, it
" pleaseth me greatly to see ẏ same agreable vnto mine.
" You haue lightened the same frõ inestimable woe, by
" vnderstãding your conceiued purpose and determina-
" tion to garde & preserue your honor, praying you ther-
" in to perseuere still remembring that when a woman
" hath lost hir honor, she hath forgone the chiefest iewell
" she hath in this life, and deserueth no lõger to be called
" woman. And touching my talke proposed vnto you, al-
" though it be of great importaunce, yet I meane not to
" depart so sone. But if it doe come to effect I assure the
" wife, I will leaue thee Lady and mistrelle of all that I
" haue. In the meane time I will consider better of my
" businelle, and consult with my friends and kinsmen,
" and thẽ determine what is best to be done. Till which
" time let vs liue & spend our time so merely as we can.

To

To be short, there was nothing that so much molested the Knight, as the doubt he had of his wife, for that she was a very fine and faire yong Gentlewoman: And therefore he still deuised and imagined what assurance he might finde of hir behauior in his absence. And resting in this imagination, not long after it came to passe that the Knight being in company of diuers Gentlemen, and talking of sundry matters, a tale was told what chaunced to a gentleman of the Countrey which had obtained the fauoure and good will of a woman, by meanes of an olde man called Pollacco, which had the name to be a famous enchaunter and Phyſitian, dwelling at *Cutiano* a Citie of *Boeme*, where plenty of siluer Mines and other mettals is. The knight whose Castle was not farre from *Cutiano*, had occasion to repaire vnto that Citie, and according to his desire found out Pollacco, which was a very olde mã, and talking with him of diuers things, perceiued him to be of great skill. In end he entreated him, that for so much as he had done pleasure to many for apprehẽsion of their loue, he wold also instruct him, how he might be assured that his wife did kepe hir self honest all the time of his absence, and that by certaine signes he might haue sure knowledge whether she brake hir faith, by sending his honesty into *Cornwall*. Such vain trust this Knight reposed in the lying Science of Sorcery, which although to many other is found deceitfull, yet to him serued for sure euidence of his wiues fidelitie. This Pollacco which was a very cunning enchaunter as you haue hard, sayd vnto him: Sir you demaund a very straũge matter, such as where with neuer hitherto I haue bene acquainted, ne yet searched the depthe of those hidden secretes, a thing not commonly sued for, ne yet practised by me. For who is able to make assurance of a womans cha-

" ſtity, or tel by ſignes except he were at the déede doing,
" that ſhe hath done amiſſe? Or who can gaine by pro-
" tors wyt, to ſummon or ſue a ſpirituall Court, per-
" emptorily to affirme by neuer ſo good euidence or te-
" ſtimony, ý a woman hath hazarded hir honeſty, except
" he ſweare Rem to be in Re, which the greateſt *Cuthan*
" that euer *Padua* bred, neuer ſawe by proceſſe duely
" tried? Shall I then warrant you the honeſty of ſuch
" ſlippery cattell prone and ready to luſt, eaſy to be van-
" quiſhed by the ſuites of earneſt purſuers? But blame
" worthy ſurely I am, thus generally to ſpeake: for ſome
" I know, although not many, for whoſe pore honeſties
" I dare aduenture mine owne. And yet that number
" howe ſmall ſo euer it be, is worthy all due reuerence
" and honoure. Notwithſtanding. (becauſe you ſéeme to
" be an honeſt Gentleman) of that knowledge which I
" haue, I will not be greatly ſqueimiſhe. A certaine ſe-
" crete experiment in déede I haue, wherwith perchaūce
" I may ſatiſfie your demaunde. And this is it. I can
" by mine Arte in ſmall time, by certaine compoſitions,
" frame a womans Image, which you continually in a
" little bore may carry about you, and ſo ofte as you ſhall
" beholde the ſame. If the wife doe not breake hir mari-
" age faith, you ſhall ſtill ſée the ſame ſo faire and wel co-
" loured as it was at the firſt making, & ſéeme as though
" it newly came from the painters ſhop, but if perchaūce
" ſhe meane to abuſe hir honeſty, the ſame wil waxe pale,
" and in déede committing that filthy facte, ſodainely the
" colour wil be black, as arayed with cole or other filth,
" the ſmel wherof wil not be very pleſāt: but at al times
" when ſhe is attempted or purſued, the colour wil be ſo
" yealow as gold. This maruellous ſecrete deuiſe great-
ly pleaſed the Knight, verely beleuing the ſame to be
true, ſpecially much moued & aſſured by ý fame bruted
abrode of his ſcience, wherof ý Citizens of *Cutiano* told

very

very ſtrange & incredible things. When the price was paid of this precious iewel, he receiued ẏ Image, & ioyfully returned home to his caſtle, wher tarying certain dayes, he determined to repair to ẏ Court of the glorious king Mathie, making his wife priuy to his intent. Afterwards whē he had diſpoſed his houſhold matters in order, he cōmitted ẏ gouernment therof to his wife. & hauing prepared all neceſſaries for his voyage, to the great ſorow & griefe of his beloued, he departed & arriued at *Alba Regale*, where that time the King lay with Quéne Beatrix his wife: of whom he was ioyfully receiued & entertained. He had not long continued in the Court, but he had obtained & won the fauor & good will of all men. The King (which knew him full well) very honorably placed him in his court, & by him accōpliſhed diuers and many waighty affaires, which very wiſely and truſtely he brought to paſſe according to the kings mind & pleaſure. Afterwards he was made *Colonel* of a certaine nūber of ſoldiers ſent by ẏ king againſt the *Turks* to defend a holde which the enimies of God begā to aſſaile vnder ẏ conduct of *Muſtapha Baſca*, which cōduct he ſo wel directed, & therin ſtoutly behaued himſelf, as he chaſed al ẏ Infidels out of thoſe coaſtes, winning therby ẏ name of a moſt valiant ſoldier & prudent captain. Whereby he meruellouſly gained ẏ fauor & grace of the king, who (ouer and beſides his daily intertainement) gaue vnto him a Caſtle, and the Reuenue in fée farme for euer. Such rewards deſerue all valiāt men, which for the honor of their Prince & countrey do willingly imploy their ſeruice, worthy no dout of great regard & cheriſhing, vpō their home returne, bicauſe they hate idleneſſe to win glory, deuiſing rather to ſpēd hole dayes in field, than houres in Courte, which this worthy Knight deſerued, who not able to ſuſtaine his porte & ſtate, by politik wisdō & proweſſe of armes endeuored

to serue his Lord and countrey, wherin surely he made a very good choise. Then he deuoutly serued and praised God, for that he put into his minde such a Noble enterprise, trusting daily to atchieue greater fame and glory: but the greater was his ioy and contentation, bicause the image of his wife inclosed within a box, which still he caried about him in his purse, continued freshe of coloure without any alteration. It was noysed in the Court, that this valiant Knight Vlrico, had in *Boeme* the faireſt and godlieſt Lady to his wife that liued either in *Boeme* or *Hungarie*. It chaūced as a certaine company of yong Gentlemen in the Court were together, (amongs whome was this Knighte) that a
" *Hungarian* Baron sayd vnto him: How is it possible sir
" Vlrico, being a yeare and a half since you departed out
" of *Boeme*, that you haue no minde to returne to see your
" wife, who as the common fame reporteth, is one of the
" godlieſt women of all the Countrey: truely it seemeth
" to me, that you care not for hir, which were great pitie
" if hir beautie be correspondent to hir fame. Sir (quod
" Vlrico) what hir beautie is I referre vnto the worlde,
" but how so euer you esteeme me to care of hir, you shall
" vnderstande that I doe loue hir, and will doe so during
" my life. And the cause why I haue not visited hir of long
" time, is no little proofe of the great assurance I haue of
" hir vertue and honeſt life. The argument of hir vertue
" I proue, for that she is contented that I shold serue my
" Lord and king, and sufficient it is for me to giue hir in-
" telligence of my state and welfare, which many times
" by letters at opportunitie I faile not to doe: the proofe
" of my Faith is euident by reason of my bounden duety
" to our soueraigne Lord of whome I haue receiued so
" great and ample benefits, and the warfare which I vse
" in his graces seruice in the frontiers of his Realme a-

gainſt

gainſt the enimies of Chriſt, whereunto I heare more
good will than I doe to wedlocke loue, preferring duety
to Prince before mariage, albeit my wiues faythe and
conſtancy is ſuch, as freely I may ſpend my life without
care of hir deuoir, being aſſured that beſides hir beauty
ſhe is wiſe, vertuous and honeſt, and loueth me aboue
all worldly things, tendring me ſo dearely as ſhe doth
the balles of hir owne eyes. You haue ſtoutly ſayd (an-
ſwered the Barone) in defenſe of your wiues chaſtity,
whereof ſhe can make vnto hir ſelf no greate warran-
tiſe, becauſe a woman ſometimes will be in minde not
to be moued at the requeſts and gifts offred by ẏ grea-
teſt Prince of the world, who afterwards within a day
vpon the only ſight and view of ſome luſty yong man,
at one ſimple word vttered with a few tears and ſhor-
ter ſute, yeldeth to his requeſt. And what is ſhe then ẏ
can conceiue ſuch aſſurance in hir ſelf? What is he that
knoweth the ſecretes of hearts which be impenetra-
ble? Surely none as I ſuppoſe, except God him ſelfe. A
woman of hir owne nature is moueable and pryant, &
is the moſt ambitious creature of the world. And (by
God) no woman do I know but that ſhe luſteth and de-
ſireth to be beloued, required, ſued vnto, honored & che-
riſhed? And oftentimes it commeth to paſſe ẏ the moſt
crafty dames which thinke with fained lokes to ſeeue
their diuers louers, be the firſt that thruſt their heades
into the amorous nets, and like little birdes in harde
diſtreſſe of weather be caught in louers limetwigges.
Wherby ſir Vlrico I doe not ſee that your wife (aboue
all other women compacte of fleſh and bone) hath ſuch
priuiledge from God, but that ſhe may be ſone entiſed
and corrupted. Well ſir (ſayd the *Boeme* knight) I am
perſuaded of that which I haue ſpoken, and verely doe
beleue the effect of my beliefe moſte true. Euery man

knoweth his owne affaires, & the fole knoweth better what he hath, than his neighbors doe, be they neuer ſo wiſe. Beleue you what you think good, for I meane not to digreſſe frō that which I conceiue. And ſuffer me (I pray you) to beleue what I liſt, ſith belief cannot hurt me, nor yet your diſcredite can hinder my belief, being free for eche man in ſemblable chaunces to think & beleue what his minde luſteth and liketh. There were many other Lords and Gentlemen of the court preſent at that talke, and as we commonly ſee (at ſuch like metings) euery man vttereth his minde: wherupon many and ſundry opinions were produced touching that queſtion. And bicauſe diuers mē be of diuers natures, and many preſume vpon the pregnancie of their wits heads, there roſe ſome ſtur about ỳ talk, eche mā obſtinate in his alleaged reaſon, more froward peraduēture than reaſon did require: the cōmunication grew ſo hot, and talk brake forth ſo loud, as the ſame was reported to the Quéene. The good Lady ſory to heare tel of ſuch ſtrife within hir Court, abhorring naturally all cōtrouerſie and contention, ſent for the parties, & required them from point to point to make recital of the beginning and circumſtāce of their reaſons and arguments. And when ſhe vnderſtode the effect of al their talke, ſhe ſayd, that euery man at his owne pleaſure might beleue what he liſt, affirming it to be preſumptuous and extreme follie, to iudge all women to be of one diſpoſition, in like ſort as it were a great error to ſay that al men be of one qualitie and condition: the contrarie by daily experience manifeſtly appearing. For both in men and women, there is ſo great difference and variety of natures, as there be heads and wits. And how it is commonly ſeene that two brothers and ſiſters, born at one birth, be yet of contrary natures and complexions, of

maners

manners and conditions so diuers, as the thing which shall please the one, is altogether displesant to ỹ other. Wherupon the Queene concluded, ỹ the *Boeme* knight had good reason to continue that good & honest credit of his wife, as hauing proued hir fidelitie of long time, wherein she shewed hir self to be very wise & discrete. Now bicause (as many times we see) the natures and appetites of diuers men to be insaciable, and one man to be sometimes more foolish hardy than another, euen so (to say the trothe,) were those two *Hungarian* Barons, who seeming wise in their owne conceits, one of them sayd to the Queene in this maner: Madame your grace doth wel maintaine the sexe of womankinde, bicause you be a woman. For by nature it is giuẽ to that kinde, stoutly to stand in defese of themselues, bicause their imbecillitie and weakenesse otherwise would bewray them: and although good reasons might be alleaged to open the causes of their debilitie, and why they be not able to attaine the hault excellencie of man, yet for this time I doe not meane to be tedious vnto your grace, least the little heart of woman would rise and display that conceit which is wrapt within that little molde. But to retourne to this chaste Lady, throughe whome our talke began, if we might craue licence of your maiesty, and safe conducte of this Gentleman to know hir dwelling place, and haue leaue to speake to hir, we doubt not but to breake with our battering talke, the Adamant walles of hir chastitie that is so famous, and cary away that spoile which victoriously we shal atchieue. I know not answered the *Boeme* knight, what ye can or will doe, but sure I am, that hitherto I am not deceiued. Many things were spoken there, and sundry opinions of either partes alleaged. In end the two *Hungarian* Barons persuaded them selues,

and

and made their vaunts that they wer able to clime the skies, and both wold attempt and also bring to passe any enterprise were it neuer so great, affirming their former offer by oth, and would gage all the landes and goods they had, that within the space of .v. months they would either of them obtaine the Gentlewomans good will to do what they list, so that the Knight were both neither to returne home, ne yet to aduertise hir of their determination. The Quene and all the standers by laughed heartily at this their offer, mocking and iesting at their foolish and youthly conceites. Which the Barons perceiuing, sayd: You thinke Madame that we speake triflingly, and be not able to accomplish this our proposed enterprise, but Madame, may it please you to giue vs leaue, we meane by earnest attempt to giue proofe therof. And as they were thus in reasoning and debating the matter, the king (hearing tell of this large offer made by the Barons) came into the place where the Quene was, at such time as she was about to dissuade them from their frãtike deuise. Before who he being entred the chamber, the two Barõs fel downe vpon their knees, and humbly besought his grace, that the compacte made betwene sir Vlrico and them might proceede, disclosing vnto him in few words the effect of all their talke, which frankly was graunted by ỹ king. But the Barons added a *Prouiso*, that when they had wonne their wager, the Knight by no meanes should hurt his wife, and from that time forth shold giue ouer his false opinion, that women were not naturally giuen to the sutes and requests of amorous persones. The *Boeme* Knighte, who was assured of his wifes great honesty and loyall fayth, beleued so true as the Gospell, the proportion and qualitie of the image, who in all the time that he was far off, neuer perceiued the

same

ſame to be either pale or blacke, but at that tyme looking vpon the image, he perceiued a certaine yealow colour to riſe, as he thought his wife was by ſome loue purſued, but yet ſodainly it returned againe to his naturall hewe, which boldned him to ſay theſe wordes to the *Hungarian* barons: Ye be a couple of pleaſant and „ vnbeleuing Gentlemen, and haue conceyued ſo fantaſticall opinion, as euer men of your callyng did: but „ ſith you procede in your obſtinate follie, and wil nedes „ guage all the lands and gwdes you haue, that you bee „ able to vanquiſhe my wiues honeſt and chaſt hearte, I „ am contented, for the ſingular credite which I repoſe „ in her, to ioyne with you, and will pledge the peyre lyeing I haue for proofe of mine opinion, and ſhal accompliſh all other your requeſts made here, before the maieſties of the King and Queene. And therefore may it „ pleaſe youre highneſſe, ſith this fonde deuiſe can not „ be beaten out of their heads, to giue licence vnto thoſe „ noble men, the lords Vdiſlao, and Alberto, (ſo wer they „ called) to put in proofe the merie conceipt of their diſpoſed mindes (wherof they do ſo greatly bragge) and „ I by your gwd grace and fauoure, am content to agree „ to their demaundes: and we anſwered the *Hungarians* „ we once againe affirme the ſame whiche we haue ſpoken. The King wylling to haue them gyue ouer that ſtrife, was intreated to the contrary by the Barons: wherupon the King perceiuing their follies, cauſed a decree of the bargaine to be put in writing, either parties interchaungeably ſubſcribing the ſame. Whiche done, they toke their leaues. Afterwardes, the two *Hungarians* beganne to put their enterpriſe in order, and agreed betwene themſelues, Alberto to be the firſt that ſhoulde aduenture vpon the Lady. And that within fyre wekes after, vpon his retourne, the Lorde

Vladislao should procéde. These things concluded, and all furnitures for their seuerall iorneys disposed, the Lorde Alberto departed in good order, with two seruites directly trauailyng to ỳ castle of the *Boeme* knight, where beeing arriued, hée lyghted at an Inne of the towne adioyning to the castle, and demaunding of the hoste, the conditions of the Ladie, hée vnderstode that she was a very faire woman, and that hir honestie and loue towardes hir husbande farre excelled hir beautie. Which wordes nothing dismayed the amorous baron, but when he hadde pulled of his bootes, and richely rayed hymselfe, he repaired to the Castle, and knocking at the Gates, gaue the Ladie to vnderstande that he was come to sée hir. Shée whiche was a curteous Gentlewoman, caused him to be brought in, and gently gaue hym honourable intertainement. The baron greatly mused vpon the beautie and godlinesse of the Ladye, singularly commendyng hir honest order and behauiour. And beyng sette downe, the yong Gentleman sayde vnto hir: Madame, moued with the fame of your surpalling beautie, which now I sée to be more excellent than Fame with hir swiftest wyngs is able to carie, I am come from the Court to view and sée if that were true, or whether lying brutes had scattered their vulgar talke in vaine: but fyndyng the same far more fine and pure than erst I dyd expect, I craue licence of your Ladyshyp, to conceiue none offense of this my bolde and rude attempte: and herewithall he began to ioyne many trifling and vaine words, which daliyng suters by heate of lustie blod be wont to shoote forth, to declare thé selues not to be spechlesse or tongtied. Whiche the Lady well espying, spédily imagined into what port his rotten barke would arriue: wher-

fore

fore in the ende when she sawe his shippe at roade, began to enter in pretie louyng talke, by litle and litle to incourage his fonde attempt. The Baron thinkyng he had caught the Eele by the taile, not well practised in Cicero his schole, ceased not fondly to contriue the tyme, by makyng hir beleeue, that hée was farre in loue. The Ladie wearie (God wote) of his fonde behauiour and amorous reasons, and yet not to séeme scornefull, made hym good countenance, in such wise as the *Hungarian* two or thrée dayes dydde nothing else but procéede in vayne pursute: Shée perceyuing hym to bée but a Hauke of the fyrste coate, deuysed to recompense hys Follies wyth suche entertynemente, as duryng all hys lyfe, hée shoulde kéepe the same in good remembraunce. Wherefore not long after, faynyng as thoughe hys greate wysedome, bitered by eloquente talke, hadde subdued hir, shée sayde thus vnto hym: My Lorde, the reasons you produce, and youre pleasaunt gesture in my house, haue so inchaunted me, that impossible it is, but I must néedes agrée vnto youre wyll: for where I neuer thoughte duryng lyfe, to stayne the puritie of mariage bedde, and determined continually to preserue my selfe inuiolablye for my husbande, youre Noble grace and curteous behauioure, haue (I saye) so bewitched mé, that readie I am to bée at youre commaundement, humbly beséechyng youre honor to beware, that knowledge hereof maye not come vnto mine husbands eares, who is so fierce and cruell, and loueth me so dearely, as no doubt he will without further triall either him self kil me, or otherwise procure my death: & to the intent none of my house may suspect our doings, I shal desire you to morow in the morning

" about nine of the clocke, which is the accustomed time
" of your repaire hither, to come vnto my castle, wher
" in when you bee entred, speedily to mount vp to the
" chamber of the highest Tower, ouer the doze where
" ye shall fynde the armes of my husbande, entailed in
" marble: and when you be entred in, to shut the dazr
" fast after you, and in the meane tyme I wil waite and
" and prouide, that none shall molest and trouble vs, and
" then shall bestowe our selues foz accomplishement of
" that which your loue desireth. Now in very deede this
" chamber was a very strong prison ozdeined in anci
" ent time by the progenitours of that territozie, to im
" prison and punish the vassals and tenants of the same,
foz offenses and crimes committed. The Baron hea
ryng thys liberall offer of the Ladie, thinking that he
had obteyned the summe of all his ioye, so gladde as if
he had conquered a whole kingdome, the best conten
ted man aliue, thankyng the Ladie foz hir curteous
answere, departed, and retourned to his Inne. God
knoweth vpon howe mery a pinne the hearte of thys
yong Baron was sette, and after he had liberally ban
ketted his hoste and hostesse, pleasantly disposing him
selfe to myzth and recreation, he went to bed, when
ioy so lightned his merrie head, as no slepe at all could
close his eyes: suche be the sauage pangs of those that
aspire to like delights, as the best reclaimer of the wil
dest hauke coulde neuer take moze payne oz deuise mo
shiftes to man the same foz the better atchieuing of hir
praie, than dyd this braue Baron sustaine foz bryn
gyng his enterprise to effecte. The nexte day early in
the mozning he rose, dzessyng hymselfe with the swe
test parfumes, and putting on hys finest suts of appa
rell, at the appointed houre he went to the castell, and
so secretly as he could, accozding to the Ladies instruc
tion,

tion, he conueyd himselfe vp into the chamber whiche he founde open, and when he was entred, he shutte the same. The maner of the doze was such, as none within coulde open it without a key, and besides the strong locke, it had both barre and bolte on the outside, with such fastening, as the diuel him self being locked within, coulde not breake fozth. The Ladie which wayted harde by foz his comming, so sone as she perceiued that the doze was shutte, stepte vnto the same, and bothe double locked the doze, and also without she barred and fast bolte the same, carying the keye away with hir. This chamber was in the hyghest towre of the house (as is befoze sayde): wherein was placed a bedde with good furniture, the wyndow wherof was so high, that none could loke out without a ladder. The other parts therof were in good and cõuenient ozder, apt and mete foz an honest pzison. When the Lozde Alberto was within, he satte downe, wayting (as the Jewes doe foz Messias) when the Ladie accozding to hir appointement should come. And as he was in this expectation, building castles in the ayze, and deuising a thousande *Chimeras* in his bzaine, beholde he hearde one to open a little wicket that was in the doze of that chamber, which was so straight and litle, as scarcely able to receyue a loafe of bzead, oz cruse of wine, vsed to be sent to the pzisoners. He thinkyng that it had bene the Ladie, rose vp, and hearde the noyse of a little girle, who loking in at the hole, thus sayd vnto him: My Lozd Alberto, the Ladie Barbara my mistresse (foz that was hir name) hath sent me thus to say vnto you: That foz so much as you be come into this place, by countenaunce of Loue, to dispoyle hir of hir honour, she hath impzisoned you like a theefe, accozding to your deserte, and purposeth to make you suffer penance accozding to the

" measure of your offense. Wherfore so long as you shal
" remaine in this place, she minded to force you to gain
" your bread and drinke with the art of spinning, as poore
" women do for sustentation of their liuyng, meanyng
" thereby to cole the heate of your lustie youth, and to
" make you tast the sowre sause mete for them to allay,
" that go about to robbe Ladies of their honour: she bad
" me lykewise to tell you, that the more yarne you spin,
" the greater shal be the abundance and delicacie of your
" fare: the greater paine you take to gaine your fode, the
" more liberall she will bee in distributing of the same:
" otherwise (she sayth) that you shall fast wyth breade
" and water. Which determinate sentence she hath de-
" cred, not to be infringed & broken for any kinde of sute
" or intreatie that you be able to make. When the mai-
den had spoken these wordes, she shut the portall doore, and returned to hir Ladie. The Baron which thought that he had ben comen to a mariage, did eate nothing al the morning before, because he thought to be entertei-ned with better & daintier store of viandes, who haue at these newes fared like one out of his wittes, and stode still so amazed, as though his leggs woulde haue failed him, and in one moment his spirits began to de-nish, and his force and breath forsoke him, and fel down vpon the chamber floore, in such wise as he that had be-holde him, wold haue thought him rather dead than liuing. In this state he was a greate time, & afterwards somwhat cõming to him selfe, he could not tel whether he dreamed, or else that the words wer true, which the maiden had sayd vnto him: In the end sáing, and being verily assured, that he was in a prison so sure as birde in Cage, through disdaine and rage was like to die, or else to lose his wittes, faryng with hym selfe of long time lyke a madde man, and not knowing what to do,

passed

paſſed the reſt of the day in walkyng vp and doun the chamber, rauing, ſtamping, ſtaring, curſing, and vſing wordes of greateſt villanie, lamenting and bewaylyng the time and day, that ſo like a beaſt and brutiſhe man, he gaue the attempt to diſpoile the honeſtie of an other mans wife. Then came to his minde the loſſe of al his landes and goodes, which by the Kings authoritie were put in compriſe, then the ſhame, the ſcorne, and rebuke whyche hee ſhoulde receyue of other mens handes, beyonde meaſure vexed hym: and reporte bruted in the Court (for that it was impoſſible but the whole worlde ſhould knowe it) ſo grieued hym, as his heart ſeemed to be ſtrained with two ſharpe and biting nailes, the paines whereof, forced hym to loſe his wittes and vnderſtandyng. In the middes of which pangs furiouſly vauting vp and doun the chamber, he eſpied by chaunce in a corner, a diſtaffe furniſhed with good ſtore of flaxe, and a ſpindle hangyng therevppon: and ouercome with choler and rage, but was aboute to ſpoyle and breake the ſame in pieces: but remembring what a harde weapon Neceſſitie is, hee ſtayed hys wyldom, and albeit hee hadde rather to haue continued hys leyſure in noble and Gentlemanlyke paſſetyme, yet rather than he woulde be idle, hee thought to reſerue that Inſtrument to auoyde the tedious lacke of honeſt and familiar companie. When ſupper time was come, the mayden returned agayn, who opening the Portall doore, ſaluted the Baron, and ſayde: My Lord, my miſtreſſe hath ſente mee to viſite your good Lordſhyp, and to receyue at youre good handes the effecte of youre labour, who hopeth that you haue ſpunne ſome ſubſtanciall webbe of threde for earning of your ſupper, which beeing done, ſhall be readily brought vnto you. The Baron full of rage, furie, and felonious mode, if

before

before he were fallen into choler, now by protestation of these wordes, he seemed to transgresse the bounds of reason, and began to raile at the poore wench, scolding and chiding hir like a strumpet of the stewes, faring as though he would haue beaten hir, or done hir some other mischefe: but his rage was stayed from doyng any hurt. The poore wench followed by hir mistresse, in laughing wise sayd vnto him: Why (my lorde) do you chafe & rage against me? Ye thinke you do me wrong "to vse such reprochful words, which am but a seruant, "and bounde to the commaundement of my mistresse: "Why sir, do you not know that a pursuiuant or messen"ger suffereth no payne or blame? The greatest kyng & "Emperour of the worlde, receiuing defiaunce from a "meaner Prince, neuer vseth his ambassadour with scol"ding wordes, ne yet by villanie or rebuke abuseth his "person. Is it wisdom then for you, being a present pri"soner, at the mercy of your kepers, in this dishonour"able sorte to reuile me with vile words & talke? Well sir, "leaue of your rages, and quiet your selfe for this pre"sent time, for my mistresse maruelleth much why you "durst come (for all your noble state) to giue attempts "to violate hir good name, whiche message she requi"red me to tell you, ouer and besides a desire she hathe to "know, whether by the science of Spinning, you haue "gained your fode: for you seeme to kicke against the "wind, & beat water in a morter, if you think from hence "to go before you haue earned a recompense of the meat "which shalbe giuen you. Wherfore it is your lot pati"ently to suffer the penance of your fondattempt, which "I pray you gently to sustaine, and think no scorn ther"of hardely: for desperate men & hard aduenturers must "needes suffer the daungers therunto belonging. This "is the determinate sentence of my mistresse mynde,

who

who sourdeth you no better fare than breade and wa-
ter, if you can not shewe some pretie spindle full of
yarne for signe of your good will at this present pinche
of your distresse. The mayden seeing that hee was not
disposed to shewe some part of willyng minde to gaine
his living by that prefixed science, shut the portal doze,
and went hir way. The vnhappie Baron (arriued the-
ther in very yll time) that nyght had neither bread noz
broth, and therfoze he fared accozding to the prouerbe:
He that goth to bed supperlesse, lieth in his bed restlesse. Foz
during the whole night, no slepe couldfasten his eyes.
Now as this baron was closed in prison fast, so the La
die toke ozder, that secretely with great cher ehis ser-
uants should be interteined, and his hozsse with swete
haye and good prouender well mainteined, all his fur-
nitures, sumpture hozsse and cariages conueyed with-
in the Castle, where wanted nothyng foz the state of
such a personage but onely libertie, making the hoste
of the Inne beleue (where the Lozde harbozed befoze)
that he was returned into *Hungarie*.

But now turne we to the *Boeme* Knight, who kno-
wing that one of the two *Hungarian Competitors*, were
departed the Court, and ridden into *Boeme*, dyd stil be-
holde the qualitie of the inchaunted image, wherein by
the space of three oz foure dayes, in which time, the ba-
ron made his greatest sute to his Ladie, he marked a
certaine alteration of coloure in the same: but after-
wards returned to his natiue fozme: and seing no gre-
ter transfozmation, he was wel assured, that the *Hun-
garian* Baron was repulsed, and imployed his labor in
vain. Wherof the *Boeme* Knight was exceedingly plea-
sed and contented, bicause he was well assured, that
his wife had kept hir selfe right pure and honest. Not-
withstandyng his mynde was not well settled, ne yet

his hearte at reſt, doubtyng that the Lorde Vladiſlay, which as yet was not departed the Courte, would obtaine the thing, and acquite the faulte, which his companion had committed. The imprisoned Baron which all this time had neither eaten nor dronken, nor in the night coulde slepe, in the morning, after he had conſidered hys myſaduenture, and well perceyued no remedie for him to go forth, except he obeyed the Ladies heſt, made of neceſſitie a vertue, and applied himſelfe to learne to Spynne by force, whiche fredome and honour coulde neuer haue made hym to doe. Wherupon hée toke the diſtaffe, and beganne to ſpynne. And albeit that he neuer ſponne in all hys lyfe before, yet inſtructed by Neceſſitie, ſo well as he could, he drewe out his thréde, nowe ſmall and then greate, and manye times of the meaneſt ſort, but very often broade, yll fauoured, yll cloſed, and worſſe twiſted, all out of fourme and faſhion, that ſundrie times very heartyly he laughed to him ſelfe, to ſée his cunning, but woulde haue made a cunnyng woman ſpinner burſt into ten thouſande laughters, if ſhée hadde bene there. Thus all the morning he ſpent in ſpynnyng, and when dinner came, his accuſtomed meſſanger, the mayden, repaired vnto hym agayne, and openyng the wyndowe demaunded of the Baron how his worke went forwarde, and whether he were diſpoſed to manifeſt the cauſe of hys comming into *Boeme?* Hée well beaten in the Schoole of ſhame, vttered vnto the mayde the whole compacte and bargayne made betwéene hym and hys companion, and the *Boeme* knight hir maſter, & afterwards ſhewed vnto hir hys ſpindle ful of thréde.

"The yong Wench ſmylyng at his worke, ſayde: By
"Saint Marie thys is well done, you are worthy of
"victuall for your hire: for nowe I right well perceyue

that

that hunger forceth the Woulfe oute of hir denne. I
conne you thancke, that lyke a Lorde you can so puis-
santly gayne youre liuyng. Wherefore proceedyng in
that whiche you haue begonne, I doubt not but shorte-
ly you wyll proue suche a workeman, as my mistresse
shall not neede to put out hir flax to spinne (to hir great
charge and coste) for makyng of hir smockes, but that
the same maye well bee done wythin hir owne house,
yea although the same doe serue but for Kitchen cloa-
thes, for dresser bordes, or cleanyng of hir vessell be-
fore they be serued forth. And as youre good desertes
doe merite thanckes for this your arte, nowe well be-
gonne, euen so youre newe tolde tale of commyng
hyther, requireth no lesse, for that you haue disclosed
the trouthe. When she had sayde these wordes, she
reached hym some store of meates for hys dynner, and
badde hym well to fare. When she was returned vn-
to hir Lady, shee shewed vnto hir the Spindle full of
threde, and told hir therwithall the whole storie of the
compact betwene the knight Vlrico, and the two *Hun-
garian* Barons. Whereof the Ladie sore astonned, for
the snares layd to entrappe hir, was notwithstanding
well contented, for that shee had so well forseene the
same: but moste of all reioysed, that hir husband had
so good opinion of hir honest lyfe. And before she wold
aduertise hym of these euentes, she purposed to at-
tend the comming of the Lord Vladislao, to whom she
meant to do like penance for his careleste bargaine and
dishoneste opinion, accordingly as he deserued, marue-
lling very much that both the Barons, wer so rash & pre-
sumptuous, daungerously (not knowing what kinde of
woman she was) to put their landes and goodes in ha-
zard. But conſideryng the nature of diuers brainsicke
men, which passe not how carelesly they aduenture their

gained gwdes, and inherited landes, so they maye atchieue the praie, after which they vainely hunt, for the preiudice & hurt of other, she made no accompt of their attempt, sith honest matrones force not vpon the suites, or vaine consumed time of lighte brained cockscombs, that care not what fonde coste or yll imployed houres they waste to anoy the good renoume and honest bruites of women.

But not to discourse frō point to point the particulers of this intended iorney, this pore deceiued Baron in short time proued a very good Spinner, by exercise wherof, he felt such solace, as not onely the same was a comfortable sporte for his captiue tyme, but also for wante of better recreation, it seemed so ioyfull, as yf he had bene pluming and feedyng his Hauke, or doing other sportes belongyng to the honourable state of a Lorde. Whiche his well arriued labour, the maiden recompensed with abundance of good and delicate meates. And although the Ladie was many tymes required to visite the Baron, yet she woulde neuer to that request consent. In whiche time the Knight Vlrico ceased not continually to viewe and renewe the state of his image, which appeared still to bee of one well coloured sorte. And although thys vse of his was diuers times marked and seene of many, yet being earnestly demaunded the cause thereof, hee would neuer disclose the same. Many coniectures thereof were made, but none coulde attaine the trouthe. And who would haue thought that a Knight so wise and prudent had worne within his purse any inchaunted thing: And albeit the King and Quéene hadde intelligence of thys frequent practise of the Knight, yet they thoughte not mete for any priuate and secret mysterie, to demaund the cause. One Moneth and a halfe was passed nowe,

that

that the Lord Alberto was departed the Court, and become a castle knight and cunning spinster: which made the Lord Vladislao to muse, for that the promise made betwene them was broke, and heard neither by letter or messanger what successe he had receiued. After diuers thoughts imagined in his mind, he conceiued that his companion had happily enioyed the end of his desired ioy, and had gathered the wished frutes of the Lady, and drowned in ỹ maine sea of his owne pleasures, was ouerwhelmed in the bottome of oblivion: wherefore he determined to set forwarde on his iourney to giue onset of his desired fortune: who without long delay for execution of his purpose, prepared all necessaries for that voyage, and mounted on horsebacke with two of his men, he iourneyed towards *Boeme*, & within few dayes after arriued at the Castle of the faire and most honest Lady. And when he was entred the Inne where the Lord Alberto was first lodged, he diligently enquired of him, and hard tell that he was returned into *Hungarie* many dayes before, wherof much maruelling, could not tel what to say or thinke. In ỹ end purposing to put in proofe the cause wherefore he was departed out of *Hungarie*, after diligent inquirie of the maners of the Lady, he vnderstode the general voyce, that she was without comparisō the most honest, wise, gentle and comely Ladie within the whole Countrey of *Boeme*. Incontinently the Ladie was aduertised of ỹ arrinall of this Baron, and knowing the cause of his cōming, she determined to pay him also with that money which she had already coyned for the other. The next day the Baron went vnto the Castle, & knocking at the gate, sent in word how that he was come from the Court of King Mathie, to visite and salute the Lady of that Castle: and as she did entertain the first Baron

in curteous guise, and with louing countenaunce, euen so she did the seconde, who thought thereby that he had attained by that pleasant entertainment, the game after which he hunted. And discoursing vpon diuers matters, the Lady shewed hir self a pleasant and familiar Gentlewoman, which made the Baron to thinke that in short time he shold win the price for which he came. Notwithstanding, at the first hunt he would not by any meanes descend to any particularitie of his purpose, but his words ran general, which were, that hearing tel of the fame of hir beautie, good grace and comelinesse, by hauing occasion to repaire into *Boeme* to doe certaine his affaires, he thought it labor well spent to ride some portion of his iourney, though it were besides the way, to digresse to doe reuerence vnto hir, whome fame aduaunced aboue the skies: and thus passing his first visitation, he returned againe to his lodging. The Ladie when the Baron was gone from hir Castle, was rapte into a rage, greatly offended that those two *Hungarian* Lordes so presumptuously had bended them selues like common Theeues to wander and roue the Countreys, not onely to robbe and spoile hir of hir honour, but also to bring hir in displeasure of hir husbande, and thereby into the daunger and perill of deathe. By reason of which rage (not without cause conceiued) she caused an other Chamber to be made ready, next wal to the other Baron that was become suche a Notable spinster. And vpon the next returne of the Lord Vladislao, she receiued him with no lesse good entertainment than before, and when night came, caused him to be lodged in hir owne house in the Chamber prepared as before, where he slept not verie soundly all that night, through the continuall remembraunce of his Ladies beautie. Next morning

he perceiued himselfe to be locked fast in a Prison. And when he had made him ready, thinking to dessemble to bidde the Ladie good morrow, seeking meanes to vnlocke the doore, and perceiuing that he could not, he stode still in a dumpe. And as hee was thus standing, maruelling the cause of his shutting in so faste, the Maiden repaired to the hole of the doore, giuing his honor an vnaccustomed salutation, which was, that hir Maistresse commaunded hir to giue him to vnderstand, that if he had any lust or appetite to his breakefast, or minded from thence forthe to ease his hunger or conteine life, that he should giue him selfe to learne to reele yarne. And for that purpose she willed him to looke in such a corner of the Chamber, and he shoulde finde certaine spindles of threade, and an instrument to winde his yarne vpon. Wherefore (quod she) apply your selfe thereunto, and lose no time. He that had that time beholden the Baron in the face, would haue thought that hee hadde seene rather a Marble stone, than the figure of a man. But conuerting his colde conceiued mode, into madde anger, he fell into tenne times more displeasure wyth himselfe, than is before described by the other Baron. But seeing that his madde behauiours and beastly vsage was bestowed in vaine, the next day he began to reele. The Ladie afterwardes when she hadde intelligence of the good and gainefull spinning of the Lorde Alberto, and the well disposed and towardly reeling of the Lorde Vladislao, greately reioyced for making of suche two Notable workemen, whose workemanship exceeded the labours of them that hadde beene apprentyzes to the occupation seuen yeares together. Suche be the apte and ready wittes of the Souldiours of loue:

Wherein

Where in I would wishe all Cupides dearlings to be nousled and applied in their youthly time: thē no doubt their passions would appease, and rages assuage, and would giue ouer their ouer bolde attemptes, for which they haue no thank of the chast and honest. And to this godly sight the Ladie brought the seruauntes of these Noble men, willing them to marke and beholde the diligence of their maisters, and to imitate the industry of their godly exercise, who neuer attained meat before by labour they had gained the same. Which done, she made thē take their horse & furnitures of their Lords, and to depart: otherwise if by violence they resisted, she wold cause their choler to be calmed with such like seruice as they sawe done before their eyes. The seruaunts seeing no remedy, but must needes depart, toke their leaue. Afterwards she sent one of hir seruauntes in poste to the Court, to aduertise hir husbād of all that which chaunced. The *Boeme* Knight receiuing this good newes, declared the same vnto the King and Quene, and recited the whole story of the two *Hungarian* Barons, accordingly as the tenor of his wiues letters did purporte. The Princes stode stil in great admiration, and highly commended the wisdome of the Lady, esteeming hir for a very sage and politike woman. Afterwardes the Knight Vlrico humbly besought the King for execution of his decrée and performance of the bargaine. Wherupon the King assembled his counsell, and required euery of them to say their mind. Vpon the deliberation whereof, the Lord Chauncelor of the kingdome, with two Counsellers, were sent to the Castle of the *Boeme* Knight, to enquire and learne the processe and doings of the two Lords, who diligently accomplished the Kings commaundemēt. And hauing examined the Lady and hir maiden with other of the house, & the

Barons

Barons alſo, whome a little beſoze the arrival of theſe Cõmiſſioners, the Lady had cauſed to be put together, ẏ by ſpinning & reeling they might cõfoꝛt one an other. Whẽ the Loꝛd Chaũcelloꝛ had framed & digeſted in oꝛder the whole diſcours of this hiſtoꝛy, retourned to the court where the King & Quene with the Pieres & Noble men of his kingdom cauſed the actes of the ſame to be diuulged & bꝛuted abꝛode, and after much talke and diſcourſe of the perfoꝛmance of this cõpact, pro & cõtra, the Quéene taking the Ladies parte, and fauoꝛing the Knight, the King gaue ſentẽce ẏ ſir Vlrico ſhold wholy poſſeſſe the lands and gwds of the two Barons to him, and to his heirs foꝛ euer, and that the Barons ſhold be baniſhed out of the kingdoms of *Hungarie* & *Boeme*, neuer to returne vpon paine of death. This ſentẽce was put in execution, & the vnfoꝛtunat Barõs exiled, which ſpecially to thoſe that wer of their conſanguinitie and bloud, ſeemed to ſeuere & rigoꝛous. Neuertheleſſe the couenaunt being moſt plaine & euident to moſt men, ẏ ſame ſeemed to be pꝛonounced with great Juſtice and equitie, foꝛ example in time to come, to leſſõ raſh wits how they iudge & deeme ſo indifferẽtly of womẽs behauiors amõgs whom no doubt ther be both gwd & bad, as there be of men. Afterwardes the ẏ. Pꝛinces ſent foꝛ ẏ Lady to ẏ Court, who there was courteouſly intertained, & foꝛ this hir wiſe & politike fact had in great admiration. The Quéene then appointed hir to be one of hir womẽ of honoꝛ, & eſteemed hir very déerely. The knight alſo daily grew to great pꝛomotion, well beloued and fauoꝛed of the King, who with his Lady lõg time lined in great ioy & felicitie, not foꝛgetting the cunning mã Pollacco, that made him the image and likeneſſe of his wife: whoſe frendſhip and laboꝛ he rewarded with money, and other beneſites very liberally.

Dom Diego and Gineura

¶ DOM DIEGO a Gentleman of Spaine fell in loue with faire GINEVRA, and she with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied DOM DIEGO his happie choise, was by default of light credite on hir part interrupted. He constant of minde, fell into despair, and abandoning all his frends and liuing, repaired to the Pyrene Mountains, where he led a sauage life for certain mõths, and afterwardes knowne by one of his friendes, was (by marueilous circumstaunce) reconciled to hys frowarde maistresse, and maried.

The.xxix.Nouel.

MEnnes mischaunces occurring on the bruntes of diuers Tragicall fortunes, albeit vpon their first taste of bitternesse, they sauor of a certaine kinde of lothsome relish, yet vnder the Rinde of that vnsauerouse sappe, doeth lurke a sweeter hunie, than sweetenesse it selfe, for the fruite that the posterity may gather and learne by others hurtes, howe they may lothe and shunne

ſhunne the like. But bicauſe all things haue their ſeaſons, and euery thing is not conuenient for all times and places, I purpoſe now to ſhewe a Notable example of a vaine and ſuperſtitious Louer, that abandoned his liuing and friendes, to become a Sauage deſert man. Which Hiſtorie reſembleth in a manner a Tragical comedie, comprehending the very ſame matter and argument, wherewith the greateſt part of the ſottiſhe ſortearme them ſelues to couer and defende their follies. It is red and ſeene to often by common cuſtome, and therfore needeleſſe heere to diſplay what rage doeth gouerne, and headlong hale fonde and licentious youthe conducted by the pangue of loue, if the ſame be not moderated by reaſon, and cwled with ſacred leſſons euen from the Cradle to more mature and riper age. For the Tiranny of loue amongs all the deadly foes that vere and afflicte our mindes, glorieth of his force, vaunting himſelfe able to chaunge the proper nature of things, be they neuer ſo ſounde and perfect: who to make them like his luſtes, tranſformeth himſelf into a ſubſtance qualified diuerſly, the better to intrap ſuch as be giuen to his vanities. But hauing auouched ſo many examples before, I am content for this preſent to tel the diſcourſe of two perſons, chaunced not long ſithens in *Catheloigne*. Of a Gentleman that for his conſtancy declared two extremities in himſelfe of loue and follie. And of a Gentlewoman ſo fickle and inconſtant, as loue and they which waited on him, be diſordered, for the truſtleſſe ground wherupon ſuch foundation of ſeruice is layed, which ye ſhall eaſely conceiue by well viewing the difference of theſe twaine: whome I meane to ſummon to the liſtes, by the blaſt of this ſounding trumpe. And thus the ſame beginneth.

Not long after ỹ the victorious & Noble prince, yong Ferdinandus, the sonne of Alphonsus King of *Aragon* was dead, Lewes the twelfth, that time being *Frenche* King, vpon the Marches of *Catheloigne*, betwene *Barcelona* and the Mountaines, there was a good Lady then a widow, which had bene the wife of an excellent and Noble knight of the Countrey, by whome she had left one only daughter, which was so carefully brought vp by the mother, as nothing was to deare or heard to be brought to passe for hir desire, thinking that a creature so Noble and perfecte, could not be trained vp to delicately. Now bisides hir incõparable furniture of beautie, this yong Gentlewoman was adorned with haire so faire, curle, and yealow, as the new fined gold was not matchable to the shining lockes of this tender infant, who therefore commonly was called Gineura la Blonde. Halfe a dayes iorney from the house of this widow, lay the lands of an other Lady a widow also, that was very rich, and so wel allied as any in all the land. This Lady had a sonne, whom she caused to be trained vp so wel in Armes and good letters, as in other honest exercises proper and mete for a Gentleman and great Lord, for which respect she had sent him to *Barcelona* the chiefe Citie of all the Countrey of *Catheloigne*. Senior Dom Diego, (for so was ỹ sonne of that widow called) profited so well in all things, that when he was .xvij. yeares of age, there was no Gentleman of his degree, that did excell him, ne yet was able to approche vnto his perfections and commẽdable behaviour. A thing that did so wel content ỹ good Lady his mother, as she could not tell what countenaunce to kepe to couer hir ioy. A vice very commen to fonde and foolish mothers, who flater them selues with a shadowed hope of the future goodnesse of their childrẽ, which many times doth more

hurt

hurt to that wanton and wilfull age, than profit or aduancement. The perſuaſion alſo of ſuch towardneſſe, full oft doth blinde ỳ ſpꝛites of youth, as ỳ faults which ſolow the ſame be far moꝛe vile thã beforꝛe they were: wherby the firſt Table (made in his firſt coloures) of ỳ imagined vertue, cã take no forꝛce or perfection, and ſo by incurring ſundꝛy miſhaps, the parent & childe commonly eſkape not without equall blame. To come againe therefoꝛe to our diſcourſe: it chaunced in ỳ time that (the Catholike king deceaſed) Philippe of *Auſtrich* which ſucceeded him as heire paſſing thꝛough *Fraunce*, came into *Spaine* to be inueſted and take poſſeſſion of al his ſeignioꝛies and kingdomes: which knowen to the Citizens of *Barcelona*, they determined to receiue him with ſuch pompe, magnificence and honoꝛ, as duely appertaineth to the greatneſſe and maieſtie of ſo great a Pꝛince, as is the ſonne of the *Romane* Emperour. And amongs other things they pꝛepared a triumphe at the Tilt, where none was ſuffred to enter the liſtes, but yong Gẽtlemen, ſuch as neuer yet had folowed armes. Amongs whome Dom Diego as ỳ Nobleſt perſon was choſen chiefe of one part. The Archduke then come to *Barcelona* after the receiued honoꝛs and Ceremonies, accuſtomed foꝛ ſuch entertainment, to gratifie his ſubiects, and to ſée the bꝛauery of the yong *Spaniſh* Nobilitie in armes, would place himſelf vpon the ſkaffolde to iudge the courſes and valiance of the runners. In that magnifique and Pꝛincely conflict, all mens eyes were bent vpon Dom Diego, who courſe by courſe made his aduerſaries to fæle the forꝛce of his armes, his manhode and dexteritie on hoꝛſebacke, and cauſed them to muſe vpon his towarde valiance in time to come, whoſe noble geſts then acquired the victoꝛy of the campe on his ſide. Which moued King Philip to ſay, that in al his life

he neuer saw triũph better handled, and ỳ the same sẽmed rather a battell of strong & hardy men, than an exercise of yong Gentlemen neuer wõted to suppoꝛt the dedes of armes & trauaile of warfare. Foꝛ which cause calling Dom Diego befoꝛe him he sayd. God graũt (yõg Gentleman) ỳ your ende agrée with your godly beginnings & hardy shock of pꝛowe done this day. In memoꝛy wherof I wil this night ỳ ye do your watch, foꝛ I meane to moꝛow (by Gods assistance) to dub you knight. The yong gentlemã blushing foꝛ shame, vpõ his knees kissed the Pꝛinces hãds, thanking him most hũbly of ỳ honoꝛ and fauoꝛ which it pleased his maiestie to do him, vowing & pꝛomising to do so wel in time to come, as no mã shold be deceiued of their conceiued opinion, noꝛ ỳ king fruſtrate of his seruice, which was one of his most obedient vassals & subiectes. So the next day he was made knight, & receiued the coller of ỳ oꝛder at the handes of King Phillip, who after ỳ departure of his pꝛince which toke his iourney into *Castille*, retired to his owne lãds & house, moꝛe to sée his mother, whõe long time befoꝛe he had not séene, than foꝛ desire of pleasure ỳ be in fieldes, which notwithstãding he exercised so well as in end he perceiued resiance in townes & cities, to be an impꝛisonment in respect of that he felt in Countrey. As ỳ Poets whilom fained loue to shote his arrowes amid ỳ woods, foꝛrests, fertile fields, sea coasts, shoꝛes of great riuers and fountaine bꝛinkes, and also vpon the tops of huge and high Mountaines at the pursute of the sundꝛy faꝛted *Nymphes* and fieldish demigods, deeming the same to be a meane of libertie to folow loues tract without suspition, voide of company and lothsome cries of Cities, where iealosie, enuy, false repoꝛt, and ill opinion of all things, haue pitched their camp and raised their tents. And contrariwise frãkly and without dissimulation in

the

the fieldes, the friend discouering his passion to his Mistresse, they enioy the pleasure of hunting, the naturall musike of birdes, and somtimes in pleasant herbers cõpassed with the murmur of some running brookes, they communicate their thoughts, beautifie the accorde and vnitie of louers, and make the place famous for ỹ first witnesse of their amorous acquaintance. In like manner thrice & foure times blest be they there, who leauing the vnquiet toile that ordinarily doeth chaunce to them that abide in Cities, do rendre duetie of their studies to the Muses whereunto they be most minded. Nowe Dom Diego at his owne house loued & cherished of his mother, reuerenced and obeyed of his subiects after he had imployed some time at his study, had none other ordinary pleasure but in rousing the Deere, hunting the wilde Boze, run the Hare, somtimes to flie at the Heron or fearfull Partrich alongs the fields, Forrestes, pondes and steepe Mountaines. It came to passe one day, as he Hunted the wilde Mountaine Goate, which he had dislodged vpon the Hill toppe, he espied an olde Harte that his dogges had found, who so ioyfull as was possible of that good lucke, followed the course of that swift and fearefull beast. But (suche was his Fortune) the dogges lost the sute of that pray, and he his men: for being horsed of purpose, vpon a fair Jennet, could not be followed, and in ende losing the sight of the Deere, was so farre seuered from companie, as he was vtterly ignorant which way to take. And that which grieued him most was his horse out of breth skarse able to ride a false galloppe. For which cause he putte his horne to his mouthe, and blewe so loude as he could. But his men were so farre off, as they could not heare him. The yonge Gentleman being in this distresse, could not tel what to doe, but to returne backe,

wherin.

wherin he was more deceiued than before, for thinking to take the way home to his Castle, wandred still further off from the same. And trotting thus a long time, he spied a Castle situated vpon a little Hill, whereby he knew himself far from his owne house. Neuertheless hearing a certaine noyse of hunters, thinking they had bene his people, resorted to the same, who in deede were the seruaunts of the mother of Ginecura with the golde locks, which in company of their mistresse had hunted the Hare, Dom Diego, when he drue nere to the crie of the Hounds, sawe right well that he was deceiued. At what time night approched, & the shadowes darkening the earth, by reason of the sunnes departure, began to clothe the heauens with a browne and mistie mantell. When the mother of Ginecura sawe the Knight which rode a soft pace, for that his horse was tired, and could trauaile no longer, and knowing by his outward appearaunce that he was some great Lord, and ridden out of his way, sent one of hir mē to know what he was, who returned againe with such answer as she desired. The Ladie ioyfull to entertaine a Gentleman so excellent and famous, one of hir next neighbors, went forwarde to bid him welcome, which she did with so great curtesie as the Knight sayd vnto hir: Madame I thinke that
" fortune hath done me this fauor, by setting me out of
" the way, to proue your curtesie and gentle entertain-
" ment, and to receiue this ioy by visiting your house,
" wherof I trust in time to come to be so perfect a frend,
" as my predecessors heeretofore haue bene. Syr sayd the
" Ladie, if happinesse may be attributed to them, ỳ most
" doe gain, I thinke my self better fauored than you, for
" that it is my chaunce to lodge and entertaine him, that
" is the worthiest persone and best beloued in all *Cathe-*
" *loigne*. The Gentleman blushing at that praise, said no-

thing

thing elſe, but that affection forced men ſo to ſpeake of his vertues, notwithſtanding ſuch as he was, he vowed from thencefoorthe his ſeruice to hir and all hir houſhold. Gineura deſirous not to be ſlacke in curteſie, ſayd y he ſhould not ſo do, except ſhe were partaker of ſome part of that, which the Knight ſo liberally had offred to the whole family of hir mother. The Gentlemã which till that time toke no heede to the diuine beautie of the Gentlewoman, beholding hir at his pleaſure, was ſo aſtonned, as he could not tell what to anſwer, his eyes were ſo fixed vpon hir, ſpending his lookes in contemplation of that freſhe hew, ſtained with a red Vermilion, vpon the Alabaſter and fair colour of hir cleare and beautifull face. And for the imbelliſhing of that natural perfection, the attire vpon hir head was ſo conenable & proper, as it ſeemed the ſame day ſhe had loked for the comming of him, that afterwards indured ſo much for hir ſake. For hir head was adorned with a Garlande of Floures, interlaced with hir golden and enameled haire, which gorgeouſly couered ſome part of hir ſhoulders, diſparcled and hanging downe, ſometime ouer hir paſſing faire forehead, ſomewhiles vpon hir ruddie chekes, as the ſwete and pleaſant windie breath did moue them to and fro: ye ſhould haue ſene hir wauering and criſped treſſes diſpoſed with ſo good grace and comelyneſſe, as a man would haue thought that Loue, and the three Graces coulde not tell elſewhere, to harbor themſelues, but in that riche and delectable place of pleſure, in gorgeous wiſe laced and imbraudred. Vpon hir eares did hang two ſumptuous and rich orientall perles, which to the artificial order of hir haire added a certain ſplendent brightneſſe. And hey had beholden the ſhining and large forehead of that *Nimph*, which galantly was beſet with a diamonde of ineſtimable price and value,

chased with a tresse of golde, made in fourme of litle starres, woulde haue thought that he had seene a ranke of the twinckelyng Planettes, fixed in the firmament in the hottest tyme of Sommer, when that faire season discouereth the order of hys glitteryng cloudes. In like maner the sparkling eyes of the layre Gentlewoman, adorned with that goodly vaulte with two arches, equally by euen spaces distincte and diuided, bred with the *Ebene Indian* træ, dydde so well sette forth theyr brightnesse, as the eyes of them that stayed their lokes at none dayes directly vpon the Sunne, coulde no more be dazeled and offended, than those were, that dyd contemplate those two flamyng starres, whyche were in force able throughly to pierce euen the bottom of the inwarde partes. The nose well formed, iustely placed in the amiable valey of the visage, by equal conformitie distinguished the two cheekes, stained with a pure carnation, resemblyng two litle Apples that wer arriued to the due time of their maturitie and ripenesse. And then hir Corralline mouthe, through whiche breathing, issued out a breath more swet & sauorous than Ambre, Muske, or other aromatical parfume, that euer the swete soile of *Arabie* brought forth. She somtime vnclosing the dore of hir lips, discouered two ranckes of perles, so finely blanched, as the purest Orient would blushe, if it were compared with the beautie of hys incomparable whitenesse. But he that will take vpon hym to speake of al hir inspeakable beautie, may make his vaunte that he hathe seene all the greatest perfections that euer dame Nature wrought. Now to come a little lower, on this freshe Diana appeared a necke, that surmounted the blaunche colour of mylke, were it neuer so excellent white, and hir stomacke somwhat mounting by the two pomels and firme teates of hir

breasts

breastes, separated in equall distaunce, was couered with a vaile, so lose and fine, as those two litle prettie mountains might easily be seene, to moue and remoue, according to the affection that rose in the centre of that modest and sober pucelles mynde: who ouer and besides all this, hath suche a pleasaunt countenaunce and ioyefull chere, as hir beautie more than wonderfull, rendred hir not so worthie to be serued and loued, as hir naturall goodnesse and disposed curtesie appearyng in hir face, and hir excellent entertainment and comly grace to all indifferently. This was not to imitate the maner of the moste parte of our faire Ladies and Gentlewom̃, who (moued with what opinion I know not) be so disdaynfull, as almoste they? name causeth discontentment, and breedeth in them greate imperfection, who by thinking to appeare more braue & fine, by too much squeymishe dealyng, doe offuscate and darken with Follie their exterior beautie, blotting and defacing that which beautie maketh amiable and worthy of honour. I leaue you now to consider whether Dom Diego had occasion to forgo his speache, & to be bereft of sense, being lively assailed with one so wel armed as Gineura was with hir graces & honestie: who no lesse abashed with the port, countenãce, swete talk, and stately behauior of the knight, which she vewed to be in him by stealing lokes, felt a motiõ (not wõted or accustomed) in hir tender hart, ỹ made hir to change color, & by like occasion spechlesse: an ordinarie custom in thẽ ỹ be surprised with ỹ maladie of loue to lose ỹ vse of spech wher the same is most necessarie to giue the intier charge in the heart, which not able to suppor? and beare the burden of so many passions, departeth some porcion to the eyes, as to the faithfull messangers of the myndes secrete conceipts, which tormented beyond measure, and

burning with affection, causeth sometimes the humor to gushe out in that parte that discouered the first assault, and bredde the cause of that feuer, which frighted the hearts of those two yong persons, not knowing well what the same might be. When they were come to the Castle, and dismounted from their horse, many welcomes and gratulations were made to the knight, which yelded more wood to the fire, and liuely touched the yong Gentleman, who was so outraged with loue, as almost he had no minde of himself, and rapt by litle and litle, was so intoxicated with amorous passion, as all other thoughts were lothsome, and ioy displeasant in respect of the fauourable martirdome which he suffered by thinking of his faire and gentle Gineura. Thus the knight which in the morning disposed him selfe to pursue the harte, was in heart so attached, as at euening he was become a seruant, yea and such a slaue, as ỹ voluntarie seruitude wholy dispossessed him from hys former freedome. These be the frutes also of follie, inuegling the eyes of men, that launch themselues with eyes shut into the gulfe of despaire, which in end doth cause the ruin and ouerthrow of him, that yeldeth therunto. Loue proceedeth neuer but of opinion: so likewise the yll order of those that be afflicted with that passion, riseth not elsewhere, but by the fond persuasion which they conceiue, to be blamed, despised and deceiued of the thing beloued: where if they measured that passion according to his valor, they wold make no more accompt of that which doth torment them, than they do of their health, honor and life, who for their seruice and labour delude them, and recompense an other with that which the folish louer shall employ, that doth haste despair to hym, and ende more than desperate, by seeing an other come to enioy that, for which he hath beate the bushes.

During

During the time that supper was preparing, the Lady sent hir men to seeke the huntesmen of Dom Diego, to giue them knowledge where he was become, and therof to certifie his mother, who when she hearde tell that he lay there, was very glad, beyng a righte good friende and very familiar neighbor with the Lady, the hostesse of hir soune. The Gentleman supping, after he had tasted the feruent heate that broiled in his minde, could eate litle meate, rather satisfied with the feeding diete of his amorous eyes, which without any maner of iealousie, distributed their nourishment to the heart, and sat very soberly, priuily throwing his secrete pricks, with louely and wanton loke, to the heart of the faire Ladie, which for hir part spared not to render blurie of rollyng lokes, wherof he was so sparing, as almost he durst not lift vp his eyes for dazelyng of the same. After supper, the Knight bidding the mother and daughter good night, went to bedde, where in steade of slepe, he fell to sighing and imagening a thousande diuers deuiles, fantasiyng like numbers of follies, such as they doe whose braines be fraught with loue. Alas (sayd he) what meaneth it, that alwayes I haue liued in so great libertie, and now doe feele my selfe attached with such bondage as I can not expresse, whose effects neuertheless be fastned in me? Haue I hunted to be take? Came I from my house in libertie, to be shut vp in prison, and do not know whether I shall be receiued, or beyng receiued, haue interteinement, according to my desert? Ah Gineura, I would to God, that thy beautie did prick me no worse, than the tree whereof thou takest thy name, is sharp in touching, and bitter to them that tast the same. Truely I esteeme my comming hither happy (for all the passion that I indure) sith the purchase of a griefe so luckie dothe qualifie the ioy, that made me to

" wander thus ouer frankly. Ah fair amongs the fairest,
" truly the fearful boast which with the bloody hare houn-
" des was torne in pieces, is not more martired, than my
" hart deuided in opinions vpon thine affection. And what
" do I know if thou louest an other more worthy to be fa
" uored of thée thã thy poore Dom Diego. But it is impos-
" sible ỳ any can approch ỳ sincerite ỳ I feele in my hart,
" determining rather to indure death, thã to serue other
" but fair & golde Gineura: therfore my loyaltie receiuing
" no cõparison cãnot be matched in man sufficiẽt (for re-
" spect of ỳ time) to be called seruãt of thine excellencie.
" Now come what shal by means of this, I am assured ỳ
" so long as Dom Diego liueth, his hart shal receiue none
" other impression or desire, but ỳ whiche inciteth him to
" loue, serue, & honor ỳ fairest creature at this day within
" the cõpasse of *Spaine*. Resolued herevpõ, sweating, labo-
ring & trauelling vpon ỳ framing of his loue, he founde
nothing more expedient thã to tel hir his passion, & let hir
vnderstãd ỳ good will ỳ he had to do hir seruice, & to pray
hir to accept him for such, as from that time forth wold
perpetrate nothing but vnder ỳ title of hir good name.
On ỳ other side Gineura could not close hir eies, & knew
not ỳ cause almost ỳ so impeched hir of sléepe, wherfore
now tolling on ỳ one side, & thẽ turning to ỳ other in hir
rich & goodly bed, fãtasied no fewer deuises thã passiona-
ted Dom Diego did. In ỳ end she cõcluded, ỳ if ỳ knight
shewed hir any euident signe or opened by word of mouth
of loue and seruice, she wold not refuse to do the like to
him. Thus passed ỳ night in thoughts sighs & wishes be-
twene these .ij. apprentises of the thing, whereof they ỳ
be lerners, shal sone attain ỳ experience, & they ỳ follow
the occupation throughly, in short time be their crafts
maisters. The nexte day ỳ knight would depart so sone
as he was vp: but ỳ good widow, imbracing ỳ personage
& good order of ỳ knight in hir heart, more thã any other

that she had seen of long time, intreated him so earnestly to tarie as he which loued better to obey hir requeſt thã to depart, although fained ẏ contrary, in ẏ end appered to be vanquished vpõ ẏ great importunitie of the lady. Al that morning ẏ mother & the daughter passed the time with Dom Diego in great talk of cõmon matters. But he was then more astonned & inamored than the night before, in such wise as many times he answered so vnaptly to their demaũds, as it was easily perceiued that his minde was much disquieted with some thing, ẏ only did possesse ẏ force & vehemẽce of ẏ same: notwithstãding ẏ lady imputed ẏ to ẏ shamfastnesse of ẏ gentlemã, & to his simplicity, which had not greatly frequẽted ẏ cõpanie of Ladies. When diner time was come, they were serued with such great fare & sundry delicates, accordingly as w̃ hir hart she wished to intertain ẏ yong lord, to ẏ intent frõ that time forth, he might more willingly make repaire to hir house. After diner he rendred thãks to his hostesse for his good cheere & intertainment that he had receiued, assuring hir, ẏ all ẏ dayes of his life he wold imploy himself to recompense hir curtesie, and withal dutie & indeuor to acknowledge that fauor. And hauing taken his leaue of the mother, he went to ẏ damosell, to hir I say, that had so sore wounded his heart, who alredy was so depely graũ in his mind, as ẏ mark remained there for euer, taking leaue of hir, kissed hir hãds, & thinking verily to erpresse ẏ wherpõ he imagined al ẏ night, his tong & wits wer so tied & rapt, as the gitlewoman perfectly perceiued this alteratiõ, wherat she was no whit discõtented and therfore all blushyng, saide vnto him: I prays to God sir, to ease and comfort your griefe, as you leaue vs desirous and glad, long to enioy your companie. Truly Gentlewoman (answered the Knight,) I thinke my selfe more than happie, to heare that wyth proceede from such a one as you be,

and

" and specially for the desire whiche you say you haue of
" my presence, which shall be euer redie to do that which
it shall please you to commaunde. The Gentlewoman
bashful for that offer, thãked him very hartily, praying
him with swete and smiling countenance, not to forget
the waye to come to visite them, beyng well assured,
" that hir mother wold be very glad therof. And for mine
" owne parte (quod she) I shall thinke my selfe happy to
" be partaker of the pleasure and great amitie that is be-
" twene our two houses. After greate reuerence & leaue
taken betweene them, Dom Diego retourned home,
where he tolde his mother of the good interteynement
made him, and of the great honestie of the Lady his ho-
" stesse: wherfore Madame (quod he to his mother) I am
" desirous (if it be your pleasure) to let them know how
" much their bountiful hospitalitie hath tied me to them,
" and what desire I haue to recompense the same. I am
" therfore willing to bidde them hyther, and to make the
" so good cheere, as with al their heart they made me whe
" I was with them. The Ladie whiche was the assured
friende of the mother of Gineura, liked well the aduise
of hir sonne, and told him that they should be welcome,
for the auncient amitie of long time betweene them,
who was wont many times to visit one an other. Dom
Diego vpon his mothers wordes, sent to intreat the La-
die and faire Gineura, that it would please them to doe
him the honour to come vnto his house: To whiche re-
quest she so willingly yelded, as he was desirous to bid
them. At the appointed day Dom Diego sought al mea-
nes possible honourably to intertaine them: In mea-
tes whereof there was no want, in instrumentes of all
sortes, Pummeries, Pozescoes, and a thousand other
pastetimes, whereby he declared his good bryngyng vp,
the gentlenesse of his spirite, and the desire that he had

appeare such one as he was, before hir, which hadde al-
readie the full possession of his libertie. And because he
would not faile to accomplishe the perfection of his in-
tent, he inuited all the Gentlemen and Gentlewomen
that were his neighbours. I will not here describe the
least part of the prouision for that feast, nor the diuer-
sitie of meates, or the delicate kyndes of wines. It
shall suffise me to tell that after dinner they daunced,
where the knight toke his mistresse by the hand, so glad
to see hir selfe so aduaunced, as he was content to be so
nere hir, that was the swete torment and vnspeaka-
ble passion of his minde, which he began to discouer vn-
to hir in this wyse: Mistresse Gineura, I haue bene al-
ways of this minde, that Musike hath a certain secrete
hidden vertue (which well can not be expressed) to re-
nue the thoughts and cogitations of man, bee they ne-
uer so mornful and pensiue, forcing them to vtter some
outward reioyse: I speake it by my self, for that I liue
in extreme anguish & paine, that al the ioy of the world
semeth vnto me displeasaunt, care, and disquietnesse:
and neuertheless my passion, agreeing with the plain-
tife voyce of the instrument, doth reioyse and conceiue
comforte, as well to perceyue insensible thinges con-
formable to my desires, as also to see my selfe so nere
vnto hir, that hath the salue to ease my payne, to dis-
charge my disease, and to depriue my minde from all
griefs. In like maner-reason it is, that she hir selfe doe
remedy my disease, of whom I receiued the pricke, and
which is the first foundation of all mine euil. I can not
tell (sayde the Gentlewoman) what disease it is you
speake of, for I should be very vnkinde to giue him oc-
casion of griefe, that dothe make vs this greate chere.
Ah Ladie mine (sayd the knight) fetching a sighe from
the bottome of his hearte, the intertainement that I

" receyue by the continuall contemplation of youre di-
" uine beauties, and the vnspeakeable bryghtenesse of
" those two beames, whyche twynckle in youre face,
" bée they that happily doe bere me, and make me drinke
" thys cuppe of bitternesse, wherein notwythstanding
" I fynde suche swéetenesse as all the heauenly drinke
" called Ambrosia, fayned by the Poetes, is but gall in
" respecte of that which I taste in mynde, féelyng my
" deuotion so bente to doe you seruice, as onely Death
" shall vntye the knotte wherewith voluntarilye I
" knytte my selfe to bée youre seruaunt for euer, and
" yf it so please you, youre faythfull and loyall friend
" and husbande. The yonge Damoselle not wonted
for to heare suche Songs, did chaunge hir colour
at least three or foure tymes, and neuertheless in-
ned a little angre of that whych dydde content hir
moste: and yet not so sharpe, but that the Gentle-
man perceyued well enough, that shée was touched
at the quycke, and also that hée was accepted into
hir good grace and fauoure. And therefore hée con-
tinued styll hys talke, all that tyme after dynner,
" and the mayden sayde vnto hym: Syr, I will natu-
" confesse that griefe may couer alteration of affection
" procédyng from Loue. For although I hadde deter-
" mined to dissemble that whiche I thynke, yet there
" is a thyng in my mynde (whyche I maye not name)
" that gouerneth me so strongly, and draweth me furth
" from my proper deuises and conceiptes, in such wise
" as I am constrained to doe that which this second in-
" spiration doeth leade mée vnto, and dothe force my
" mynde to receyue an Impression, that what will bée
" the ende thereof, as yet I knowe not. Notwithstan-
" dyng, reposyng me in youre vertue and honestie, and

acknow-

acknowledgyng your merite, I thinke my selfe hap-
pie to haue suche one for friende, that is so faire and
comely a Knight, and for suche I doe accepte you vn-
till you haue obtained of my Ladie my mother, the
seconde poynte, whych accomplisheth that whych is
moste desired of them, that for vertues sake do loue.
For but onely for that, you shall be none otherwyse
fauoured of me, than hytherto you haue bene. Till
nowe haue I attended for this right happie daye of
ioye and blisse (sayde the Knight) in token whereof,
I doe kisse your white and delicate handes, and for ac-
knowledgyng the fauour that presently I doe receiue,
whereby I maye make my vaunt to be the seruaunte
of hir, that is the faireſt, moſte curteous, and honeſt
Gentlewoman on thys syde the Mountaynes. As hee
hadde ended those wordes, they came to couer for
supper, where they were serued so honourably, as if
they hadde bene in the Court of the Monarch of *Spayne*.
After supper, they wente to walke abroade alongs
the Riuer syde, besette with wyllowe trées, where
bothe the beautie of the tyme, the runnyng Ryuer,
the charme of the naturall musicke of byrdes, and the
pleasaunt murmure of the tremblyng leaues, at the
whisselyng of the sweete Westerne wynde, moued
them agayne to renew theyr palletyme after dynner.
For some dydde gyue them selues to talke, and to de-
uise of delectable matter: some framed nosegayes, gar-
landes, and other pretie poesyes for theyr friendes:
Other some dyd leape, runne, and throwe the barre.
In the end a great lord, neighbor to Dom Diego, whose
name was Dom Roderico, knowing by his frends coũ-
tenance to what saint he was vowed, & perceiuing for
whose loue ỹ feast was celebrate, toke by ỹ hand a gen-

tlewoman that sate nexte to faire Gineura, and prayed hir to daunce after a song, whereunto she beeing pleasaunt and wyse, made no great refusall. Dom Diego failed not to ioyne with hys mystresse, after whom followed the reste of that noble traine, euery of them as they thought best. Now the Gentlewoman, that began to daunce, song thys song so apte for the purpose, as if shee hadde entred the hearts of the enimie and mystresse of Dom Diego, or of purpose hadde made the same in the name of hir, whome the matter touched aboue the reste.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart poßeße in bondage thrall?
The yong and tender febleneße
Of mine vnskilfull age,
Wherof alßo the tenderneße
Doth feeble heart aßuage:
Whome beauties force hath made to frame
Vnto a louers heßt,
So soone as firßt the kindled flame
Of louing toyes increßt.
Who may better sing and daunce, amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart poßeße in bondage thrall?
I haue aßayed out to put
The fier thus begoonne,
And haue attempted of to cut
The threede which loue hath spoonne:
And new alliance faine would flee
Of him whome I loue beßt,
But that the Gods haue willed mee
To yelde to his requeßt.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart poßeße in bondage thrall?

So ami-

So amiable is his grace,
Not like among vs all:
So passing faire is his face,
Whose hue doth staine vs all:
And as the shining sunny day
Doth ev'ry man delight,
So he alone doth beare the sway,
Amongs echo loving wight.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart posesse in bondage thrall?
Why should not then, the fairest dame,
Apply hir gentle minde,
And honor giue vnto his name,
With humble heart and kinde?
Sith he is full of curtesie,
Indewd with noble grace,
And brest replete with honestie,
Well knowne in ev'ry place.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart posesse in bondage thrall?
If I should loue, and serue him than,
May it be counted vice?
If I restraine that worthy man,
Shall I be deemde vnwise?
I will be gentle to him sure,
And tender him mine aide:
And loue that wight with heart full pure,
That neuer loue assaide.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart posesse in bondage thrall?
Thus the most secret vnitie,
That doth our hearts combine:
Is voide of wicked flattery,
This simple sort to trie:

No hardned riger is our guide,
Nor follie doth vs leade:
No Fortune can vs twaine deuide,
Vntill we both be deade.
Who may better ſing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than ſhe that doth hir louers heart poſſeſſe in bondage thrall?
And thus aſſured certainly,
That this our loue ſhall dure,
And with good lucke hope verely,
The ſame to put in vre.
The ſowen ſedes of amitie,
Begon betwixt vs twaine,
Shall in moſt perfite vnitie,
For euermore remaine.
Who may better ſing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than ſhe that doth hir louers heart poſſeſſe in bondage thrall!

This ſong delited the minds of many in ꝯ company, and principally Dom Diego & Gineura, who felt themſelues tickled without laughing: notwithſtanding, the maiden reioyſed to hear hir ſelf ſo greatly praiſed in ſo noble a company, & ſpecially in ꝯ preſence of hir friend who had no leſſe pleaſure by hearing the praiſes of his beloued, than if he had bene made Lord of all *Aragon*. The for all hir diſſembled countenaunce vſed openly, could not hide the alteration of hir minde, without ſending forth a ſodain chaunge of colour, ꝯ increaſed ꝯ fair & goodly taint of hir face. Dom Diego ſeing ꝯ mutation, was ſo ioyful as was poſſible, for thereby he knew and iudged himſelf aſſured of the good grace of his miſtreſs & therfore wringing hir finely by the hands, ſayd vnto hir very ſoberly ſmiling. What greater pleaſure my louing wench can there happen vnto your ſeruaunt, than to ſee the accompliſhment of this Prophetical ſog &

I assure you ꝑ in al my life I neuer heard musike, ꝑ delited me so much as this, & therby do vnderstand ꝑ good will of the Gentlewoman, which so curteously hath discouered yours towards me, & the faithful seruice wher of you shall se me from hence forth so liberall, as neither gods nor life shal be spared for your sake. Gineura who loued him with al hir heart, thanked him very humbly, and prayed him to beleue that the song was not vn truly song, and ꝑ without any fail, she had therby manifested al the secrets of hir minde. The daunce ended, they sate them downe round about a cleare fountaine, which by silent discourse, issued from an high and moisty rock, enuirōned with an infinite number of Papletrées, Poplers & Alhes. To which place a page brought a lute to Dom Diego, wherupō he could play very wel, & made it more pleasātly to sound for that he accorded his fayning voice to the instrument, singing this song that followeth.

That I should loue and serue also, good reason doth require,
What though I suffre lothsome grief, my life in woe to wrappe?
The same be thonely instruments, of my good lucke and happe,
The foode and pray for hungry corps, of rest th'assured hire.

By thought whereof (O heauy man) gush forth of teares great
And by & by reioyst againe, my driery teares do cease: (store
Which guerdon shal mine honor sure, in that triumphāt peace,
The summe whereof I offer now, were it of price much more.

Which I doe make withall my heart, vnto that blessed wight,
My proper Goddesse here on earth, and only mistresse dere:
My goods and life, my breathing gost within this carcase here,
I vow vnto that maiestie, that heauenly starre most bright.

Now sith my willing vow is made, I humbly pray hir grace,
To end th'accord betwene vs pight, no longer time to tracte:

Which

Which if it be by ſured band ſo haply brought to paſſe,
I muſt my ſelf thrice happy coũt, for that moſt heauenly gift.

This ſong made the company to muſe, who commi-
ded the trim inuention of the Knight, and aboue al Ge-
neura praiſed him more than before, & could not ſo well
refraine hir lokes from him, & he with countrechange
reuoking like againe, but that the two widowes their
mothers conceiued great hede therof, reioyſing great-
ly to ſée the ſame, deſirous in time to couple them toge-
ther. For at that preſent they deferred the ſame, in co-
ſideration they were both very yong. Notwithſtãding
it had bene better that the ſame coniunction had bene
made, before fortune had turned the wheele of hir in-
ſtablenelle. And truely delay and prolongation of time
ſometimes bringeth ſuch and ſo great miſchaps, that
one hundred times men curſſe their fortune, and little
aduiſe in foreſight of their infortunate chaunces that
commonly do come to paſſe. As it chaũced to theſe wi-
dowes, one of them thinking to loſe hir ſonne by the
vaine behauior of the others daughter, who without
helpe of God, or care vnto his will, diſparaged hir ho-
nor, and prepared a poyſon ſo daungerous for hir mo-
thers age, that the fode therof prepared the way to the
good Ladies graue. Nowe whiles this loue in this ma-
ner increaſed, and that deſire of theſe two Louers, fla-
med forth ordinarily in fire and flames more violent,
Dom Diego all chaunged and tranſformed into a newe
man, receiued no delite, but in the ſight of his Ginebra.
And ſhe thought that there could be no greater felici-
tie, or more to be wiſhed for, than to haue a friend ſo
perfect, and ſo wel accompliſhed with all things requi-
ſite for the ornament and full furniture of a Gentle-
man. This was the occaſion that the yong Knight let

no

no weeks to passe without visiting his mistresse twice or thrice at the least, and she did vnto him the greatest curtesie and best entertainment, that vertue could suffer a maiden to doe, who is the diligent treasurer and carefull tutor of hir honor. And this she did by consēt of hir mother. In like manner, honestie doth not permit ỹ chaste maidens should vse long talke, or immoderate speeche, with the first that be suters vnto them: much lesse semely it is for them to be ouer squeimishe nice, with that man which seeketh (by way of marriage) to winne power and title of the body, which in very dede, is or ought to be the moitie of their soule. Such was ỹ desires of these two Louers, which notwithstanding was impeached by meanes, as hereafter you shal heare. For during the rebounding ioy of these faire couple of loyall louers, it chaunced that the daughter of a noble man of the Countrey, named Ferrando de la Serre, which was faire, comely, wise, and of very good behauior, by keping daily company with Gineura, fel extreemely in loue with Dom Diego, and assayed by all meanes to do him to vnderstand what the puissance was of hir loue, which willingly she meant to bestowe vpon him, if it wold please him to honor hir so much, as to loue hir wt like sincerity. But the Knight which was no more his own man, but rather possessed of another, had lost with his libertie his wits, and minde to marke the affection of this Gentlewoman of whome he made no accompt. The Maiden neuertheless ceased not to loue him, and to proue al possible wayes to make him hir owne. And knowing how much Dom Diego loued Hawking, she bought a Hawke the best in all the Countrey, and sent the same to Dom Diego, who with all his heart receiued the same, and effectuously gaue hir thanks for that desired gift, praying the messanger to recommend him

to the good grace of his Mistresse, and to assure hir selfe of his faithfull seruice, and that for hir sake he would kepe the hauk so tenderly as ỳ balles of his eyes. This Hauk was the cause of the ill fortune that afterwards chaunced to this poore louer. For going many times to see Gineura with the Hauke on his fist, & bearing with him the tokens of the goodnesse of his Hauke, it escaped his mouthe to say, that the same was one of the things that in all the world he loued best. Truely this worde was taken at the first bound contrary to his meaning, wherwith the matter so fell out, as afterwards by despaire he was like to lose his life. Certaine dayes after, as in the absence of the Knight, talke rose of his vertue and honest conditions, one praising his prowesse & valiaunce, another his great beautie and curtesy, another passing further, extolling the sincere affection and constãcy which appeared in him touching matters of loue, one enuious person named Gracian spake his minde thus

"in this wise: I wil not deny but that Dom Diego is one
"of the most excellent, honest and brauest Knightes of
"*Catheloigne*, but in matters of Loue he seemeth to me so
"waltering and inconstant, as in euery place where he
"commeth, by and by he falleth in loue, and maketh as
"though he were sick, and wold die for the same. Gineu-
"ra maruelling at those words, sayd vnto him: I pray
"you my friende to vse better talke of the Lorde Dom
"Diego. For I do thinke the loue which the Knight doth
"beare to a Gentlewoman of this Countrey, is so firme
"and assured, that none other can remoue the same out
"of the siege of his minde: Lo how you be deceiued gen-
"tlewoman (quod Gracian,) for vnder colourde of dissimu-
"late seruice, he and such as he is doe abuse the simplici-
"tie of yong Gentlewomen. And to proue my saying

true,

true, I am assured that he is extremely enamored with the daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre, of whome he receiued an Hauke, ý he loueth aboue all other things. Gineura remembring the words which certaine dayes before Dom Diego spake touching his Hauke, began to suspect and beleue that which master Gracian alleaged, and not able to support the choler, which colde iealosie bred in hir stomake, went into hir Chamber full of so great grief and heauinesse, as she was many times like to kill hir self. In the end, hoping to be reuenged of the wrong which she beleued to receiue of Dom Diego, determined to endure hir fortune pacientlý. In ý meane time she conceiued in hir minde a despite and hatred so great and extreame against the poore Gentleman that thought little hereof, as the former loue was nothing in respect of the reuenge by death, which she then desired vpon him. Who the next day after his wonted maner came to see hir, hauing (to his great damage) the Hauke on his fiste, which was the cause of all that iealosie. Nowe as the Knight was in talke with the mother, seeing that his beloued came not at all (according to hir custome) to salute him and bid him welcome, inquired how she did. One that loued him more than the rest, sayd vnto him: Syr, so soone as she knewe of your comming, immediately she withdrew hir selfe into hir Chamber. He that was wise and well trained vp, dissembled what he thought, imagining that it was for some little fantasie, whereunto women willingly be subiecte. And therefore when he thought time to departe, he toke leaue of the widowe, and as she was going downe the staires of the great Chamber, he met one of the maides of Gineura, whome he prayed to commend him to hir mistresse.

Gineura during all this time toke no reſt, deuiſing how ſhe might cutte of cleane hir loue entertained in Dom Diego, after ſhe knew that he caried the Hawke on his fiſt: which was the only cauſe that did put hir into that frenſie. And therefore thinking hir ſelfe both deſpiſed and mocked of hir Knight, & that he had done it in deſpite of hir, ſhe entred into ſo great rage and choler, as ſhe was like to fall mad. She being then in this trouble of minde, behold hir Gentlewoman came vnto hir, and did the Knights meſſage. Who hearing the ſimple name of hir ſuppoſed enimy, begã to ſigh ſo ſtrangely, as a man wold haue thought hir ſoule preſently wold haue departed hir body. Afterwards when ſhe had vanquiſhed hir raging fit which ſtayed hir ſpeach, ſhe gan
" very tenderly to weepe, ſaying: Ah traitor & vnfaithful
" louer, is this the recompenſe of the honeſt and firme a-
" mitie which I haue borne thée, ſo wickedly to deceiue
" me vnder the colour of ſo faint and deteſtable a friend-
" ſhip? Ah raſhe and arrant Theefe, is it I vpon whome
" thou oughteſt to bende thy wicked trumperies? Doeſt
" thou thinke that I am no better worthe, but that thou
" prodigally ſhouldeſt waſt mine honor to bear ỳ ſpoiles
" thereof to hir, that is in nothing comparable vnto me?
" Wherin haue I deſerued this diſcurteſie, if not by lo-
" uing thée more than thy beautie & fained loue deſerue?
" Diddeſt thou dare to aduenture vpon me, hauing thy
" conſcience wounded with ſuche an abhominable and
" deadly treaſon? Durſt thou to offer thy mouth to kiſſe
" my hand, by the mouth of another, to whome thou had-
" deſt before dedicated thy lying lips in thine owne pro-
" per perſon? I praiſe God that it pleaſed him to let me
" ſée before any other worſe chaunce hath happened, the
" poyſon by thée prepared for the ruine of my life and ho-
" nor. Ha fole, hope not to take me in thy trap, nor yet

to

to deceiue me through thy fugred and deceitful words. »
For I sweare by the almighty God, that so long as I »
shall liue, I wil accompt thée none other, but as y most »
cruel and mortal enimy that I haue in this world. »

Then to accomplish the rest of hir careful minde, she wrote a letter to giue hir farewell to hir olde friend Dom Diego. And for that purpose instructed hir Page with this lesson, that when the Knight should come, he should be ready before hir lodging, and say vnto him in the behalfe of hir, that before he passed any further, he should reade the letter, and not to faile to doe the contents. The Page which was malicious, and ill affectioned to Dom Diego, knowing the appointed day of his comming, waited for him a quarter of a mile from the Castle, where he had not long tarried, but beholde the innocent louer came, against whome the Page went, bearing about him more hurtfull & noisome weapons, than all the Theaues and robbers had in all the Countrey of *Catheloigne*. In this manner presenting his mistresse letters, he sayde vnto him: My Lord, Madame » Gineura my mistresse hath sent me vnto you, & bicause » she knoweth how fearfull you be to displease hir, prayeth you not faile to reade this letter before you passe » any further, and there withall accomplishe the effecte of » the same. The Knight abashed with that sodaine mes- » sage, answered the Page: God forbid my friend (quod » he) that I shold disobey hir by any meanes, vnto whom » I haue giuen a full authoritie and puissance ouer mine » affections. So receiuing the letters, he kissed them three » or foure times, and opening them, found that he hoped not for, and red that which he thought not of. The cõtents wherof were these.

The Letters of faire *Gineura*, to the Knight *Dom Diego*.

THere shall passe no day of my life, from making complaintes of thée disloyall and periured Louer, who being moze esteemed and better beloued than thou diddest deserue, hast made so small accompte of me, whereof I will be reuenged vpon my selfe, foz that I haue thus lightly beleued thy wozdes so full of craft and guile. I am in minde that thou from henceforth shalt flye, to buzze and beate the bushes, where thou suspectest to catche the pzay: foz héere thou art like to be deceiued. Goe varlet, (goe I say,) to deceiue hir which holdeth thée in hir nets and snares, and whose Pzesentes (although of small value) haue moued thée moze than the Honest, vertuous, and Chaste Loue, that vertue hir selfe began to knitte betweene vs. And sith a carrion Kite hath made thée flie further off, than the winde of the aire was able to beare thée, God defend that Gineura should goe about to hinder thy follies, and much lesse to suffer hir selfe to be beguiled through thine ercules. Nay rather God defend (except thou desirest to see me die) that thou shouldest euer be in place where I am, assuring thée of this my minde, neuer to be chaunged so long as my soule shall rest within my body: which giuing bzeth vnto my panting bzeast, shall neuer be other, but a moztall enimie to Dom Diego: and such one as euen to the Death will not faile to pzosecute the default of the most traiterous and vnfaithfull Knight, that euer was girte with girdle, oz armed with sword.

And

And beholde the laſt fauour that thou canſt, or ought
to hope of me, who liueth not but onely to martir
and cruciſſe thee, and neuer ſhall be other but

The greateſt enimie that euer thou haſt, or
ſhalt haue, *Gineura the faire.*

The miſerable louer had no ſooner red the contents
of the letter, but lifting vp his eyes to the heauens, he
ſayd: Alas, my God thou knoweſt well if euer I haue
offended, that I ought to be baniſhed from the place,
where my contentation is chiefly fixed, & from whence
my heart ſhall neuer departe, chaunce what miſſehappe
and fortune ſo euer. Then tourning himſelf towardes
the Page, he ſayd: Sir Page my friend, ſay vnto my
Ladie, moſt humbly commending me vnto hir, that for
this preſent I will not ſee hir, but heereafter ſhe ſhall
heare ſome newes from me. The Page well leſſo-
ned for the purpoſe, made him anſwere, ſaying: Sir
ſhe hath willed me to ſay thus much by mouthe, that
ye cannot do hir greater pleaſure, than neuer to come
in place where ſhe is: for ſo much as the Daughter
of Dom Ferrando de la Serre hath ſo catched you in hir
nettes, that loth ſhe is your faithfull heart ſhould hang
in ballance, and expect the vncertaine loue of two La-
dies at once.

Dom Diego hearing the truth of his miſſehap, & the
occaſion of the ſame, made light of the matter for that
time, till at length the choler of his miſtreſſe ſhold be-
gin to cole, that therby ſhe might know vpõ how bri-
tle grounde ſhe hadde planted a ſuſpition of hir moſt
faithfull and louing ſeruaunt, and ſo retiring towards
his houſe, altogether vexed and ill contented, he went
into his Chamber, where with his dagger he paunched

the

the gorge of the poze Birde, the cauſe of his Ladies an-
" ger, ſaying: Ha vils carraine kite, I ſweare by the
" bloud of him, that thou ſhalt neuer be the cauſe again,
" to make hir fret foz ſuch a trifling thing as thou art: I
" beleue that what ſo euer furie is bidden within the bo-
" dy of this curſſed kite, to engender a Plague, the ſame
" now is ſeaſed on me, but I hope to doe my miſtreſſe to
" vnderſtande what ſacrifice I haue made of the thing
" which was ſent me, ready to do the like vpō mine owne
" fleſh, where it ſhal pleaſe hir to commaund. So taking
" inke & paper, he made anſwer to Gineura as foloweth.

The letters of *Dom Diego* to *Gineura* the faire.

" BVt who would euer haue thought (my Lady deare)
" that a light opinion could ſo ſone haue diuided and
" diſparkled your good iudgement, to condemne your
" knight before you had heard what he was able to ſay
" for himſelfe: truely I thought no more to offend you,
" than the man which you neuer knewe, although you
" haue bene deceiued by colored words, vttered by thoſe
" that be enuious of my happe, and enimies of your ioy,
" who haue filled your minde ful of falſe report. I ſweare
" vnto you (by God, my good Lady) that neuer thing en-
" tred into my fantaſie more, than a deſire to ſerue you
" alone, and to auoide the acquaintaunce of all other, to
" preſerue for you a pure and entire heart. Wherof long
" agone I made you an offer. In witneſſe wherof I hum-
" bly beſeeche you to beleue, that ſo ſone as you ſe this
" Birde (the cauſe of your anger and occaſion of my miſ-
" hap) torne and plucke in pieces, that my heart feeleth
" no leſſe alteration or torment: for ſo long as I ſhal vn-

derſtand

derstand your displeasure to endure against me, assure your selfe my life shall abide in no lesse paine than my ioy was great, whom I frankly possessed your presence. Be it sufficient (madame) for you to knowe, that I neuer thought to offende you. Be contēted I beseech you, with this sacrifice whiche I send you, if not, that I doe the like vpon mine own body, which without your good will and grace can not longer liue. For my lyfe depending vpon that onely benefite, you ought not to be astonned if the same failing his nourishmente dothe perishe, as frustrate of that foode, proper and apte for his appetite: and by like meanes my sayd life shall reuiue, if it may please you to spreade your beames ouer mine obscure and base personage, and to receiue this satisfactiō for a fault not committed. And so awaiting a gentle answere from your great curtesie, I humbly kisse your white and delicate handes with all humilitie, praying God swete lande, to let you se how much I suffer without relefe, and what puissaunce you haue ouer him that is all yours.

Faithfull and ever seruante
moste obedient *Dom Diego.*

The letter closed and sealed, he deliuered to one of his faithfull and secrete seruantes, to beare (with the beade hanke) vnto Gineura, chargyng him diligently to take heede to his countenaunce, and aboue all, that faithfully he shoulde beare away that which she shold saye vnto him for answere. His man failed not to spede himself with diligence: and being come before Gineura, he presented that which his master had sent hir. She full of wrath and indignation, would not once vouchsafe to reade the letter, and much lesse to accept the present whiche was a witnesse of the contrary of that she dyd beleue, and tournyng vnto the Messanger, she sayde:

" My friende, thou mayeſt goe gette thée backe agayne,
" wyth the ſelfe ſame charge whiche thou haſt brought,
" and ſay vnto thy maiſter, that I haue nothyng to doe
" with his Letters, his excuſes, or any other things that
" commeth from hys handes, as one hauyng good expe-
" perience of hys ſleightes and deceipts. Tell hym alſo,
" that I prayſe God, in good tyme I haue taken héede
" to the little fayth and truſte that is in him for a coun-
" tergarde in tyme to come, lightly neuer to bée decey-
ued. The ſeruyng man woulde fayne haue framed an Oration to purge his maiſter, but the fierce Gentlewoman brake of his talke, ſaying vnto hym, that ſhe was well reſolued vpon hir intente, which was, that Dom Diego ſhoulde neuer recouer place in hir minde, and that ſhée hated hym as much at that tyme as euer ſhée loued him before. Vpon which anſwere the Meſſanger returned, ſo ſorowfull for the miſfortune of his maiſter (knowing him to be very innocent) as he knewe full well into what deſpaire his maiſter would fall, when he vnderſtode thoſe pitifull and heauie newes: notwithſtanding nedes he muſt know them, and therfore when he was come before Dom Diego, hée recited vnto hym from poynt to poynt his ambaſſage, and deliuered him againe his letters. Whereof the infortunate Gentleman was ſo ſore aſtoned, as he was like to haue fallen
" downe dead at that inſtant. Alas (ſayde he) what yll
" lucke is this, that when I thought to enioye the bene-
" fite of my attempte, Fortune hath reuolted to bring
" me to the extremitie of the moſte deſperate man that
" euer lyued? Is it poſſible that my good ſeruice ſhoulde
" hée the cauſe of my approached ouerthrowe? Alas,
" what may true and faithfull louers hencefoorthe hope
" for, if not the leſſe of their time, when after long ſer-
uice

noire and duetie, an Enuious sole shall come to de-
pryue them of their ioy and gladnesse, and they feeling
the bitternesse of theyr abandoned farewell, one that
loueth lesse shall beare away the sweete fruite of suche
hope, and shall possesse without deserte the glorie due
to a good and faithfull futer. Ah sayre Gineura, that thou
seest not the griefe whych I doe feele. and the affection
wherewith I serue thée, and howe muche I wouldé
suffer to gayne and recouer thy good grace and fauor.
Ha vayne hope, whyche vntyll nowe hast fylled me,
wyth myrthe and gladnesse, altogether spente and
powdred in the gaulle of operation of thy bytter sa-
youre, and the taste of thy corrupted heart: better
it hadde bene for méé at the begynnyng to haue refu-
sed thée, than afterwardes receyued, cherished, and sin-
cerely beloued, to be banished for so lyght occasion, as
I am full sore ashamed to conceyue the same wythin
remembraunce: but Fortune shall not haue hir wyll
ouer me: for so long as I shall lyue, I wyll continue
the seruaunt of Gineura, and my lyfe I will preserue,
to lette hir vnderstande the force of Loue: By conti-
nuance whereof, I will not sticke to sette my selfe on
fyre with the lively flames of my passion, and then
withdrawe the fyrebrandes of my ioye, by the rigour
and frowardnesse that shall procéede from hir. When
he had finished his talke, he began to sigh and lament so
straungely, as his man was about to goe to call the la-
die the mother of the Knighte his maister: In whome
dyde appeare suche signes, as yt Death hadde bene
at hande, or else that he hadde ben attached with the
Spirite of phrenesie. But when he sawe hym aboute
to come agayne to hymselfe, he sayd thus vnto hym:
How now syr, wil you cast your selfe away for the fo-

" lish toy of an vndiscrete girle, yl manered and taught,
" and who perchaunce doth all this, to proue how constãt
" you would be? No no sir, you must turne ouer an other
" leafe, and sith you be determined to loue hir, you must
" persenere in your pursute. For at lengthe it is impos-
" sible, but that this diamont hardnesse, must nedes be
" mollified, if she be not a diuel incarnate, more furious
" than the wildest beastes, whych haunte the desertes of
" *Lybia*. Dom Diego was comforted with that admoniti-
on, and purposed to persist in hys affection, and there-
fore sent many messages, giftes, letters, and excuses
to his angred mistresse Gineura: But she made yet lesse
accompt of the vn than of the firste, chargyng the mes-
sangers not to trouble them selues about those trifles,
for she had rather die than to see hym, or to receyue a-
ny thing from him, whom she hated aboue all things of
the worlde. When newes hereof came to the knight,
he was altogether impacient, and seeyng the smal pro-
fite whiche he dyd gaine by pursuing his foolish opinion,
and not able to withdrawe his loue elsewhere, he deter-
mined to die: and yet vnwilling to imbrue his handes
with his owne blod, he purposed to wander as a bara-
bunde into some desert, to performe the course of his
vnhappie and sorowfull dayes, hoping by that meanes
to quenche the heate of that amorous rage, either by
length of time, or by death, the last refuge of the mise-
rable. For whiche purpose then, he caused to be made
two pilgrims weedes, yone for himself, the other for
his man, and prepared all their necessaries for his voy-
age. Then wryting a Letter to his Gineura, he called
" one of his men, to whome he sayde: I am going about
" certaine of mine affaires, whereof I will haue no man
" to know, and therfore when I am gone, thou shalt tell
" my Lady mother what I saye to thee, and that within

twentie

twentie dayes (God wyllyng) I meane to retourne. »
Moreouer I require thée, that foure dayes after my de- »
parture, & not before, to beare these letters to mistresse »
Gineura, and if so be she refuse to receiue them, faile not »
to deliuer them vnto hir mother: takes heede therefore if »
thou loue me, to doe all that which I haue giuen thée in »
charge. Afterwards he called his seruaunt vnto hym, »
which had done the first message vnto Gineura, whiche
was a wise and gentle fellow, in whome the Knyghte
reposed great affiance, to hym he declared al his enter-
prise, and the ende wherevnto his fierce determination
did extende. The good seruant which loued his master,
hearyng his intent so vnreasonable, sayde vnto hym:
Is it not enough for you sir to yeld your selfe a praie to
the most fierce and cruell woman that liueth, but thus
to augment hir glorie, by seeing hir selfe so victorious
ouer you? Are you ignorant what the malice of wom̃
is, and howe muche they triumphe in tormentyng the
pore blynded soules that become their seruantes, and
what prayse they attribute vnto themselues, if by some
misfortune they driue them to dispaire? Was it with-
out cause that the Sage in tymes paste did so greately
hate that sexe and kinde, as the common ruine & ouer-
throw of men? What moued the *Greke* Poete to syng
these verses, against all sortes of women?

A common woe though silly woman be to man,
Yet double ioy againe she doth vnto him bring:
The wedding night is one, as wedded folke tell can,
The other when the knell for hir poore soule doth ring.

If not for that he knew the happinesse of man consisted
more in auoiding the acquaintaunce of that furie, than
by imbracing and cherishyng of the same, sith hir na-
ture is altogether like vnto Aesops serpẽt, which being
deliuered from perill and daunger of death by the shep-

hierd, for recompense thereof, infected his whole bodie with his venomous hissing and rammish breath. O how happie is he that can master his owne affections, & lyke a free man from that passion, can reioice in libertie, flying from the sweete euyll whiche (as I well perceyue) is the cause of your despaire. But sir, your wisedome ought to banquish those light conceiptes, by settyng light of that your rebellious Gentlewoman, as she is vnworthie to be fauoured by so great a Lord as you be, who deserueth a better personage than hirs is, and a frendlier entertainemen than a farewell so solishly giuen. Dom Diego, although that he toke pleasure to heare those discourses of hys faithfull seruaunt, yet he shewed so sower a countenaunce vnto him, as the other with thys litle worde helde his peace. With then it is so fyr, that you be resolued in your misshappe, it may please you to accept me to wait vpon you, whither you are determined to go: for I meane not to lyue at mine ease, and suffer my master, in payne and in griefe. I will be partaker of that whiche Fortune shal prepare, vntill the heauens doe mitigate theyr rage vppon you, and your predestinate misshappe. Dom Diego, who desired no better companie, imbraced hym very louingly thanking him for the good will that hee bare hym, and sayde: This present night about midnight, wee will take our iorney, euen that way whether our lotte and also Fortune shall guide vs, attending either the ende of my passiõ, or the whole ouerthrow of my selfe. Their intent they did put in proofe: For at midnight (the Moone being clere when all things were at rest, and the crickets chirping through the creauises of the earth, they toke their way vnseene of any. And so soone as Aurora began to garnish hir mantle with the colors of red and white, and the morning starre of the Goddesse of ster-

ling

ling loue, appeared, Dom Diego began to ſigh, ſaying: Ah ye freſhe and dewy mornings, that my happe is far from the contentation of others, who after they haue reſted vpon the cogitation of theyr eaſe and ioy, doe awake by the pleaſaunt chirpyng of the birdes, to performe by effect that whiche the ſhadowe and fantaſie of theyr mynde, dyd preſent by dreaming in the night, where I am conſtrained to ſeparate by greate diſtance exceding vehement continuation of my tormentes, to folowe wylde beaſts, wandring from thence where the greateſt number of men do quietly ſlepe and take their reſt. Ah Venus, whoſe ſtarre now cõduceth me, & whoſe beames long agoe didde glowe and kyndle my louing heart, howe chanceth it that I am not intreated according to the deſert of my conſtant mind and mening moſt ſincere? Alas, I loke not to expect any thing certẽ from thee, ſith thou haſt thy courſe amongs the wãdring ſtarres. Muſt the influence of one ſtarre ẏ ruleth ouer me deface that which ẏ heuẽs wold to be accõpliſhed, & that my cruel miſtreſſe, deluding my languors & griefs triumpheth ouer mine infirmitie, & ouerwhelmeth me with care and ſorow, that I line pining away, amongs the ſauage beaſts in ẏ wilderneſſe: forſomuche as wout ẏ grace of my lady, all cõpany ſhall be ſo tedious & lothſom vnto me, ẏ the only thought of a tru reconciliatiõ wher, ẏ hath the beſt of me, ſhal ſerue for ẏ comfort & true remedie of all my troubles. Whiles he had with theſe pẽſes forgotten himſelf, he ſaw ẏ the day began to waxe clere, the Sun alredy ſpreading his golde beames vpon the earth, and therfore began haſtily to ſet forthwards, vſing byways, and far from cõmon vſed trades, ſo nere as he could, ẏ he might not by any meanes be knowne. Thus they rode forth euen vntill none: but ſeing their horſſe to be weary and faynt, they lyghted at a village, farre

farre from the high waye: where they refreshed themselues, and baited their horse vntill it was late. In this sort by the space of three dayes they trauersed the countrey, vntill they arriued to the foote of a mountain, not frequented almoste but by wilde and sauage beastes. The countrey rounde about was very faire, pleasaunt, and fit for the solitarinesse of the knight: for if shadow pleased him, he might be delighted with the couerte of an infinite number of fruitful trées, wherewith onely nature had furnished those hideous and sauage deserts. Next to the high and well timbred forrests, there were groues and bushes for exercise of hunting. A man could desire no kinde of veneson, but it was to be had in that wildernesse: there might be séene also a certain sharpe and rude situation of craggy and vnfruictefull rockes, which notwithstanding yelded some plesure to ỳ eyes, to sée them tapissed with a pale moalsure gréene, which disposed into a frizeled guise, made the place pleasaunt and the rocke soft, according to the fashion of a couerture. There was also a very fair and wide caue, which liked him well, cõpassed round about with firre trés, Cedre trées, pine apples, Cipres, and trées distillyng a certaine rosen or gumme, towardes the bottom whereof, in the way downe to the valley, a man might haue viewed a passing companie of Ewe trées, Poplers of all sortes, and Paple trées, the leaues whereof fell into a lake or ponde, which came by certain small gutters into a fresh & very cléere fountain right against that caue. The knight séeing the auncientie and excellencie of the place, deliberated by and by to plant there the siege of his abode, for perfourming of his penance and life. And therfore sayd vnto his seruant: My friende, I am aduised that this place shall be ỳ monasterie, to make ỳ voluntarie profession of our religion, and where we will

accom-

accomplish the voyage of our deuotion. Thou sest both
the beautie and solitarinesse, which do rather commaũd
vs here to rest, than any other place nere at hand. The
seruaunt yelded to the pleasure of his master, and so
lighting from their horsse, they disfurnished thẽ of their
saddles and bridles, gining to them the libertie of the
fields, of whome afterwardes they neuer heard more
newes. The saddles they placed within the caue, & leaving their ordinary apparell, they clothed thẽselues in
Pilgrimes wẽdes, fortifying the mouth of the caue, ẏ
wild beasts shold not hurt thẽ when they were a slepe.
There the seruaunt began to play the vpholster, and to
make .y. little beds of mosse, whose spindle and whéle
were of wode, so wel polished & trimmed, as if he had
bene a carpenter wel expert in ẏ occupation. They lined of nothing else but of ẏ frutes of those wilde trées,
sometimes of the fruits of herbs, vntil they had deuised
to make a crosbow of wood, wherwith they killed now
& then a Hare, a Cony, Kid, & many times some stronger beast remained with thẽ for gage: whose blood they
prested out betwéene .y. pieces of wood, & rosted them against the Sunne, seruing the same in, as if it had bene
a right good dishe for the first course of their sobre & vndelicate table, wherat the pure water of the fountaine,
nere vnto their holow and déepe house, serued in steade
of the good wines and delicious drinkes that abounded
in ẏ house of Dom Diego. Who liuing in ẏ pore estate,
ceased night nor day to complaine of his harde fortune
and cursed plight, going many times through the deserts all alone, ẏ better to muse and study therupon, or
(peraduenture) desirous that some hungry Bear shold
descend from the Mountaine, to finish his life & painful
griefs. But the good seruaunt knowing his masters sorow & mishap, would neuer goe out of his sight, but ra-

ther exhorted him to retourne home to his goodes and possessiõs, and to forget that order of life, vnworthy for such a personage as he was, and vncomely for him that ought to be indued with good reason & iudgement. But the desperate Gentleman wilful in his former deliberation, wold not heare him speake of such retrait. So y if it escaped the seruaũt to be earnest & sharpe against y rudenesse & sottish cruelty of Gineura, it was a pastime to see Dom Diego mount in choler against him, saying:

" Art y so hardy to speake ill of the gentlewoman, which
" is the most vertuous & honest personage vnder y coape
" of heauen? Thou maist thãk the loue I bear thee, other-
" wise I wold make thee fele how much the slaũder tou-
" cheth me at the heart y thou vttrest against hir, which
" hath right to punish me thus for mine indiscretion, and
" y it is I that cõmit the wrong in cõplaining of hir se-
" uerity. Now sir said the seruant, I do in deede perceiue
" what maner of thing the contagion of loue is. For they
" which once do fele the corruption of that aire, thinke
" nothing good or sauory, but the filthy smell of y pestife-
" rous meat. Wherfore I hũbly beseche you a litle to set
" apart, & remoue frõ minde, that feare & presumptuous
" dame Gineura, and by forgetting hir beauty, to measure
" hir desert & your griefe, you shall know then (being gui-
" ded by reasõs lore) y you are the simplest and weakest
" man in the world, to tormẽt your self in this wise, and
" that she is the fondest girle, wholly straught of wits, so
" to abuse a Noble man y meriteth y good grace & swete
" embracemẽt of one more faire, wise & modest, than she
" sheweth hir self to be to you. The Knight hearing this,
" thought to abãdon pacience, & therfore said vnto him: I
" sweare vnto thee by God, y if euer thou haue any suche
" talke againe, either I will die, or thou shalt depart out
" of my cõpany, for I cãnot abide by any means to suffre

one

one to despise hir whom I do loue and honor, & shall so
do during life. The seruaunt loth to offend his master,
held his peace, heauy for all that in heart, to remember
how the poore Gentleman was resolued to finish there,
(in the desert vnknowen to his friends) all the remnãt
of his life. And who aswell for the euill order, and not
accustomed nouriture, as for assiduall plaints and wee-
pings, was become so pale & leane, as he better resem-
bled a dry chippe, than a man hauing feeling of life. His
eyes were sonke into his head, his beard vnkempt, his
hair staring, his skin ful of filth, altogither more like a
wilde and sauage creature (such one as is depainted in
brutall forme) than faire Dom Diego, so much commen-
ded and esteemed through out the kingdome of *Speine*.
Nowe leaue we this amorous Hermite to passionate &
plaine his misfortune, to see to what ende the Letters
came that he wrote to his cruell Pistrelle. The day
prefixed for deliuerie of his Letters, his seruaunt did
his charge, and being come to the house of Gineura,
found hir in the Hall with hir mother, where kissing
his maisters letters, he presented them with very great
reuerence to the Gentlewoman. Who so sone as she
knewe that they came from Dom Diego, all chaunged
into raging colour and folishe choler, threw them in-
continently vpon the ground, saying: Sufficeth it not
thy maister, that already twice I haue done him to vn-
derstand, that I haue nothing to do with his letters nor
Amballades, and yet goeth he about by such assaultes
to encrease my displeasure and agonie, by the only re-
membraunce of his follie? The mother seeing that vn-
ciuile order, although she vnderstode the cause, and
knew that there was some discorde betweene the two
Louers, yet thought it to be but light, sith the Comike
Poet doeth say:

The louers often falling out,
And prety wrangling rage:
Of pleasant loue it is no dout,
The sure renewing gage.

" She went vnto hir Daughter, saying: What great
" rage is this? Let me sée that letter that I may read it:
" For I haue no feare ỳ Dom Diego can deceiue me with
" the swéetenesse of his hony words. And truly daughter
" you néede not feare to touch them, for if there were a-
" ny poison in them, it proceaded from your beautie that
" hath bitten and stong the Knight, whereof if he assay to
" make you a partaker, I sée no cause why he ought to be
" thus rigorously reiected, deseruing by his honestie a
" better entertainement at your handes. In the meane time one of the Seruing men toke vp the letters, and gaue them to the Lady, who reading them, found written as followeth.

The letters of *Dom Diego* to Mistresse *Gineura*.

My dearest and most wellbeloued Ladie, sith that mine innocency can finde no resting place within your tender corpse, what honest excuse or true reasõ so euer I do alleage, and sith your heart declareth it selfe to be implacable, and not pleased with him ỳ neuer offended you, except it were for ouermuch loue, which for guerdon of ỳ rare and incomparable amitie, I perceiue my self to be hated deadly of you and in such wise contemned, as the only record of my name, causeth in you an insupportable griefe and displeasure vnspeakeable. To auoid I say your indignation, and by my mishap to render vnto you some ease and contentment, I haue

meant

meant to dislodge my selfe so far from this Countrey, as neither you nor any other, shal euer hear by fame or true report, the place of my abode, nor the graue wherin my bones shall rest. And although it be an inexplicable hearts sorow and torment, which by way of pen can not be declared, to be thus misprised of you, whom alone I do loue and shal, so long as mine afflicted soule shall hang vpon the feeble and brittle threede of life: yet for all that, this griefe falling vpon me, is not so irkesome, as the punishment is grieuous, by imagining the passion of youre minde, when it is disquieted with disdaine and wrathe againste me, who liueth not, but to wander vpon the thoughtes of youre perfections. And forsomuch as I doe feele for the debilitie that is in me, that I am not able any longer to beare the sowre shockes of my bitter torments and martyrdome that I presently doe suffer, yet before my life do faile, and death doe seale vpon my senses, I haue written vnto you this present letter for a testimoniall of your rigour, which is the marke that iustifieth my vngyltinesse. And although I doe complain of mine vnhappie fortune, yet I meane not to accuse you, only contented that eche man doe know, that firme affection and eternall thraldome do deserue other recompense than a farewell so cruell. And I am well assured, that when I am dead, you will pitie our torment, knowing then, although to late, that my loyaltie was so sincere, as the report of those was false, that made you beleeue, that I was very farre in loue with the daughter of Dom Ferrande de la Serre. Alas, shall a noble Gentleman that hath bene wel trained vp, be forbidden to receiue the gifts that come from a vertuous Gentlewoman? Ought you to be so incapable and voide of humanitie, that the sacrifice whiche I haue made of the poore birde, the cause of your disdaine,

my repentance, my lawfull excuses, are not able to let you see the contrary of you persuasion? Ah, ah, I see that the darke and obscure vaile of vniust disdaine & immoderate anger, hath so blindfold your eyes, and inueigled your minde, as you can not iudge the truth of my cause and the vnrightcousnesse of your quarel. I will render vnto you none other certificat of mine innocencie, but my languishing heart, whiche you clepe betwene your hands, feling such rude intertainment there, of whome he loked for reioyse of his trauels. But forsomuch then as you do hate me, what resteth for me to do, but to procure destruction to my selfe? And sith your pleasure consenteth in mine ouerthrowe, reason willeth that I obey you, and by death to sacrifice my life in like maner as by life you wer the only mistresse of my heart. One only thing chereth vp my heart, & maketh my death more miserable, which is, that in dying so innocent as I am, you shal remaine faultie, the onely cause of my ruine. My life will depart like a puffe, & soule shal vanish like a sweete sõmers blast: wherby you shal be euer deemed for a cruell womã and bloodie murderer of your deuout and faithful seruants. I pray to God mine owne sweete Ladie, to giue you such contentation, ioy, pleasure, and gladnesse, as you do cause through your rigor, discõtentation, grief & displeasure to the poore languishing creature, and who for euermore shall be

Your most obedient and affected seruant *Dom Diego.*

The good Ladie hauyng redde the Letter, was so astonned, as hir wordes for a long space stayed within hir mouth, hir heart panted, and spirite was full of confusion, hir minde was filled with sorow, to consider the anguishes of the poore vagabund and foster hermit.

In the

In the ende before the houshold dissembling hir passion which moued hir sense, she toke hir daughter aside, whō very sharply she rebuked, for that she was the cause of the losse of so notable and perfecte a Knyght as Dom Diego was. Then she redde the Letter vnto hir, and as all hir eloquence was not able to moue that cruel damsell, more venomous than a serpent against the knight who (as she thought) had not indured the one halfe of that which his inconstancie and lightnesse well deserued, whose obstinate mind the mother perceiuing, said vnto hir: I pray to God (deare daughter) that for youre frowardnesse, you be not blinded in your beautie, & for the refusal of so great a benefit as is the alliāce of Dom Diego, you be not abused with such a one as shal dimme the light of your renoume & glory, whiche hitherto you haue gained amongs the sobrest and modest maidens. Hauing said so, the wise and sage widow, went toward the seruant of Dom Diego, of whō she demaūded what day his maister departed, which she knowing, & not ignorant of the occasion, was more wroth than before; notwithstāding she dissembled what she thought, & sending back his seruant, she required him to do hir hartie commendations to the lady his mistresse, which he did. The good lady was ioyful therof, for not knowing ỳ cōtents of hir sonnes letters, she loked ỳ he had sent word vnto his lady of the iust houre of his returne. But when she saw that in .xx. dayes, nor yet within a moneth he came not, she could not tell what to thinke, so dolorous was she for the absence of hir son. The time passing without hering any newes frō him she began to tormēt hir self, and be so pensiue, as if she had heard certaine newes of his death. Alas (quod she) and wherfore haue the heuēs giuē me the possession of such an exquisite fruite, to deprriue me therof before I doe partake the goodnesse and

" and sweetenelle therof, and enioy the grifts proceding
" from so godly a stocke. Ah God, I feare that my im-
" moderate loue is the occasion of the losse of my sonne,
" and the whole ruine of the mother, with the demolition
" and wast of all our godes. And I wouide that it had
" pleased God (my sonne) that hunters game had neuer
" ben so dere, for thinkyng to catche the praie thou thy-
" selfe was taken, and thou wandring for thy better di-
" port, missing the right way, so strangely didst straggle,
" that hard it is to reduce thee into the right track again.
" At least wise if I knew the place, whervnto thou arte
" repaired to fynde againe thy losse, I wouide transile
" thither to beare thee companie, rather than to lyue
" here voide of a husbande, betrayed by them whome I
" best trusted, and bereste from the presence of thee my
" sonne, the staffe and onely comforte of myne olde age,
and the certaine hope of al our house and familie. Now
if the mother vexed hir selfe, the sonne was eased with
no great reioyse, being now a free citizen with the bea-
stes & foules of the forestes, dennes and caues, leaning
not the profunditie of the woodes, the craggednesse of
the rocks, or beautie of the valey, without some signe
or token of his grief. Sometime with a puncheon well
sharpned, serving him in stede of a penknife, he graued
the successe of his loue vpon on hard stone. Other time
the soft barke of some tender and new growen sprays
serued him in place of paper or parchement. For there
he carued in cyphres properly combined with a knotte
(not easily to be knowne) the name of his Ladie, inter-
laced so properly with his owne, that the finest heades
might be deceiued, to discipher the right interpretatiõ.
Vpon a day then, as he passed his time (according to his
custome) to muse vpon his mysfehaps, and to frame his
successe of loue in the ayre, he ingraued these verses

vpon

on a ſtone by a fountaine ſide, adioyning to his ſauage and ruſticall houſe.

If any forreſt Pan, doth haunt here in this place,
Or wandring Nymphe, hath heard my woefull plaint:
The one may well behold, and view what drop of grace,
I haue deſerude, and eke what griefes my heart doth taint,
The other lend to me ſome broke or ſhoure of raine,
To moiſt mine heart and eyes, the gutters of my braine.

Somewhat further of many times at the riſing of the Sunne, he mounted the toppe of an highe and grene Mountaine to ſolace himſelfe vpon the freſhe and grene graſſe, where four pillers were erected, (either naturally done by dame Nature hir ſelf, or wrought by the induſtry of mã,) which bore a ſtone in foure ſquare, wel hewed, made and trimmed in maner of an Altare, vpon which Altare he dedicated theſe verſes to the poſteritie.

Vpon this holy ſquared ſtone, which Altare men doe call,
To ſome one of the Gods aboue, that conſecrated is,
This doleful verſe I conſecrate, in token of my thrall,
And deadly griefes that do my ſilly hearte oppreſſe,
And vexe with endleſſe paines, which neuer quiet is.
This woefull verſe (I ſay) as ſureſt gage of my diſtreſſe,
I graue on Altare ſtone for euer to remaine,
To ſhew the heart of trueſt wight, that euer lined in paine.

And vpon the brims of ỹ table, he carued theſe words:

This Maſon worke erected here, ſhall not ſo long abide,
As ſhall the common name of two, that now vncoupled be,
Who after froward fortune paſt, knit eche in one degre,
Shall render for right earneſt loue, reward on either ſide.

And before his lodging in that wilde and ſtony forreſt vpon the barke of a goodly & lofty Beeche tree, finding in himſelf an vnaccuſtomed luſtineſſe, thus he wrote:

Th'increaſing beautie of thy ſhape, extending fair thy name,
By like increaſe I hope to ſee, ſo ſtretched forth my fame.

His man ſeeing him to begin to be merily diſpoſed, one day ſaid vnto him: And wherefore ſir ſerueth ỹ lute, which I brought amongs our males, if you do not aſſay therby to recreate your ſelf, & ſing thereupon ỹ prayſes of hir whome you loue ſo well: yea and if I may ſo ſay, by worſhipping hir, you doe commit Idolatry in your mind. Is it not your pleaſure that I fetch the ſame vnto you, that by imitation of *Orpheus*, you may moue the trees, rockes, and wilde beaſts to bewaile your miſfortune, and witneſſe the penaũce that you do for hir ſake, without cauſe of ſo heinous punithmẽt: I ſee wel (quod the Knight) ỹ thou woldeſt I ſhould be mery, but mirth is ſo far from me, as I am eſtraunged frõ hir ỹ holdeth me in this miſery. Notwithſtãding I wil perform thy requeſt, and will awake that inſtrument in this deſert place, wherwith ſometime I witneſſed ỹ greateſt part of my paſſions. Then the Knight receiuing the Lute, ſounded therupon this ſong enſuing.

The waues and troubled ſcum, that moues the ſeas aloft,
Which runs & roares againſt the rocks, & threatneth dãger oft,
Reſembleth loe the fits of loue,
That daily doe my fanſie moue.

My heart it is the ſhip, that driues on ſalt ſea ſome,
And reaſon ſailes with ſenſeleſſe wit, and neuer loketh home,
For loue is guide, and leades the daunce,
That brings good hap, or bredes miſchaunce.

The

The furious flames of loue, that neuer ceaseth sure,
Are loe the busie sailes and oares, that would my rest procure,
And as in Skies great Windes do blo,
My swift desires runnes, fleting so.

As swete Zephyrus breth, in spring time fedes the floures,
My mistresse voice wold ioy my wits, by hir most heauenly
And wold exchaūge my state I say. (powers,
As Sommer chaungeth Winters day.

She is the Artique starre, the gracious Goddesse to,
She hath the might to make and marre, to helpe or else vndo,
Both death and life, she hath at call,
My warre, my peace, my ruine and all.

She makes me liue in woe, and guids my sighs and lokes,
She holdes my fredome by a lace, as fish is held with hokes,
Thus by despaire, in this concaite,
I swallow vp both hoke and baite.

And in the deserts loe I liue, among the sauage kinde,
And spend my time in wofull sighs, raisde vp by care of minde,
All hopeless to, in paines I pine,
And ioyes for euer doe resine.

I dread but Charons boat, if she no mercy giue,
In darkneste then my soule shal dwell, in Plutos raigne to liue,
But I beleue she hath no care,
On him that caught is in hir snare.

If she release my woe, a thousand thankes therefore,
I shall hir giue, and make the world to honor hir the more,
The Gods in Skies will praise the same,
And recorde beare of hir good name.

O happy is that life, that after torment straunge,
And earthly sorowes on this mould, for better life shal chaūge,
And liue amongs the Gods on high,
Where loue and louers neuer die.

O life that here I leade, I freely giue thee now,
Vnto the faire where ere she rests, and loke thou shew hir how
I linger forth my yeares and dayes,
To winne of hir a crowne of praise.

And thou my pleasant lute, cease not my songs to sound,
And shew the tormēts of my mind, that I through loue haue found,
And alwayes tell my Mistresse still,
Hir worthy vertues rules my will.

The Foster Louer.

The Foster louer singing this song, sighing sundry times betwene, the trickling teares ranne downe his face: who therby was so disfigured, as scarse could they haue knowen him, which had all the dayes of their life frequented his compania. Such was the state of this miserable yong gentleman, who dronk with his owne wine, balanced himself down to despair rather than to the hope of that which he durst not loke for. Howbeit like as the mischiefs of men be not alwayes durable, & that all things haue their proper season, euē so fortune repenting hir euil intreatie, which wrongfully she had caused this poore penetenciarie of Gineura to endure, prepared a meanes to readuannce him aloft vpon hir wheele, euen when he thought least of it. And certes herein appeared the mercy of God, who ranseth things difficult & almost impossible to be so ealse, as those that ordinarily be brought to passe. How may it hereby be perceiued, that they which were plūged in the bottom

of

of defiance, deeming their life vtterly forlorne, be sone exalted euen to the top of all glory and felicitie? Hath not our age seene that man which was by authoritie of his enimis iudged to die, ready to be caried forth to the scaffold miraculously deliuered from that daunger, and (wherin the works of God are to be maruelled) ỳ same man to be called to the dignitie of a prince, and preferred aboue all the rest of the people. Nowe Dom Diego attending his fieldish Philosophy in the solitary valeis of the rich Mountaine *Pyrene*, was holpen with helpe vnloked for, as you shall heare.

You haue hard how he had a neighbor ẽ singuler frẽd, a Noble gentleman named Dom Roderico. This gẽtleman amongs al his faithful cõpanions, did most lamẽt the hard fortune of Dom Diego. It came to passe. iiij. months after ỳ the poore wilde penitẽt person was gon on his pilgrimage, ỳ Dom Roderico toke his iorney into *Gascoine* for diuerse his vrgẽt affairs, which after he had dispatched, were it ỳ he was gon out of his way, or that God (as it is most likely) did driue him thither, he approched toward ỳ coast of the *Pyrene* mountains, wher ỳ time his good frend Dom Diego did inhabite, who daily grew so weake ẽ feeble, as if God had not sẽt him soone succor, he had gained ỳ he most desired, which was death ỳ shold haue ben the end of his trauails ẽ afflictions. The traine of Dom Roderico being thẽ a bow shot off frõ the sauage caben of Dom Diego, they espied the tracts of mens fete newly troden, and begã to maruel what he shold be ỳ dwelled there, cõsidering ỳ solitude ẽ infertilitie of the place, ẽ also that ỳ same was far of frõ towne or house. And as they deuised hereupon, they saw a man going into a Caue, which was Dom Diego, running frõ making his cõplaints vpõ the rock spoke of before. From which hauing turned his face toward

that part of the world where he thought ẏ lodging was of that saint, wherunto he addressed his deuotiõs, Dom Diego hearing the noise of the horse, was retired because he wold not be sene. The knight which rode that way, seing that, & knowing how far he was out of the way, cõmaunded one of his men to gallop towards the Rocke, to learne what people they were ẏ dwelled therin, & to demaund how they might coast to the high way ẏ led to *Barcelone*. The seruaunt approching neare the caue, perceiued the same so well empaled & fortified with beastes skins before, fearing also ẏ they were theues & robbers ẏ dwelled there, durst not approche, & lesse enquire the way, & therfore returned towards his master to whom he told what he saw. The knight of another maner of metal & hardinesse than ẏ rascall and coward seruaunt, like a stout, couragious & valiant mã, passed to the caue, & demaunding who was within, he sawe a man come forth so disfigured, horrible to loke vpõ, pale with staring hair vpright, that pitifull it was to behold him, which was the seruaunt of the softer hermite. Of him Roderico demaunded what he was, & which was ẏ

" way to *Barcelone*. Syr answered ẏ disguised person: I
" know not how to answer your demaund, & much lesse
" I know the countrey wher we now presently be. But
" sir said he sighing, true it is ẏ we be, two poore cõpanions
" whome fortune hath sent hither, by what il aduenture I
" know not, to do penance for our trespasses & offenses.

Roderico hearing him say so, begã to cal to his remembrãce his friend Dom Diego, although he neuer before ẏ time suspected the place of his abode. He lighted then frõ his horse, desirous to sée the singularities of ẏ rock, and the magnificence of ẏ caniih lodging, where he entred and saw him whome he sought for, and yet for all that did not know him: he cõmoned wõ him a long time

of

of the pleasure of ẏ solitary life in respect of them that
liued intangled wᵭ the cõbresome follies of this world.
Forsomuch quod he as ẏ spirite distracted & withdrawn
frõ worldly troubles is eleuable to the contẽplation of
heauenly things, & soner attendeth to the knowledge &
reuerẽce of his God, than those ẏ be conuersãt amongs
mẽ, and to conclude, the cõplaints, ẏ delites, ambitions,
couetousnesse, vanities & superfluities ẏ aboũd in ẏ cõ-
fused maze of worldly troup, do cause a misknowledge
of our selues, a forgetfulnesse of our creator, and many
times a negligence of pietie and purenesse of religion.
Whiles ẏ vnknowne Hermit & the Knight Roderico
talked of these things, the seruaunts of Ro. visiting all
the corners of the depe and stony cel of those penitẽts,
by fortune espied two saddles, one of thẽ richly wrou-
ght & armed with plates of steele, ẏ had bene mẽte for
some godly Jenet. And vpon the plate well wrought,
grauen & enameled, the golde for all the rust cankring
the plate, did yet appear. For which purpose one of thẽ
said to ẏ seruaũt of Dom Diego. God father hitherto I
se neither Mule nor horsse, for whome these saddles cã
serue, I pray thee to sel them vnto vs, for they will doe
vs more pleasure, than presently they do you. Maisters
(quod the Hermit.) if they like you, they be at your cõ-
maundement. In the meane time Roderico hauing en-
ded his talk with the other Hermite, without knowing
of any thing that he desired, said vnto his mẽ. Now sirs
to horsse, & leaue we these pore people to rest in peace,
& let vs goe seeke for the right way which we so wel as
they haue lost. Sir (quod one of his mẽ,) there be. ẏ. sad-
dles, & one of them is so exceding faire, so wel garnished
& wrought as euer you saw. The knight feling in him-
self an vnaccustomed motion, caused thẽ to be brought
before him, & as he viewed & marked the rich barnesse.

and

and trappings of the same, he stayeth to loke vpon the hinder part minonly wrought, & in the mids of the engrauing he red this deuise in the *Spanish* tong.

Que brantare la fe, es causa muy fea.

That is to say.

To violate or breake faith, is a thing detestable.

That only inscription made him to pause a litle more. For it was the Poesie ỳ Dom Diego bore ordinarily about his armes, which moued him to think ỳ without doubt one of those Pilgrimes was the very same man to whome ỳ saddle did appertain. And therfore he bent himself very attentiuely afterwards to behold first the one, & then the other of those desert Citizens. But they were so altered, as he was not able to know thẽ again. Dom Diego seing his friend so neare him, & the desire he had to know him, chafed very much in his mind, and the more his rage begã to ware, when he saw Roderico approche neare vnto hym more aduisedly to loke vpon him, for he had not his owne affections so much at commaundement, but his bloud moued his entralles, and mounting into the euident place, caused outwardly the alteration which he endured, to appear. Roderico seing him to chaũge colour, was assured of that which before he durst not suspect: & that which made him ỳ sonner beleue ỳ he was not deceiued, was a litle tuft of haire, yelow as golde, which Dom Diego had vpon his necke, wherof Dom Roderico taking hede, gaue ouer al suspition, & was well assured of ỳ he doubted. And therfore displaying himself wth his armes opened vpon the neck of his friend, & imbracing him very louingly, bedewing his face wth teares, sayd vnto him: Alas my Lord Don Diego, what euil luck frõ heauen hath departed you frõ ỳ good cõpany of thẽ which die for sorow, to se themselues bereued of ỳ beuty, light & ornamẽt of their felowship?

What

what be they that haue giuen you occasion thus to e-
clipse the brightnesse of your name, when it ought most
clerely to shine, both for your present pleasure, & for the
honour of your age? Is it from me sir, that you ought to
thus to hide your selfe? Doe you thinke howe I am so
blinde, that I know not right wel, you to be that Dom
Diego, that is so renoumed for vertue and prowesse? I
woulde not haue taried here so long, but to beare away
a power to reioyse two persons, you being the one, by
withdrawing you from this beastie and vnsemely wil-
dernesse, and my selfe the other, by enioying your com-
panie, and by bearing newes to your frendes, who sith
your departure, do bewaile and lament the same. Dom
Diego seing that he was not able to conceyle the truthe
of that which was euidently seene, and feeling the lo-
uing imbracements of his best friende, began to feele a
certaine tendernesse of heart like vnto that which the
mother conceiueth, when she hath recouered hir sonne
that was long absent, or the chast wife, the presence of
hir deare husbande, when she clepeth him betweene hir
armes, and frankely cuilieth and cherisheth him at hir
pleasure. For which cause not able to refrain any lon-
ger for ioy and sorow together, weping and sighing be-
gin to imbrace hym with so good and heartie affection,
as with good will the other had sought for his knowlege
And being come againe to him selfe, he sayd to his faith-
full and most louing friend: Oh God, howe vneasie and
difficult be thy iudgements to cõprehend: I had thought
to lyue here miserably, vnknown to all the world, & be-
holde, I am here discouered, when I thought lest of it: I
am in dede (quod he to Roderico) that wretched & vnfor-
tunate Dom Diego, euen that your very great & louing
friende, who weerie of his life, afflicted with his vnhap,
and tormẽted by fortune, is retired into these deserts,

" to accomplishe the ouerplus of the reſt of his yll inclie.
" Now ſith that I haue ſatiſfied you herein, I beſech you
" that being content with my light, ye wil get you hence
" and leaue me here to perfo3me that litle remnãt which
" I haue to liue, without telling to any perſon that I am
" aliue, o3 yet to manifeſt th3 place of my abode. What is
" that you ſay ſir (ſayd Roderico) are you ſo farre ſtraught
" out of your right wits, to haue a minde to continue this
" b3utal life, to dep3ine al your frends from the ioy which
" they receiue by inioying your cõpanie? Thinke I pray
" you, that God hath cauſed vs to be bo3ne noble men, &
" hauing power and autho3itie not to liue in cor3ners, and
" buryed amid the ſlaue3ie of the popular ſo3t, o3 remain
" idle within great palaces o3 p3iuie places, but rather to
" illuſtrat and giue light with the example of our ver3tue
" to them which applie themſelues to our maner of good
" behauio3, & do liue as depending vpon our edicts & com-
" maũdements: I appele to your faith, what good ſhal ſuc-
" cede to your ſubiects, who haue both heard & alſo know
" the benefit beſtowed vpõ them by god, fo3 that he gaue
" them a lo3d ſo modeſt and vertuous, & before they haue
" experimented the godneſſe and ver3tue, be dep3ined of
" him, that is ado3ned and garniſhed with ſuche perfec-
" ons? What comfo3t, contentation and ioy ſhall my la-
" die your mother receiue, ſeeing the loſſe of you to be ſo
" ſodain, after your good & delicate b3inging vp, inſtruted
" with ſuch great diligẽce to be vtterly bereued of ỹ fruit
" of that educatiõ? It is you ſir, ỹ may cõmaund obedẽce
" to parẽts, ſuccor ỹ afflicted, & do iuſtice to thẽ that crau
" it: Alas, they be your po3e ſubiects ỹ make cõplaints, &
" uen of you, fo3 denying thẽ your due p3eſence. It is you
" of whõ my good madame doth cõplaine, as of him ỹ hath
" b3oken & violated his faith, fo3 not cõming at ỹ prom-
" ſed day. Now as he was about to to continũ his oratio
an, Dom Diego vnwilling to heare him, b3ake his talk
ſaying:

saying: Ah sir, & my great friend: It is an easie matter »
for you to iudge of mine affaires, & to blame mine ab- »
sence, not knowing peraduenture ỹ occasion ỹ same. But »
I esteeme you & mã of so good iudgement, & so great a frẽd »
of things honest, & of the same fidelitie, as by vnderstã- »
ding my hard luck when you be aduertised of ỹ cause of »
my withdrawing into this solitarie place, you will right »
ly confesse, & plainly see that the wisest & most constant »
haue cõmitted more vain follies than these done by me, »
forced with like spirite ỹ now moueth & tormẽteth my »
minde. Hauing sayd, he toke aside Roderico, wher he did »
tel vnto him the whole discourse both of his loue & also
of the rigor of his Lady, not without weeping in such a-
bundãce & with such frequẽt sighes & sobs, as interrup-
ted his speech, that Roderico was cõstrained to kepe him
cõpany, by remẽbring ỹ obstinacie of hir ỹ was the mi-
strese of his heart, & thinking ỹ alredie he had seene the
effect of like misshap to fal vpon his own head, or nere
vnto ỹ like, or greater distresse thã that which he saine
his dere & perfect friend to indure. Notwithstãding he
assayed to remoue him from that desperate mind & opi-
nion of continuãce in ỹ desert. But the froward penitent
swore vnto him, that so long as he lined (without place
recouered in the good graces of his Ginevra, he would not
returne home to his house, but rather change his being,
to seke more sauage abode, & lesse frequẽted thã ỹ was.
For (said he) to what purpose shall my retourne serue, »
where cõtinuing mine affection, I shal fele like cruelties »
ỹ I did in time past, which wil be more painful & beanie »
for me to suffer than voluntarie exile & banishement, or »
bring me to that ende wherein presently I am. Con- »
tent your selfe, I beseeche you, and suffer me to be but »
one vnhappie, and doe not perswade me to proue a »
seconde affliction, more sharpe than the first & assaultes. »

Roderico hearing his reasons so timely and wel applied, woulde not replie, onely content that he would make him promise to tarie there two monethes, and in that time should attempte to reioyse him selfe. And for his owne parte, he swore vnto him, that he wold be a meanes to reconcile Gineura, and bring them to talke together. Moreouer, he gaue him assurance by othe, that he should not be discouered by him, nor by any in his company. Wherewith the Knight somewhat recomforted, thanked him very affectuously. And so leuing with him a fielde bed, two seruauntes, and money for his necessities, Roderico toke his leaue, telling him that shortly he woulde visite him againe, to his so great contentation, as euer he was left and forsaken with griefe and sorow, himselfe making great mone for the vnfortunate state, and miserable plighte of Dom Diego. And God knoweth whether by the way, he detested the cruelty of pitifelle Gineura, blaspheming a million of times the whole sexe of womankind, peraduenture not without iust cause. For there lyeth hidden (I knowe not what) in the breasts of women, which at times like the wane and increase of the Mone, doth chaunge and alter as I can not tell on what foote to stande to conceine the reason of the same: whiche fickle fragilitie of theirs (I dare not say nobilitie) is suche, as the subtillest wench of them al, best skilled in Turners Art, can not (I say not deface) so much as hide or colour that naturall imperfection.

Roderico arriued at his house, frequented many times the lodging of Gineura, to espie hir fashions, and to see if any other had conquered that place, that was so wel assailed and besieged by Dom Diego. And this wise and sage knight vsed the matter so well, that he fell in acquaintance with one of the Gentlewomans pages,

in

in whome she had so great trust, as she conceyled from him very fewe of hir greatest secretes, not well obser-uing the precept of the wise man, who counselleth vs not to tell the secretes of the minde to those, whose iudgement is but weake, and lauish tong very franke of speach. The knight then familiar with this page, dandled him so with faire wordes, as by litle and litle her wrong the wormes out of his nose, & vnderstode that when Gineura began once to take pepper in snuffe, against Dom Diego, she fel in loue with a Gentleman of *Biskaye*, very poore, but beautifull, yong, and lustie, which was the steward of the house: and the page added further, that he was not then there, but would returne within three dayes, as he had sente worde to hys mistresse, and that two other Gentlemen would accompanie him to carie away Gineura into *Biskaye*, for that was their last conclusion: and I hope (quod he) that she wil take me with hir, bicause I am made priuie to their whole intent. Roderico hering the treason of this slight and departure of the vnfaithfull daughter, was at the first hrunt astonned, but desirous that the page should not marke his alteration, sayd vnto him: In very dede mete it is, that the Gentlewoman shold make hir own choise of husbande, sith hir mother so litle careth to prouide one for hir. And albeit that the Gentleman be not so riche and noble, as hir estate deserueth, hir affection in that behalfe ought to suffise, and the honestie of hys person: for the rest Gineura hath (thankes be to God) wherwith to intertaine the state of them bothe. These wordes he spake, farre from the thought of his hearte. For being by himself, thus he sayd: O blessed God, how blinde is that loue, which is vnruled, and out of order: and what dispaire to recline to them, whiche (voide of reason) doe fede so foolishly of vaine thoughts and fond

" desires, that two cõmodities presented vnto them, by
" what ill lucke I know not, they forsake the best, and
" make choise of the worst. Ah Gineura, the fairest Ladie
" in all this countrey, and the most vnfaithfull woman
" of our time, where be thine eies and iudgement? whe-
" ther is thy minde strayed and wandred, to acquite thy
" selfe from a great lord, faire, rich, noble, and vertuous,
" to be giuen to one that is poore, whose parentes be vn-
" knowne, his prowesse obscure, and birth of no apparant
" reputation. Behold, what maketh me beleue, that loue
" (so well as Fortune) is not onely blynde, but also re-
" zeleth the syghte of them that hée imbraceth and cap-
" uateth vnder hys power and bondage. But I make a
" vowe (false woman) that it shall neuer come to passe,
" and that thys maister *Biskaye* shall neuer enioye the
" spoyles whiche iustely bée due vnto the trauayle and
" faythfull seruice of the valyaunt and vertuous knight
" Dom Diego. It shall be hée, or else I will dye for it,
" whyche shall haue the recompense of his troubles, and
" shal séele the caulmes of that tempest, whych presently
" holdeth hym at anker, amydde the moste daungerous
" rockes that euer were.

By thys meanes Roderico knewe the way howe to kéepe promyse wyth hys friende, whyche lyued in expectation of the same. The two dayes paste, whereof the Page hadde spoken, the beloued of Gineura, fayled not to come, and wyth hym two Gallauntes of *Biskaye*, valyaunt Gentlemen, and well exercised in armes. That nyghte Roderico wente to sée the olde wydowe Ladye, the mother of the mayden, and fyndyng opportunitie to speake to the Page, he sayde vnto hym: I sée my friende, accordingly as you told mée, that you be vpon departing, the Steward of the house

being

bring nowe returned. I praye thee tell me, yf thou
haue made of me, or of anye thyng that I am able
doe for thee, assuryng thee, that thou shalte obtayne
and haue what so euer thou requireste. And there-
withall I haue thought good to tell thee, and gyue thee
warnyng (for thyne owne sake specially) that thou
kepe all thyngs close and secrete, that no slaunder or
dishonour doe followe, to blotte and deface the fame
and prayse of thy Mistresse. And for my selfe I hadde
rather dye, than once to open my mouthe, to discouer
the least intente of this enterpryse. But tell me, I
praye thee, when do you depart? Syr (quod the page)
As my mystresse sayth, to morow about ten or eleuen
of the clocke in the euenyng, when the Ladye hir
mother shall be in the sounde of hir fyrst slepe. The
knyght hearyng that, and desirous of no better time,
toke hys leaue of the Page, and wente home, where
he caused to be sente for tenne or twelue Gentle-
men, hys neyghboures and tenauntes, whom he made
priuie of his secretes, and partakers of that he wente
about, to delyuer out of captiuitie and miserie, the chie-
fest of all hys friendes. The nyghte of thois two
louers departure, beyng come, Dom Roderico, which
knewe the waye where they shoulde passe, bestowed
hym selfe and hys companye in Ambushe, in a little
groue, almoste three myles off the lodgyng of this fu-
gitiue Gentlewoman: where they hadde not long ta-
ried but they hearde the trampling of horsse, and a cer-
taine whisprying noyse of people rydyng before them.
Nowe the nyghte was somewhat cleere, whych was
the cause, that the Knyght amongs the throng, knewe
the Gentlewoman, besides whome rode the miserable
wretche that hadde stolne hir away. Whome so sone

as

as Roderico perceyued, full of deſpite, moued with extreme paſſion, welding his launce into his reſt, bare in the nereſt way vpon the infortunat louer, with ſuch vehemencie, as neither coate of maile or placard was able to ſaue his lyfe, or warraunt him to keepe company with that troupe which banded vnder loues Enſeigne, was miſerably ſlaine, by the guide of a blynde, naked, and thieuiſh little boye. And when he ſaw he had done that he came for, he ſayd to the reſt of the companie: My friends, this man was careleſſe to make inuaſion vpon other mens ground. Theſe poore *Biskayes* ſurpriſed vpon the ſodaine, and ſeeyng the ambuſhment to multiplie, put ſpurres to their horſſe to the beſt aduantage they coulde for erpedition, leauing their Captaine or gaping for breth, & gyuing a ſigne that he was dead. Whiles the other were making them ſelues readie to runne away, two of Roderico his men, couered with ſkarfes, armed, and vnknowne, came to ſeaſe vpon ſorowfull Gineura, who beholding hir friend deade, began to wepe and crie ſo ſtraungely, as it was maruell that hir breath fayled not. Ah traiterous theeues (ſayd ſhe) and bloodie murderers, why do ye not addreſſe your liues to execute crueltie vpon the reſt, ſith you haue done to death him, that is of greater value than you all? Ah my dere friend, what croked and greuous fortune haue I, to ſée thée groueling dead on the grounde, and I liuing in life, to be the praie of murderous theeues, & thus ſo cowardly bereued of life? Roderico with his face couered, drewe nere vnto hir, and ſayde: I beſeache you gentlewoman, to forget theſe ſtrange faſhions of complaint, ſith by them ye be not able to reuiue the deade, ne yet make your ende of griefs. The maide knowing the voice of him that had bereued hir freinde, began to crie out more fiercely than before. For which cauſe one of the

of the Gentlemen a companion of Roderico, hauyng a blacke counterfait beard with two lunets, in maner of spectacles, very large and greate, that couered the most part of his face, approched nere the bashefull mayden, and with bigge voice and terrible talke, holdyng his dagger vpon hir white and delicate breast, said vnto hir: I sweare by the Almightie God, if I heare thee speak one word more, I wil sacrifice thee vnto the gost of that varlet, for whoune thou makest thy mone, who deserued to ende his dayes vpon a gallowe tree, rather than by the hands of a gentleman. Hold thy peace therefore thou folish girle, for greater honour and more ample benefite is meant to thee, than thou haste deserued. Ingratitude onely hath so ouerwhelmed thy good nature, that thou artnot able to iudge who be thy friendes. The Gentlewoman fearing death, which as she thought was present, held hir peace, downe alongs whose eies a riuer of teares dydde runne, and the passion of whose heart, appeared by continuall sighes, and neuer ceasling sobbes, whiche in ende so qualified hir choire, that the exteriour sadnesse was wholly inclosed in the mynde and thought of the afflicted Gentlewoman. Then Roderico caused the body of the dead to be buried in a little Countrey chappell, not farre oute of their way. Thus they trauailed two dayes before Ginevra knewe any of them, that had taken hir away from hir louer: euen so they permitted none to speake vnto hir, nor to any of hir companie, whiche was none else but a waityng mayde, and the page that hadde discouered all the secretes to Dom Roderico.

A notable example surely for stolne and secrete mariages, whereby the honour of the contracted partes, is moste commonly blemyshed, the commaundement of God violated, who enioyneth obedience to our pa-

rentes in all rightfull cauſes, who yf for any light o
fence, they haue power to take from vs the inherit
which otherwiſe naturall lawe woulde giue vs, b
ought they of duetie to doe, where rebellions ch
abuſing their gwdneſſe, do conſume without feare of
bertie, the thyng whiche is in the hande and wyll
their fathers. In like manner dyuers vndiſcrete
ſwlyche mothers are to be accuſed, which ſuffer their
daughters of tender and chyldiſhe age, to bée enam
red of theyr ſeruantes, not remembryng howe weake
the fleſhe is, howe prone and redy men be to doe euill,
and how the ſeducing ſpirite waiting ſtill vpon vs, is
procline and prone to ſurpryſe and catche vs within his
ſnares, to thintent he may reioyſe in the ruin of ſoules
waſhed and redéemed lately the blood of the ſon of God.
This troupe drawyng nere to the cane of Dom Diego
Roderico ſent one of his men to aduertiſe hym of their
commyng, who in the abſence of hys friende, fylled
and ſuſteyned wyth hope, chortely to ſée the onely ob
die of hys hearte, accompanyed wyth a merie and
ioyfull traine, ſo ſoone as he had ſomewhat chaunged
hys wylde maner of lyfe, he alſo by litle and litle gai
ned a good parte of his luſtie and freſhe colour, and al
moſte hadde recouered that beautie, whiche he had
when he firſt became a Citizen of thoſe deſertes.
Now hauing vnderſtanded the meſſage ſent vnto him
by Roderico, God knoweth yf wyth that pleaſaunt
tydyngs he felte a motion of blande, ſuch as made all
hys membres to leape and daunce, wherby he rendred
hys mynde aſſwmmed, for the onely memorie of the
thyng, that poyſed hys mynde vp and downe, not a
ble to ſtande wyth equall balaunce, wherby rather
hée ought to haue made reioyſe than complaine, be
ing aſſured to ſée hir, of whome hée demaunded onely

grace and pardon, but for recouerie thereof, he durſt not repoſe any certaine Iudgement. In the ende boyſe ſtyng vp his head like one ryſen from a long and ſounde ſlepe, her ſayde: Praiſe be to God, who yet before I dye, hath done me that pleaſure, to ſuffer me to haue a ſight of hir, that by cauſing my martirdome, continueth thys diſordered lyfe, which ſhall procure in like ſort mine vtter ruine and decay: Vpō the approch whereof, I ſhall goe more ioyful, charged with incomparable loue, to viſite the ghoſtes beneath dead, in the preſence of that cruel ſwete, and who tormenting me with tickliſh tentation, hath made me taſte honie ſugred with bitter gall, more daungerouſe than the ſucke of poiſon, and vnder the vermilion ruddie of a new ſprouted roſe diuinely blowen forthe, hath hidden ſecrete thornes, the prickes whereof hath me ſo lively touched, as my woonde can not well be cured, with any baulme that may be thereunto applied, without enioying of that mine owne happie miſſehap, or without that remedie, which almoſt I feele the ſame only reſting in death, that ſo long and oftentymes I haue deſired, as the true remedie of my paines and griefe. In the meane whyle Dom Roderico, whiche tyll that tyme was not knowen vnto Gineura, drewe neare vnto hir by the way as he rode, and talked with hir in thys ſorte: I doubte not (Gentlewoman) but that you thynke youre ſelfe not well contented to ſee me in this place, in ſuch company, and for occaſion ſo vnſeemely for my degree and ſtate: and moreouer knowing what iniurie I ſeeme to do vnto you, that euer was, and am ſo affectionate and frendly to ꝑ whole ſtock of your race & linage, & am not ignorant that vpon ꝑ firſt bruit you may iudge my cauſe vniuſt to cary you away from the handes of your friende,

to bring you into these desertes, wylde, and solitarie places. But yf ye considered the force of that true vnitie, whiche by vertue sheweth the common bondes of hearts and mindes of men, & shall measure to what ende this acte is done, without to muche staying vpon the light apprehension of choler, for a beginnyng somwhat troublesom; I am assured then (that yf you be not wholly depriued of reason) I shall not bee altogether blamed, nor you quite of faulte. And bycause we "drawe nere vnto the place, whether (by the helpe of "God) I meane to conduct you, I beseeche you to consy- "der, that the true seruaunt whiche by all seruice and "ductie studieth to execute the comaundementes of him "that hath puissance ouer hym, dothe not deserue to be "beaten or driuen away from the house of his maister, "but to be fauoured and cherished, and ought to receyue "equall recompenfe for his seruice. I speake not this for "my selfe, my deuotion being vowed elsewhere, and not "to you, sauing for that honest affection which I ought to "beare to all vertuous and chaste persons. The effect "whereof I will not denie vnto you in tyme and place, "where I shal vse such modestie towards you, as is meet "for a maiden of your age and state. For the gretnesse of "noble men & puissant, doth most appeare & shew forth it "self, when they vse mildenesse & gentlenesse vnto those, "to whō by reson of their authoritie they might do cruel "tie & malice. Now to ỳ end ỳ I do not make you doutful "long. Al ỳ which I haue done & yet do mean to do, is for "none other purpose, but to ease the greuous paines of ỳ "most faithful louer that liueth at this day vnder ỳ cir- "cle of the Mone. It is for the good knight Dom Diego, "ỳ loueth you so derely & wil worshippeth your noble fa- "me, who bicause he wil not shew him self disobedient, li- "ueth miserably amōg brute beasts, amid ỳ craggy rocks

and

and mountaines, and in the deepe solitudes of comfort-
lesse dales & valleis. It is to him I say that I doe bring
you, protesting vnto you by othe (Gentlewoman) that
ỳ misery wherin I saw him, little more than. vj. wekes
past, toucheth me so neare the heart, as if the Sacrifice
of my life sufficed alone, (& without letting you to fele
this painefull voyage) for the solace of his martirdome
I wold spare it no more, than I do mine owne endeuor
and honor, besides the hazarding of ỳ losse of your good
grace and fauoure. And albeit I wel perceiue, that I do
grieue you, by causing you to enter this painfull iour-
ney, yet I beseche you that ỳ whole displeasure of this
fact may be imputed vnto my charge, and that it wold
please you louingly to deale with him, who for your
sake vseth such cruell misdemeanor against himselfe.
Gineura as a woman halfe in despaire for the death of
hir friend, behaued hir self like a mad woman voide of
wit and sense, and the simple remembraunce of Dom
Diego his name so astonned hir, (which name she hated
far more than the pãgs of death) that she staide a long
time, hir mouth not able to shape one word to speake.
In the end vanquished with impacience, burning with
choler, and trembling for sorow, loked vpon Dom Ro-
derico with an eye no lesse furious, than a Tigresse
caught within the net, and seeth before hir face hir yong
Fawnes murdered, wringing hir handes, and beating
hir delicate brest, she vsed these or such like words: Ah
bloudy traitor and no more Knight, is it of thée that I
ought to loke for so detestable a villanie and treason?
Howe darest thou be so hardie to entreate me for an o-
ther, that hast in mine own presence killed him, whose
death I wil pursue vpon thée, so long as I shal haue life
within this body? Is it to thée false theefe and murde-
rer, that I ought to render accompte of that which I

" meant to do: who hath appointed thée to be arbitrator,
" or who gaue thée commission to capitulate the articles
" of my mariage? Is it by force then, that thou woldest I
" shold loue that vnfaithful Knight, for whome thou hast
" committed & done this acte, that so long as thou liuest
" shall blot and blemish thy renoume, and shall be so wel
" fixed in my minde, and the wounds shal cleaue so neare
" my heart, vntill at my pleasure I be reuenged of this
" wrong? No, no, I assure thée that any force done vnto
" me, shal neuer make me otherwise disposed, thã a mor-
" tall enimy both to thée which art a Theefe & rauisher of
" an other mans wife, & also to thy desperate friend Dom
" Diego, which is the cause of this my losse: And now not
" satisfied with the former wrong done vnto me, thou
" goest about to deceiue me vnder the colour of good and
" pure amitie. But sith wicked Fortune hath made me
" thy prisoner, doe with me what thou wilt, and yet be-
" fore I suffer and endure that that traytor Dom Diego
" doe enioy my virginitie, I will offer vp my life to the
" shadowes and ghosts of my faithful frend and husband,
" whom thou hast so traiterously murdred. And therfore
" (if honestly I may or ought entreate mine enimie,) I
" pray thée ỳ by doing thy duetie, thou suffer vs in peace,
" and giue licence to me, this Page, and my two poor
" maidens, to departe whether we list. God forbid (quod
" Roderico) that I should doe a trespasse so shamefull, as
" to depriue my dearest friend of his ioy and contentati-
" on, and by falsifiing my faith be an occasiõ of his death,
" and of your losse, by leauing you without companie,
" wãdring amids this wildernesse. And he cõtinued thus
his former discourse and talke, to reclaime this cruell
Damsell to haue pitie vpon hir poore penitent, but he
gained as much by his talke, as if he had gone about to
num-

number the sandes alongs the sea coastes of the maine Ocean. Thus deuising from one talke to an other, they arrined neare the Caue, which was the stately house of Dom Diego: where Gineura lighted, and saw the poze amozous knight, humbly falling downe at hir feete, all sozwozne, pale, and disfigured, weeping with warme teares, he sayde vnto hir: Alas my deare Ladie, the a- lone and only mistresse of my heart, do you not thinke that my penaunce is long inoughe foz the sinne which ignozauntly I haue commit ted, if euer I haue done a- ny fault at all? Beholde I beseeche you (gwd Ladie deare) what ioy I haue conceiued in your absence, what pleasures haue nursed mine hope, and what con- solation hath entertained my life: which truely had it not bene foz the continuall remembzaunce of your di- uine beautie, I had of long time abzeuiated to shozten the paines which doe renewe in me so many times the pangs of death: as oftentimes I thinke vpon the vn- kindenesse shewed vnto me by making so little ac- compte of my fealtie: which can, noz shall receiue the same in gwd parte, were it so perfect as any assuraunce were able to make it. Gineura swelling with sozow, and full of feminine rage, blushing with fury, hir eyes sparckling fozth hir cholerike conceiptes, vouchsafed not so much as to giue him one wozd foz answere, and bicause she would not looke vpon him, she turned hir face on the other side. The poze and afflicted louer, see- ing the great crueltie of his felonious mistresse still kneeling vpon his knees, redoubling his armes, fet- ching his sighes with a voyce, that semed to be dzawne by fozce from the bottome of his heart, sayd vnto hir: With the sincerities of my faith, & my long seruice mw dame Gineura, cannot persuade you that I haue bene a most

" moſt obedient, faithful, & very loyal ſeruaunt towards
" you, as euer any man that hath ſerued Ladie or Gētle-
" woman, and that without your fauour & grace it is im-
" poſſible for me any longer to liue, yet I doe very humbly
" beſeeche you, for that all other comfort is denied me, if
" there be any gētleneſſe and curteſie in you, that I may
" receiue this onely grace at your hands for the laſt that
" euer I hope to craue: which is, that you being thus gre-
" uouſly offended with me, would doe iuſtice to that vn-
" fortunate man, which vpon his knees doeth inſtantly
" craue the ſame. Graunt (cruell miſtreſſe) this my re-
" queſt, doe vengeance at your pleaſure vpon him, which
" willingly yeldeth him ſelf to death with the effuſion of
" his poore innocent bloud to ſatiſfie you, and verily farre
" more expedient it is for him thus to die, by appeaſing
" your wil, than to reſt on liue to your diſcontentment
" or anoyance. Alas, ſhall I be ſo vnfortunate, that both
" life and death ſhould be denied me by one perſon of the
" world, whom I hope to content and pleaſe by any fact
" or meanes what ſo euer reſting in mine humble obedi-
" ence? Alas Gentlewoman rid me from this torment,
" and diſpatch your ſelfe from the griefe which you haue
" to ſee this vnhappy Knight, who would ſay and eſteme
" himſelf to be happy (his life being lothſome vnto you)
" if he may content you, by death done by your owne
" hands, ſith other fauor he cannot expect or hope for. The
maiden hardned in hir opinion, ſtode ſtil immoueable,
much like vnto a rocke in the midſt of the ſea, diſquie-
ted with a tēpeſt of billowes and fomie waues, in ſuch
wiſe as one word could not be procured frō hir mouth.
Which vnlucky Dom Diego perceiuing, attached with
the feare of preſent death, and failing his natural force
" fell downe to the ground, and fainting ſayd: Ah, what
" a recompenſe doe I receiue for this ſo faithfull Loue?

Roderico

Roderico beholding that hideous sight, whilest the o-
thers wēt about to relieue Dom Diego, repaired to Gi-
neura, and full of beastinesse mingled with furie, sayde
vnto hir: By God (false sendish woman) if so be that I
do change my minde, I will make thée séele the smarte,
no lesse than thou shewest thy selfe dishonourable to
them that doe thée honour: Arte thou so careless of so
great a Lorde as this is, that humbleth hymselfe so low
to such a strumpet as thou art? who without regard ei-
ther to his renoumme, or the honour of his house, is con-
tent to be abandoned from his noble state, to become a
fugitiue and straunger? What crueltie is this for thée
to misprise the greatest humilitie that mā can imagin?
What greater amendes wouldst thou with to haue al-
though the offēse which thou presuppossest had ben true?
Now (if thou be wise) change this opinion, except thou
wouldest haue mée doe into so many pieces, thy cruell
corpse and vnfaithfull heart, as once this poore knight
did in parts the vnhappie hauke, which through thy fol-
lie did bréede vnto him this distresse, and to thy selfe the
name of the most cruell and disloyall woman that euer
lined. But what greater benefite can happen vnto thée,
than to sée this Gentleman vtterly to forget the fault,
to conceiue no sinister suspicion of thy running away,
craning thyne acquaintaunce, and is contented to sacri-
fice him selfe vnto thyne anger to appease and mitigate
thy rage? Nowe to speake no more hereof, but to pro-
cede in that which I began to say, I offer vnto thée then
bothe death and loue, chuse whether thou liste. For I
sweare againe by hym that séeth and heareth al things,
that if thou play the fole, thou shalt séele and proue me
to be the cruellest enimie that euer thou hadst: and such
a one as shall not feare to imbrue hys handes with the
blode of hir that is the deathe of the chiefest of all my

friends.

friendes. Gineura hearing that resolute answere, shewed hir selfe to be nothing afraide, nor declared any token of feare, but rather seemed to haue encouraged Roderico, in braue and manniſh sort, farre diuers from the simplicitie of a yong and tender maidē, as a man woth say, such a one as had neuer felt the assaultes and troubles of aduerse fortune. Wherfore frouncing hir browes, and grinning hir teeth with closed fists, and countenance very bolde, she made hym aunswere: Ah thou "knight, which once gauest assault to cōmit a villanie "treason, thinkest thou now without remorse of conscience to cōtinue thy mischief? I speake it to thee villain, "which hauing shed the blood of an honester mā thā thou "art, fearest not nowe to make mée a companion of his "death. Which thing spare not hardily to accomplish, in "the intent that I liuing, may not be such a one as thou "falsly iudgest me to be: for neuer man hitherto vaunted, and neuer shall, that he hathe hadde the spoyle of "my virginitie: from the frute whereof, lyke an arrant "theefe, thou hast depriued my loyall spouse. Nowe do "what thou list: for I am farre better content to suffer "death, be it as cruel as thou art mischeuous, then borne for "the disquieting & veration of honest maidēs: notwithstanding I humbly beseech almightie God, to gyue thee "so muche pleasure, contentation and ioy in thy loue, as "thou hast done to me, by hastening the death of my dere "husbande. O God, if thou be a iust God, suche a one, as "from whome mē thy poore creatures do beleue, all iustice to proceede, thou I say, which art the rampire and "refuge of all iustice, poure downe thy vengeance and "plague vpon these pestiferous thieues and murderers, "which haue prepared a worldely plague vpon me thine "innocent damsell. Ah wicked Roderico, thinke not that "death can be so fearefull vnto mée, but that with good heart,

heart, I am able to accept the same, trusting verily that »
one daye it shall be the cause of thy ruine, and ouer- »
throwe of hym, for whom thou takest all these pains. »
Dom Roderico maruellously rapte in sense, imagined the woman to be fully bent against hym, who then had puissaunce (as he thought,) ouer hir owne hearte: and thynkyng, that he sawe hir moued with like rage against hym, as she was against Dom Diego, stode still so perplexed and voyde of right minde, that hée was constrained to sitte downe, so feeble he felt him self for the onely remembrance of hir euill demeanor. And whilest this was a doing, the handemayde of Gineura, and hir Page, inforced to persuade their mystresse to haue compassion vpon the knight that hadde suffered so muche for hir sake, and that she would consente to the honest requestes and good counsell of Roderico. But she which was stubbornly bente in hir folishe persuasions, sayd vnto them: What foles? are you so much bewit- »
ched, either with ỹ fained teares of this disloyal knight, »
which colorably thus doth torment himself, or els ar ye »
inchãted with the venomous honie & tirãnical brauerie »
of the thief which murdered my husband and your ma- »
ster? Ah vnhappie caytife maiden, is it my chaunce to »
endure the assault of suche Fortune, when I thoughte »
to liue at my beste ease, and thus cruelly to tomble in- »
to the handes of hym, whome I hate so much as he say- »
eth loue vnto me? And moreouer my vnluckie fate »
is not herewith content, but redoubleth my sorrowe, »
euen by those that be of my trayn, who ought rather to »
incourage me to die, than consente to so vnreasonable »
requests. Ah loue, loue, how euil be they recompenced »
which faithfully do homage vnto thée? & why should not »
I forget al affectiõ, neuer hereafter to haue mind on mã »

" to proue beginning of a pleasure, which tasted and la
" bringeth more displeasure than euer ioy engendred by
" light. Alas, I neuer knewe what was the fruite of that
" which so straungely did attache me, and thou O traito
" rous and thieuishe Loue, haste ordeined a banket fur
" ned with such bitter dishes, as forced I am perforce to
" taste of their egre sweetes: Auaunt sweete foly, auaunt,
" I doe henceforth for euer let thee slippe, to imbrace the
" death, wherein I hope to finde my greatest reste, for in
" thee I fynde noughte else but heapes of straynyng pas
" sions. Auoyde from me all myschehap, flee from my
" ye furious ghostes and Fayries most vnkynde, whose
" gaudes and toyes dame loue hath wrought to kepe oc
" cupied my louing minde, and suffer me to take ende in
" thee, that I may lyue in an other life without thee, bee
" ing now charged with cup of grief, which I shal quaff
" in venomous drink soaked in the soppes of bitternesse.
" Sharpen thou thy selfe, (O death vnkinde) prepare thy
" darte, to strike the corpse of hir, that she may void the
" quarels shot against hir by hir aduersarie. Ah poore hart
" strip thy self from hope, and qualifie thy desires. Ceas
" henceforth to wishe thy lyfe, seeing and feeling the ap
" pointed sight of loue and life, combattyng within my
" minde, elsewhere to seeke my peace in an other world,
" with him to toy, which for my sake was sacrificed to the
" treason of varlets hands, who for the perfite horde of
" his desires, nought else dydde seeke but to soile his bla
" die fysts with the purest blode of my loyall friend. And
" I this abundance of teares do sheade to saciate his fel
" nous mode, which shall be the iuste shortenyng of my
" doleful dayes. When she had thus complained, she be
gan horribly to torment hir selfe, and in furious guise, that the cruellest of the companie were moued with compassion, seeing hir thus straungely straught of wits:

neuer-

nouertheleſſe they did not diſcontinue by duetie to ſolicite hir to haue regarde to that whiche poore fayntyng Dom Diego dyd endure. Who ſo ſone as with freſh fountayne water hée was reuiued, ſéeing ſtil the heauineſſe of his Ladie, and hir increſed diſdain and choler againſt him, vaniſhed in diuers ſoundings: which moued Roderico frō ſtudie déepe wherin he was to ryſe, whereunto ỹ rage of Gineura had caſt him down, bicauſe forgetting all imaginarie affection of his Ladie, and propoſing his dutie before his eyes, which eche Gentleman oweth to gentle damſels and women kind, ſtil beholdyng with honourable reſpect the griefe of the martyred wylderneſſe Knight, ſighyng yet by reaſon of former thought, he ſayde vnto Gineura. Alas, is it poſſible, that in the heart of ſo yong and delicate a maiden, there maye bée harbored ſo ſtraunge furie and vnreaſonable rage? O God, the effecte of the crueltie reſting in this woman, painting it ſelfe in the imaginatiue force of my minde, hath made me feare the like miſſehappe to come to the cruell ſtate of this diſauenturous gentlemā: Notwithſtanding (O thou cruell beaſt) thinke not that thys thy furie ſhall ſtay me from doyng thée to death, to ryd thée from follie and diſdaine, & this vnfortunate louer from diſpaire and trouble, verily beleuing, that in time it ſhall be knowne what profite the worlde ſhal gaine by purging the ſame of ſuch an infected plague as is an vnkinde and arrogant heart: and it ſhall féele what vtilitie ryſeth by thyne, ouerthrow. And I do hope beſydes that, in time to come, men ſhal praiſe this deede of mine, who for preſeruing the honour of one houſe, haue choſen rather to doe to death two offenders, than to leaue one of them aliue, to obſcure the glorie and brightneſſe of the other. And therefore (ſayd he) tourning his face to thoſe of his traine) Cut the throte of this ſtubborne

and froward beast, & doe the like to them that be come with hir, shewe no more fauor vnto them all, than that curssed strumpet doeth mercy to the life of that miserable Gentleman, who dieth there for loue of hir.

The maiden hearing the cruel sentence of hir death, cried out so loude as she could, thinking reskue would haue come, but the poore wenche was deceiued: for the desert knewe none other, but those that were abiding in that troupe. The Page and the woman seruaunt exclamed vpon Roderico for mercie, but he made as though he heard them not, and rather made signe to his men to do what he commaunded. When Gineura sawe that their deathe was purposed in deede, confirmed in opinion rather to die, thã to obey, she said vnto the executioners: My friends, I beseeche you let not these innocentes abide the penaunce of that which they neuer committed. And you Dom Roderico, be reuẽged on me, by whome the fault, (if a womans faith to hir husband may be termed a faulte) is done. And let these infortunate depart, ỹ be God knoweth, innocent of any crime. And thou my frend, which liuest amongs the shadowes of faithfull louers, if ỹ haue any feeling, as in deede thou proouest being in another world, beholde ỹ pureneſſe of mine heart & fidelitie of my loue: who to kepe the same inuiolable, doe offer my self voluntarily to the death, which this cruell tyrant prepareth for me. And ỹ hangman the executioner of my ioyes, and murderer of the immortall pleasures of my loue (sayd she to Roderico) glut thy gluttonous desire of bloud, make dronke thy minde with murder, & boast of thy little triũphe, which for all thy threats or persuasible words, thou canst not get frõ the heart of a simple maiden, ne cary away the victory for all ỹ battred breach made into the rãpare of hir honoure. When she had so sayd, a man would haue thought

thought

thought that the memory of death had cooled his heate, but ẏ same serued his as an assured solace of his paines. Dom Diego come to himself saing the discourse of that tragedie, being now addressed to the last acte & end of ẏ life and stage of faire & golden locked Gineura, making a vertue of necessitie, recouered a little corage to saue, (if it were possible) the life of his, that had put his owne in hazard miserably to end. Hauing stayed them that held the maidē, he repaired to Dom Roderico, to whom he spake in this wise: I sée wel my good Lord and great friend, that the good will you beare me, causeth you to vse this honest order for my behalf, wherof I doubt if I should liue a whole hundred yeares, I shall not be able to satisfie the least of the bondes wherein I am bound, the same surpassing all mine abilitie and power. Yet for all that (deare friend) sith you sée the fault of this misshap to arise of my predestinate ill lucke, and that man cannot auoide things once ordained, I beseech you do me yet this good pleasure (for all the benefits ẏ euer I haue receiued) to send back again this gentlewoman wᵭ his traine, to the place frō whence you toke his, with like assuraūce & conduct, as if she were your sister. For I am pleased with your endeuor, & cōtented wᵭ my misfortune, assuring you sir besides, ẏ the trouble which she endureth, doth far more grieue my hart than al ẏ paine which for his sake I suffer. That his sorowe then may decrease, and mine may renue again, ẏ she may liue in peace, and I in warre for his cruel beautie sake, I will wait vpon Clotho, the spinner of the threeden life of mā vntill shée breake the twisted lace that holdeth the fatal course of my doleful yeares. And you Gentlewomā liue in rest, as your poore suppliāt, wretched Dom Diego shalbe citizen of these wild places, & vaunt you hardely that you were ẏ best beloued maiden ẏ euer liued.

Maruellous

Marueilous truely bée the forces of Loue, when they discouer their perfection: for by their meanes things otherwise impossible be reduced to such facilitie, as a man woulde iudge that they had neuer bene so harde to obtaine, and so painefull to pursue. As appeared by this damsell, in whome the wrathe of fortune, the pinche of iealosie, the intollerable rage of hir friendes losse, had ingendred a contempt of Dom Diego, an extreme desire to be reuenged on Dom Roderico, and a tediousnesse of longer life. And now putting of the vaile of blinde appetite, for the esclarishyng of hir vnderstanding eyes, and breaking the Adamant rock planted in the mindes of hir breast, she beheld in open sight the stedfastnesse, pacience and perseueration of hir greate friende. For that supplication of the knight had greater force in Gineura, than all his former seruices. And full well she shewed the same, when throwing hir selfe vpon ỳ neck of the desperate Gentleman, and imbracing hym very louingly she sayd vnto him: Ah syr, that youre felicitie is the beginning of my great ioy of minde, which sameth now of swéetenesse in the very same, in whome I imagined to be the welspring of bitternesse. The diminution of one griefe is, and shall bée the increase of a bonde, such as for euer I will cal my self the most humble slaue of your worshyp, lowly beséeching you neuertheless to pardon my follies, wherewith full fondely I haue abused your pacience. Consider a while sir, I beseech you, the nature and secrecie of loue. For those that be blinded in that passion, thinke them selues to be perfecte séers, and yet be the first that commit most filthie faultes. I doe not denie any committed wrong & trespasse, and doe not refuse therfore the honest and gentle correction that you shall appointe mée, for expiation of mine offense. Ah my noble Ladie (answered ỳ knight)

all rapt

all rapt with pleasure, and half way out of his wits for
ioy, I humbly beseeche you inflicte vpon my poore wret-
ched body no further pangs of death by remēbring the
glory of my thought sith the recitall bringeth with it a
taste of the trauails which you haue suffred for my ioy &
contentation. It is therfore (quod she) that I think my
self happy: for by that meanes I haue knowne the per-
fect qualities that be in you, & haue proued two extre-
mities of vertue. One consisteth in your cōstancie and
loyaltie wherby you may vaunt your self aboue him ý
sacrificed his life vpō the bloudy body of his Lady, who
for dying so, finished his trauails. Where you haue cho-
sen a life worse than death, no lesse painfull a hundred
times a day, than very death it self. The other cōsisteth
in the clemency wherwith you calme and appease the
rage of your greatest aduersaries. As my self which be-
fore hated you to death, vanquished by your curtesie do
confesse that I am double bound vnto you, both for my
life and honor: and hearty thankes doe I render to the
Lord Roderico for ý violence he did vnto me, by which
meanes I was induced to acknowledge my wrong, &
the right which you had to complaine of my foolish reſ-
stance. All is wel, sayd Roderico, sith without perill of
honor we may returne home to our houses: I intend
therefore (sayd he) to send word before to my Ladies
your mothers of your returne, for I know how so wel
to couer and excuse this our enterprise and secrete iour-
neis, as by Gods assistāce no blame or displeasure shal
ensue therof. And like as (sayd he smiling) I haue buil-
ded the fortresse which shot into your campe, and made
you flie, euen so I hope (Gentlewoman) that I shall be
the occasion of your victory, when you combat in close
cāpe, with your swēte cruel enimy. Thus they passed
the iorney in pleasant talke, recompēsing the.y. louers

with al honeſt & vertuous intertainmẽt for their griefs and troubles paſt. In the meane while they ſent one of their ſeruants to the two widow ladies, which were in great care for their childrẽ, to aduertiſe them ẏ Gineura was gone to viſite Dom Diego, then being in one of the caſtles of Roderico, where they were determined if it were their good pleaſure, to conſũmate their mariage, hauing giuen faith & affiance one to the other. The mother of Gineura, could not here tel of more pleaſant newes: for ſhe had vnderſtãded of the foliſh flight & eſcape of hir daughter, with ẏ ſteward of hir houſe, wherof ſhe was very ſorowful, & for griefe was like to die, but aſſured & recõforted with thoſe news, ſhe failed not to mete the mother of Dom Diego, at ẏ apointed place whither the .ij. louers were arriued two days before. There the mariage of that fair couple (ſo long deſired) was ſolemniſed with ſuch magnificence as was requiſite for the ſtate of thoſe two noble houſes. Thus the torment indured, made the ioy to ſauour of ſome other taſte than they do feele, which without pain in ẏ exerciſe of loues purſute, attain the top of their deſires: And truly their pleaſure was altogether like to him that nouriſhed in ſuperfluous delicacie of meates can not aptely ſo well iudge of pleaſure, as he which ſometimes lacketh that abundance. And verily Loue without bitterneſſe, is almoſt a cauſe without effectes: for he that ſhall take away griefs and troubled fanſies from louers, depriueth them of the praiſe of their ſtedfaſtneſſe, and maketh vaine the glorie of their perſeuerance: for he is vnworthie to beare away the price and garlande of triumph in the conflict, that behaueth himſelf like a coward, and doth not obſerue the lawes of armes and manlike duties in the combat. This hiſtorie then is a mirrour for loyall louers, and chaſte ſuters, and maketh them de-

teſt

tell the vnshamefastnesse of those, which vpon the first view do solowe with might and maine, the Gentlewoman or Ladie that giueth them good face or countenãce wherof any gentle heart or mind, noursed in the schole-house of vertuous education, will not bee squeymish to those that shal by chast salutation or other incountrie, doe their curteous reuerence. This historie also yeldeth contempt of them, which in their affection forget themselues; abasing the generositie of their courages, to be reputed of soles, the true champions of Loue, whose like they be that desire such regarde. For the perfection of true Loue consisteth not in passions, in sorowes, griefes, martirdomes, or cares, and much lesse arriueth he to his desire, by sighes, exclamations, wepings, and childish playnts: for so much as vertue ought to be the bande of that indissoluble amitie, which maketh the vnion of the two seuered bodies of that woman man, which Plato describeth, & causeth man to trauell for his whole accomplishment in ỹ true pursute of chast loue. In which labor truly sondly walked Dom Diego, thinking to finde the same by his dispaire amidde the sharp solitarie deserts of those *Pyrene* mountains. And truly the duetie of his perfect friende, did more liuely disclose the same (what fault so euer he dyd) than all his countenances, eloquent letters or amorous messages. In like maner a man dothe not know what a treasure a true friend is, vntil he hath proued his excellencie, specially where necessitie maketh him to tast ỹ swetnesse of such delicate meate. For a friend being a second himself, agreeth by a certaine natural *Sympathie* & attonement to the affections of him whõ he loueth, both to participate his ioyes and pleasures, and to sorrowe his aduersitie, where Fortune shall vse by some misaduentures, to shewe hir accustomed mobilitie.

Salimbene and Angelica

¶ A Gentleman of SIENA, called ANSELMO SALIMBENE, curteously and gently deliuereth his enimie from death. The condemned partie seing the kinde parte of SALIMBENE, rendreth into his hands his sister ANGELICA, with whome he was in loue, which gratitude and curtesie, SALIMBENE well marking, moued in conscience, woulde not abuse hir, but for recompense toke hir to his wife.

The. xxx. Nouel.

WE do not mean here to discouer the sumptuositie & magnificence of Palaces, stately & wonderfull to the viewe of mẽ, ne yet to reduce to memorie ỹ maruellous effects of mãs industry to build and lay foundations in the deepest chanel of the maine sea, ne to describe their ingenious industrie, in boring the craggy mountaines, and hardest rocks, to ease the croked passages of wearie wayes, for armies to marche through inaccessible places. Onely now do we pretende to shewe the effects of loue, whiche surmount all opinion of cõmon things, and appere so miraculous as the founding and erecting of the Colliseri, Colosseri, Theatres,

Theatres, Amphitheatres, Pyramides, and other woꝛkes wonderful to the woꝛld, foꝛ that the hard indured path of hatred and displeasure long time begon, and obstinately pursued with straunge crueltie, was conuerted into loue, by theffect of loue and concoꝛde, suche as I know none, but is so much astonned, as he may haue good cause to wonder, consideryng the stately foundations, vpon which kings and great monarches haue employed the chiefest reuenues of their pꝛouinces. Nowe like as Ingratitude is a vice of greatest blame and discõmendation amongs men, euen so gentlenesse & kindnesse ought to bear ỹ title of a most cõmẽdable vertue, And as ỹ *Thebans* were accused of that crime, foꝛ their great captaines Epaminondas & Pelopidas: The *Plateens* (contrarywise) were pꝛaised foꝛ their solemn obseruation of the *Grekes* benefits, which deliuered them out of the *Persians* bondage. And the *Sicyonians* beare away the pꝛice of eternal pꝛaise, foꝛ acknowledging the good turnes receiued of Aratus, that deliuered them fꝛõ the crueltie of the tyꝛants. And if Philippo Maria, duke of *Millan*, deserued eternall repꝛoch foꝛ his ingratitude to his wife Beatrix, foꝛ the secrete killing of hir, he being enriched with hir goodes and treasures: a barbarous turke borne in *Arabia*, shall carie the pꝛaise from him, who being vanquished in *Arabia* by Baldouine, king of *Hierusalem*, and he and his wife taken pꝛisoners, and hys treasures fallen into the handes of that good king, issued of the *Loraine* blood. Neuertheleſſe seing that the Christian had deliuered him, and restoꝛed againe hys wyfe, woulde not be vanquished in magnificence and liberalitie, & much lesse beare the name of an vnkinde pꝛince, but rather when Baldouine was ouercome of ỹ infidels, and being retired within a certain citie, that Admirall of *Arabie*, came to him in the night, and telling him the

venike of his cõpanions, conneyed him out of the Citie, & was his guide vntil he saw him frée frõ peril. Which alleaged ỳ premisses, because ỳ historye which I purpose to recite, aduoucheth two examples not vulgare & common, the one of very great loue, & the other of such acceptacõ and knowledging therof, as I thought it pitie the same should lurke from the acquaintaunce of the Englishe men. And that they alone should haue the benefite thereof which vnderstande the *Italian* tongue, supposing that it shall bring some frute and commoditie to this our English soil, that eche wight may frame their life on those which in straunge Countreys farre from vs, haue liued vertuously without reproche that might soile or spot their name.

In *Siena* then (an auncient and very noble Citie of *Toscane*, which no long time past was gouerned by his Magistrates, and liued in his own lawes and liberties, as the *Lucquois*, *Pisans*, and *Florentines* doe) were two families very rich, noble, and the chiefe of the Citie called the Salimbenes and Montanines, of the race & stocke whereof, excellent men in their common wealth haue descended, very good and experte souldiers for contents of armies. Those two houses in the beginning were so great friends, and frequented such loue and familiaritie, as it seemed they had bene but one house & bloud, daily vsing eche others companie, and banketting one another. But *Italy* in all times being as it were a stage house of troubles, and a very marte of sedition, bandes and parcialities, specially of ciuill warres in euery Citie, it could not be that *Siena* should alone enioy his libertie in peace, and accorde of Citizens, and haunt himself to be frée frõ knowledge of particular debate. For of warres he had good experience against ỳ *Florentines*, who by long remembrance haue done what they could

to

to make hir subiect vnto them. Nowe the cause of that discorde rose euen by them which kept the Citizens in vnity and concord, and was occasioned by those ij. houses the noblest & most puissant of their cõmon wealth. It is not vnknowne to any man, that antiquitie ordained it to be peculiar for nobilitie, to traine vp the children of noble houses in hunting, aswell to bolden & noselthem in daungers, as to make them strong and accustomed in trauail, & to forte them shun the delicate life and great idlenesse which accõpany honorable houses, and those of gentle blood, forsomuch as by the pursute of beasts, sleights of war be obserued: the hounds be the square battell, the greihoundes be the flanquarts and wings to folow the enimy, the horsman serueth to giue the chace, when the game spardeth to couert, the hornes be the trumpets to sound the chase and retire, & for incouragement of the dogges that run. To be short it seemeth a very campe in battail, ordeined for the pleasure and pastetyme of noble youth. Neuerthelesse, by hunting diuers mischortunes doe arise, and sundry paunges haue happened by the same. Meleager lost his life for the victorie of the wylde boze of *Calydonia*. Cephalus lost his life for killyng his deare beloued Procris, and Acastus was accursed for murderyng the Kings sonne of whome he was the Tutour. William Rufus, one of our Englyshe Kyngs, the sonne of the Conquerour, was slaine with an arrowe in the Newe forest by a French gentleman called Walter Tyrel, as he was pursuing the harte. Other histories repoze diuers perils chanced in hunting, but yet the same worthie to be cherished, frequented and vsed by good aduise and moderate pastetyme. So the hunting of the wylde Boze defiled the Citie of *Siena*, with the blode of hir owne Citizens, when the Salimbenes and Montaninos vpon a daye

in an

in an assembled companie, incountring vpon a great and fierce boze, take hym by force of men and beastes. When they had done, as they were banketting and commuming of the nimblenesse of their dogs, eche man praising his owne, as hauing done best, there rose great debate amongs them vpon that matter, and proceeded so farre, as fondly they began to reuile one another with wozds, and from taunting termes to earnest blowes, wherewith diuers in that skirmish were hurt on both sides. In the end the Salimbenes had the wozse, and one of the principall slaine in the place, which appalled the rest, not that they were discozaged, but attending time and season of reuenge. This hatred so strangly kindled betweene both parts, that by little and little, after many combates and ouerthrowes of either side, the last lighted vpon the Montanines, who with their wealth and richesse were almost brought to nothing, and thereby the rigour and choler of the Salimbenes appeased, now being able to resist them, and in space of time forgat all iniuries. The Montanines also that remained at *Siena*, liued in quiet, without chalenge or quarell of their aduersaries, howbeit mutuall talke and haunt of other company vtterly surceased. And to say the truth, there were almost none to quarell withall, for the whole bloud and name of the Montanines rested in one alone, called Charles the sonne of Thomas Montanine, a young man so honest and well brought vp, as any then in *Siena*, who had a sister, that for beautie, grace, curtesy and honestie, was comparable with the best in all *Thoscane*. This poze yong Gentleman had no great reuenue, for that the patrimonie of his predecessors was wasted in charges for entertainment of souldiers in the time of the burly burly and debates aforesaid. A good parte also was confiscate to the chamber of *Siena* for trespasses

forfaitures committed: with the remayne he ſuſtained his familie, and indifferently maintained his porte ſoberly within his own houſe, keping his ſiſter in decent and moderate order. The maiden was called Angelica, a name of trouth, without offenſe to other, due to hir. For in very deede in hir were harbored the vertue of curteſy and gentleneſſe, and was ſo wel inſtructed and nobly brought vp, as they which loued not the name or race of hir, could not forbeare to commend hir, and wiſh that their daughter were hir like. In ſuche wiſe as one of hir chiefeſt foes was ſo sharpely beſet with hir vertue and beautie, as he loſt his quiet ſleepe, & luſt to eate & drinke. His name was Anſelmo Salimbene, who wold willingly haue made ſute to marry hir, but the diſcord paſt, quite mortified his deſire, ſo ſone as he had deuiſed the plot within his braine and fanſie. Notwithſtãding it was impoſſible that the loue ſo lively grauen and rooted in his minde, could eaſily be defaced. For if once in a day he had not ſeene hir, his heart did feele the tormẽts of toſting flames, and wiſhed that the hunting of the Boze, had neuer decayed a familie ſo excellent, to the intent he might haue matched himſelf with hir, whome none other coulde diſplace out of his remembraunce, which was one of the richeſt Gentlemen, and of greateſt power in *Siena*. Now for that he durſt not diſcouer his amorous griefe to any perſon, was the chiefeſt cauſe that martired moſt his heart, & for the auncient feſtred malice of thoſe two families, he deſpaired for euer, to gather either floure or fruit of that affection, preſuppoſing that Angelica would neuer fire hir loue on him, for that his Parents were the cauſe of the defaite & ouerthrow of the Montanine houſe. But what? There is nothing durable vnder the heauens. Both good and euill haue their reuolution in the gouernement of humane

aduatres. The amities and hatreds of Kings and Princes, be they so harboned, as commonly in a moment he is not seene to be a hearty friend, that lately was a cruell foe, and spired naught else but the ruine of his aduersarie, see ye the varietie of humane chaunces, and then do iudge at eye what great simplicitie it is to fasten certain and infallible iudgement vpon mannes vnstayed doings. He that erst gouerned a king, & made all things to tremble at his word, is sodainly throwne downe, & dieth a shamefull death. In like sort, another which loketh for his owne vndoing, hath himselfe auaunced to his estate againe, and vengeaunce taken of his enimies. Calir Bassa gouerned whilom the great Ottomet, that wan the Empire of *Constantinople*, who attempted nothing without the aduise of that Bassa. But vpon the sodain he saw himself reiected, & the next day strangled by commaundement of him, which so greatly honored him, & without iust cause did him to a death so cruell. Contrariwise Argon the *Tartarian*, entring armes against his vncle Tangodor Caui, when he was vpon the point to lose his life for his rebellion, and was conueyed into *Armenia* to be executed there, was relieued by certain *Tartarians* the houshold seruaūtes of his dead vncle, and afterwards proclaimed King of *Tartarie* about the yere. 1285. The example of the Empresse Adaleda is of no lesse credit than the former, who being fallen into the hands of Beranger the vsurper of the Empire, escaped his fury and cruelty by flight, & in the end maried to Otho the first, saw hir wrong reuenged vpō Beranger and al his race by hir sonne Otho the second. I aduouch these histories to proue the mobility of fortune, & the chaunge of worldly chances, to the end you may see that the very same miserie which followed Charles Montanine, hoisted him aloft again, & when he loked for least succor, he saw deliuerance at hād. Now to prose-

cute

ture our history, know ye ẏ while Salimbene by little & litle pined for loue of Angelica, wherof she was ignorãt & careles, and albeit she curteously rendred health to him, when somtime in his amorous fit he beheld hir at a window, yet for al ẏ she neuer gessed the thoughts of hir louing enimy. During these haps it chaũced ẏ a rich citizen of *Siena*, hauing a ferme adioyning to the lãds of Montanine, desirous to encrease his patrimonie, & annexe the same vnto his owne, and knowing ẏ the yong gentleman wanted many things, moued him to sel his inheritaunce, offring him for it in redy mony, a M. Ducates, Charles which of all the wealth & substaunce left him by his auncester, had no more remaining but that countrey ferme, & a Palace in the Citie (so ẏ rich *Italians* of eche city, terme their houses,) and with ẏ litle lived honestly, & maintained his sister so wel as he could, refused flatly to dispossesse himselfe of ẏ porcion, which renewed vnto him ẏ happy memory of those ẏ had ben the chief of al the cõmon wealth. The couetous wretch seing himself frustrate of his pray, conceiued such rancor against Montanine, as he purposed by right or wrõg to make him not only to forfait ẏ same, but also to lose his life, following ẏ wicked desire of tirannous Iesabel, that made Naboth to be stoned to death, to extorte and wrongfully get his vineyarde. About that time for the quarels & cõmon discordes raigning throughout *Italy*, ẏ nobilitie were not assured of safety in their countreis, but rather the cõmon sort, & rascall nũber, were ẏ chief rulers and gouerners of the cõmon wealth, whereby ẏ greatest part of the nobilitie, or those of best authoritie being banished, the villanous band, and grosest kind of common people made a law (like to the *Athenians* in ẏ time of Solon) that all persons of what degree & cõditiõ so euer they were, which practized by himself or other

meanes the reestablishing or reuocation of such as were banished out of their Citie, should lose & forfaite the sum of M. Florens, and hauing not wherewith to pay the condempnation, their heade should remaine for gage. A law no dout very iust and righteous, scenting rather of the barbarous cruelty of the *Gothes* and *Vandals*, than of true christians, stopping the retire of innocents exiled for particular quarels of Citizens incited one against another, and rigorously rewarding mercy and curtesie, with execution of cruelty incomparable.

This citizen then purposed to accuse Montanine for offending against the lawe, bicause otherwise he could not purchase his entent, and the same was easy inough for him to compasse, by reason of his authority and estimation in the Citie: for the enditement and plea was no sooner red and giuen, but a number of post knights appeared to depose against ỳ poore gentleman, to beare witnesse that he had trespassed the lawes of the Countrey, and had sought meanes to introduce the banished, with intent to kill the gouerners, and to place in state those factious, that were the cause of the *Italian* troubles. The miserable gentleman knew not what to do, ne how to defend himself. There were against him the Pope & the .vij. starres, the state of the Citie, the Prouost and Iudge of the court, the witnesses that gaue euidence, and the law which condemned him. He was sent to prison, sentence was pronounced against him with such expedition, as he had no leisure to consider his affaires. There was no man, for feare to incurre the displeasures of the Magistrates, that durst opẽ his mouth to speake or make sute for his deliueraunce. Like as ỳ most part of friends in these dayes resembling ỳ crow, that flieth not but after carrion to gorge his rauenous crop, and such friends doe visite the house of the friend but

but for profit, reuerencing him so long as he is in prosperitie, according to the *Poets* complaint.

Like as the pureſt golde in fiery flame is tried,
Euen ſo is faith of friends in hard eſtate deſcried.
If hard miſchap doth thee affray,
Eche of thy friends do flee away,
And he which erſt full friendly ſemde to thee,
A friend no more to thy pore ſtate is hee.

And ſimple wights ought not to be afraid, and think amiſſe if friends doe flée away, ſith Princes and great Lords incurre ſuch hap and fortune. The great leader of the *Romaine* armies, Pompeius, the honor of the people and ſenate of *Rome*, what companion had he to flée with him? Which of his auncient friends toke paine to reſcue and deliuer him from his enimies handes which did purſue him? A king of *Egipt* which had knowne and found this good *Romane* Prince a kinde & gentle frend, was he that killed him, and ſent his head to his Victor and vnſatiable gredie gutte Iulius Cæſar, falſifying his promiſed faith, and forgetting his receiued pleaſures. Amongs all the comfortes which this pore *Siena* Gentleman found, although but a curſſed traitor, was this vnfaithfull and peſtiferous Camæleon, who came and offred him all the pleaſure and kindeneſſe he was able to do. But ỹ varlet attended conuenient time to make him taſte his poiſon, and to let him ſée by effecte, how daũgerous a thing it is to be ill neighbored, hoping after the condempnation of Montanine, he ſhould at pleaſure purchaſe the Lordſhip, after which with ſo open mouth he gaped. Ouer whome he had his will: for two or thrée dayes after the recitall of the enditement, and giuing of the euidence, Charles was condempned, & his fine ſelled at M. Florins to be paid within .xv. dayes, until which time to remaine in priſon. And for default

of ſuche paiment to loſe his head, becauſe he had infrin-
ged the lawes, and broken the ſtatutes of the Senate.
This ſentence was very difficult for poore Montanine
to digeſt, who ſaw all his goods like to be deſpoiled and
confiſcate, cõplaining ſpecially the fortune of fair An-
gelica his ſiſter, which all the time of the impriſonment
of hir deare brother, neuer went out of ỹ houſe, ne ceaſ-
ed to wepe & lament the hard fortune wherinto their
" family was like to fal by ỹ new miſchaũce: Alas (ſaid ỹ
" fair curteous damſel) wil ỹ heauens neuer be appeaſed
" but continually extẽd their wrath vpon ỹ deplored fa-
" mily, & ſhal our miſſehaps neuer ceaſe? Had it not bene
" more tollerable for our cõſumed bloud, ỹ the diſſentiõs
" paſt, had ben tried by dent of ſword, than to ſée ỹ preſit
" innocency of ỹ yong gentleman my brother in daũger
" to be guiltleſly accuſed & put to death, through ỹ vnju-
" ſtice of thoſe, which bear mortal malice to noble bloud,
" & glory in deprauation of the whole remẽbraũce of the
" ſame? O dampnable ſtate ỹ muſt hale the guiltleſſe to
" the gibet & irreuocable iugemẽt of thoſe iudges remai-
" ning in a city, which men cal frée, albeit a cõfuſed mul-
" titude hath ỹ vpper hãd, & may ſo be, ỹ nature hath pro-
" duced them to tread vnder fote noble wights for their
" offenſes. Ah deare brother, I ſée wel what is ỹ cauſe, if
" thou hadſt not that little Lordſhip in the Countrey, &
" ſtately houſe in the city, no mã wold haue enuied thine
" eſtate, or could haue charged thée wt any crime, which I
" wold to God, thou hadſt not only enterpriſed, but alſo
" brought to paſſe, to the intent thou mightſt haue bene
" reuenged of ỹ wrong, which theſe cankred carles ordi-
" narily doe vnto thy Noble bloud. But what reaſon is
" it that marchants & artificers, or the ſonnes of villains
" ſhuld rule a cõmon wealth? O happy Countreis where
" kings giue lawes, & Princes ſée by proued ſight, thoſe
" perſons which reſemble them, & in their places bear ỹ

ſway.

sway. And O vnhappy we, ý be ý slaues of a wailwarde
state, peruerted by corruption. Why did our predeces-
sors mind to stablish any liberty at al, to thrust ý same
into the confused gouernement of the commons of our
countrey? We haue stil the Frenchmen at our taile, or
ý people of our highest bishop, or else those crafty Flo-
rentines, we be the cõmon pray of al those ý list to folow
the haunt, and that which is our extremest misery, we
make our selues ý very slaues of them, ý of right ought
to be reputed ý vilest amongs vs all. Ah dere brother, ý
thy wretched time is come, the only hope of our decaied
family. Thou hadst neuer bene cõmitted to warde, had
not thy false assured foes bene sure of witnesse to con-
dempne thæ. Ah ý my life might raunsome thine, & re-
deme again thine estate & succor, thou shouldest be sure
ý forthwith Angelica wold prepare hirself to be ý praie
of those hungry rauening wolues, which bleat and bel-
low after thy lands & life. While this faire damsell of
Siena in this sort did torment hir self, pore Montanine
sæing ý he was brought to the last extremitie of his de-
sired hope, as eche man naturally doth sæke meanes to
prolong his life, knowing ý all other help failed for his
deliueraunce, except he sold his land, aswel to satisfy ý
fine, as to preuaile in the rest of his affaires, sent one of
the gailers to ý worshipful vsurer the cause of his cala-
mitie, to offer him his land for ý price and sum of a M.
Ducates. The pernicious & traiterous villain sæing ý
Montanine was at his mercy, & stode in the water vp
to the very throte, and knew no more what to do, as if
already he had triumphed of his life and lande so great-
ly coueted, answered him in this manner: My friend,
thou shalt say to Charles Montanine, that not long agoe
I would willingly haue giuen him a good sum of mo-
ney for his ferme, but sithens that time I haue imploy-
ed my money to some better profit: and albeit I was

in:

in minde to buy it, I wold be loth to giue aboue. iij.C. Flozins, being assured ỳ it can not be so cõmodious, as my money is able to bring yerely gain into my purse.

Se how Auarice is the pickpurse of secrete and hidden gaine, & the very whirlepoole of honestie & conscience, coueting nought else but by vnrighteous pray of other mennes goods, to accumulate and heap togither. The aboundance wherof bringeth no greater good boy vnto the gluttonous owner, but rather the minde of such is more miserable, and carieth therewithall more decrease of quiet, than increase of filthy muck. The couetous mã beareth no loue but to his treasure, nor exerciseth charitie but vpon his coafers, who thã he wold be dispossessed thereof, had rather sell the life of his natural father. This detestable villain hauing somtime offred M. Ducates to Charles for his enheritaunce, will now do so no more, aspiring the totall ruine of ỳ Montanine familie. Charles aduertised of his minde, and amazed for the Counsels decrée, wel saw that all things contraried his hope and expectation, and that he must néedes die to satisfie the excessiue and couetous lust of that Cormerant, whose malice he knew to be so vehement, as none durst offer him money, by reason of the vnhappy desire of this neuer cõtented varlet: for which consideration throughly resolued to die, rather than to leaue his poore sister helpelesse, and without relief, and rather than he would agrée to the bargaine tending to his so great losse and disaduauntage, and to the tirannous dealing of the wicked tormentor of his life, seing also that all meanes to purge and auerre his innocencie, was taken from him, the finall decrée of the iudges being alreadỳ passed, he began to dispose himself to repentaunce and saluation of his soule, making cõplaint of his misehapsin this maner.

To

TO what hath not the heauens hatefull bin,
Since for the eaſe of man they weaue ſuch woe?
By diuers toiles they lap our corſes in
With cares and griefs, wheron our miſchiefs groe:
The bloudy hands and ſword of mortall foe,
Doe ſearch mine euill, and would deſtroy me quite,
Through heinous hate, and hatefull heaped ſpite.

Wherefore come not the fatall ſiſters three,
That drawe the line of life and death by right?
Come furies all, and make an end of me,
For from the world, my ſprite would take his flight.
Why comes not nowe fowle Gorgon full in ſight,
And Typhons head, that depe in hell remaines?
For to torment the ſilly ſoules in paines?

It better were for me to feele your force,
Than this miſehap of murdring enuies rage,
By curſſed meanes and fall vpon my corſe,
And worke my ruine amid my flouring age:
For if I were diſpatchde in this deſire,
The feare were gone, of blacke infernall fire.

O Gods of ſeas, and cauſe of bluſtring winde,
Thou Æolus and Neptune to I ſay,
Why did you let my Barke ſuch fortune finde
That ſafe to ſhore I came by any way?
Why brake ye not, againſt ſome rocke or bay,
The kele, the ſterne, or elſe blew downe the maſt,
By whoſe large ſailes, through ſurging ſeas I paſt?

Had thoſe things hapt, I had not ſene this houre,
The houſe of dole, where wofull ſprites complaine,
Nor vſerers on me had vſde ſuch power,

Nor I had sine depainted in disdayne,
The God of care, with whom dead Ghosts remayne,
Who howles and skrekes in holow trees and holes,
Where Charon raignes, among condemned soules.

Ah, ah, since happe wil worke my wretched end,
And that my ruine by indgement is detreed:
Why doth not happe such happy fortune send,
That I may lead with me the man in dede,
That staind his faith, and fuild me at my need,
For gaine of golde, as vsurers do God knowes,
Who cannot spare the dropping of their nose?

I should haue slaine the slaue that serv'd me so,
Oh God forbid, my hands were brued in blood.
Should I desire the harme of friend or foe?
Nay better were to wish mine en'my good:
For if my death I throughly vnderstood,
I should make short the course I haue to run,
Since rest is got, when worldly toile is done.

Alas, alas, my chiefest way is this,
A guiltlesse death to suffer as I can,
So shall my soule be sure of heauens blisse,
And good renoume shall rest behinde me than,
And body shall take end where it began,
And fame shall flie before me, ere I flit
Vnto the Gods, where Ioue in throne doth sit.

O God conuert, from vice to vertue now,
The heart of him that falseth faith with me,
And chaunge his minde, and mend his maners throw,
That he his fault and fowle offense may see,
For death shall make my fame immortall bee:

And whiles the Sunne which in the heauens doth ſhine,
The ſhame is his, and honor ſhall be mine.

Alas I mourne not for my ſelfe alone,
Nor for the fame of my forefathers olde,
Tys Angelike, that cauſeth me to mone,
Tys ſhe that filles my breſt with fanſies colde,
Tys ſhe more worth, than was the ſlice of golde,
That moues my minde, and bredes ſuch paſſions ſtraunge,
As in my ſelf I feele a wondrous chaunge.

Haue pitie Lord of hir and me this day,
Since deſtny thus hath ſundred vs in ſpite,
O ſuffer not hir vertues to decay,
But let hir take in friendſhip ſuch delite,
That from hir breſt all vice be baniſht quite.
And let hir like, as did hir noble race
When I pore man am dead, and out of place.

Alas my hand would wryte theſe wofull lines,
That feble ſprite denies for want of might,
Wherfore my heart in breſt conſumes and pines,
With depe deſires, that far is from mannes ſight,
But God he ſees mine innocencie and right,
And knowes the cauſe of mine accuſer ſtill,
Who ſekes my bloud to haue on me his will.

Whē Charles thus cōplained himſelf, and thoroughly was determined to die, great pitie it was to ſée howe fair Angelica did rent hir face, & teare hir golden locks, when ſhe ſaw howe impoſſible it was to ſaue hir obſtinate brother from the cruel ſentence pronounced vpon him, for whom ſhe had imployed all hir wits and faire ſpeach, to perſuade the neereſt of hir kin to make ſute. Thus reſted ſhe alone ful of ſuch heauineſſe & veration as they cā think which ſée thēſelues depriued of things

ȳ they eſteeme moſt dear. But of one thing I cā wel aſ-
ſure you, ȳ if ill foꝛtune had permitted ȳ Charles ſhould
haue ben put to death, the gentle damſell alſo had bꝛea-
thed foꝛth the finall gaſpe of hir ſoꝛowfull life, yelding
therwithal the laſt end of the Montanine race & family.
What boteth it to holde pꝛoceſſe of long diſcourſe? Be-
holde the laſt day is come deferred by the iudges, wher-
vpon he muſt either ſatiſfie the fine, oꝛ die the nexꝛt day
after like a rebel and traitoꝛ againſt the ſtate, without
any of his kin making ſute oꝛ mean foꝛ his deliuerāce:
albeit they viſited the faire maiden, and cōfoꝛted hir in
that hir wꝛetched ſtate, inſtructing hir howe ſhe ſhould
gouerne hir ſelf pacientlȳ to ſuffer things remedileſſe.
Angelica accōpanied with hir kin, & the maidens dwel-
ling by that were hir companiōs, made the aire to reſō
with outcries & waimēntings, and ſhe hir ſelf exclaimed
like a womā deſtraught of wits, whoſe plaints ȳ mul-
titude aſſiſted with like eiulations & outcries, wailing
the foꝛtune of the yong gentleman, & ſoꝛoꝛfull to ſe ȳ
maiden in daunger to fall into ſome miſſehap. As theſe
things were thus bewailed, it chaunced about .ix. of the
clocke at night, that Anſelmo Salimbene, be whome we
haue ſayd to be ſurpꝛiſed with the loue of Angelica, re-
turning out of the Countrey, where he had remained
foꝛ a certaine time, and paſſing beforꝛe the houſe of his
Ladie, accoꝛding to his cuſtome, heard the voice of wo-
men & maidens which mourned foꝛ Montanine, & ther-
withal ſtayd: the chiefeſt cauſe of his ſtay was, foꝛ that
he ſaw go foꝛth out of the palace of his Angelica, diuers
women making mone & lamentation: wherfoꝛe he de-
maūded of ȳ neighboꝛs what noiſe that was, & whether
any in thoſe quarters were dead oꝛ no. To whom they
declared at length, all that which ye haue heard beforꝛe.
Salimbene hearing this ſtoꝛy, went home to his houſe, &

being

being secretly entred into his chãber, begã to discourse with himself vpon that accident, and fantasying a thousand things in his head, in the ende thought that Charles shold not so be cast away, wer he iustly or innocently condemned, and for the only respect of his sister, that she might not be left destitute of all the gwdes and inheritance. Thus discoursing diuers things, at length he sayd: I were a very simple person now to rest in dout, sith Fortune is more curious of my felicitie than I could wish, and seketh the effecte of my desires, when lest of all I thought vpon them. For behold, Montanine alone is left of al ẏ mortal enimies of our house, which to morow openly shall lose his head like a rebell & seditious person, vpon whose auncestors in him shall I bée reuenged, and the quarell betwene our two families, shall take ende, hauing no more cause to feare renuing of discorde, by any that can descend from him. And who shall let me then from inioying hir, whom I do loue, hir brother being dead, and his gwdes confiscate to the seignorie, and she without all maintenance and relief, except the aide of hir onely beautie and curtesie? What maintenance shall she haue, if not by the loue of some honest Gentleman, that for his pleasure may support hir, and haue pitie vpon the losse of so excellent beautie? Ah Salimbene, what hast thou sayd? Hast thou alreadie forgotten that a Gentleman for that only cause is esteemed aboue all other, whose glorious faces oughte to shine before the brightnesse of those that force themselues to folow vertue? Art not thou a Gentleman borne and bredde in noble house, sued from the loines of gentle and noble parents? Is it ignorant vnto thée, that it pertaineth vnto a noble and gentle hearte, to reuenge receiued iniuries himself, without seking aide of other, or else to pardon them by vsing clemencie and princely

" curteſie, burying all deſire of vengeaunce vnder the
" tombe of eternall oblivion? And what greater glorie
" can man acquire, than by vanquiſhing himſelf, and cha-
" ſtiſing his affections and rage, to bynde him whiche ne-
" uer thought to receiue pleaſure or benefite at his hande?
" It is a thing which excedeth the cõmon order of nature,
" and ſo it is mete and requiſite, that the moſt excellent
" do make the effects of their excellencie appeare, and
" ſeeke meanes for the immortalitie of their remembrãce.
" The great Dictator Cæſar was more praiſed for parde-
" ning his enimies, and for ſhewing him ſelfe curteous
" and eaſie to be ſpoken to, than for ſubduing the braue
" and valiant Galles and Britons, or vanquiſhing the migh-
" tie Pompee. Dom Roderico Viuario, the Spaniard, al-
" though he might haue ben reuenged vpon Dom Pietro,
" king of *Aragon*, for his infidelitie, becauſe he went a-
" bout to hinder his voyage againſt the Saracens at *Gre-*
" *nado*, yet wold not puniſhe or raunſom him, but taking
" him priſoner in the warres, ſuffered him to go without
" any tribute, or any exaction of him and his realme. The
" more I folowe the example of mightie perſonages in
" things that be good, the more notorious and wonderful
" ſhal I make my ſelf in their rare and noble deedes. And
" not willing to forget a wrong done vnto me, wherein
" may I cõplain of Montanine? what thing hath he euer
" done againſt me or mine? And albeit his predeceſſors
" were enimies to our familie, they haue therfore borne
" the penance, more hard than the ſin deſerued. And truly
" I ſhold be afrayd, that God wold ſuffer me to tũble into
" ſome miſhap, if ſeeing one afflicted, I ſhold reioyſe in his
" affliction, & take by his decay an argument of ioy & ple-
" ſure. No no, Salimbene is not of minde, that ſuch fond i-
" magination ſhould bereue god will to make himſelfe a
" friend, & to gaine by liberalitie & curteſie hir, which for

hir

hir only vertue deserueth a greater lord than I. Being
assured, that there is no man (except he were dispoiled
of al good nature & humanitie) specially bering the loue
to Angelica, that I do, but he woulde be sory to see hir in
such heauinesse and dispaire, & wold attempt to deliuer
hir from such dolorous griefe. For if I loue hir as I do in
dede, must not I likewise loue al that which she earnest
ly loueth, as him that is now in daunger of death for a
simple fine of a thousand Florens. That my heart doe
make appere what the loue is, which maketh me tribu-
tarie and subiect to faire Angelica, & that eche man may
know, that furious loue hath vanquisht kings & greate
monarches, it behoueth not me to be abashed, if I which
am a man & subiect tapalliõs, so wel as other, do submit
my self to the seruice of hir, who I am assured is so ver-
tuous as euẽ very necessitie cannot force hir to forget ẏ
house, wherof she toke hir originall. Vaunt thy self then
O Angelica to haue forced a heart of it selfe impregna-
ble, & giuen him a wound which the stoutest lads, might
soner haue deprined of life, than put him out of ẏ way
of his gentle kind: And thou Montanine, thinke, that if
thou wilte thy selfe, thou wynnest to day so heartie a
friende, as onely death shall separate the vnion of vs
twaine, and of all our posteritie. It is I, nay it is I my
selfe, that shall excell thée in duetie, poynting the way
for the wyseste, to get honor, and violently compell the
moued myndes of those that be oure aduersaries, desi-
ring rather vainly to forgo mine owne life, than to giue
ouer the vertuous conceipts, whiche be alreadie grif-
ted in my minde. After this long discourse seing that
the tyme required diligence, he toke a thousande Du-
cates, and went to the Treasurer of the fines, deputed
by the state, whom he fonnd in his office, and said vnto
him: I haue brought you sir, the Thousand Ducates,

which

" which Charles Montanine is bounde to pay for his ran-
" uerance. Tell them, and giue hym an acquittance that
" presently he may come forth. The Treasorer would
haue giuen him the rest, that exceded the summe of a
Thousand Florens: but Salimbene refused the same,
and receiuing a letter for his discharge, he sent one of
his seruants therwithall to the chiefe Gailer, who see-
ing that the summe of his condemnation was payd, im-
mediatly deliuered Montanine out of the prison where
he was fast shutte, and fettred with great and weighty
gines. Charles thinkyng that some Frier had ben come
to confesse hym, and that they had shewed hymself
mercy to do him to death in prison, that abyde in open
shame of the world he might not deface the noble house
wherof he came, was at the first sight astonned, but hau-
ing prepared himself to die, prayed God, and besought
him to vouchsafe not to forget hym in ỹ sorowfull pas-
sage, wherin the stoutest and corragious many times be
faint & inconstant. He recõmended his soule, he prayed
forgiuenesse of his sinnes: and aboue all, he humbly be-
sought the godnesse of God, that it would please him
to haue pitie vpon his sister, and to deliuer hir from all
infamie and dishonor. When he was caried out of the
Gayle, and brought before the chiefe Gailer, sodainly
his gines were discharged from his legs, & euery of the
standers by loked merily vpon hym, without speaking
any worde that might affray him. That Curtesie vnlo-
ked for, made hym attende some better thing, and assu-
red him of that which before by any meanes he durst not
thinke. And his expectation was not deceiued. For the
" Gailer sayd vnto him: Be of good cheere sir, for beholde
" the letters of your discharge, wherfore you may go at
" libertie whether you list. In saying so, he opened the pri-
" son, and licensed Montanine to depart, praying him not

to take

to take in yl part his intreatie and hard imprisonment, for that he durst doe none other, the state of the Citie hauing so enioyned him. May not eche wight now beholde how that the euents of loue be diuers from other passions of minde? How could Salimbene haue so charitably deliuered Montanine, the hatred beyng so long time rated betweene the two houses, if some greate occasiõ which hath no name in Loue, had not altred his nature, and extinguished his affection? It is meritorious to succour them whome we neuer saw before, sith nature moueth vs to doe well to them that be like our selues. But faith surmounteth there, where the very naturall inclination seeleth it selfe constrained, and seeth that to be broken, which obstinately was purposed to be kept in minde. The graces, gentlenesse, beautie, mild behauiour and allurement of Angelica, had greater force ouer Salimbene, than the humilitie of his brother, although he had kneeled a hundred times before hym. But what heart is so brute, but may be made tractable and mylde, by the contemplation of a thing so rare, as the excellent beautie of that *Siena* maiden, and would not humble it selfe to acquire the good graces of so perfect a damsel? I wil neuer accuse man for being in loue with a faire and vertuous woman, nor estéeme hym a lame, which painefully serueth a sobre maiden, whose heart is fraught with honest affections, and mind with desire tending to good ende. Well worthie of blame is he to be deemed which is in loue with the outward hew, and praiseth the tree onely laden with floures, without regard to the fruit, which maketh it worthy of cõmendation. The yong maiden muste needes resemble the floure of the spryng time, vntill by hir constancie, modestie, and chastitie, she hath vanquished the concupiscents of the flesh, and brought forth the hoped fruite of

a vertue and chastitie, not common. Otherwyse, his shall be like the inrolled souldier, whose valiance his only minde doth witnesse, & the offer which he maketh to him that dothe register his name in ỹ muster bokes. But whē the effect of seruice is ioyned with his attēpt, and prowse belieth not his promise, then the captain imbraceth him, and aduanceth him, as a glasse for his affaires frō that time forth. The like of dames hauing passed the assaults and resisted the attempts of their assaylants which be honest, not by force being not required, but inclined by their owne nature, and the diligence of their chast and inuincible heart. But returne we again vnto our purpose, Montanine, when he was delinered, forthwith went home to his house, to comfort hir, whō he was more than sure to be in great distresse and heauinesse for his sake, and which had so much nēde of cōfort as he had, to take his rest. Ye came to ỹ gate of his pallace (where beeing knowne that it was Montanine) his sister by any meanes coulde not be made to beleue the same: so impossible seeme things vnto vs, which we most desire. They were all in doubte like as we reade that they were, when *S. Peter* escaped *Herods* prison by the Angels meanes.

When Angelica was assured that it was hir brother, sobbes were layde aside, sighes were cast away, and heuie wēpings conuerted into teares of ioy, she went to imbrace and kisse hir brother, praising God for his deliuerance, and making accompt that he had ben raised frō death to life, considering his stoutnesse of mind, rather bent to die than to forgo his lande, for so small a price. The dames that wer kin vnto him, and taried there in companie of the maiden half in dispaire, lest by dispaire and furie she might fall into outrage, therby to put hir life in peril, with al expedition aduertised their husbāds

of

of Montanines libertie, not loked for, who repaired thither, as wel to reioyce with him in his ioy and good fortune, as to make their excuse, for that they had not trauailed to ryd him from that miserie. Charles which cared nothing at all for those mouth blessings, dissembled what he thought, thanking them neuertheless for their visitation and good remẽbrance they had of him, for visiting & cõforting his sister, which honor he esteemed no lesse than if they had imployed the same vpon his owne person. Their friends & kinsfolk being departed, & assured ỹ none of them had payde his ransom, he was wonderfully astonned, & the greater was his grief for that he coulde not tel what he was, which without request, had made so gentle a proffe of his liberalitie: if he knew nothing, farre more ignorant was his sister, forsomuch as she did thinke, that he had chaunged his minde, & that the horrour of death had made him sell his countrey inheritance, to him which made the first offer to buie the same: but either of them deceined of their thought went to bed. Montanine rested not all the night, hauing still before his eyes, the vnknowne image of him that had deliuered him. His bed serued his turne to none other purpose, but as a large fielde or some long alley within a wodde, for walkes to make discourse of his myndes conceipts, sometymes remembring one, somtimes another, without hitting the blanke and namyng of hym that was his deliuerer, vnto whome he confessed himselfe to owe hys seruice and duetie so long as hée lyued. And bycause hée saw the day beginne to appeare, and that the morning, the Vauntcurrour of the day, summoned Appollo to harnesse hys horsse to begynne his course in our *Hemisphere*, he rose and went to the Chamberlain or treasurer, such as was deputed for receit of the Fines, sessed by the State, whom he saluted,

and receiuing lyke salutation, he prayed him to shewe him so much pleasure, as to tell him the parties name, that was so liberall to satisfie his fine due in the Escheq-
" quer of the State. To whom the other answered: None
" other hath caused thy deliuerance (O Montanine) but a
" certaine person of the worlde, whose name thou mayst
" easily gesse, to whome I gaue an acquittance of thyne
" imprisonment, but not of the iuste summe, because he
" gaue me a thousand Ducates for a thousande Florens,
" and woulde not receiue the ouerplus of the debt, which
" I am readie to deliuer thee with thine acquittaunce. I
" haue not to doe with the money (sayd Charles) onely I
" pray you to tel me the name of him ẏ hath done me this
" great curtesie, that hereafter I may acknowledge hym
" to be my friende. It is sayd the Chamberlain) Anselmo
" Salimbene, who is to be commended and praised aboue
" all thy parents and kinne, and came hither very late to
" bring the money, the surplusage wherof, behold here it
" is. God forbid (sayd Montanine) that I should take away
" that, which so happily was brought hither to rid me out
" of paine: and so wēt away with his acquittāce, his mind charged with a nūbre of fancies for the fact done by Salimbene. Being at home at his house, he was long time stayed in a deepe consideration, desirous to knowe the cause of that gentle parte, proceēding from him whose whose parentes and auncestors were the capitall enimies of his race. In the end like one risyng from a soūd sleepe, he called to minde, that very many times he had seene Anselmo with attentiue eye and fired loke to beholde Angelica, and in eying hir very louingly, he passed euery day (before their gate) not shewing other countenaunce, but of good will, and with friendely gesture, rather than enimies face, saluting Angelica at all tymes when he met hir. Wherfore Montanine was assured,

red, that the onely loue of Salimbene towards his ſiſter had cauſed that deliueraunce, concluding that when the paſſion doth proceede of good loue, ſeazed in gentle heart and of noble enterpriſe, it is impoſſible but it muſte bring forth the maruellous effectes of vertues gallantiſe, of honeſtie and curteſie, and that the ſpirite well borne, can not ſo muche hide his gentle nourture, but the fire muſt flame abrode, and that which ſeemeth difficult to be brought to paſſe, is facilitie, and made poſſible by the conceipts and indeuors ſo wel imployed, and not common to a minde that is not ſeuered from villanie: wherfore in the ende not to be ſurmounted in honeſtie, ne yet to beare the marke of one, that vnthankfully accepted good turnes, he determined to vſe a great prodigalitie vpon him, that vnder the name of foe, had ſhewed himſelfe a more faithful friend, than thoſe that bare good face, and at neede were furtheſt off from afflicted Montanine, who not knowing what preſēt to make to Salimbene, but of himſelfe and his ſiſter, purpoſed to impart his minde to Angelica, and then vpon knowlege of hir will to performe his intent. For which cauſe vnderſtāding that his gracious enimie was gone into the cōtrey, he thought wel to conſider of his determination, and to breake with hir in his abſence, the better to execute the ſame, vpon his next returne to the citie. He called Angelica aſide, and beyng bothe alone together, he vſed theſe or ſuch like wordes: You know deare ſiſter, that the higher is the fall, the more daungerous it » is, and greater griefe he feeleth that doth fall from high » than he that tumbleth downe from place more low and » of leſſer eſtēeneſſe. I ſpeake this, bicauſe I cal to mind » the condition, nobilitie, and excellēcie of our anceſters, » the glorie of our race, and riches of all our houſe, which » conſtraineth me many times to ſigh, & sheade a ſtreame »

" of teares, when I see the sumptuous palaces that were
" the homes and resting places of our fathers, and grand
" fathers, when I see on al parts of this Citie, the Armes,
" and scutcheons painted and imbossed, bearing the mark
" of the antiquitie of our house, and when I beholde the
" stately marble tombes and brasen monumentes, in di-
" uers our temples erected for perpetual memory of ma-
" ny knights and generalls of warres, that sorted forth
" the Montanine race: & chiefly I neuer enter this great
" palace, the remnant of our inheritãce and patrimonie,
" but the remembrance of our auncestors, so glaunceth
" ouer mine heart, as an hundred hundred times, I wish
" for death, to thinke that I am the post alone of the mi-
" serie and decay fallen vpon the name and famous fami-
" lie of the Montanines, which maketh me thinke our life
" to be vnhappie, being downe fallen from such felicitie,
" to feele a miserie moste extreme. But one thing alone
" ought to cõtent vs, that amid so great pouertie, yl luck,
" ruine & abasement, none is able to lay vnto our charge
" any thing vnworthie of the nobilitie & the house, wher-
" of we be descẽded, our life being conformable to the ge-
" nerositie of our predecessors, whereby it chaunceth, ỹ al-
" though our poore estate be generally knowne, yet none
" can affirme, that we haue forligned ỹ vertue of them,
" which vertuously haue lined in oure race. If so be we
" haue receiued plesure or benefit of any man, neuer dis-
" dained I with al duetie to acknowlege a good turne, fil
" shunning ỹ vice of ingratitude, to soile the reputation,
" wherin hitherto I haue passed my life. Is ther any blot
" which more spotteth the renoume of man, than not ac-
" knowledging receiued benefites and pleasures performed in
" oure necessitie? You knowe in what perill of death I
" was, these fewe dayes past, through their false surmise
" which neuer loued me, and howe almost miraculously I

was

was redemed out of the hangmãs hãds, & the cruel sen- »
tence of ỳ vnrighteous magistrate, not one of our kyn »
offring thẽselues in dede or word for my defense, which »
forceth me to saye, ỳ I haue felt of my kin, which I ne- »
uer thought, & haue tasted, such cõmoditie at his hãds, of »
whõ I neuer durst expect or hope for plesure, relief, aide »
or any cõfort. I attẽded my deliueraãce by sute of those, »
whõ I counted for kin & friends, but ỳ same so sone va- »
nished, as the necessitie & perill wer present. So pressed »
with wo, and forsaken of frẽds, I was affrayde that our »
aduersaries (to remoue all feare and suspition in tyme »
to come) would haue purchased my totall ruine, & pro- »
cured the ouerthrowe of the Montanines name, by my »
death, and approched end. But good God, from the place »
whereof I feared the dãger, the calme arose, which hath »
brought my bark to ỳ hauẽ of helth, & at his hãds where »
I attended ruine, I haue tasted affiãce & sustentation of »
mine honor & life. And plainly to procede, it is Anselmo »
Salimbene, the son of our ancient & capital enimes, that »
hath shewed himself the very loyal & faithfull friende of »
our familie, and hath deliuered your brother by paimẽt »
to ỳ State, the summe not of a thousand Florẽs, but of »
a thousand ducats to raũsom ỳ life of him, who thought »
him to be his most cruel aduersarie. O Gẽtlemãs heart »
in dede, & gentle minde, whose rare vertues do surpasse »
all humaine vnderstanding. Friendes vnited together »
in band of amitie, amaze the world by ỳ effects not vul- »
gar in things whiche they do one for an other. But this »
surmounteth all, a mortall enimy, not reconciled or re- »
quired, without demaũd of assuraãce for ỳ plesure, which »
he doth, payeth the debts of his aduersarie: which facte »
exceedeth al consideration to them, that discouer the fa- »
ces of men. I can not tell what name to attribute to »
the dede of Salimbene, and what I ought to call that »

his cur-

" his curtesie, but this must I nedes protest, that the ex-
" ample of his honestie and gentlenesse is of suche force,
" and so much hath vanquished me, as whether I shal die
" in paine, or line at ease, neuer am I able to excede his
" liberalitie. Now my life beyng ingaged for that which
" he hath done to me, and he hauyng delinered the same
" from infamous death, it is in your handes (deare sister)
" to do the deuise imagined in my minde, to the intent
" that I may be onely bounde to you for satisfiyng the li-
" beralitie of Salimbene, by meanes whereof, you which
" wept the death and wailed the lost libertie of your bro-
" ther, doe see me free, and in safetie, hauyng none other
" care but to be acquited of hym, to whom both you and
" I be derely bound. Angelica hearing hir brother speake
those words, and knowing that Salimbene was he, that
had surpassed all their kinne in amitie and comforte of
" their familie, answered hir brother, saying: I wold ne-
" uer haue thought (good brother) that your deliverance
" had come to passe by hym whose name euen nowe you
" tolde, and that our enimies breaking all remembrance
" of auncient quarels, had care of the health and conser-
" uation of the Montanines. Wherefore if it were in my
" power I would satisfie the curtesie and gentlenesse of
" Anselmo, but I know not whiche way to begin ẏ same,
" I being a mayde that knoweth not how to recompense
" a good turne, but by acknowledging the same in heart:
" and to go to render thanks, it is neither lawful or com-
" ly for me, and much lesse to offer him any thing, for the
" little accesse I haue to his house, and the small familia-
" ritie I haue with the Gentlewomen of his kinne. Not-
" withstanding brother, consider you wherin my power
" resteth to aide and help you, and be assured (mine honor
" saued) I will spare nothing for your contentation. Si-
" ster (sayd Montanine) I haue of long time debated with

my

my self what is to be done, and deuised what might be
the occasion that moued this yong Gentleman to vse
so great kindnesse towarde me, and hauing diligently
pondred and wayed what I haue seene and knowne, at
length I found ỳ it was the onely force of loue, which
constrained his affection, and altered the auncient ha-
tred that he bare vs, into new loue, that by no meanes
can be quenched. It is the couert fier which loue hath
kindled in his intrailes, it is loue which hath raised the
true effects of gentlenesse, and hath consumed the con-
ceites of displeased minde. O the great force of that a-
morous alteration, which vpon the sodaine exchaunge,
seemeth impossible to receiue any more change or mu-
tacion. The onely beautie and god grace of you sister,
hath induced our gracious enimy, the seruaunt of your
perfections, to deliuer the poore Gentleman forlorne of
all god fortune. It is the honest life and commendable
behauioure of Angelica Montanine, which haue incited
Anselmo to doe an acte so praise worthy, and a deede so
kinde, to procure the deliueraunce of one, which loked
not for a chaunce of so great consequence. Ah Gentle
yong Gentleman, Ah Princely minde, and heart noble
and magnanimous. Alas how shall it be possible that
euer I can approche the honest liberalitie wherewith
thou hast bound me for euer? My life is thine, mine
honoure dependeth of thee, my goodes be tied to thee.
What resteth then? if not that you (sister) voide of cru-
eltie do vse no vnkindnesse to him that loueth you, and
who for loue of you hath prodigally offred his owne
gods to rid me from pain and dishonor? If so be, my life
and saueguarde haue bene acceptable vnto thee, and the
sight of me discharged from prise was ioyful vnto thee,
if thou gauest thy willing consent that I should sel my
patrimony, graunt presently that I may with a great,

" rare, & precious present, requite the goodnesse, pleasure
" & curtesie that Salimbene hath done for your sake: And
" sith I am not able with goodes of fortune to satisfie his
" bountie, it is your person which may supply ỳ default,
" to the intent that you and I may be quitted of the Ob-
" ligation, wherin we stand bound vnto him. It behoueth
" that for the offer and rewarde of money which he hath
" imployed, we make present of your beauty, not selling
" the price of your chastitie, but deliuering the same in
" exchaunge of curtesie, being assured for his gentlenesse
" & good nouriture sake, he will vse you none otherwise,
" or vsurpe any greater authoritie ouer you, than vertue
" permitteth in eche gẽtle and noble heart. I haue none
" other meane of satisfaction, ne larger raunsom to ren-
" der frée my head frõ the tribute which Salimbene hath
" giuen for my life and libertie. Thinke (deare sister)
" what determinate answer you wil make me, and con-
" sider if my request be meete to be denyed. It is in your
" choise and pleasure to deny or consent to my demaund.
" If so be that I be refused and lose the meanes by your
" refuse to be acquited of my defender, I had rather for-
" sake my Citie and Countrey, than to liue here with
" ỳ name of ingratitude, for not acknowledging so great
" a pleasure. But alas, with what eye shall I dare behold
" the Nobilitie of *Siena*, if by great vnkindenesse I passe
" vnder silence the rarest friendship that euer was deui-
" sed? What heartes sorow shall I conceiue to be poin-
" ted at with the finger, like one that hath forgotten in
" acknowledging by effecte, the receiued pleasure of my
" deliueraunce? No (sister) either you must be the quiet
" of my minde, and the acquittaunce of vs bothe, or else
" must I die, or wander like a vagabonde into straunge
" Countreys, and neuer put foote againe into *Italy*. At

thole wordes Angelica ſtode ſo aſtonned and confuſed, and ſo beſides hir ſelfe, like as we ſée one diſtraught of ſenſe that féeleth himſelf attached with ſome amaze of the Palſey. In the end recouering hir ſpirites, and bebubbered all with teares, hir ſtomake panting like the Bellowes of a forge, ſhe anſweared hir brother in this maner: I know not louing brother, by reaſon of my troubled minde howe to anſwere your demaunde, which ſéemeth to be both right and wrong, right for reſpect of the bond, not ſo, in conſideration of the requeſt. But how I proue the ſame, and what reaſon I can alleage and diſcouer for that proofe, hearken me ſo patiently, as I haue reaſon to complaine and diſpute vpon this chaunce more hard and difficult to auoide, than by replie able to be defended, ſith that life and the hazarding thereof is nothing, in regarde of that which you will haue me to preſent with too exceeding prodigall liberalitie, and I would to God that life might ſatiſfie the ſame, then be ſure it ſhould ſo ſone be imployed, as the promiſe made thereof. Alas good God, I thought that when I ſawe my brother out of priſon, the neare diſtreſſe of death, wherunto vniuſtly he was throwne, I thought (I ſay) and firmely did beleue, that fortune the enimy of our ioy, had vomited al hir poiſon, and being deſpoiled of hir fury and crabbed nature had broke the bloudy and venemous arowes, wherewith ſo long time ſhe hath plaged our family, and that by reſting of hir ſelf: ſhe had giuen ſome reſt to the Montanine houſe of al their troubles & miſaduétures. But I (O miſerable wight) do ſée & féele howe far I am deuided from my hope, and deceiued of mine opinion, ſith ỳ furious ſtepdame, appereth before me wt a face more fierce & threatning, then euer ſhe did, ſharpening hir ſelfe againſt my youth in other ſorte, than euer againſt any of our race.

" If euer she persecuted our auncestors, if she brought
" them to ruine and decay, she now doth purpose wholly
" to subuert the same, and throw vs headlong into ẏ bot-
" tomlesse pit of all miserie, exterminating for all toge-
" ther, the remnaunt of our consumed house. We it either
" by losse of thée (good brother,) or the violent death of me
" which cannot hazard my chastitie for the price of mine
" vnhappie life: Ah good God, into what anguishe is my
" minde eroned, & how doe I fele the force and violence
" of frowarde fortune? But what speake I of fortune?
" How doth hard lucke insue, that is predestinated by the
" heauens vpon our race? Must I at so tender yeres, and
" of so feble kinde make choise of a thing, which woulde
" put the wisest vpon earth vnto their shifts? My heart
" doth faile me, reason wanteth and iudgement hangeth
" in ballaunce by continuall agitations, to se how I am
" driuen to the extremitie of two daungerous straits, &
" enuironned with fearefull ieoperdies, forcibly compel-
" led either to be deuided and separated frō thee (my bro-
" ther,) whome I loue aboue mine owne life, & in whom
" next after God I haue fixed and put my hope and trust,
" hauing none other solace, comfort and helpe, but thée, or
" else by keping thée, am forced to giue vnto another, &
" know not howe, ẏ precious treasure which being once
" lost, cānot be recouered by any meanes, & for the garde
" and conseruation wherof, euery woman of good iudge-
" ment that loueth vertue, ought a thousand times to of-
" fer hir self to death (if so many wayes she could) rather
" than to blot or soile that inestimable iewell of chasti-
" tie, wherewith our life is a true life: contrariwise she
" which fondly suffreth hir self to be dispeazed and spoiled
" of the same, & loseth it without honest title, albeit she
" be a liue, yet is she buried in the most obscure caue of
" death, hauing lost the honours which maketh Maidens

marche

marche with head vpright. But what goodnesse hath a
Ladie, gentlewoman, maiden or wife, wherein she can
glory, hir honor being in doubt, and reputation darke-
ned with infamie? Wherto serued the imperiall house
of Augustus, in those Ladies that were intituled with
the Emperours daughters, when for their villany, their
were vnworthy of the title of chaste and vertuous?
What profited Faustina the Emperiall crowne vpon
hir head, hir chastitie through hir abhominable life, be-
ing rapt and despoiled? What wrong hath bene done
to many simple women, for being buried in the tombs
of darke oblivion, which for their vertue and pudique
life, merited eternall praise? Ah Charles my brother
deare, where hast thou bestowed the eye of thy forese-
ing minde, that without foresight and care of the fame
due to the honest dames, and chast damosels of our fa-
mily, hauing lost the gods & fathers inheritaunce, wilt
haue me in like sort forgoe my chastitie, which hither-
to I haue kept with heedeful diligence. Wilt thou dear
brother by the price of my virginity, that Anselmo shal
haue greater victorie ouer vs, than he hathe gotten by
fight of sword vpon the allied remnaunt of our house?
Art thou ignorant that the wounds and diseases of the
minde, be more vehement than those which afflicte the
body? Ah I vnhappy maiden and what yll lucke is re-
serued for me, what destiny hath kept me till this day
to be presented for Venus Sacrifice, to satisfie a yong
mannes lust, which coueteth (peraduenture) but the
spoile of my virginitie? O happy the *Romane* maid, slain
by the proper hands of hir woefull father Virginius, that
she might not be soiled with infamie, by the letherous
embracements of rauenous Appius, which desired hir
acquaintaunce. Alas that my brother doe not so, rather
I would to God of his owne accord he be the infamous

" minister of my life, ready to be violated, if God by his
" grace take not my cause in hand? Alas death, why not
" thou not throwe against my heart thy most pearcing
" darte, that I may goe waite vpon the shadowes of my
" thrice happy parents, who knowing this my grief, will
" not be void of passion to help me waile my woful fate.
" O God why was not I choaked and strangled, so soone
" as I was taken forth the secrete imbracements of my
" mothers wombe, rather thã to arriue into this misha-
" that either must I lose the thing I deeme most deare, or
" die with the violence of my proper hands? Come death,
" come, and cut the vnhappy threede of my woefull life,
" stoppe the pace of teares with thy trenchant darte that
" streame outragiously downe my face, and close the bre-
" thing wind of sighs, which hinder thee from doing thine
" office vpon my heart, by suffocation of my life and it.
" When she had ended those words, hir speeche did faile,
" and waxing pale and faint, (sitting vpon hir stoole) she
" fared as though that very death had sitten in hir place.
" Charles thinking that his sister had bene deade, mated
" with sorow, and desirous to liue no longer after hir, see-
" ing he was the cause of that sowning, fell downe dead
" vpon the ground, mouing neither hand nor foote, as
" though the soule had bene departed from the bodie. At
" the noise which Montanine made by reason of his fall,
" Angelica reuined out of hir sown, and seing hir brother
" in so pitifull plight, and supposing he had bene dead for
" care of his request, for being bereaued of hir brother,
" was so moued, as a little thing wold haue made hir do,
" as Thisbe did, when she viewed Pyramus to be slaine.
" But conceiuing hope, she threw hir selfe vpon hir bro-
" ther, cursing hir fortune, banning the starres of cruel-
" ty, and hir lauish speeche, and hir self for hir litle loue to
" hir brother, who made no refusal to die to saue his land

for

hir relief of hir: wher she denyed to yeld hir self to him
ẏ loued hir with so good affection. In the end she applied
so many remedies vnto hir brother, sometimes casting
cold water vpon his face, sometimes pinching and rub-
bing the temples and pulses of his armes, & his mouth
with vineger, that she made him to come again: and see-
ing that his eyes were open, beholding hir intentiuely
with ẏ countenaunce of a man half in despaire, she said
vnto him: For so much brother as I see fortune to be so
froward, that by no meanes thou canst auoid the cruell
lot, which laũcheth me into the bottome of mortall mi-
sery, and that I must aduenture to folow the indeuors
of thy minde, and obey thy will, which is more gentle &
noble, than fraught with reason, I am content to satis-
fy the same, and the loue which hitherto thou hast born
me. Be of good chére, and doe with me & my body what
thou list, giue and present the same to whome thou plea-
sest. Wel be thou sure, that so sone as I shall be out of
thy hands and power, I wil be called vnfaithful vnto thine
no more, and thou shalt haue lesse authoritie to stay me
from doing the deuises of my fantasie, sweating & pro-
testing by the almighty God, that neuer mã shall touch
Angelica, except it be in mariage, and that if he assay to
passe any further, I haue a heart that shall incorage my
hãds to sacrifice my life to the chastitie of noble dames
which had rather die than line in slaũder of dishonestie.
I will die a body without defame, and the minde voide
of consent, shall receiue no shame or filth that can soile
or spot ẏ same. In saying so, she began againe to wéepe
in suche aboundance, as the humor of hir braine ranne
downe by the issue of bothe hir eyes. Montanine albeit
sorowfull beyõd measure to see his gentle & chast sister
in such veration & beastinesse, reioyced yet in his mind,
that

that she had agreed to his request, which presaged the good lucke that afterwardes chaunced unto him, for his liberall offer. Wherefore sayd he to Angelica, I was never in my life so desirous to live, but y I rather chose to die, than procure a thing that shold turne thee to displeasure and griefe, or to hazarde thine honor and reputation in daunger or perill of damage, which thou hast ever known, and shouldest have ful perceived by effect, or more properly to speake, touched with thy finger, if that incomparable and rare curtesie and liberalitie of Salimbene had not provoked me to require that, which honestly thou canst not give, nor I demaunde without wrong to thee, and prejudice to mine owne estimation and honoure. But what? the feare I have to be deemed ingrate, hath made me forget thee, and the great honestly of Anselmo maketh me hope, yea and stedfastly believe, that thou shalt receive none other displeasure, but to be presented unto him, whom at other times we have thought to be our most all enimy. And I thinke it impossible that he will use any villany to her, whom he so fervently loveth, for whose sake he feareth not the hatred of his freends, & disdained not to save him whom he hated, and on whome he might have bene revenged. And for so much after, as the face commonly sheweth the signe and token of the hearts affections, I pray thee by any meanes declare no sad countenance in the presence of Salimbene, but rather cheere up thy face, dry up the aboundance of thy teares, that he by seeing thee joyfull and merry, may be moved to continue his curtesie and use thee honestly, being satisfied with thy liberality, and the offer which I will make of our service.

Here may be seene the extremitie of two diuers things, duety combating with shame, reason being in contention with himself. Angelica knew and confessed

that

that hir brother did but his duetie, and that she was bound by ỹ same very bond. On the other side, hir estate and virginal chastitie, brake the endeuors of hir duety, and denyed to doe that which she estamed right. Neuertheleſſe she prepared hir ſelf to ſolow bothe the one and the other: and by acquiting the duetie to hir brother, she ordained the meane, to diſcharge him of that, which he was bound to his benefactor, determining neuertheleſſe rather to die, than ſhameſully to ſuffer hir ſelfe to be abuſed, or to make hir loſe the floure, which made hir gliſter amongs ỹ maidens of the citie, ꝛ to deface hir good fame by an acte ſo villanous. But that ſpeciall rare vertue was more ſingular in hir, than was ỹ continencie of Cyrus the *Perſian* King, who fearing to be forced by the allurements of the excellent beauty of chaſt Panthea, would not ſuffer hir to be brought into his preſence, for feare that he being ſurmounted wᵗ folish luſtes, ſhould force hir, that by other meanes could not be perſuaded to breake the holy lawes of mariage, and promiſed Faith to hir huſband. For Salimbene hauing in his preſence, and at his commaundement hir, whome aboue all things he loued, would by no meanes abuſe his power, but declared his Gentle nature to be of other force and effect, than that of the aforeſaid king. by reading ỹ ſucceſſe of this hiſtorie you ſhall perceiue.

After that Montanine and his ſiſter had vttered many other words vpon their determination, and that ỹ faire maiden was appeaſed of hir ſorow, attending the iſſue of that which they went about to begin: Anſelmo was come home out of the Countrey, whereof Charles hauing intelligence, about the ſecond houre of ỹ night, he cauſed his ſiſter to make hir ready, and in companie of one of their ſeruaunts that caried light before them, they came to the lodging of Salimbene, whoſe ſeruaunt

ſeeing Montanine ſo accompanied to knock at the gate, if he did maruel I leaue for you to think, by reaſon of ẏ diſpleaſure & hatred which he knew to be betweene the two families, not knowing that which had already paſſed for ẏ beginning of a finall peace of ſo many controuerſies: for which cauſe ſo aſtonned as he was, he went to tel his maſter that Montanine was at the gate, deſirous ſecretely to talke vnto him. Salimbene knowing what cõpany Charles had with him, was not vnwilling to go downe, & cauſing two torches to be lighted, came to his gate to entertaine them, & to welcome ẏ brother and the ſiſter, with ſo great curteſie & friendſhip as he was ſurpriſed with loue, ſeeing before his eyes ẏ ſight of hir, that burned his heart inceſſãtly, not diſcouering as yet the ſecretes of his thought, by making hir to vnderſtãd the good will he bare hir, and how much he was hir ſeruaunt. He could not tel wel whether he was incharmed, or his eyes daſelled, or not well wakened frõ ſléepe when he ſawe Angelica, ſo amazed was he with the ſtraungeneſſe of the fact, and arriuall of the maiden to his houſe. Charles ſeeing him ſo confuſed, and knowing that the great affectiõ he bare vnto his ſiſter, made him ſo perplexed & beſides himſelfe, ſaid vnto him: Sir we would gladly ſpeake with you in one of your chambers, ẏ there might be none other witneſſe of our diſcourſe, but we.iij. together. Salimbene which was rapt with ioy, was able to make none other anſwere, but, Go we whether you pleaſe. So taking his Angelica by the hand, they went into ẏ hall, & from thence into his chãber, which was furniſhed according to ẏ ſtate & riches of a Lord, he being one of the welthieſt & chiefe of the citie of *Siena*. When they were ſet downe, & all the ſeruaũts gone forth, Charles began to ſay to Salimbene, these words: You may not thinke it ſtraunge (ſir Salimbene)

limbene) if against the lawes & customes of our commõ ,,
wealth, I presently do call you, for knowing the band ,,
wherwith I am boũd vnto you, I must for euer cõfesse ,,
& count my self to be your slaue & bõdman, you hauing ,,
done a thing in my behalf ý deserueth ý name of Lord ,,
& master. But what vngrateful man is he ý wil forget ,,
so great a benefit, as that which I haue receiued of you, ,,
holding of you, life, goods, honor, & this mine own sister ,,
ý enioyeth by your meanes the presence of hir brother ,,
& hir rest of mind, not losing our noble reputation by ý ,,
losse prepared for me through vnrighteous iudgement, ,,
you hauing staid the ruine both of hir & me, and the rest ,,
of our house & kin. I am right glad sir, ý this my duetie ,,
& seruice is boũden to so vertuous a gentleman as you ,,
be, but exceeding sory, ý fortune is so froward & contra- ,,
ry vnto me, that I am not able to accomplishe my good ,,
will, and if ingratitude may lodge in mind of a needie ,,
Gentleman, who hath no helpe but of himself, and in ý ,,
will of his chast sister, and minde vnited in two persõs ,,
onely saued by you, duetie doeth require to present the ,,
rest, and to submit al that is left, to be disposed at your ,,
good pleasure. And bicause that I am well assured, that ,,
it is Angelica alone which hath kindled ý fire of desire, ,,
and hath caused you to loue that which your predeces- ,,
sours haue deadly hated, ý same sparke of knowledge, ,,
which our misery could not quenche with all his force, ,,
hath made the way, and shewed the path whereby we ,,
shall auoide the name of ingrate & forgetfull persons, ,,
& that same which hath made you liberal towards me, ,,
shalbe bountifully bestowed vpõ you. It is Angelica sir ,,
which you sée present héere, who to discharge my band, ,,
hathe willingly rendred to be your owne, submitting ,,
hir selfe to your good will, for euer to be youres. And ,,
I which am hir brother, and haue receiued that great ,,

" good will of hir, as in my power to haue hir will, do pre-
" sent the same, & leaue hir in your handes, to vse as you
" would your owne, praying you to accept the same, & to
" consider whose is the gift, and from whence it cometh,
" and how it ought to be regarded. When he had sayd so,
Montanine rose vp, and without further talke, went
home vnto his house. If Anselmo were abashed at the
Montanines arriuall, and astonned at the Oration of
Charles, his sodaine departure was more to be marue-
led at, and therwithall to see the effect of a thing which
he neuer hoped, nor thought vpon. He was exceeding
glad & ioyful to see himself in the cõpany of hir, whome
he desired aboue all things of the world, but sory to se
hir heauy & sorowfull for such chaunce. He supposed hir
being there, to proceede rather of the yong mans good
& gentle nature, than of the maidens will & liking. For
which cause taking hir by ẏ hãd, & holding hir betweene
" his armes, he vsed these or such like words: Gentlewo-
" mã, if euer I had felt & knowne with what wing ẏ ve-
" rietie & lightnesse of worldly things do flie, & the gains
" of inẽstant fortune, at this present I haue serue one of
" ẏ most manifest proues which seemeth to me so straũge,
" as almost I dare not beleue that, which I see before
" mine eyes. I knowe well that it is for you, and for the
" seruice that I beare you, ẏ I haue broken the effect of ẏ
" hatred, which by inheritaunce I haue receiued against
" your house, and for ẏ deuotion haue deliuered your bro-
" ther. But I see that fortune will not let me to haue the
" vpper hand, to be the conquerer of hir sodaine pangs.
" But you your self shal see, & euery mã shall know, ẏ my
" heart is none other thã noble, & my deuises tend, but to
" the exploit of all vertue & gentlenesse: wherfore I pray
" you (said he kissing hir louingly) be not sad, & doubt not
" that your seruaunt is any other now, hauing you in his

power,

power, than he was whō he durſt not diſcouer the ardēt
» loue that vexed him, & held him in ſuche ſtate, full of de-
» ſire and thought, you alſo may bée ſure, that he hath not
» had the better hand ouer me, ne yet for his curteſie hath
» obteined victorie, nor you for obeying him. For ſith that
» you be mine, and for ſuch yelded and giuen to me, I will
» kéepe you, as hir whom I loue & eſteme aboue al things
» of the worlde, making you my companion, and the on-
» ly miſtreſſe of my gudes, hearte, and will. Thinke not
» that I am the friende of Fortune, and practiſe plea-
» ſure alone without vertue. It is modeſtie which com-
» mendeth me, and honeſtie is the guide of my concei-
» tes. Aſſure you then, & repoſe your comfort on me: for
» none other thō Angelica Montanine, ſhall be the wife of
» Anſelmo Salimbene: and during my life, I will bée the
» friende, the defender and ſupporter of your houſe. At
» thoſe gud newes, the drouſie and wandering ſpirite of
» the faire *Siena* mayde awaked, who ending hir teares,
» and appeaſing hir ſorow, roſe vp, and made a very lowe
» reuerence vnto hir curteous friende, thanking him for
» his greate and incomparable liberalitie, promiſing all
» ſeruice, duetie, and amitie, that a Gentlewoman ought
» to bear vnto him, whō God had reſerued for hir ſpouſe
» and huſbande. After an infinite numbre of honeſt im-
» bracements and pleaſant kiſſes giuen and receiued on
» both parts, Anſelmo called vnto him one of his Aunts
» that dwelled within him, to whome hée deliuered hys
» newe conqueſt to kéepe, and ſpedily without delaye hée
» ſent for the next of his kinne and deareſt friends: and
» being come, he intreated them to kéepe him companie,
» in a very vrgent and weightie buſineſſe he had to do,
» wherin if they ſhewed themſelues diligent in hys re-
» queſt, doubtfull it is not, but he addreſſed ſpéde for ac-
» compliſhmēt of his enterprize. Then cauſing his Aunt

and welbeloued Angelica to come forth, be caried them (not without their great admiration) to the pallace of Montanine, whither being arriued, he and his companie were wel intertained of the sayde Montanine, the brother of faire Angelica. When they were in the hall, Salimbene sayd to his brother in law that shold be: Senior Montanine, it is not long sithens, that you in companie of my faire Gentlewoman here, came home to speake with me, desirous to haue no man priuie to the effect of your cõference. But I am come to you with this troupe to disclose my mind before you al, & to manifest what I purpose to do, to the intent the whole world may know your good & honest nature, and vnderstãd how I can be requited on them, which indeuor to gratifie me in any thing. Hauing sayd so, and euery man being set down, he turned his talke to the reste of the companie in this wise: I doubt not my frends & noble dames, but that ye much muse and maruell to see me in this house so late, and in your companie, and am sure, that a great desire moueth your minds to know for what purpose, & cause, and why I haue gathered this assemblie in a time vnlooked for, and in place where none of oure race and kynne of long time dyd enter, and lesse dyd meane to make hyther their repaire. But when you doe consider what vertue and goodnesse resteth in the heartes of those men, that shunne and auoyde the brutishnesse of myndes, to followe the reasonable parte, and which properly is called spirituall, you shall therby perceiue, that when gentle kynde and noble heart, by the great mistresse name Nature, be grifted in the myndes of men, they cease not to make appere the effect of their doings, sometyme producyng one vertue, sometimes another, whiche cease not to cause the fruit of suche indu-

industrie bothe to blowe and beare: In suche wyse, as the more those vertuous actes and commendable woorkes, do appeare abrodde, the greater dyligence is imployed to searche the matter wherein she can cause to appeare the force of vertue and excellencie, conceiuyng singular delighte in that hir good and holie delyuerie, whych bringeth forth a fruict worthie of such a storke. And that force of minde and generositie of noble hearte is so firme and sure in operation, as although humane things be vnstable and subiecte to chaunge, yet they can not be seuered or disparcled. And albeit it bee the butte and white, whereat Fortune dischargeth all hir dartes and shaftes, threatning shooting and assailing the same rounde, yet it continueth stable and firme like a rocke and cliffe beaten with the violent furie of waues rising by winde or tempest. Wherby it chanceth, that riches and dignitie can no more aduaunce the hart of a slaue and villain, than pouertie make vile & abase the greatnesse of courage in them that be procreated of other stuffe than of common sorte, which dayely keepe the maiestie of their originall, and lyue after the instincte of good and noble bloode, wherewith their auncestors were made noble, and sucked that same vertue oute of the teates of Noursles breastes, who in the myddes of troublesome tranailes of Fortune that doe assayle them, and depresse their modestie, their face and countenaunce, and their gestes full well declare their condition, and doe to vnderstande, that vnder suche a miserie, a mynde is hydde, whiche deserueth greater guerdon than the eigre taste of calamitie. In that dyrke glowe and shyne the youth of the *Persian* and *Median* Monarch, being nursled amongst the stalles and stables of his grandfather, & the gentle kinde

" kynde of the founder of stately *Rome*, sucheled in the
" shepecoates of Princes shepherds. Thus much haue I
" sayd, my good lordes and dames, in consideration of the
" noble courage and gentle mynde of Charles Montanine,
" and of his sister, who without preiudice to any other, I
" dare to say, is the paragon and mirrour of all chast and
" curteous maidens, well trained vp, amongs the whole
" troupe of those that line this daye in *Siena*, who beyng
" brought to the ende and last point of their ruin, as eue-
" ry of you doth know, and their race so sore decayed, as
" there remaineth but the onely name of Montanine: not-
" withstanding they neuer lost the hearte, desire, ne yet
" the effect of the curtesie, and naturall bountie, which
" euer doth accompanie the minde of those that be noble
" in deede. Which is the cause that I am constrayned to
" accuse oure auncestors, of to muche cruelitie, and of the
" litle respect which for a controuersie occurred by chace,
" haue pursued them with such mortal reuenge, as with-
" out ceassing, with all their force, they haue assayed to
" ruinate, abolishe, and for euer annichilate that a right
" noble and illustre race of the Montanines, amongs whō
" if neuer any godnesse appeared to the worlde, but the
" honestie, gentlenesse, curtesie and vertuous maners of
" these two same here present, the brother and sister, yet
" they ought to be accompted amongs the ranke of the
" noblest and chiefest of our Citie, to the intent in tyme
" to come it may not be reported, that we haue esteemed
" and cherished riches and worldly mucke, more than ver-
" tue and modestie. But imitating those excellent gouer-
" ners of *Italie*, which helde the *Romane* Empire, lette vs
" rather reuerence the vertuous poore, than praise or prise
" the riche, geuen to vice and wickednesse. And for so
" much as I do see you all to be desirous to knowe ỳ cause
" and argument, which maketh me to vse this talke, and

forceth

wyeth me to prayse the curtesie and godnesse of the Montanines, pleaseth you to stay a litle with pacience, and not think the time tedious, I meane to declare the same. Plainely to confesse vnto you (for that it is no crime of death, or heinous offense) the gifts of nature, the beautie and comelinesse of faire Angelica here present, haue so captinate my mind, and depryued my hart of libertie, as night and day trauailing how I might discouer vnto hir my martirdom, I did consume in such wise, as losing lust of slepe and meate, I feared ere log to be either dead of sorrow, or estraunged of my right wittes, seing no meanes how I might auoyd the same, bicause our two houses and families were at continuall debate: and albeit conflictes were ceased, and quarelles forgotten, yet there rested (as I thought) a certaine desire bothe in the one and the other of offense when time and occasion did serue. And yet mine affection for al that was not decreased, but rather more tormented, and my griefe increased, hopeless of helpe, which nowe is chaunced to me as you shall heare. You doe knowe, and so do all men, howe within these fewe dayes past, the Lorde Montanine here present, was accused before the Seniorie, for trespalles against the statutes and Edicts of the same, and being prisoner, hauing not wherwith to satisfie the condemnation, ỳ law affirmed that his life shold recompense and supplie default of money. I not able to suffer the want of hym, which is the brother of the deerest thing I estéeme in the worlde, and hauyng not hir in possession, nor lyke without him to attaine hir, payed that summe, and deliuered hym. Ye, by what meanes I know not, or how he coniectured the benevolence of my déede, thinkyng that it proceeded of the honest loue and affection which I bare to gracious and amiable Angelica, well consideryng

" ring of my curtesie, hath ouercome me in prodigalitie
" he this nyghte came vnto me, wyth his sister my mo
" strelle, yeldyng hir my slaue and bondwoman, leauing
" hir with me, to doe with hir as I wold with any thing
" I had. Beholde my good Lordes, and ye noble Ladies
" and cousins, and consider how I may recompense thys
" benefite, and be able to satisfie a present so precious, &
" of such value and regarde, as both of them be, such, as
" a right puissant prince and lord, may be contented with
" a duetie so liberall and iewell inestimable of two offe-
" red things. The assistants that were there, coulde not
" tell what to say, the discourse hadde so muche drawne
" their myndes into diuers fantasies and contrary opi-
" nions, seing that the same required by deliberation to
" be considered, before lightly they vttred their mindes.
" But they knew not the intent of him, which had called
" them thither, more to testifie his fact, than to iudge of
" the thyng he went about, or able to hynder and let the
" same. True it is, that the Ladies viewyng and mar-
" king the amiable countenance of the Montaruban
" sell, wouldе haue iudged for hir, if they feared not to
" bee refused of hym, whome the thyng diddе touche
" moste neere. Who withoute longer staye, opened to
" them all, what he was purposed to do, saying: Wyth ye
" do spende time so long vpon a matter alreadie meant
" and determined, I wil ye to know, that hauing regard
" of mine honour, and desirous to satisfie the honestie of
" the brother and sister, I minde to take Angelica to my
" wife and lawful spouse, vnitting that which so lōg time
" hath bene diuided, and making in two bodies, whilom
" not wel accorded & agreed, one like and vniforme wil,
" praying you eche one, ioyfully to ioy with me, and your
" selues to reioyse in that alliaunce, whyche seemeth ra-
" ther a worke from heauen, than a deede concluded by

the

the counsell and industrie of men. So lykewyse all wedded feares in holie Wedlocke (by reason of the effecte and the Author of the same, euen GOD him selfe, whiche did ordaine it first) bée written in the infallible Booke of hys owne prescience, to the intente that nothyng may decay, which is sustained wyth the myghtie hand of that Almightie God, the God of wonders, which verily hée hath displayed ouer thée (deare brother) by makyng thée to fall into distresse and danger of death, that myne Angelica, béeing the meane of thy dylyueraunce, myght also bée cause of the attonement whiche I do hope henceforth shall bée, betweene so noble houses as ours be. Thys finall decrée reueled in open audience, as it was, agaynst their expectation, and the ende that the kynred of Anselmo looked for, so was the same no lesse straunge and bashful, as ioyfull and pleasaunt, feelyng a sodaine ioy, not accustomed in their mynde, for that vnion and alliaunce. And albeit that their ryches was vnequall, and the Dowrie of Angelica nothyng neere the greate wealth of Salimbene, yet all men dyd déeme hym happie, that his hadde chaunced vpon so vertuous a mayden, the onely modestie and integritie of whome, deserued to bée coupled wyth the moste honourable. For when a man hathe respecte onely to the beautie or riches of hir, whome he meaneth to take to wyfe, he moste commonly dothe incurre the mischiefe, that the spirite of dissention intermeddleth amydde theyr housholde, whereby pleasure vanishing with age, maketh the riueled face (beset with a thousand wrinkeled furrowes) to growe pale and drie. The wife likewyse when she lacketh hir goodes to surmount, the substãce of hir wedded husband, she aduaunceth hir heart, she swelleth

to make himselfe a conquerour by marriage, but she disminishing nothing no iote of hir noble minde, he must seke elsewhere his price of victorie. To hir a desire to kyll hir selfe (if things succeded contrary to hir minde) myght haue stopped the way to hir great glorie, had she not regarded hir virginitie, more than hir owne life. The seconde seemeth to go halfe constrained, and by maner of acquitall, and had his affection bene to render himselfe slaue to his foe, his patron and preserver, it would haue diminished his praise.

But Athens inough we haue hereof discoursed, and ben large in treatie of Tragicomicall matters, intermixed and huged (in some parte) with the enterviews of dolor, modestie, and indifferent good hap, and in some wholy imparted the dreadfull ends like to terrible beginnings, I misse for a relefe, and after suche sowre sweete banketres, to interlarde a licorous refection for sweeting the mouthes of the delicate: And dos purpose in this Nouell insuing, to manifest a pleasant dispore betweene a Widowe and a Scholer, a pasying practise of a craftie dame, not well scholed in the discipline of *Academicall* rules, a surmounting science to trade the nouices of that forme, by ware foresight, to incountre thole that by laborsome trauile and nightly watch, haue hunted the rare knowledge of *Mathematicalls*, and other hydden and secrete Artes.

Wishing them so well to beware, as I am desirous to let them know by this rudiment, the successe of suche attemptes.

Mistresse

Mistresse Helena of Florence.

¶ A Widowe called Mistresse HELENA, with whome a Scholer was in loue, (she louyng an other) made the same Scholer to stande a whole Wynters nyghte in the Snowe to wayte for hir, who afterwardes by a sleyght and pollicie, caused hir in July, to stande vpon a Tower starke naked, amongs Flyes and Gnattes, and in the Sunne.

The xxxj. Nouel.

Imagine we nowe a litle from these sundrie happes, to solace our selues with a merie deuise, and pleasaunt circumstaunce of a Scholers loue, and of the wily guily subtilties of an amorous Widowe of *Florence*. A Scholer returned from Paris to practise his knowledge at home in his owne Countreye, learneth a more cunnyng lecture of Mistresse Helena, than he dyde of the subtilleste Sorbone Doctor, or after *Mathematicall* from whense he came. The Scholler as plainly he had applied his booke, and earnestly berkned his readings, so he simply meant to be a faithfull louer and deputie requirant to this iolly dame, y had vowed

his

hir deuotion & promised pilgrimage to an other saint. The scholer vpon the first view of the widowes wandring lokes, forgetting Ouides lessons of loues guiles, pursued his conceipt to the vttermost. The scholer neuer remembred how many valiaunt, wise and learned men, wanton womē had seduced and deceiued. He had forgot howe Catullus was beguiled by Lesbia, Tibullus by Delia, Propertius by Cynthia, Naso by Corinna, Demetrius by Lamia, Timotheus by Phryne, Philippe by a *Greke* mayden, Alexander by Thais, Hannibal by Campania, Cæsar by Cleopatra, Pompeius by Flora, Pericles by Aspaga, Psammiticus the king of *Ægipt* by Rhodope, and diuers other very famous by women of that stampe. He had not ben well trained in holy writ, or heard of Samsons Dalida, or of Salamons concubines, but like a plaine dealing man, beleeued what she promised, folowed what she bad him, wagged whiles she mocked him, attended till she laughed him to scorne. And yet for all these lolly pastimes inuented by this widowe, to deceiue the poore Scholer, she scaped not frē from his Logike rules, nor safe from his philosophie. She was forced to turne ouer Aristotle, to reuolue his Porphyrie, and to gather hys wittes about him, to requite this louing peate, that had so charitably delt with him. He willingly serched ouer Ptolome, perused Albumazar, made haste to Haly, yea & for a shift beturned him in Esra Pater, for matching of two contrary elements. For colde in Christmasse holy dayes, and frost at Midsommer, shewed no more force in this poore lerned scholer, thā the Suns heat in the Feries of July, gnats, flies, & waspes, at none dayes in Sōmer vpon the naked tender corpse of this fair Widow. The Scholer stode belowe in a Court, benommed for colde, the widowe preached a lofte in the top of a Tower, and faine would haue had water to cole hir extreme heat.

The

The ſcholler in his ſhirt bedecked with his demiſaries. The widow ſo naked as hir graundmother Eue, without veſture to ſhroud hir. The widow by magike Arte what ſo euer it coſt, wold faine haue recouered hir loſt louer. The Scholler well eſpying his aduãtage when he was aſked councel, ſo incharmed hir with his Sillogiſmes, as he made hir to mount a tower, to curſe the time that euer ſhe knew him or hir louer. So ỳ widow not well beatẽ in cauſes of ſchole, was whipt with the rod, wherwith ſhe ſcourged other. Alas good woman, had ſhe knowne that olde malice had not bene forgotten, ſhe would not haue truſted, & leſſe committed hir ſelf to the circle of his enchauntments. If women wiſt what dealings are wõ men of great reading, they wold amongs one hundred other, not deale with one of the meaneſt of thoſe that be bookiſh. One Girolamo Ruſcelli a learned *Italian* making prætie notes for ỳ better elucidation of the *Italian* Decamerone of Boccaccio, iudgeth Boccaccio himſelf to be this ſcholler, whom by another name he termeth to be Rinieri. But whatſoeuer that Scholler was, he was truly to extrẽme in reuenge, & therein could vſe no meane. For he neuer left the poore feble ſoule, for all hir curteous words and gentle ſupplication, vntil the ſkin of hir fleſh was parched with ỳ ſcalding ſunne beames. And not contented with that, delt his almoſe alſo to hir maide, by ſending hir to help hir miſtreſſe, where alſo ſhe braks hir legge. Yet Philenio was more pitifull ouer the thrẽ Nimphes & faire Goddeſſes of *Bologna*, whoſe Hiſtory you may read in the xlix. Nouell of my former Tome. He fared not ſo roughly with thoſe, as Rinieri did with this, that ſought but to gain what ſhe had loſt. Wel, how ſo euer it was, and what differencie betweene either of them, this Hyſtorie enſuing, more amply ſhall giue to vnderſtand.

Miſtreſſe Helena

Not long ſithens, there was in *Florence*, a yong gentlewoman of worſhipfull parentage, faire and comely of perſonage, of courage ſtout, and abounding in goods of fortune (called Helena,) who being a Widow, determined not to mary again, bicauſe ſhe was in loue with a yong man that was not voide of natures godly gifts, whom for hir owne tothe, aboue other ſhe had ſpecially choſen. In whome (ſetting aſide all other care) many times (by meanes of one of hir maids which ſhe truſted beſt) ſhe had great pleaſure and delite. It chaũced about the ſame time that a yong Gentleman of that Citie called Rinieri, hauing a great time ſtudied at *Paris*, retourned to *Florence*, not to ſell his Science by retaile, as many doe, but to know the reaſons of things, and the cauſes of the ſame, which is a maruellous good exerciſe for a Gentleman. And being there honoured & greatly eſtemed of all men, aſwell for his curteous behauioure, as alſo for his knowledge, he lined like a good Citizen. But as it is commonly ſeene, they which haue beſt vnderſtanding and knowledge in things, are ſoneſt tangled in Loue: euen ſo it happened to this Rinieri, who repairing one day for his paſſetime to a feaſt, this Madame Helena clothed all in blacke, (after the manner of widowes) was there alſo, and ſeemed in his eyes ſo beautiful and wel fauored, as any woman that euer he ſawe, and thought that he might be accompted happy, to whome God did ſhewe ſo much fauoure, as to ſuffer him to be cleped betweene hir armes: & beholding hir diuers times, and knowing that the greateſt and deareſt things can not be gotten without labovre, he determined to vſe all his endeuoure and care in pleaſing of hir, that thereby he might obtaine hir loue, and ſo enioy hir. The yong Gentlewoman not very baſhfull, conceining greater opinion of hir ſelfe, than was

wardefull, not casting hir eyes towards the ground, but rolling them artificially on euery side, and by and by perceiuing much gazing to be vpon hir, espied Rinieri earnestly beholding hir, and sayd smiling to hir selfe: I thinke that I haue not this day lost my time in coming hither, for if I be not deceiued, I shall catch a Pigeon by the nose. And beginning certaine times stedfastly to loke vpon him, she forced hir selfe so much as she could, to seeme effectuously to beholde him: and on the other parte thinking, that the more pleasant and amorous she shewed hir self to be, the more hir beautie should be esteemed, chiefly of him whome specially she was disposed to loue. The wise Scholler giuing ouer his Philosophie, bent all his endeuor hereunto, & thinking to be hir seruaunt, learned where she dwelt, and began to passe before hir house vnder pretense of some other occasion: wherat the Gentlewoman reioysed for the causes beforesaide, faining an earnest desire to beholde him. Wherfore the Scholler hauing found a certaine meane to be acquainted with hir maide, discouered his loue: praying hir to deale so w̄ hir mistresse, as he might haue hir fauor. The maide promised him very willingly, and incontinently reported the same to hir mistresse, who with the greatest scoffes in the world, gaue eare therunto & sayd: Seest thou not frō whence this godfellow is come, to lose al his knowledge & doctrine ỳ he hath brought vs from *Paris*. Now let vs deuise therefore how he may be handled for going about to seeke that, which he is not like to obtain. Thou shalt say vnto him, when he speaketh to thée againe, ỳ I loue him better than he loueth me, but that it behoueth me to saue mine honoure, and to keepe my good name and estimation amongs other women. Which thing, if he be so wise (as he seemeth) he ought to esteeme & regarde.

Ah poore Wench, she knoweth not well, what it is to mingle huswiuery with learning, or to intermeddle distaues with bokes. Now the maid when she had found the Scholler, told him as hir mistresse had commaũded: wherof ỳ Scholler was so glad, as he with greater endeuor proceeded in his enterprise, and began to write letters to the Gentlewoman, which were not refused, although he could receiue no answeres ỳ pleased him, but such as were done opẽly. And in this sort the Gentlewoman long time fed him with delayes. In the end she discouered all this newe loue vnto hir friend, who was attached with such an aking disease in his head, as the same was fraught with the reume of ialousie: wherfore she to shewe hir selfe to be suspected without cause (very careful for the Scholler) set hir maid to tel him, that she had no conuenient time to doe the thing that shold please him, sithẽs he was first assured of hir loue, but hoped the next Christmasse hollydayes to be at his commaundement: wherefore if he would vouchsafe to come the night following the first holyday, into ỳ court of hir house, she wold wait there for his comming. The Scholler the best contẽted mã in the world, failed not at the time appointed, to goe to the Gentlewomans house: where being placed by the maid in a base court, and shut fast within the same, he attended for hir comming, who supping with hir friend that night, very pleasantly recited vnto him al that she had determined "then to do, saying: Thou maist see what loue I do bear "vnto him, of whome thou hast folishely conceiued this "iealousie. To which wordes hir friend gaue eare with great delectation, desiring to see the effect of that, wherof she gaue him to vnderstand by wordes. Now as it chaunced the day before, the snowe fel downe so thicke from aboue, as it couered all ỳ earth, by which meanes

the

ỹ Scholler within a very litle ſpace after his arriual, began to be very colde, howbeit hoping to receiue recompenſe, he ſuffred it pacientlỹ. The Gentlewoman a litle while after, ſayd vnto hir friend: I prȝay thee, let vs goe into my chamber, where at a little window we may loke out, and ſee what he doth that maketh thee ſo iealous, and hearken what anſwer he will make to my maide, whome of purpoſe I wil ſend to ſpeake vnto him. When ſhe had ſo ſayd, they went to ỹ window, where they ſeeing the Scholler (they not ſeene of him,) heard the maide ſpeake theſe wȝordes: Rinieri, my miſtreſſe is the angrieſt woman in the wȝorld, foȝ that as yet ſhe can not come vnto thee. But the cauſe is, ỹ one of hir bȝethȝen is come to viſite hir this Euening, and hath made a long diſcourſe of talke vnto hir, and afterwardes bad himſelf to ſupper, and as yet is not departed, but I thinke he wil not tary long, and then immediately ſhe will come. In the meane time ſhe prȝayeth thee to take a litle paine. The ſcholler beleeuing this to be true, ſayd vnto hir: Require your Miſtreſſe to take no care foȝ me till hir leaſure may ſerue: howbeit entreat hir to make ſo much haſt as ſhe can. The maid retourned and wẽt to bed, and the dame of the houſe ſayd then vnto hir frend: Now ſir, what ſay you to this? Do you thinke that if I loued him as you miſtruſt, that I would ſuffer him to tarry beneath in the colde to cole himſelfe? And hauing ſayd ſo, ſhe went to bed with hir friend, who then was partly ſatiſfied, and all the night they continued in great pleaſure and ſolace, laughing & mocking the miſerable Scholler that walked vp and downe the court to chafe himſelf, not knowing where to ſit, oȝ which way to auoide the colde, and curſſed the long tarying of his miſtreſſe bȝother, hoping at euery noiſe he heard, that ſhe had come to open the doȝe to let

him in, but his hope was in vain. Now she hauing spor-
ted hir selfe almost till midnight, sayd vnto hir friend:
" How think you (sir) by our Scholer, whether iudge you
" is greater, his wisdome, or the loue that I beare vnto
" him? The cold that I make him to suffer, wil extinguish
" the heat of suspition which ye conceiued of my wordes
" the other day. Ye say true (sayd hir friend,) and I doe
" assure you, that like as you are my delite, my rest, my
" comfort and all my hope, euen so I am youres during
" life. For the cõfirmation of which renewed amity, they
spared no delites which the louing Goddesse doeth vse
to serue and imploy vpon hir seruãts and suters. And
after they had talked a certain time, she said vnto him:
" For Gods sake (sir) let vs rise a litle, to see if ẏ glowing
" fier which this my new louer hath daily written vnto
" me, to burn in him, be quẽched or not. And rising out of
their beds, they wẽt to a little windowe, & loking down
into the courte, they sawe the Scholer daunsing vpon
the snow, whereunto his chiuering teeth were so good
instrumentes, as he seemed the trimmest dauncer that
euer trode a *Cinquepace* after such Muslke, being for-
ced therunto through the great colde which he suffred.
" And then she sayde vnto him: what say you to this my
" friend, doe you not see how cunning I am to make men
" daunce without Taber or Pipe? Yes in deede (said hir
" louer) ye be an excellent musitian. Then (quod she) let
" vs go downe to the doore, and I will speake vnto him,
" but in any wise speake you nothing, and we shal heare
" what reasons and argumẽts he wil frame to moue me
" to compassion, and perchaunce shall haue no little pa-
" stime to behold him: wherupon they went downe soft-
ly to the doore, and there without opening the same, she
with a soft voice out at a little hole, called the Scholer
vnto hir. Which he hearing, began to praise God and
thanke

thanke him a thousande times, beleuing verily that he
shold then be let in, and approching the doze, said: I am
here mine (owne swéete heart) open the doze foz Gods
sake, foz I am like to die foz colde. Whome in mocking
wise she answered: can you make me beleue (M. Scho-
ler) that you are so tender, oz that the colde is so great
as you affirme, foz a little Snow that lieth without?
There be at *Paris* farre greater snowes than these be:
but to tel you the trothe, you cã not come in yet, foz my
brother (the diuell take him) came yesternight to sup-
per, and is not yet departed, but by & by he wil be gon,
and then you shal obtaine the effect of your desire, assu-
ring you, that with much adoe I haue stoln away from
him, to come hither foz your comfozt, prayng you not
to thinke it long. Madame said the Scholer, I beséeche
you foz Gods sake to open the doze, that I may stand in
couert from ỹ snow, which within this hour hath fallen
in great aboundaunce, and doth yet continue: & there I
will attend your pleasure. Alas swéete friend (said she)
the doze maketh such a noise when it is opened, that it
wil easily be heard of my brother, but I will pray him
to depart, that I may quickely returne againe to open
the same. Go your way then (said the Scholer) & I pray
you cause a great fire to be made, that I may warme
me when I come in, foz I can scarse féele my selfe foz
colde. Why, it is not possible (sayd the woman) if it be
true that you wholly burne in loue foz me, as by your
sundzy letters wzitten, it appeareth, but nowe I per-
ceiue that you mocke me, and therefoze tary there still
on Gods name. Hir friend which heard all this, & toke
pleasure in those wozds, wẽt againe to bed with hir, in-
to whose eyes no slepe ỹ night could enter foz the plea-
sure & spozt they had with the poze Scholer. The vn-
happy wzetched Scholer whose téeth clacked foz colde,

faring

faring like a Storke in cold nights, perceiuing himself to be mocked, assayed to open the doore, or if he might goe out by some other way: and seeing it impossible, stalking vp and downe like a Lion, cursed the nature of the time, the wickednesse of the woman, the length of the night, and the folly and simplicitie of himself: and conceiuing great rage and despite against hir, turned sodainly the long and feruent loue that he bare hir, into despite and cruell hatred, deuising many and diuers meanes to be reuenged, which he then farre more desired, thā he did in ỳ beginning to lye with his Widow. After the prolixitie and length of the night, day approched, and the dawning therof began to appeare: wherefore the maide instructed by hir mistresse, went downe into ỳ Court, and seeming to haue pitie vpon ỳ Scholler, sayd vnto him: The Diuell take him that euer he came hither this night, for he hath bothe let vs of sleepe, and hath made you to be frosen for colde, but take it patiently for this time, some other night must be appointed. For I know well ỳ neuer thing could chaunce more displeasantly to my mistresse than this. But the Scholler ful of disdaine, like a wise man which knewe wel that threats and menacing words, were weapons without hands to ỳ threatned, retained in his stomake that which intemperate will, wold haue broken forth, and with so quiet words as he could, not shewing himself to be angry, sayd: In deede I haue suffred ỳ worste night that euer I did, but I knowe the same was not through your mistresse fault, bicause she hauing pitie vpon me, came downe to excuse hir self and to comfort me, and as you say, that which cannot be to night, may be done another time, commend me then vnto hir, and fare wel. And thus the poore Scholler stiffe for colde, so well as he could, retourned home to his house, where

for

for extreme colde and lacke of slepe being almost dead, he threw himselfe vpon his bed, and when he awaked, his armes and legges were benommed. Wherfore he sent for physitions and tolde them of the colde which he had taken, who incontinently prouided for his health: and yet for al their best and spedie remedies, they could scarce recouer his sinewes, wherin they did what they could: and had it not ben that he was yong, & the Sommer approching, it had ben to much for him to haue endured. But after he had recouered health, and grewe to be lustie, secrete malice still resting in his breast, he thought vpon reuenge. And it chanced in a litle time after, that Fortune prepared a newe accident to the Scholer to satisfie hys desire, because the yong man which was beloued of the Gentlewoman, not caryng any longer for hir, fell in loue with an other, and gaue ouer the solace and pleasure he was wont to do to mystresse Helena, for which she consumed in wepings and lamentations. But hir maide hauing pitie vpon hir sorrowes, knowing no meanes to remoue the melancolie which she conceiued for the losse of hir friend, and seing the Scholer dayly passe by according to his common custome, conceiued a foolish beliefe, that hir mistresse frie might be brought to loue hir againe, and wholly recouered, by some charme or other sleight of Necromancie, to be wrought and broughte to passe by the Scholer. Which deuise she told vnto hir mistresse, and she vndiscretely (and without the due consideration, that if the Scholer had any knowledge in that science, he woulde helpe himselfe) gaue credite to the words of hir maide, and by and by sayd vnto hir, that she was able to bring it to passe, if he woulde take it in hande, and therwithall promised assuredly, that for recompense he shoulde lie with hir at his pleasure. The maide diligently tolde the

Scholer hereof, who very ioyfull for those newes, sayd
" vnto him self: O God, praised be thy name, for now the
" time is come, that by thy helpe I shall requite the iniu-
" ries done vnto me by this vngracious woman, and be
" recompensed of the great loue that I bare vnto hir: and
" sayd to the maid: Go tel thy mistresse that for this mat-
" ter she nede to take no care, for if hir friende were in
" *India*, I could presently force him to come hither, and
" ask hir forgiuenesse of ẏ thing he hath cõmitted against
" hir will. And the maner and way how to vse hir self in
" this behalfe, I will giue hir to vnderstand when it shal
" please hir to appoint me: and faile not to tell hir what
" I say, comforting hir in my behalf. The maide caried ẏ
answer, & it was concluded, that they should talk more
hereof at the church of *S. Lucie*, whither being come, &
reasoning together alone, not remembring that she had
brought the Scholer almost to the point of death, she re-
ueled vnto him all the whole matter, & the thing which
he desired, praying him instantly to helpe hir, to whom
" the Scholer sayd: True it is Lady, that amongs other
" thyngs whiche I learned at *Paris*, the Arte of *Necro-*
" *mancie*, (whereof I haue very great skill,) is one: but
" bycause it is much displeasant to God, I haue made an
" othe neuer to vse it, eyther for my selfe, or for any o-
" ther: howebeit, the loue which I beare you, is of such
" force, as I can not denie you any request, yea and if I
" shoulde be damned amongs all the deuils in hell, I am
" readie to perform your pleasure. But I tel you before,
" that it is a harder matter to be done, than peraduenture
" you beleue, and specially when a woman shall prouoke
" a man to loue, and a man the woman, bycause it can
" not be done but by the proper person, whome it dothe
" touche, and therefore it is méete, what so euer is done,
" in any wyse not to bee afrayde, for that the coniura-

tion

tion must bee made in the night, and in a solitarie place
without companie: Which thing I know not how you
shall bee disposed to doe. To whome the woman more
amorous than wise, aunswered: Loue pricketh mee in
such wise, as there is nothing but I dare attempt, to haue
him againe, that causelesse hath forsaken me. But if it
be your pleasure, tel me wherein it behoueth that I bee
so bold and hardie. The Scholer (subtil ynough) said: I
must of necessitie make an image of brasse, in the name
of him that you desire to haue, which being sente vnto
you, you must when the Mone is at hir full force, bath
your self alone stark naked in a running riuer at ỳ first
hour of slepe. vij. times with the same image: and after-
wards being still naked, you must go vp into some tree
or house vnhabited, and turning youre selfe towardes
the northside thereof with the image in your hand, you
shall say. vij. times certain words, that I will giue you
in writing, which when you haue done, two damsells
shall come vnto you, the fairest that euer you saw, and
they shall salute you, humbly demaunding what youre
pleasure is to commaunde them: to whome you shall
willingly declare in good order what you desire: & take
heede aboue all things, that you blame not one for an o-
ther: and when they be gone, you may descend down to
the place where you left your apparell, and aray your
selfe agayne, and afterwardes retourne home vnto
youre house, and assure your self, that before the midde
of the nert nyght following, your friend shall come vn-
to you weping, and crying mercie and forgiuenesse at
youre handes. And knowe ye, that from that tyme
forth, he will neuer forsake you for any other.

The Gentlewoman hearyng those words, gaue great
credite thervnto: and thoughte that already she helde
hir friend betwarne hir armes, and very ioyfull sayde:

Doubt not but I will accomplishe all that whiche you
" haue tolde me: and I haue the meetest place in ỹ world
" to do it: for toward the valley of *Arno*, very nere the
" riuer side, I haue a manor house, secretly to worke any
" attempt that I list: and now it is the moneth of July,
" in which tyme bathing is most pleasant. And also I re-
" membre that not farre from the riuer, there is a little
" Toure vnhabited, into whiche one can scarce get vp,
" but by a certain ladder made of chesnut tree, whiche is
" alreadie there, wherupon the shephierds do sometyme
" ascende to the turralle of the same Toure, to loke for
" their cattel when they be gone astray: and the place is
" very solitarie and out of the way. Into that Toure wil
" I goe vp, and trust to do al that you haue required me.
" The Scholer which knew very well bothe the village
whereof she spake, and also the Toure, right glad for
" that he was assured of his purpose, sayde: Madame, I
" was neuer there, and do neither know the village, nor
" the Toure, but if it be as you say, it is not possible to
" finde any better place in the worlde: wherefore when
" the time is come, I will sende you the image, and the
" prayer. But I heartily beseech you, when you haue ob-
" tained your desire, and do perceiue that I haue wel ser-
" ued your turne, to haue me in remembrance, & to kepe
" your promise: which the Gentlewoman assured him to
" doe without faile, and taking hir leaue of him, she retir-
ned home to hir house. The Scholer ioyfull for that his
deuise should in deede come to passe, caused an image to
be made with certaine Characters, and wrote a tale of
a tubbe in stede of the prayer. And when he saw tyme
he sent them to the Gentlewoman, aduertising hir that
the night following, she muste doe the thing he had ap-
pointed hir. Then to proceede in his enterprise, he and
his man went secretly to one of his friends houses that

dwelte

dwelte harde by the towne. The woman on the other side, and hir maide repaired to hir place: where when it was night, making as though she would go slepe, she sent hir maid to bed: afterwards about ten of the clock she went very softely out of hir lodging, and repaired nere to the towne vpon the riuer of *Arno*, and lacking aboute hir, not seing or perceyuyng any man, she vnclothed hir selfe, and hidde hir apparell vnder a bushe of thornes, and then bathed hir selfe. vij. tymes with the image, and afterwards starke naked holding the same in hir hand, she went towards the Toure. The Scholer at the beginning of the night beyng hidden with his seruant amongs the willowes and other trées nere the Toure, saw all the aforesayd things, and hir also passing naked by him, (the whitenesse of whose bodie surpassed as he thought, the darknesse of the night, so farre as blacke exceedeth white) who afterwardes behelde hir stomack, and the other partes of hir body, which semed vnto him to be very beautiful. And remembring what would shortly come to passe, he had some pitie vpon hir. And on the other side, the temptation of the flesshe sodainly assailed him, prouoking him to issue forth of the secrete corner, to surprise hir, and take his plesure vpon hir, and within a while after was vanquished bothe with the one and the other. But calling to his remembrance what she was, and what great wrong he hadde sustained, his malice began to kindle again, and did remoue from him his compassion, and lust, continuing stil stedfast in his determination, and so did lette hir passe. The Widow so being vpon the Toure, and turnyng hir face towards the North, began to saye the wordes which the Scholer had giuen hir. Within a while after the Scholer entred in very softly, and take away the ladder wherupon she got vp, & stode still to heare what

would say and doe. Who hauing by times recited his prayer, attended the comming of the two damsels: for whome she waited so long in vaine, as she began to be extreamely colde, and perceiued the dawning of ỹ day appeare. Wherefore taking great displeasure that it came not to passe as the Scholer had tolde hir, she sayd "to hir self: I doubt much least this Scholer wil reward "me with such another night, as wherein once I made "him to wait: but if he haue done it for that occasion, he "is not well reuenged, for ỹ nights now want the third "part of the length of those then, besides, the cold that he "indured, which was of greater extremity. And that the day might not discouer hir, she would haue gon downe out of the Toure, but she found the ladder to be taken away. Then as though the worlde had molten vnder hir feete, hir heart began to faile, & fainting, fell downe vpon the tarralle of the Toure, and when hir force began to come againe, she began pitifully to weepe and complaine. And knowing well that the Scholer hadde done that deede, she grew to be angry with hir selfe, for that she has offended another, and to much trusted him whome she ought (by good reason) to haue accompted hir enimy. And after she had remained a great while in this plight, then loking if there were any way for hir to goe downe, and perceiuing none, she renued hir weeping, whose minde great care and sorow did pierce "saying to hir self: O vnhappy wretch what wil thy bre- "thren say, thy parents, thy neighbors, and generally al "they of *Florence*, when they shall vnderstande that thou "hast ben found here starke naked? Thy honesty which "hitherto hath bene neuer stained, shall nowe be atta- "ched with the blot of shame, yea and if thou were able "to finde (for remedy hereof) any matter of excuse (such "as might be found) the wicked Scholer (who knoweth

all

all thy doings) will not suffer thée to lie: Ah miserable
wretch, ý in one houres space, hast lost both thy frend &
thine honor. What shall become of thée? who is able to
cover thy shame? When she had thus cõplained hirself,
she was wrapt in suche sorowe, as she was like to cast
hir self headlong downe from the Toure: but the sunne
being already risen, she approched neare one of the cor-
ners of the wall, espying if she could sée any boy keping
of Cattell, that she might send him for hir maide. And
it chaunced that the Scholer which had slept a while
vnder a bush, awaked, & one espied the other, to whom
the Scoler sayd: God morow Lady, be the damsels yet
come? The woman séeing and hearing him, begã again
bitterly to wéepe, and prayed him to come vp to the
Toure, that she might speake with hym. The Scholer
was therunto very agreable, and she lying on hir belly
vpõ the terralle of the Toure, discouering nothing but
hir head ouer ý side of the same, said vnto him wéeping:
Rinieri, truly if euer I caused thée to endure an il night,
thou art now well reuenged on me: for although it be
the moneth of July, I thought (because I was naked) ý
I shold haue frosen to death this night for cold, besides
my great and continual teares for the offense which I
haue done thée, and of my folly for beleuing thée, ý mar-
uel it is mine eyes do remaine win my head: & therfore
I pray thée, not for the loue of me, whom thou ought est
not to loue, but for thine own sake which art a gentle-
man, ý the shame & paine which I haue sustained, may
satisfy ý offense & wrong I haue cõmitted against thée:
& cause mine apparel to be brought vnto me, ý I may go
downe frõ hẽce, & take not ý frõ me, which afterwards
ý art not able to restore, which is, mine honor: for if I
haue depriued thée of being with me ý night, I cã at all
times when it shall please thée, render many for ý one.

Let

" Let it suffise thée then with this, and like an honest mã
" content thy self by being a little reuẽged on me, in ma-
" king me to know what it is to hurt another. Do not, I
" pray thée, practise thy power against a woman: for the
" Egle hath no fame for conquering of the Doue. Then
" for the loue of God, and for thine honor sake, haue pitie
" and remorse vpon me. The Scholer with a cruel heart
remembring the iniury that he had receiued, and seing
hir so to weepe and pray, conceiued at one instant both
pleasure & griefe in his minde: pleasure of the reuenge
which he aboue all things desired, and grief moued his
manhode to haue compassion vpon the miserable wo-
man. Notwithstanding, pitie not able to ouercome the
" fury of his desire, he answered: Mistresse Helena, if my
" prayers (which in dede I could not moisten w teares,
" ne yet sweeten them with sugred wordes, as you doe
" yours now) might haue obtained that night wherein I
" thought I should haue died for colde in the Court ful of
" snowe, to haue bene conueyed by you into some couert
" place, an easie matter it had bene for me at this instant
" to heare your sute. But if now more than in times past
" your honor doe ware warme, and be so greuous for you
" to stande starke naked, make your prayers to him, be-
" tweene whose armes it grieued you not at all to be na-
" ked that night, wherein you heard me trot vp & downe
" the court, my teeth chattering for colde, and marching
" vpon the snow: and at his hands seeke reliefe, and pray
" him to bring your clothes, and fetche a ladder that you
" may come downe: force your self to set your honoures
" care on him, for whome bothe then, and nowe besides
" many other times, you haue not feared to put the same
" in perill: why doe you not cal for him to come and help
" you? and to whome doth your helpe better appertaine
" than vnto him? You are his owne, & what things will

he

he not prouide in this distresse of yours? or else what
person will hée séeke to succour, if not to helpe and suc-
cour you? Cal him (foolish woman) and proue if the loue
which thou beares him, and thy wit together with his,
be able to deliuer thée from my folie, wherat (whé both
you were togethers) you toke your pleasure. And now
thou hast experiéce whether my folly or the loue which
thou diddest beare vnto him, is the greatest. And be not
now so liberall and curteous of that which I go not a-
bout to séeke. Reserue thy good nightes to thy beloued
friend, if thou chaunce to escape from hence aliue; for
from my selfe I clérely discharge you both. And truely
I haue had to much of one: and sufficient it is for me to
be mocked once. Moreouer by thy craftie talke vttered
by subtill speache, and by thyne vntimely praise, thou
thinkest to force the getting of my good will, and thou
callest me Gentleman, valiant man, thinking thereby
to withdrawe my valiant minde from punishing of thy
wretched body: but thy flateries shal not yet blear mine
vnderstanding eyes, as once with thy vnfaithfull pro-
mises thou diddest beguile my ouerweening wit. I now
to well do know, and thereof doe thée well assure, that
all the time I was a scholer in *Paris*, I neuer learned so
much, as thou in one night diddest me to vnderstande.
But put the case that I wer a valiãt man, yet thou art
none of them vpon whom valiance ought to shewe his
effectes: for the ende of repentance in such cruel beasts
as thou art, and the like reuenge, oughte to be death a-
lone: where amongs men thy pitifull plaintes whiche
so lamẽtably thou speakest, ought to suffise. But yet as
I am no Eagle, & thou no Doue, but a most venomous
serpent, I intende so well as I am able, to persecute
thée mine auncient enimie, with the greatest malice I
can deuise, which I can not so properly call reuenge, as

" I may terme it correction: for that the reuẽge of a mat-
" ter ought to surmount the offense, & yet I wil bestow
" no reuenge on thée: for if I wer disposed to applie my
" mynde therunto, for respect of thy displeasure done to
" me, thy life shoulde not suffise, nor one hundred more
" like vnto thine: which if I toke away, I shold but rid
" a vile, mischeuous & wicked woman out of the world.
" And to say the truth, what other deuill art thou (to let
" passe a litle beautie in thy face, which within few yea-
" res will be so riueled as the oldest cribbe of the world)
" but the most vnhappie and wicked woman, the dame of
" the diuell himselfe: for thou takest no care to kill and
" destroy an honest man (as thou euen now diddst terme
" me) whose life, may in time to come bée more profita-
" ble to the worlde, than an hundred thousande suche as
" thyne, so long as the worlde indureth. I wil teach thée
" then by the pain thou suffrest, what it is to mock such
" men as be of skil, and what maner of thyng it is to de-
" lude and scorne poore Scholers, giuyng thée warning
" hereby, that thou neuer fall into such like follie, if thou
" escapest thys. But if thou haue so great a wil to come
" downe as thou sayest thou hatte, why doest thou not
" leape and throwe downe thy selfe, that by breaking of
" thy necke (if it so please God) at one instant thou ridde
" thy selfe of the payne, wherin thou sayest thou art, and
" make me the beste contented man of the worlde. For
" this time I will saye no more to thée, but that I haue
" done inough for thée, by making thée to mount so high.
" Lerne then now so wel how thou mayst get downe, as
" thou diddst know how to mock & deceiue me. While the
" Scholer had preached vnto hir these words, ỳ wretched
" womã wept continually, & the time stil did passe away,
" the sunne rising more and more: but when she percey-
" ued that he held his peace, she answered: O cruel man,

if the

& the curſed night was grieuous vnto thée, & my faulte
appeared great, can not my youth and beautie, my tea-
res and humble prayers be able to mitigate thy wrath
and to moue thée to pitie: do at leaſt that thou mayſt be
moued & thy cruel minde appeaſed for that only act, let
me once again be truſted of thée, and ſith I haue mani-
feſted al my deſire, pardon me, for this time, thou haſte
ſufficiently made me feele the penãce of my ſinne. For,
if I had not repoſed my truſt in thée, thou hadſt not now
reuenged thy ſelf on me, which with ardent deſire, thou
doſt ful wel declare. Giue ouer then thine anger, & par-
don me hẽceforth: for I am determined if thou wilt for-
gine me, & cauſe me to come downe out of this place, to
forſake for euer ỳ vnfaithful louer, & to receiue thée for
my only friend & lord. Moreouer wher thou gretly bla-
meſt my beautie, eſteeming it to be ſhort, & of ſmall ac-
compt, ſuch as it is, & the like of other women I know,
not to be regarded for other cauſe but for paſtime & ple-
ſure of youthly mẽ, & therfore not to be contẽned: & thou
thy ſelf truly art not very old: & albeit that cruelly I am
intreated of thée, yet therfore I cãnot beleue that thou
wouldeſt haue me ſo miſerably to die, as to caſt my ſelfe
down hedlong, like one deſperate, before thy eies, whõ
(except thou wer a lier as thou art now becom) in time
paſt I did wel pleaſe & like. Haue pitie then vpon me,
for Gods ſake, for ỳ Sun begins to grow erceding hot,
& as the extreme & bitter cold did hurt me the laſt night
euen ſo ỳ heat beginneth to moleſt me. Wherevnto the
Scholer which kept hir there for the nonce, and for his
pleſure, anſwered: Miſtreſſe you did not now cõmit your
faith to me for loue you bare me, but to haue ỳ againe,
which you had loſt, wherfore ỳ deſerueth no good turne,
but greter pain: And fondly ỳ thinkeſt this to be ỳ only
meanes, wherby I am able to take deſired reuenge. For

" I haue a thousand other wayes, and a thousand trapps
" haue I layde to tangle thy fæte, in making thée beleeue
" that I dyd loue thée, in such wise as thou shouldest haue
" gone no where at any time, if this had not chaunced,
" but thou shouldest haue fallen into one of them: & sure-
" ly thou couldest haue chaunced into neither of them,
" but would haue bred thée more annoyaunce and shame
" than this (which I chose not for thine ease, but for my
" greater pleasure.) And wher all these meanes had fay-
" led me, the penne should not, wherwith I would haue
" displayed thée in such colours, as when it had come to
" thy knowledge, thou wouldest haue desired a thousand
" times a day, that thou hadst neuer ben borne. For the
" forces of the pen be farre more vehement, than they
" can esteeme that haue not proued them by experience.
" I sweare vnto thée by God, that I do reioise, and so wil
" to the end, for this reuenge I take of thée, and so haue
" I done from the beginning: but if I had with pen pain-
" ted thy maners to the worlde, thou shouldest not haue
" bene so much ashamed of other, as of thy selfe, that ra-
" ther than thou wouldest haue loked me in the face a-
" gaine, thou wouldest haue plucked thyne eyes oute of
" thy head: and therfore reproue no more the sea, for be-
" ing increased with a litle broke. For thy loue, or ỳ thou
" be mine own, I care not, as I haue already tolde thée, &
" loue him againe if thou canst, so much as thou wilte,
" to whome for the hatred that I haue borne him, I pre-
" sently doe beare so much good will againe, and, for the
" benefite which he hath done thée now. You bée inamo-
" red and desire the loue of yong mẽ, bicause you sée their
" colour somewhat freshe, their beard more blacke, their
" bodies well shaped to daunce and runne at tilt & ryng,
" but all these qualities haue they had, that be growne to
" elder yeares, and they by good experience knowe what

other

other are yet to learne. Moreouer you deeme them the better horsmen, because they can iorney more miles a day than those that be of farther yeares. Truly I confesse, that with great force they please suche Veneriall Gentlewomen as you be, who do not perceiue (like sauage beastes) what heapes of euill do lurke vnder the forme of faire apparance. Yong men be not contente with one louer, but so many as they beholde, they doe desire, and of so many they thinke themselues worthy: wherfore their loue can not be stable. And that this is true, thou mayst now beare true witnesse thy self. And they thinkyng them selues worthie to be honoured and cherished of their paramors, haue none other glory but to vaunt of those whom they haue enioyed: which fault maketh many to yelde themselues to those that be discrete and wise, and to suche as be no blabbes or Telltales. And where thou sayest that thy loue is knowne to none, but to thy mayde and me, thou art deceyued, and wrongfully beleuest, if thou beleue the same: for al the inhabitants of the strete wherin thy louer dwelleth, & the strete also wherin thy house doth stand, talk of nothing more than of your loue. But many times in such cases, the partie whom such brute doth touch, is the last that knoweth the same. Moreouer, yong men do robbe thee, where they of elder yeres do gyue thee. Thou then (which hast made such choise) remaine to him whome thou hast chosen, & me (whom thou flouteste) giue leaue to applie to an other: for I haue founde a woman to be my friende, whiche is of an other discretion than thou art, and knoweth me better than thou dost. And that thou mayst in an other world be more certain of mine eyes desire, than thou hitherto art, Throwe thy selfe downe so sone as thou canst, that thy soule alreadie (as I suppose) receiued betwene the armes of the diuel hum

" selfe may se, if mine eies be troubled or not, to viewe the
" breake thy neck. But because I think thou wilt not do
" me that good turne, I say if ỳ Sun begin to warme the,
" remember the cold which thou madest me suffer, which
" if thou cãst mingle with that heat, no doubt thou shalt
" feele the same more temperate. The comfortlesse wo-
man seeing that the Scholers words tended but to cru-
" ell end, began to weepe & said: Now then, sith nothing
" can moue thee to take pitie for my sake, at lest wise for
" the loue of hir, whom thou sayest to be of better discre-
" tion than I, take some compassion: For hir sake (I say)
" whom thou callest thy frend, pardon me & bring hither
" my clothes ỳ I may put them on, & cause me if it please
" thee to come downe from hence. Then the Scholer be-
gan to laugh, & seing ỳ it was a good while past. iij. of the
" clock, he answered: Well go to, for ỳ womans sake I
" cãnot wel say nay, or refuse thy request, tell me where
" thy garments be, and I wil go seke them, & cause thee to
" come down: She beleuing that, was somwhat comfor-
ted, and told him the place where she had bestowed thẽ.
And the Scholer went out of the Toure, & cõmaunded
his seruant to tarie there, & to take heede that none wẽt
in vntil he came againe. Then he wente to one of hys
frends houses, where he wel refreshed himselfe, and af-
terwards when he thought time, he laide him downe to
slẽpe. Al that space mistresse Helena which was stil v-
pon the Toure, and recõforted with a litle foolish hope,
sorowfull beyond measure, began to sit downe, seking
some shadowed place to bestow hir self, and with bitter
thoughts & heuy chere in good deuotiõ, waited for his cõ-
ming, now musing, now weping, thẽ hoping, & sodainly
dispairing ỳ Scholers returne wt hir clothes: & chãging
frõ one thought to an other, like one that was wery of
trauel, & had takẽ no rest al the night, she fel into a litle
slumbre. But ỳ sun which was passing hot, being about
none

none, glanced his burning beames vpon hir tender body & bare head, with such force, as not only it singed ẏ flesh in sight, but also did chip & parch the same, with such rosting heat, as she which soundly slepte, was constrained to wake: & feeling that raging warmth, desirous somewhat to remoue hir self, she thought in turning ẏ al hir rosted skin had opened and broken, like vnto a skyn of parchment holden against the fire: besides which payne extreme, hir heade began to ake, with such vehemence, as it seemed to be knocked in peces: And no maruel, for the pauement of the Toure was so passing hotte, as neyther vpon hir feete, or by other remedie, she could fynde place of reste. Wherefore without power to abide in one place, she stil remoued weping bitterly. And moreouer, for that no winde did blow, the Toure was filled with such a swarme of Flies and Gnats, as they lighting vpon hir parched flesh, did so cruelly bite and sting hir, that euery of them semed worse than the pricke of a needle, which made hir to beskirre hir hãds, incessantly to beate them off, cursing still hir selfe, hir life, hir frend and Scholer. And being thus and with such pain bitte and afflicted with the vehement heat of the Sun, with the flies and gnats, hungrie, & much more thirsty, assailed with a thousãd grieuous thoughts, she arose vp, & began to loke about hir, if she could hear or see any person, purposing whatsoeuer came of it to call for helpe. But hir yll fortune had taken away al this hoped meanes of hir relefe: for the husbandmen and other laborers wer all gone out of the fields to throwde thẽselues from heate, sparing their trauail abrode, to thresh their corne, and do other things at home, by reason whereof, she neither saw or heard any thing, except Butterflies, humble bees, crickets, & the ryuer of *Arno*, which making hir lust to drink of ẏ water, quenched hir thirst nothing

thing at all, but rather did augment the same. She sate besides in many places, woodes, shadowes and houses, which likewise did bréede hir double griefe, for desire she had vnto the same. But what shall we speake any more of this vnhappy woman? The Sunne aboue, and the hot Toure paiment below, with the bitings of the flies and gnats, had on euery part so dressed hir tender corps, that where before the whitenesse of hir body did passe the darkenesse of the night, the same was become red, all arayed and spotted with gore bloud, that to the beholder and viewer of hir state, she semed the most ill fauored thing of the world: & remaining in this plight, without hope or councel, she loked rather for death thã other comfort. The Scholer after the clocke had sounded thrée in the after noone, awaked, and remembring his Ladie, went to the Toure to sée what was become of hir, & sent his man to dinner, that had eaten nothing all that day. The Gentlewoman hearing the Scholer, repaired so feeble and tormented as she was, vnto the trap dore, and sitting vpon the same, pitifully wéeping
" began to say: Rinieri, thou art beyond measure reuen-
" ged on me, for if I made thée freese all night in mine
" open court, thou hast tosted me to day vpõ this Toure,
" nay rather burnt, and with heat consumed me: and be-
" sides that, to die & sterue for hunger and thirst. Wher-
" fore I pray thée for Gods sake to come vp, and sith my
" heart is faint to kill my self, I pray thée heartely to doe
" the same. For aboue all things I desire to die, so great
" and bitter is the torment which I endure. And if thou
" wilt not shew me that fauor, yet cause a glasse of wa-
" ter to be brought vnto me, ỳ I may moisten my mouth,
" sith my teares be not able to cole the same, so great is
" the drouth & heat I haue within. Wel knew the Scho-
ler by hir voice, hir weake estate, and saw besides the

most

moſt part of hir body all toſted with the Sunne: by the
viewe whereof, and humble ſute of hir, he conceiued a
little pitie. Notwithſtanding he anſweared hir in this
wiſe: Wicked woman thou ſhalt not die with my
hands, but of thine owne, if thou deſire the ſame, and ſo
much water ſhalt thou haue of me, for cooling of thine
heat, as dampned Diues had in hell at Lazarus handes,
when he lifted vp his cry to Abraham, holding that ſa-
ued wight within his bleſſed boſome, or as I had fire
of thée for eaſing of my colde. The greater is my griefe
that the vehemence of my colde muſt be cured with the
heat of ſuch a ſtincking carion beaſt, and thy heat hea-
led with the coldneſſe of moſt ſote and ſauerous water
diſtilled frō the orient roſe. And where I was in dan-
ger to loſe my limmes and life, thou wilt renewe thy
beautie like the Serpent when he caſteth of his ſkin.
Oh I miſerable wretche (ſayd the woman) God giue
him ſuch beautie gotten in ſuche wiſe, that wilbeth me
ſuch euill. But (thou more cruel than any other beaſt)
what heart haſt thou, thus like a Tyrant to deale with
me? What more grieuous paine could I endure of thée,
or of any other, than I doe, if I had killed and done to
death thy parents, or whole race of thy ſtocke and kin
with moſt cruell torments. Truely I know not what
greater cruelty could be vſed againſt a Trayter which
had ſacked or put a whole Citie to the ſworde, than that
thou haſt done to me, to make my fleſh to be the fode &
roſt meat of the Sunne, and the bait for licorous fiſhes,
not vouchſafing to reache hither a ſimple glaſſe of wa-
ter, which would haue bene graunted to the condemp-
ned théefe and manqueller, when they be haled forth to
hanging, yea wine moſt commōly, if they aſke ỹ ſame.
Now for that I ſée thē ſtil remaine in obſtinate mind,
and that my paſſion can nothing moue thée, I will pre-

"pare pacientlye to receiue my death, that God may haue
"mercy on my soule, whome I humbly do beseeche with
"his righteous eyes to beholde that cruell facte of thine.
And with those wordes, she approched with pain to the middle of ỳ terrasse, despairing to escape that burning heat, and not only once, but a thousand times, (besides hir other sorowes) she thought to sowne for thirst, and bitterly wept without ceasing, complaining hir misse-happe.

But being almost night, the Scholer thought he had done inough, wherfore he toke hir clothes, & wrapping the same within his seruaunts cloke, he went home to the Gentlewomans house, where he founde before the gate, hir maide sitting all sad and heauie, of whome he "asked where hir mistresse was. Syr (sayd she) I cannot "tell, I thought this morning to finde hir a bed, where I "left hir yester night, but I cannot finde hir there, nor in "any other place, ne yet can tel whether to goe seke hir, "which maketh my heart to throbbe some misfortune "chaunced vnto hir. But (sir quod she) can not you tell "where she is? The Scholler answered: I would thou "haddest bene with hir in the place where I lefte hir, "that I might haue bene reuenged on thee so well, as I "am of hir. But beleue assuredly, that thou shalt not es-"cape my handes vntill I pay thee thy deserte, to the in-"tent hereafter in mocking other, thou maist haue cause "to remember me. When he had sayd so, he willed his man to giue the maide hir mistresse clothes, and then did bidde hir to seke hir out if she would. The seruaunt did his maisters commaundement, and the maide hauing receiued them, knewe them by and by, and marking well the Scholers wordes, she doubted least he had slaine hir mistresse, and much adoe she had to refraine from crying out. And the Scholer being gone,

she

she toke hir mistresse garmentes and ranne vnto the Toure.

That day by happe, one of the Gentlewomans labouring men, hadde two of his Hogges runne a stray, and as he went to seeke them (a little while after the Scholers departure) he approched neare the Toure, loking round about if he might see them. In the busie searche of whome he heard the miserable plaint that the vnhappie woman made, wherefore so loude as he coulde, he cried out: Who weepeth there aboue? the woman knewe the voice of hir man, and calling him by his name, she sayd vnto him: Coe home I pray thee to call my maide, and cause hir to come vp hither vnto me. The fellowe knowing his mistresse voice, sayd vnto hir: what Dame, who hathe borne you vp so highe? your maide hath sought you all this day, and who would haue thought to finde you there? He then taking the staues of the ladder, did set it vp against the Toure as it ought to be, and bounde the steppes that were wanting, with fastenings of Willowe twigges, and suche like pliant stuffe as hee coulde finde. And at that instant the maide came thither, who so soone as she was entred the Toure, not able to forbeare hir voice, beating hir handes, she began to cry: Alas sweete mistresse where be you? she hearing the voice of hir maide answered so well as she coulde: Ah (sweete wenche) I am heere aboue, crie no more, but bring me hither my clothes.

When the maide heard hir speake, by and by for ioy, in haste she mounted vp the Ladder, which the labourer had made ready, and with his helpe gate vp to the ferralle of the Toure, and seeing hir Mistresse resembling not a humane body, but rather a wodden faggot halfe consumed with fire, all weary and withered, lying

lying a long starke naked vpon the ground, she began with hir nailes to weeke the griefe vpon hir face, and wept ouer hir with such vehemencie as if she had bene dead. But hir Dame prayed hir for Gods sake to holde hir peace, and to help hir to make hir ready: and vnderstanding by hir that no man knewe where she was become, except they which caried home hir clothes, & the labourer that was present there, she was somewhat recomforted, and prayed them for Gods sake to say nothing of that chaunce to any person. The labourer after much talk & request to his mistres, to be of good chere, when she was risen vp, caried hir down vpon his neck, for that she was not able to goe so farre, as out of the Moure. The poore maide which came behinde, in going downe the ladder without taking heede, hir foote failed hir, & falling downe to the ground, she brake hir thigh, for griefe whereof she began to roare and cry out like a Lion. Wherefore the labourer having placed his dame vpon a greene bank, went to see what the maid did aile, and perceiuing that she had broken hir thigh, he caried hir likewise vnto that banke, and placed hir besides hir mistresse, who seeing one mischiefe vpon another to chaunce, and that she of whome she hoped for greater helpe, than of any other, had broken hir thigh, sorowful beyonde measure, renewed hir cry so miserably, as not only the labourer was not able to comforte hir, but he himselfe began to weepe for company. The Sunne hauing trauailed into his Westerne course, and taking his farewell by settling himself to rest, was at ẏ point of going downe. And the poore desolate women vnwilling to be benighted, went home to the labourers house, where taking two of his brothers and his wife, returned to fetch the maide, and caried hir home in a chaire. Then chearing vp his dame with a little fresh water, &

many

many faire woꝛdes, he caried hir vp vpon his necke into a chãber, afterwards his wife made hir warme dꝛinks and meates, & putting of hir clothes, laid hir in hir bed, and toke oꝛder that the miſtreſſe and maide that night were caried to *Florence*, where the miſtreſſe full of lies deuiſed a tale all out of oꝛder of that which chaunced to hir and hir maide, making hir bꝛethꝛen, hir ſiſters, and other hir neighbeaures beleue, that by ſtuſh of lightning and euill ſpꝛites, hir face and body were bliſtered, and the maiden ſtroken vnder the arſe bone with a Thunderbolt. Then Phyſitians were ſẽt foꝛ, who not without great griefe and paine to the woman (which many times left hir ſkin ſticking to the ſheetes) cured hir cruell feuer and other hir diſeaſes, and likewiſe the maid of hir thigh: which cauſed the Gentlewoman to foꝛget hir loue, and from that time foꝛth wiſely did beware and take heede whom ſhe did mocke, and where ſhe did beſtow hir loue. And the Scholer knowing ẏ the maid had bꝛoken hir thigh, thought himſelf ſufficiently reuenged, to paſſe by them bothe many times in ſilence. Beholde the reward of a foliſh wanton widowe foꝛ hir mockes and flouts, thinking that no great care oꝛ moꝛe pꝛouident hede ought to be taken in ieſting wꝫ a Scholer, than with any other cõmon perſon, noꝛ well remembꝛing how they doe know (not all, I ſay, but the greateſt part) where the Diuell holdeth his taile: and therfoꝛe take hede good wiues and widowes, how you giue your ſelues to mockes and daliaunce, ſpecially of Scholers. But now turne we to another widowe that was no amoꝛous dame, but a ſober matrone, a motherly gentlewoman, ẏ by pitie and money redemed & raiſed a Kings ſonne out of miſerable captiuity, being vtterly abandoned of all his frendes. The maner and meanes how, the Nouel enſuing ſhall ſhewe.

Camiola and Rolande.

¶ A Gentlewoman and widowe called CAMIOLA, of hir owne minde raunsomed ROLANDE, the kings sonne of Sicilia, of purpose to haue him to hir husband, who when he was redemed, vnkindely denied hir, against whome very eloquently she inueyed, and although the lawe proued him to be hir husband, yet for his vnkindenesse, she vtterly refused him.

The xxxij. Nouel.

BVsa a Gentlewoman of *Apulia*, maintained ten thousand *Romaine* souldiers within the walles of *Cannas*, that were the remnaunt of the armie after ỹ ouerthrow ther: and yet hir state of richesse was safe and nothing deminished, and lefte thereby a worthy testimonie of liberalitie as Valerius Maximus affirmeth. If this worthy woman Busa for liberalitie is commended by auncient authors: if she deserue a monument amonges famous writers for that splendent vertue which so brightly blasoneth the Heroicall natures of Noble dames, then may I be so bolde amonges these Nouels to bring in (as it were by the hand) a widow of *Messina*, that was a gentlewoman borne, adorned with passing beautie and vertues. Amongs ỹ rank

messina

of

of which hir comely qualities, the vertue of liberalitie glistered like the morning starre after the night hath cast of his darke and cloudie mantell. This gentlewoman remaining in widowes state, and hearing tell that one of the sonnes of Federick, and brother to Peter that was then king of the sayd Iland called Rolande, was caried prisoner to *Naples*, and there kept in miserable captiuitie, and not like to be redæmed by his brother for a displeasure conceiued, nor by any other, pitying the state of the yong Gentleman, and moued by hir gentle and couragious disposition, and specially with the vertue of liberalitie, raunsomed the sayd Rolande, and craued no interest or vsury for the same, but him to husbād, that ought vpon his knees to haue made sute to be hir slaue and seruaunt for respect of his miserable state of imprisonment. An affiaunce betwæne them was concluded, and he redæmed, and whē he was returned, he failed his former faith, and cared not for hir. For which vnkinde part, she before his friends inueyeth against that ingratitude, and vtterly forsaketh him, when (fore ashamed) he would very faine haue recouered hir good will. But she like a wise Gentlewoman well waying his inconstant minde before marriage, lusted not to tast, or put in proofe the fruites & successe thereof. The intire discourse of whome you shall briefly and presently vnderstand.

Camiola a widow of the Citie of *Siena*, ỹ daughter of a gentle knight called Signor Lorenzo Toringo, was a woman of great renoume & fame, for hir beautie, liberalitie & shamefastnesse, and led a life in *Messina*, (an auncient Citie of *Sicile* no lesse commendable than famous, in the cōpany of hir parents, contenting hir self with one only husband, while she liued, which was in the time when Federick the third was king of that Ile:

and

and after their death she was an heire of very great wealth and richesse, which were alwayes by hir cõserued and kept in marueilous honest sort. Now it chaunced that after the death of Federick, Peter succeeding, by his commaundement a great armie by sea was equipped from *Messina*, vnder the conduct of Iohn Countie of *Chiaramonte*, (the most renowmed in those dayes in feats of warre,) for to aide the people of *Lippari*, which were so strongly and earnestly beseged, as they were almost all dead and cõsumed for hunger. In this army, ouer and besides those that were in pay, many Barons and Gentlemen willingly went vpon their owne proper costes and charges, as wel by sea as land, onely for fame, and to be renowmed in armes. This Castell of *Lippari* was assaulted by Godefrey of *Squilatio* a valiant man, and at that time Admiral to Robert King of *Ierusalem* and *Sicile*: which Godefrey by long siege & assault had so famished ẏ people within, as daily he hoped they would surrender. But hauing aduertisement (by certain Brigandens which he had sent abrode to scour the seas) that the enimies armie (which was farre greater than his) was at hand, after that he had assembled al his naule togither in one sure place, he expected the euent of fortune. The enimies so sone as they were seased & possessed of the place, without any resistaunce of ẏ places abandoned by Godefrey, caried into the city at their pleasure all their victualles, which they brought with them. for which good hap and chaunce the saide Counte Iohn being very much encouraged and puffed vp with pride, offred battell to Godefrey. Wherefore he not refusing the same, being a man of great corage, in ẏ night time fortified his army with bordes, timber, and other rampiers, and hauing put his naule in good order, he encoraged his men to fight, and to doe valiantly the next

day,

day, which done, he caused the Ankers to be wayed, and giuing the signe, tourned the prowesse of his shippes against ꝯ *Sicilians* armie, but Counte Iohn who thought that Godefrey would not fight, and durst not once loke vpon ꝯ great army of the *Sicilians*, did not put his fleete in order of fight, but rather in readinesse to pursue the ennimies. But seeing the courage and the approche of them that came against him, began to feare, his heart almost failing him, and repēted him that he had required his enimie to that which he thought neuer to haue obtained. In such wise as mistrusting the battel, with troubled minde, chaunging the order giuen, and notwithstanding not to seeme altogither fearefull, inconstinently caused his ships to be put into order after the best maner he could for so little time, himselfe giuing the signe of battell. In the meane while their enimies being approched nere vnto them, and making a very great noise with cries and shoutes furiously entred with the prowesse of the shippes amongs the *Sicilians*, which came slowly forthe, & hauing first throwne their hookes and grapples to stay them, they began the fight with Dartes, Crossebowes and other shot, in such sort as the *Sicilians* being amazed for the sodaine mutacion of Councell, and all enuironned with feare, and the souldiers of Godefrey perceiuing ꝯ same, entred their enimies ships, and comming to blowes, euen in a moment all was filled with bloud, by reason whereof the *Sicilians* then despairing of them selues, and they that feared turning the prowesse, fled away: but neuerthelesse the victorie reclining towardes Godefrey, many of their shippes were drowned, many taken, and diuers Pinnasses by force of their oares escaped. In that fight died fewe people, but many were hurt, and Iohn the captaine general taken prisoner, and with him almost

all the Barons, which of their owne accordes repaired to those warres, and besides a great number of souldiers, many Enlignes aswel of the field, as of the galleis, and specially the maine standerd was taken. And in ẏ end, the Castell being rendred after long voyages, and great fortunes by Sea, they were al chained, caried to *Naples* and there imprisoned. Amonges those prisonners, there was a certaine Gentleman called Roland, the naturall Sonne of king Federick deceased, a yong Prince very comely and valiant. Who not being redeemed, taried alone in prison very sorowfull to see all others discharged after they had paid their raunsome, and himselfe not to haue wherewith to furnishe the same. For king Pietro (to whome the care of him appertained by reason he was his brother) for that his warres hadde no better successe, and done contrary to his commaundement, conceiued displeasure so well against him, as all others which were at that battell. Nowe he then being prisoner without hope of any libertie, by meanes of the dampishe prison, and his feete clogged with yrons, grewe to be sicke and feeble. It chaunced by fortune, that Camiola remembred him, and seeing him forsaken of his brethren, had compassion vpon his misshappe, in such wise, as she purposed (if honestly she might doe the same) to set him at libertie. For the accomplishment whereof without preiudice of hir honoure, she sawe none other wayes but to take him to husbande. Wherefore she sent diuers vnto him secretely, to conferre if he wold come forth vpon that condition, whereunto he willingly agreed. And performing eche due ceremonie, vnder promised faith, vpon the gift of a ring willingly by a deputie he espoused Camiola, who with so much diligence as she could, payed two thousand Crownes for his raunsome, and

by

by that meanes he was deliuered.

When he was returned to *Meßina*, he repaired not to his wife, but fared as though there had neuer bene any ſuche talke betweene them, whereof at the beginning Camiola very much maruelled, and afterwardes knowing his vnkindeneſſe, was greately offended in hir heart againſt him. Notwithſtanding, to the entent ſhe might not ſeeme to be grieued wout reaſon, before ſhe proceded any further, cauſed him louingly to be talked withal, and to be exhorted by folowing his promiſe to conſummate the mariage. And ſeeing that he denyed euer any ſuch contract to be made, ſhe cauſed him to be ſummoned before ẏ Eccleſiaſtical iudge, by whom ſentence was giuen that he was hir huſband by euidẽce of his owne letters, & by witneſſe of certain other perſonages of good reputation, which afterwards he himſelf cõfeſſed, his face bluſhing for ſhame, for that he had forgotten ſuch a manifeſt benefit and good turne. When ẏ kinde parte of Camiola done vnto him, was throughly knowen, he was by his brethren reproued & checked for his villany: wherupõ by their inſtigation & the perſuaſion of his friends, he was cõtented by hũble requeſt to deſire Camiola to performe the Nuptials. But the gentlewomã which was of great corage, in the preſence of diuers ẏ were with him, when he required hir therunto, anſwered him in this manner: Roland I haue great cauſe to render thankes to almighty God, for ẏ it pleaſed him to declare vnto me the proofe of thine vnfaithfulneſſe, before thou didſt by any meanes contaminate (vnder the coloure of mariage) thy puritie of my body, and that through his fauor, by whoſe moſt holy name thou went'eſt about to abuſe me by falſe and periured othe, I haue foreſeene thy Trumperie and deceite, wherin I belene that I haue gained more, than I ſhold

" haue done by thée in mariage. I suppose that whē thou
" were in prison, thou diddest meane no lesse, than nowe
" by effect thou shewest, and diddest thinke that I, forget-
" ting of what house I was, presumptuously desired a
" husband of the royall bloud, and therfore wholly infla-
" med with thy loue, diddest purpose to begile me by de-
" nying the trothe, when thou haddest recouered libertie
" through my money, and thereby to reserue thy self for
" some other of more famous alliance, being restored to
" thy former degrée. And hereby thou hast giuen proofe of
" thy will, and what minde thou haddest so to do if thine
" abilitie had bene correspondent. But God, who frō the
" lofty skies doth behold the humble & low, and who for-
" saketh none that hopeth in him, knowing the sinceritie
" of my conscience, hath giuen me the grace by litle tra-
" uaile, to breake the bandes of thy deceiptes, to discouer
" thine ingratitude, and make manifest thine infidelitie,
" which I haue not done only to display ẏ wrōg towards
" me, but ẏ thy brethren & other thy friends might from
" hēceforth know what thou art, what affiāce they ought
" to repose in thy faith, & thereby what thy friends ought
" to loke for, & what thine enimies ought to feare. I haue
" lost my money, thou thy good name. I haue lost ẏ hope
" which I had of thée, thou the fauor of ẏ king and of thy
" brethren: I the expectation of my mariage, thou a true
" & constant wife: I the fruits of charitie, thou ẏ gaine of
" amity: I an vnfaithful husbād, thou a most pure & loyal
" wife. Now the Gētlewomen of *Sicilia* do maruel at my
" magnificence and beautie, and by praises aduaunce the
" same vp into the heauēs: and contrariwise euery of thē
" do mock thé, & déeme thée to be infamous. The renou-
" med writers of eche coūtrey will place me amōgs the
" ranke of ẏ noblest dames, wher thou shalt be depressed
" & throwne down amongs the heapes of ẏ most vnkind.

True

True it is, that I am somwhat deceiued by deliuering
out of prison, a yong man of royall and noble race, in
stede of whome I haue redeemed a rascall, a lier, a fal-
sifier of his faith, and a cruell beast: and take hede har-
dily how thou do greatly esteeme thy selfe, & I wish thée
not to think that I was moued to draw thée out of pri-
son, and take thée to husband for the good qualities that
were in thée, but for the memorie of auncient benefits
which my father receiued of thine (if Federike, a king of
most sacred remembraunce were thy father, for I can
scarsly beleue, that a sonne so dishonest should procede
from so noble a gentlemã as was that famous prince.)
I knowe well thou thinkest that it was an vnworthie
thing, that a Widow not being of the royal blood, shold
haue to husband, the sonne of a king, so strong and of
so goodly personage, which I willyngly confesse: but I
would haue thée a litle to make me answer (at lest wise
if thou canst by reason) when I paide so great a summe
of money to deliuer thée from bondage and captiuitie,
where was then the nobilitie of thy royal race? where
was thy force of youth? and where thy beautie? if not
that they were closed vp in a terrible prison, where
thou wast deteined in bitter grief and sorow, and there
with those naturall qualities, couered also in obscure
darknesse, that compassed thée rounde about. The yl fa-
uored noise and tanglyng of thy chaines, the deformi-
tie of thy face forced for lack of light, and the stench of
the infected prison that prouoked sickenesse, and the for-
saking of thy friends, had quite debased all these per-
fections wherwith now thou séemest to be so lustie.
Thou thoughtest me then to be worthie, not only of a
yong man of a royall blood, but of a God, if it were pos-
sible to haue him, & so sone as (thou contrary to al hope)
didst once visite thy naturall countrey, like a most pe-

" ſtilent perſon, without any difficultie, haſte chaunged
" thy minde, neuer ſince thou waſt deliuered, once dyd
" call into thy remembraunce how I was that Camiola,
" that I was ſhe (alone) that dyd remembre thée: that I
" was (ſhe alone) that had compaſſion on thy miſſehap,
" and that I was onely ſhée, who for thy health dyd im-
" ploye all the gődes ſhe hadde. I am, I am (I ſay) that
" Camiola, who by hir money raunſomed thée out of the
" handes of the Capitall enimies of thyne auncеſters,
" from fetters, from priſon: & finally deliuered thée from
" miſerie extreme, before thou wer altogether ſettled in
" diſpaire. I reduced thée againe to hope, I haue reuoked
" thée into thy cõũtrey, I haue brought thée into ẏ royall
" palace, and reſtored thée into thy former eſtate, and of
" a priſoner weake, and vlcanored, haue made thée a yong
" Prince, ſtrong, and of fayre aſpecte. But wherefore
" haue I remembred theſe thyngs, wherof thou ought-
" eſt to be verie mindefull thy ſelfe, and whyche thou
" art not able to denie? With that for ſo great beneſites
" thou haſt rendred me ſuch thankes, as being my huſ-
" bande in dēde, thou haddeſt the face to denie me ma-
" riage, alreadie contracted by the depoſition of honeſt
" witneſſes, and approued by letters ſigned with thine
" owne hande. Wherefore diddeſt thou deſpiſe me that
" hath deliuered thée? Yea and if thou couldeſt haue ſtai-
" ned the name of hir with infamie, that was thine only
" refuge and defender, yea and wouldeſt gladly haue
" giuen cauſe to the common people, to thinke leſſe than
" honeſtie of hir. Art thou aſhamed (thou man of little
" iudgement) to haue to wyfe a wydow, the daughter of
" a knight? O how far better had it bene for thée to haue
" ben aſhamed to breake thy promiſed faith, to haue deſ-
" piſed the holy and dreadfull name of God, and to haue
" declared by thy curſſed vnkindneſſe, howe full fraught

thou

thou art with vice. I do confesse in dede that I am not
of the royall blode: notwithstanding from the cradle,
being trained and brought vp in the companie of kings
wines and daughters, no great maruell it is, if I haue
indued and put on a royall heart and manners, that is
able to get and purchase royal nobilitie. But wherfore
do I multiplie so many wordes? No no I wil be very fa-
cile and easie in that wherin thou hast ben to me so dif-
ficult and harde by resisting the same with all thy po-
wer. Thou hast refused heretofore to be mine, and ha-
uing banquished thée, to be such, frankly of mine owne
accorde, I doe graunt that thou art not. Abide (on Gods
name) with thy royall nobilitie, neuertheless defiled
with the spot of infidelitie. Make much of thy youthly
lustinesse, & of thy transitorie beautie, and I shal be cō-
tented with my widow apparell, and shall leaue the ri-
ches which god hath giuē me to heires more honest thā
those ỳ might haue come of thée. Auaunt thou wycked
yong man, & sith thou art cōpted to be vnworthy of me,
lerne with thine own expence, by what subtiltie & gui-
les thou mayest betray other dames, suffiseth it for me
to be once deceiued. And I for my part fully determine
neuer to tary lōger with thée, but rather chastly to liue
without husband, which life I deme far more excellent
than with thy match cōtinually to be coupled.

After shée had spoken these wordes, shée departed from him, and from that time forth, it was impossible either by prayers, or admonitions to cause hir chaunge hir holie intent. But Rolande all confused, repenting himself to late of his ingratitude, blamed of ecbe man, his eyes fixed vpon the grounde, anoyding not onely the presence of his brethren, but of all sorts of people, dayely ledde from that tyme forth, a moste miserable life, and neuer durst by reason to demaunde hir againe to wife,

to wife, whome he had by disloyaltie refused. The king and the other barons, marueiling of the noble heart of the Ladie, singularly commended hir, and exalted hir praises vp into ỹ skies, vncertaine neuertheleſſe wherin she was moſt worthie of praise, either for that (contrarie to the couetous nature of women) she had raunsomed a yong man with so great a summe of money, or elſe after she had deliuered him, and sentence giuẽ that he was hir husband, she so couragiously refused him, as an vnkinde man, vnworthie of hir company.

But leaue we for a time, to talke of widowes, and let vs sée what the Captaine and Lieutenant of *Nocera* can alledge vpon the diſcourſe of his cruelties, whiche although an ouer cruell hiſtorie, yet depainteth the ſucceſſe of thoſe that applie their mindes to the ſportes of Loue, ſuch Loue I meane, as is wantonly placed, and directed to no good purpoſe, but for glutting of the bodies delight, which bothe corrupteth nature, maketh feeble the body, lewdely ſpendeth the time, and ſpecially offendeth hym whō maketh proclamation, that whoremongers and adulterers ſhall neuer inherite his kingdom.

The Lordes of Nocera.

¶ Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of NOCERA, for adultry by one of them committed with the Captaines wife of the ſame of that Citie, with an enterpriſe moued by the Captaine to the Citizens of the ſame for rebellion, and the good and ductiful anſwer of them: with other pitiful euẽts riſing of that noteable and outragious vice of whoredome.

The xxxiij. Nouel.

THE furious rage of a huſband vnkinde for the chaſtitie violated in his wife, ſurpaſſeth all other, & ingendreth malice againſte the doer whatſoeuer he be. For if a Gentleman, or one of good nature, cannot abyde an other to doe him any kinde of diſpleaſure, & much leſſe to hurt him in his body, how is he able to endure to haue his honoure touched, ſpecially in that part which is ſo neere vnto him as his owne ſoule? Man and wife being as it were one body and one will, wherein men of good iudgement cannot well like the opinion of thoſe good fellowes which ſay

that the honoure of one that is lusty and corragious, dependeth not vpon the fault of a folishe woman. For if that were true which they so lightly vaunt, I wold demaunde wherfore they be so animated & angry against them which adorne their head with braunched hornes, the Enlignes of a Cuckolde. And truely nature hath so well prouided in that behalfe, as the very sauage beastes doe fight, and suffer death for suche honest iealosie. Yet will I not praise, but rather accuse aboue all faultie men, those that be so fondly iealous, as eche thing troubleth their minde, and be afraide of the flies very shadowe that buzze about their eares. For by paining & molesting themselues with a thing that so little doeth please and content them, vntill manifest and euident proofe appeare, they display the folly of their minds imperfection, and the weake stedfastnesse of their fantasy. But where the fault is knowne, & the vice discouered, where the husband seeth himselfe to receiue damage in the soundest part of his moueable goodes, reason it is ye he therein be aduised by timely deliberation and sage forecight, rather than with headlong fury & raging rashnesse to hazard the losse of his honor, and the ruin of his life and goodes. And like as the faith and fidelitie of the vndefiled bed hath in all times worthily bene cõmended: euen so he that polluteth it by infamie, beareth the penaunce of the same. Portia the daughter of Cato, and wife of Brutus shall be praised for euer, for the honest & inuiolable loue which she bare vnto hir beloued husband, almost like to lose hir life when she heard tell of his certaine death. The pudicitie of Paulina the wife of Seneca appeared also, when she assayed to die by ye same kinde of death wherewith hir husband violently was tormented by the vniust commaundement of the most

cruell

cruell and horrible Emperoure Nero. But whores and harlottes hauing honest husbandes, and well allied in kinne and ligneage, by abandoning their bodies, doe prodigally consume their good renowme: If they escape the Magistrates, or auoide the wrath of offended husbandes for the wrong done vnto them, yet they leaue an immortall slaunder of their wicked life, and youth thereby may take example aswell to shun suche shameleslle women, as to followe those Dames that be chaste and vertuous. Now of this contempt which the wife beareth to hir husband, doe rise very many times notorious slaunders, and suche as are accompanyed with passing cruelties: wherein the husband ought to moderate his heat and calme his choler, and soberly to chastise the fault, for so muche as excessiue wrath and anger, doe Eclipse in man the light of reason, and suche rages doe make them to be semblable vnto brute and reasonlelle beastes: Verie it is to be angrie for things done cõtrary to right & equitie, but tẽperance and modestie is necessary in all occurrentes, be they with vs, or against vs. But if to resist anger in those matters, it be harde and difficulte, it is also to be thought that the greater impossibilitie there is in the operation and effecte of any good thing, the greater is the glory that vanquisheth the affection and mastereth the first motion of the minde which is not so impossible to gouerne, and subdue to reason, as many doe esteeme.

A wise man then cannot so farre forget his duetie, as to excede the boundes and limites of reason, and to suffer his minde to wander from the siege of Temperaunce, which if he doe after he hath well mingled Water in his Wine, he may chaunce to finde cause of repentaunce, and by desire to repaire his offense,

augment his fault, sinne being so prompt and ready in man, as ỳ crime which might be couered with certain iustice, and coloured by some lawe or righteous cause, maketh him many times to fall into detestable vice and sinne, so contrary to mildnesse and modesty, as the very tyrants themselues would abhorre such wickednesse. And to the end that I do not trouble you with allegation of infinite numbres of examples, seruing to this purpose, ne render occasion of tediousnesse for you to reuolue so many bokes, I am cõtented for this present, to bring in place an History so ouer cruell, as the cause was reasonable, if duety in the one had bene cõsidered, and rage in the other bridled and forsane, who madly murdred and offended those that were nothing guiltie of the facte, which touched him so neare. And although that these be matters of loue, yet ỳ reader ought not to be grieued nor take in euill part, ỳ we haue still that argument in hand. For we doe not hereby go about to erect a scholehouse of loue, or to teache youth the wanton toyes of the same: but rather bring forthe these examples to withdraw that pliant and tẽder age of this our time, from the pursute of like follies, which may (were they not in this sort warned) ingender like effects that these our Histories doe recompt, and whereof you shall be partakers by reading the discourse that followeth.

Ye must then vnderstand, that in the time ỳ Braccio Montane, and Sforza Attendulo flourished in *Italie*, and were the chiefest of ỳ *Italian* men of warre, there were three Lordes and brethren, which helde vnder their authoritie and puissance *Fcligno*, *Nocera*, and *Treuio*, parcell of the Dukedome of *Spoleto*, who gouerned so louingly their landes togither, as without diuision, they maintained themselues in their estate, & liued in brotherly

sherly concorde. The name of the eldest of these three Lordes, was Nicholas, the second Cæsar, and the yongest Conrade, gentle personages, wise and welbeloued so wel of the Noble men their neighbors, as also of the Citezens that were vnder their obeysaunce, who in the end shewed greater loyaltie towards them, than those that had sworne their faith, and had giuen pledges for confirmation thereof, as ye shall perceiue by reading that which followeth. It chaūced that the eldest oftentimes repairing from *Foligno* to *Nocera*, and lodging still in ỳ Castell, beheld with a little to much wanton eye, the wife of his lieuetenaunt which was placed there with a good number of dead payes, to guard the forte, & kepe vnder the Citizens, if by chaunce (as it happeneth vpon the newe erection of estates) they attempted some newe enterprise against their soueraigne Lords. Now this Gentlewoman was faire, and of better grace singularly delighting to be loked vpon: which occasioned the Lord Nicholas, by perceiuing the wantonnesse and good will of the mistresse of the Castell, not to refuse so good occasion, determining to prosecute the enioying of hir, that was ỳ bird after which he hunted, whose beautie and good grace had deeply wounded his mind, wherin if he forgotte his duetie, I leaue for all men of good iudgement to consider. For me thinke that this yong Lord ought rather singularly to loue and cherishe his Lieuetenaunt that faithfully and trustily had kept his Castell and Forte, than to prepare against him so traiterous an attempt and ambushe. And if so be his sayde Lieuetenaunt had bene accused of felony, misprision, or Treason (yet to speake the trouth) he might haue deliuered the charge of his Castel vnto an other, rather than to suborne his wife to follie. And ought likewise to haue considered that the Lieuetenaunt by putting his

truſt in him, had iuſt cauſe to complaine for rauiſhing his honoure from him in the perſon of his wife, whome he ought to haue loued without any affection to infringe the holy lawe of amitie, the breaking whereof diſſolueth the duetie of eche ſeruaunt towardes his ſoueraigne Lord and maiſter. To be ſhort, this blinded louer yelding no reſiſtance to loue, and the folliſh conceit which altereth the iudgementes of the wiſeſt, ſuffred his fanſie to roue ſo farre vnto his appetites, as on a day when the Lieuetenaunt was walked abrode into the Caſtell, to viewe the Souldiours and deade payes (to pleaſure him that ſought the meanes of his diſpleaſure) he ſpake to the Gentlewoman his wife in this manner: Gentlewoman, you being wiſe and curtuous as eche man knoweth, needefull it is not to vſe long or Rethorical Orations, for ſo much as you without further ſupply of talke doe clearely perceiue by my lookes, ſighes and earneſt viewes, the loue that I bear you, which without compariſon nippeth my heart ſo neare as none can feele the parching paines, that the ſame poore portion of me doeth ſuffer. Wherefore hauing no great leiſure to let you further vnderſtand my minde, it may pleaſe you to ſhewe me ſo much fauoure as I may be receiued for him, who hauing the better right of your good grace, may therewithall enioy that ſecrete acquaintaunce, which ſuche a one as I am deſerueth: of whome ye ſhall haue better experience if you pleaſe to accept him for your owne. This miſtreſſe Lieuetenaunt which compted hir ſelfe happie to be beloued of hir Lord, and who take great pleaſure in that aduenture, albeit that ſhe deſired to lette him know the good will that ſhe bare vnto him, yet diſſembled the matter a little, by anſwearing him in this

wiſe;

wise: Your disease sir is sodaine, if in so little time
you haue felt suche excesse of maladie: but perchaunce
it is your heart that being ouer tender, hath lightly
receiued the pricke, which no doubt will so sone va-
nishe, as it hath made so ready entrie. I am very glad
(Sir) that your heart is so merily disposed to dal-
aunce, and can finde some matter to contriue the su-
perfluitie of time, the same altering the diuersitie of
mannes complexion, accordingly as the condition of
the hourely planet guideth the nature of euery wight.
It is altogither otherwise (answered he) for being
come hither as a maister and Lord, I am become a ser-
uaunt and slaue: And briefly to speake my minde, if
you haue not pitie vpon me, the disease which you call
sodaine, not onely will take increase, but procure the
death and finall ruine of my heart. Ah sir (sayde the
Gentlewoman) your gricke is not so deepely rooted,
and death so present to succeede, as you affirme, ne yet
so ready to giue ouer the place, as you protest, but I
see what is the matter, you desire to laugh me to scorn,
and your heart craueth something to solace it selfe
which cannot be idle, but must imploy the vacant time
vpon some pleasant toyes. You haue touched the prick
(answeared the Louer) for it is you in deede whereup-
on my heart doeth ioy, and you are the cause of my
laughter and pastetime, for otherwise all my delights
were displeasures, and you also by denying me to be
your seruaunt, shall abbreuiate and shorten my liuing
dayes, who only reioyseth for choise of such a mistresse.
And how (replied she) can I be assured of that you say?
the disloyaltie and infidelitie of man being in these
dayes so falste united, and following one another,
as the shadowe doeth the bodie, wheresoeuer it goeth.

Onely

" Only experience (sayd he) shall make you know what
" I am, and shal teach you whether my heart is any thing
" different from my wordes: and I dare be bolde to say,
" that if you vouchsafe to doe me the pleasure to receiue
" me for your owne, you may make your vaunt to haue
" a Gentleman so faithfull for your friend, as I esteeme
" you to be discrete, and as I desire to let you taste the ef-
" fect of mine affection, by such some honest order as may
" be deuised. Sir (sayd she) it is wel and aduisedly spoken
" of you, but yet I thinke it straunge for such a Gentle-
" man as you be, to debase your honor to so poore a Gen-
" tlewoman, and to goe about bothe to dishonor me, and
" to put my life in perill. God forbid (answered the Lord
" Nicholas) that I be cause of any slander, and rather had
" I die my selfe than minister one simple occasion wher-
" by your fame should be brought in question. Only I do
" pray you to haue pitie vpon me, and by vsing your cur-
" tesie, to satisfie that which my seruice & faithful friend-
" ship dothe constraine, and binde you for the comfort of
" him that loueth you better than himself. We will talk
" more thereof hereafter (answered the Lieuetenaunts
" wife) and then will I tell you mine aduise, and what
" resolution shall follow the summe of your demaunde.
" How now Gentlewoman (sayd he) haue you the heart
" to leaue me voide of hope, to make me languish for the
" prorogation of a thing so doubtfull, as the delayes be
" which loue deferreth? I humbly pray you to tell me
" wherunto I shall trust: to the intent that by punishing
" my heart for proffe of this enterprise, I may chastise
" also mine eyes by reuing frō them the meanes for euer
" more to see that which contenteth me best, and wherin
" resteth my solace, leauing my minde ful of desires, and
" my heart without finall stay, vpon ỹ greatest pleasure
" that euer man could chose. The Gentlewoman would

not

not lose a Noble man so good & perfect, whose presence already pleased hir above all other things, and who voluntarily had agreed to his request, by the only signe of hir gests and lokes, sayd vnto him smiling with a very good grace: Doe not accuse my heart of lightnesse, nor my minde of infidelitie and treason, if to please & obey you, I forget my duetie, & abuse ý promise made vnto my husband, for I swear vnto you (sir) by God, ý I haue more forced my thought, & of long time haue constrained mine appetites in dissembling the loue that I bear you, thã I haue receiued pleasure, by knowing my self to be beloued by one agreable to mine affection. For which cause you shall finde me (being but a poore Gentlewoman) more ready to do your plesure, and to be at your commaundemẽt, than any other ý liueth be she of greater port and regard than I am. And who to satisfie your request, shall one day sacrifice that fidelitie to the iealous fury of hir husband. God defend (sayd the yong Lord) for we shall be so discrete in our doings, & so seldome shal communicate & talke togither, as impossible it is for any mã to discry the same. But if misshap wil haue it so, and that some ill lucke doe discouer our dealings, I haue shift of wayes to colour the same, & power to stoppe the mouthes of them that dare presume to clatter and haue to doe with our priuate conference. All ý I know well inough sir (sayd she) but it is great simplicitie in such things for a man to trust to his authoritie, the forced inhibition whereof shall prouoke more babble, than rumor is able to spred for al his tattling talke of our secrete follies. Moreouer I would be very glad to doe what pleaseth you, so the same may be without slaunder. For I hadde rather die, than any should take vs in our priuities and familier pastimes: let vs be contented with the pleasure that the ease of

our ioy may graunt, and not with ſuche contentation as ſhall offend vs, by blotting the clerenelle of our good names. Concluding then ẏ time of their new acquaintaunce, which was the next day at nwne, when ẏ Lieutenant did walke into the Citie, they ceaſed their talk for feare of his enteruiew. Who (vpon his returne) doing reuerence vnto his Lord, tolde him that he knewe where a wilde Boare did haunt, if it pleaſed him to ſe the paſtetime. Whereunto the Lord Nicholas fayned louingly to giue eare (although againſt his will) for ſo much as he thought the ſame hunting ſhould be a delay for certaine dayes to the enioying, (pretended and aſſured) of his beloued. But ſhe that was ſo muche or more eſpriſed with the raging and intollerable fire of loue, ſpedily found meanes to ſatiſfie hir louers ſute, but not in ſuch manner as was deſired of either parts, wherefore they were conſtrained to defer the reſt vntill an other time. This pleaſaunt beginning ſo allured the Lord of *Nocera*, as vnder the pretence of hunting, there was no weeke that paſſed, but he came to viſite the warrener of his Lieuetenaunt. And this order continuing without anie one little ſuſpition of their loue, they gouerned themſelues wiſely in the purſute thereof. And the Lord Nicholas vſed the game and ſport of Hunting, and an infinite number of other exerciſes, as the running of the Ring and Tennis, not ſo muche thereby to finde meanes to enioy his Ladie, as to auoide occaſion of iealoſie in hir huſband, being a very familiar vice in all *Italians*, the cloke whereof is very heauie to beare, and the diſeaſe troubleſome to ſuſtaine. But what? Like as it is hard to beguile an vſurer in the accoumpt of his money, for his continual watch ouer the ſame, and ſlumbering ſleepes vpon the bokes of his reckenings and accompts, ſo difficult

ficult it is to deceiue the heart of a iealous man, and
specially when he is assured of the griefe which his
heade hath conceiued. Argus was neuer so cléere eyed
for all his hundred eyes ouer Iupiters lemman, as those
louers be, whose opinions be yll affected ouer the cha-
stitie of their wiues. Moreouer what fole or Asse is he,
who séeing suche vndiscrete familiaritie of two lo-
uers, the priuie gestures, and demeanors without wit-
nesse, their stolne walkes at vntimely houres, & some-
times their embracemẽts to straight and common be-
fore seruaunts, that wold not doubt of that which most
secretely did passe? True it is that in England (where
libertie is so honestly obserued as being alone or se-
crete conuersation giueth no cause of suspition) ỳ same
might haue bens borne withall. But in *Italie*, where
the parents themselues be for the most part suspected,
(if there had ben no fact in déede cõmitted) that familia-
ritie of the Lord Nicholas, with his Lieutenantes wife
was not sufferable, but exceded the bounds of reason, for
so much as the cõmoditie which they had chosen for pol
sessing of their loue, (albeit the same not suspitious) a-
nimated them afterwards to frequent their familiari-
ty & dispost to frãkly, & without discretiõ: which was ỳ
cause ỳ fortune (who neuer leaueth ỳ ioyes of mẽ with-
out giuing therunto some great alarm,) being enuious
of ỳ mutual delights of those ỳ louers, made ỳ husbãd
to doubt of that which he wold haue dissẽbled, if honor
could so easily be lost wõut reproch, as bloud is shed wõ
out peril of life. But ỳ mater being so cleare, as ỳ fault
was euidẽt, specially in the party which touched him so
neare as himself, ỳ Lieuetenaũt before he wold enter-
prise any thing, and declare what he thought, desired
throughly to be resolued of ỳ which he sawe as it were
but in a cloude, and by reason of his conceiued opinion

he dealt so warely and wisely in those affaires, & was so subtill an espiall, as one day when the louers were at their game, and in their most straite and secrete embracements, he viewed them coupled with other leash, than he would haue wished, and colled with straighter bands than reason or honestie did permit. He saw without being seene, wherin he felt a certaine ease and contentment, for being assured of that he doubted, & purposed to ordeine a sowre refection after their delightsome banket, the simple louers ignorannt by signe or coniecture, that their enterprises were discouered. And truely it had bene more tollerable and lesse hurtful for the Lieuetenaunt, if euen then he had perpetrated his vengeaunce, and punished them for their wickednesse, than to vse the crueltie wherwith afterwards he blotted his renoume, and foiled his hands by Bedlem rage in the innocent bloud of those that were not priuie to the folie, and lesse guiltie of the wrong done vnto him. Now the captaine of the Castell for all his dissimulation in couering of his griefe, and his fellony and treason intended against his soueraigne Lord, which he desired not yet manifestly to appeare, was not able any more from that time forthe to speake so louingly vnto him, nor with suche respecte and reuerence as he did before,

" which caused his wife thus to say vnto hir louer: My
" Lord I doubt very much least my husbād doth perceiue
" these our cōmon practizes, & secrete familiar dealings,
" & that he hath some hāmer working in his head, by rea-
" son of the countenaunce, & vnchæreful entertainment
" which he sheweth to your Lordship, wherfore mine ad-
" uise is, ý you retire for a certain time to *Foligno*. In the
" meane space I wil marke & espie if ý his alteration be
" conceiued for any matter against vs, and wherfore his
" wōted lokes haue put on this new alteration & chaūge.

All

All which when I haue (by my espial and secrete prac-
tise sounded) I will speedily aduertise you, to the ende
that you may prouide for the safegarde of youre faith-
full and louyng seruaunt. The yong Lorde, who lo-
ued the Gentlewoman with all hys hearte, was at-
tached with so greate griefe, and dryuen into such
rage, by hearing those wicked newes, as euen pre-
sently he woulde haue knowen of his Lieuetenaunt,
the cause of his diswonted chéere. But weyghing the
good aduise which his woman had gyuen hym, pausd
vpon the same, promised hir to doe what she thought
best. By reason wherof, giuing warning to his seruan-
tes for his departure, he causd the Lieutenaunt to be
called before him, vnto whom he sayd: Captain, I had
thought for certaine dayes to sport and passe my time,
but hearing tel that the Duke of *Camerino* commeth to
Foligno, to debate with vs of matters of importance, I
am constrained to departe, and do pray you in ỹ meane
time to haue good regarde vnto our affaires, and if any
newes doe chaunce, to aduertise the same with all ex-
pedition. Sir (sayd the Captain) I am sorie that nowe
when our passetime of hunting might yelde some good
recreation vnto your honour, that you doe thus forsake
vs, notwithstanding sith it is your good pleasure, we wil
cease the chase of the wilde Boze till your returne. In
the meane time, I will make readie the coardes and
tramells for the takyng of the same, that vpon youre
comming, nothing want for the furniture of our sport.
The Lord Nicholas, seing his Lieutenant so pleasantly
disposed, and so litle bent to choler, or iealous fantasie,
was persuaded, that some other toy had rather occupi-
ed his minde, than any suspition betwene his wife and
him. But the subtill husbande searched other meanes
to be reuenged, than by killyng him alone, of whom he

receyued that dishonour, and was more craftie to enterprise, and more hardie to execute, than the louers were wyse or well aduised to preuente and withstande his sleightes and pollicies. And albeit that the wyfe (after the departure of hir friende) allayed to drawe from hym the cause of his altered chéere, yet coulde shée neuer learne, that hir husbande hadde any yll opinion of their loue. For so many times as talke was moued of the Lord Nicholas, he exalted his praise vp into the heauens, and commended him aboue all his brethren. All whiche he didde, to beguile the pollicies of hir, whome he sawe to blushe, and manye tymes change colour, when she heard him spoken of, to whom she bare better affection than to hir husband, vnto whō (in very dede) she dyd owe the fayth and integritie of hir bodie. Thys was the very toyle which he had laide to intrappe those amorous persons, and purposed to ridde the worlde of them by that meanes, to remoue from before his eyes, the shame of a Cuckoldes title, and to reuenge the iniurie done to hys reputation. The Mistresse of the Castell seing that hir husbande (as shée thought) by no meanes did vnderstande hir follies, desired to continue the pleasure, whiche either of them desired, and which made the thirde to die of phrenesie, wrote to the Lorde Nicholas, the letter that followeth.

My Lorde, the feare I had, that my husband should perceyue our loue, caused me to intreate you certains dayes past, to discontinue for a time, the frequentatiō of your owne house, wherby I am not a litle grieued, that contrary to my will, I am defrauded of your presence, which is farre more pleasant vnto me, than my husbandes flatteries, who ceaseth not continually to talke of the honest behauiour, and commendable qualities

ries that be in you, and is sorie for youre departure, bicause he feareth that you will lyke youre entertainement, which should be (sayth he) so grieuous and noysome vnto him, as death it selfe. Wherfore I pray you sir, if it be possible, and that your affaires do suffer you to come hither, to the ende I may inioy youre amiable presence, and vse the libertie that our god happe hath prepared, through the litle iealosie of my husband your Lieutenant: who I suppose before it be long will intreate you, so great is his desire to make you pastetime of hunting within your owne lande and territorie. Fayle not then to come, I beseech you, and we will so well consider the gouernement of our affaires, as the best sighted shall not once discrie ỹ least suspicion therof, recommending my selfe most humbly (after the best maner I can) to your good lordship.

This Letter was deliuered to a lackey to beare to the Lorde Nicholas, and not so priuily done, but ỹ Lieutenant immediatly espied the deceipt, which the soner was disciphred, for so much as he dayely lay in waite to finde the meanes to reuẽge the wrong done vnto him, of purpose to beate the iron so long as it was hotte, & to execute his purpose before his wife toke hede, and felte the indeuor of his enterprise. And bicause that shẽ had assayed by diuers ways to sound his hart, and sele whether he had conceiued displeasure against the Lorde bir louer, the daye after wherein she had written to hir friende, hẽ sente one of hys men in poste to the thrẽ Lordes, to require them to come the nexte daye to sẽ the pastetyme of the fayrest and greatest Wylde Boze, that long tyme was bredde in the Forrestes adioynyng vnto *Nocera*, Albeit that the Countreye was fayre for coursyng, and that diuers times many fayre Bores haue bene encountred there.

But

But it was not for this, that he had framed his errand, but to trap in one toyle and snare the three brethren, whome he determined to sacrifice to the aultar of his vengeaunce, for the expiation of their elder brothers trespasse, and for soiling the nuptiall bed of his seruãt. He was the wylde Boze whom he meant to strike, but was the praie of his vnsaciable and cruell appetite. If the fault had ben generall of all three togethers, he had had some reason to make them passe the bracke of one equall fortune, and to tangle them within one net, both to preuent therby (as he thought) his further hurt, and to chastise their leude behauiour. For many times (as lamentable experience teacheth) Noble men for the only respect of their nobilitie, make no conscence to doe wrong to the honor of them, whose reputation and honestie they ought so well to regarde as their owne. Herein offended the good prince of the *Iewes* Dauid, who to vse his Bersabe without suspicion, he caused innocent Vrias to be slaine, in lieu of recompense for his good seruice, and diligent execution of his behests. The children of the proude Romane King Tarquinius, did herein greatly abuse them selues, when they violated that noble Gentlewoman Lucrece, whome all histories doe so muche remembre, and whose chastitie, all famous writers doe commende. Upon such as they be, vengeance ought to be done, and not to defile the handes in the blode of innocentes, as the parents and kinsemen of dead Lucrece did at *Rome*, and this Lieutenant at *Nocera*, vpon the brethren of him that hadde sent him into Cornewall, without passing ouer the seas. But what? Anger proceeding of such wrong, surmounteth al phrenesie, and exceedeth all the bounds of reason, and mans so deuoide of wits, by seing the blot of defamation, to light vpon him, as he seeketh al meanes to hurt and displease

pleaſe him that polluteth his renoume. All the race of the Tarquines for like fact were banished *Rome*, for the onely byte whereof, the husband of the faire rauished wife, was constrained to auoide the place of his natiuitie. Paris alone violated the body of Menelaus the *Lacedemonian* king, but for reuenge of the rauished *Greeke*, not onely the glorie and richeſſe of ſtately *Troy*, but alſo the moſt part of *Aſia* and *Europa*, was ouerturned and defaced, if credit may be giuen to the recordes of the auncient. So in this fact of the Lieutenant, the Lorde Nicholas alone, had polluted his bed, but the reuenge of the cruell man extended further, and his furie raged ſo farre, as the guiltleſſe were in great daunger to beare the penance, which ſhall be well perceiued by the diſcourſe that foloweth. The Captaine then hauing ſente his meſſage, and being ſure of his intent (no leſſe than if he already had the brethren within his hold, vpon the point to couple them together with hys wife, to ſende them all in pilgrimage to viſite the faithfull ſorte, that diſſon their loues in an other worlde, with Dido, Phyllis, and ſuche like, that more for diſpaire than lone, had paſſed the ſtraites of death) cauſed to be called before him in a ſecrete place, all the ſouldiers of the Fort, and ſuch as with whome he was ſure to preuaile, to whom not without heauing forth ſome teares, and ſhewyng heauie countenance, he ſpake in this maner:

My Companions & friends, I doubt not but ye be aſ- „
haſhed to ſee me wrapt in ſo heauie plight, and appeare „
in this forme before you (that is to ſay) bewept, heuy, „
panting with ſighes, and al contrary to my cuſtome, in „
other ſtate and maner, than my courage and degree re- „
quire. But when ye ſhall vnderſtande the cauſe, I am „
aſſured that the caſe which ſeemeth ſtrange to you, ſhall „
be thought iuſt and right, and ſo wil performe the thing „

" wherein I shall employe you. Ye knowe that the first
" point that a Gentleman ought to regarde, consisteth
" not onely in repelling the iniurie done vnto the bodie,
" but rather it behoueth that the fight begyn for the de-
" fense of his honor, which is a thing that procedeth from
" the mind, and resorteth to the bodie, as the instrument
" to worke that which the spirite appointeth. Now it is
" honour, for conseruation whereof, an honest man and
" one of good courage feareth not to put himself in al pe-
" rill and daunger of death, and losse of goodes, referryng
" himselfe also to the guarde of that which toucheth as it
" were oure owne reputation. In suche wyse as if a good
" Captaine doe suffer hys souldier to be a wicked man, a
" robber, a murderer, and an exacter, he beareth the note
" of dishonor, albeit in all his doings he gouerneth hys es-
" state after the rule of honestie, & dothe nothing that is
" vnworthy his vocatiõ. But what? he being a head vnto
" ted to such mẽbres, if the partes of that vnited thing be
" corrupt and naught, the head must nedes beare ỹ blot
" of the faulte before referred to the whole bodie. Alas
" (sayd he sighing) what parte is more nere, and dearer
" to man, than that which is given vnto him for a pledge
" and comfort during his life, and which is conioyned to
" be bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh, to breath forth
" one minde, and thinke with one heart and equall will.
" It is of the Wife that I speake, who being the moytie
" of hir husbande, ye ought not to muse if I say, that the
" honour of the one is the rest of the other, and the one
" infamous and wicked, the other feleth the troubles of
" such mischief, and the wife being careleste of hir honor,
" the husbands reputation is defiled, and is not worthie
" of praise, if he suffer such shame vnreuenged: I must
" (Companions & good friends) here discouer that which
" my heart would faine kepe secrete, if it were possible,

and

and muſt reherſe a thing vnto you, which ſo ſone as my
mouth woulde faine kepe cloſe, the minde aſſayeth to
force the ouerture. And loth I am to do it, were it not
that I make ſo good accompt of you, as ye being tied to
me with an vnſeparable amitie, will yeld me your cõ-
fort and aide againſt him that hath done me this villa-
nie, ſuch as if I be not reuenged vpon him, nedes muſt
I be the executioner of that vengeance vpon my ſelf,
that am loth to line in this diſhonor, which all the days
of my life (without due vltion) like a worme wil tor-
ment and gnaw my conſcience. Wherfore before I go
any further, I would knowe whether I might ſo well
truſt your aide and ſuccour in this my buſineſſe, as in
all others I am aſſured you wold not leaue me, ſo long
as any breath of life remained in you. For without ſuch
aſſurance, I do not purpoſe to let you know ỹ pricking
naile that pierceth my hearte, nor the griefe that gre-
ueth me ſo nere, as by vttering it without hope of help
I ſhall open the gate to death, and dye without reliefe
of my deſire, by puniſhyng him, of whome I haue re-
ceyued an iniurie more bloodie than any man can doe.

The Souldiers whyche loued the Captaine as theyr
owne lyfe, were ſorie to ſée him in ſuche eſtate, and
greater was their dolour to heare wordes that ten-
ded to nothyng elſe but to furie, vengeance, and mur-
der of himſelfe. Wherefore all with one accorde pro-
miſed their healpe and maine force towardes and a-
gaynſt all men for the bringyng to paſſe of that which
he dyd meane to require. The Lieutenant aſſured of
his men, conceyued hearte and courage, and continu-
ing hys Oration and purpoſe, determined the ſlaugh-
ter and ouerthrowe of the three Trinicien brethren,
(for that was the ſurname of the Lordes of *Foligno*,)
who purſued hys Oration in this manner:

"Knowe ye then (my companions and good frendes) that
"it is my wife, by whom I haue indured the hurt & losse
"of mine honour, and she is the partie touched, and I am
"he that am moste offended. And to the ende that I doe
"not holde you longer in suspence, and the partie be con-
"cealed from you, which hath done me this outrage: Ye
"shal vnderstande that Nicholas Trinicio, the elder of the
"three lordes of *Foligno* and *Nocera*, is he, that against al
"right and equitie hath suborned the wife of his Lieute-
"nant, and soiled the bed of him, wherof he ought to haue
"ben the defender & the very bulwarke of his reputation.
"It is of him my good frendes, and of his that I meane
"to take suche vengeaunce, as eternall memorie shall
"displaye the same to all posteritie: and neuer lorde
"shall dare to doe a like wrong to myne, withoute re-
"membrance what his duetie is, which shall teache him
"how to abuse the honest seruice of a Gentleman that
"is one of hys owne traine. It resteth in you bothe to
"holde vp your hande, and kéepe your promise, to the end
"that the Lorde Nicholas, deceiuyng and mockyng me,
"may not truste & put affiance in your force, vnto which
"I heartily do recommende my self. The Souldiers mo-
ued and incited with the wickednesse of their Lord, and
with the wrong done to him, of whome they receyued
wages, swore againe to serue his turne in any exploit
he went about, and required him to be assured, that the
Trinicien brethren shoulde be ouerthrowne, and suffer
deserued penance, if they might lay hands vpon them,
and therfore willed him to séeke means to allure them
thither, that they might be dispatched. The Lieutenãt
at these words renuing a chéerefull countenaunce, and
shewing himselfe very ioyful for such successe, after he
had thanked his souldiers, and very lovingly imbraced
the chiefest of them, reuealed his deuised pollicie, & ho-

ped

ped shortly to haue them at his commaundement within the Fort, alleaging that he had dispatched two messangers vnto them, and that his wife also priuily had sents hir page: vnto whom he purposed to giue so good a recõpense, as neuer more she shold plant his hornes so high, vnder a colour of gẽtle entertainment of hir ribauld & friend. They wer scarse resolued vpon this intent, but newes were brought him, that the next day morning, the three lords accompanied with other nobilitie would come to *Nocera*, to hunt that huge wilde Bore, wherof the Lieutenant had made so great auant. These newes did not gretly please the Captain, forsomuch as he feared, that his purpose could not (cõuenientlie) be brought to passe, if the companie were so great. But when he considered that the Lords alone, should lodge within the Fort, he was of good chere againe, and stayed vpon his first intent. The Triniciens the next day after came very late, bicause the Lorde Berardo of *Varano* Duke of *Camerino*, desired to be one, and also the two brethren taried for Conrade, who was at a mariage, & coulde not assist the tragedie that was playd at *Nocera*, to his great hap and profit. To this troupe came to *Nocera* late, and hauing supped in the Citie, the Lord Nicholas and the Duke of *Camerino* wente to bed in the Fort, Cæsar the brother of Trinicio tarying behind with the traine, to lodge in the citie. Stay here a while (ye gentlemen) ye I say, that pursue the secrete feithes of loue, neuer put any great trust in Fortune, whiche seldome kepeth hir promise with you. Ye had nede therefore to take good hede, lest ye be surprised in the place, where priuily you giue the assault, and in the act wherin ye desire the assistance of none. Sée the barbarous crueltie of a Lieutenant, which loued rather to kil his corriuall, in his cold blod, than otherwise to be reuenged, when he saw him

a bedde with his wife, purposely that the exãple of his furie might be the better knowne, and the secret sclander more euident, from the rote whereof did spring an infinite numbre of murders and mischiefs. About midnight, then when al things were at rest vnder the darke silence of the night, the Lieutenant came to the chamber of the Lorde Nicholas, accompanied with the most parte of the watche, and hauyng stopte vp the yeoman of his chamber, bee so dyelled the companion of hys bedde, as for the first proofe of hys curtesie, he caused hys membres and priuie partes to be cut of, saying vnto hym wyth cruell disdayne: Thou shalte not "henceforth (wycked wretche) welde thys launce into "the rest, thereby to batter the honoure of an honester "man than thy self. Then lauching his stomake with a "piercing blade, he tare the hart out of his belie, saying: "Is this the traiterous hearte that hath framed the plot "and deuised the enterprise of my shame, to make thys "infamous villaine without life, & his renoume without "praise? And not content with this crueltie, he wreakt ẏ like vpon ẏ remnant of his body, ẏ somtimes the runagate Medea did vpon hir innocẽt brother, to saue ẏ lyfe of hir selfe, and of hir friend Iason. For she cut him into an hundred thousand pieces, gyuyng to euery membre of the poore murdred foule hir word of mockerie & contempt. Was it not sufficient for a tirannous husbande to be reuẽged of his shame, and to kill the partie which had defamed him, without vsing so furious Anatomie vpon a dead body, and wherin there was no longer feeling? But what? Ire being without measure, & anger without bridle or reson, it is not to be wondred, if in al his actes the Captaine ouerpassed the iuste measure of vengeance. Many would thinke the cõmitted murder vpon Nicholas, to bee good and iust: but the Iustice of an

offense

offense, ought not so long time be conceyled, but rather to make him sole the smart at the verie time the deede is done, to the ende that the nipping grieks of pestilent treason wrought against the betrayed partie, be not obscured and hidden by sodaine rage and lacke of reason, rising in the mindes first motions, and therby also the faulte of the guiltie, by his inadvertion couered: otherwise there is nothing that can colour such vice. For the lawe indifferently doth punish every man, that without the Magistrates order taketh authoritie to venge his owne wrong. But come we againe vnto our purpose. The Captaine all inflamed in bloode, entred the chamber of the Duke of Calabria, whome with all the rest of the straungers that were within the Castle, he lodged (without speaking any worde) in a deepe and obscure prison. Beholde, what rule they take that nyght, whyche were come to hunt the Wylde Boare. For without trauayling farre, they were entrapped in the subtill engines and nettes of the furious Lieutenaunt, who when the morning brought vnto vs the vermilion cleare, began to shewe his teeth, when all the Hunters dydde putte them selues in a readynesse, and coupled vppe their Dogges to marche into the Fielde, beholde, one of the Captaines cruell ministers went into the Citie, to cause the Lorde Cæsar to come and speake with his brother Nicholas, and intreated him not to tarie, for that he and the Duke were disposed to shewe him some disporte. Cæsar which neuer suspected the leaste of these chanced murders, desired not to be prayed agayne, but made haste to the butcherie lyke a Lambe, & in the companie of the Wolues themselues that were in readinesse to kill hym. He was no sooner in the court of the Castle, but seuen or eight varlets apprehended him and his men, and caried hym into the cham-

the chamber (bound like a theefe) wherin the membres of his miserable brother were cut of, & dispersed, whose corps was pitifully gored and arayed in blod. If Cæsar were abashed to see himselfe bound and taken prisoner, he was more astonned when he perceiued a body so dismembred, and which as yet he knewe not. Alas (sayde he) what sight is this? Is this the Bore, which thou hast caused vs to come hither to hūt within our very Fort? The Captaine rising vp, al imbrued with blod, whose face & voice promised nothing but murder to the miserable yong gētleman said: See Cæsar, the bodie of thine adulterous brother Nicholas, that infamous whoremōger, and marke if this be not his head: I would to God that Conrade were here also, that ye might all three be placed at this sumptuous banket, which I haue prepared for you. I sweare vnto thee then, that this shold be the last day of all the Trinacien race, and the end of your tirannies and wicked life. But sith I cā not get the effect of that which my heart desireth, my minde shal take repast in the triumph which Fortune hath ordeined. Curssed be the mariage & wedding at *Trenio*, that hath hindred me of an occasion so apte, and of the meanes to dispatche a matter of such importance, as is the ouerthrow of so many tirants. Cæsar at this sentence stode so still, as whilom did the wife of Loth, by seing the Citie on fire, and consume into ashes: by the sight wherof she was cōuerted into a stone of salt. For when he saw that blodie pageant, and knew that it was his brother Nicholas, pitie & feare so stopt ẏ pipes of his spech, as wout cōplaining himself or framing one word, he suffred his throte to be cut by ẏ barbarous captain, who threw him half dead vpō ẏ corps of his brother, ẏ ẏ blood of either of thē might cry vp to ẏ heuēs for so loud vēgeāce, as ẏ of Abel did, being slain by ẏ treson of his nereſt brother.

ther. Beholde ye dreadful beginnings of a heart rapt in fury, and of ye minde of him that not resisting his fonde affections, executed the terrible practizes of his owne braine, and preferring his fantasie aboue reason, deuised suche ruine and decay, as by these examples the posteritie shall haue good cause to wonder. The like cruelty vsed Tiphon towardes his brother Osyris by chopping his body in.xxvj. gobbets, whereby ensued the decay of him and his, by Orus whome some doe surname Appollo. And troweth ye captaine to lacke for lesse mercy of the brother of ye other twain that were murdred, and of the Dukes kindred whome he kept prisoner? But he was so blinded with fury, and it may be, led by ambition and desire to be made Lord of *Nocera*, that he was not contēted to venge his shame on him which had offended, but assayed to murder and extinguish all the Trinicien bloud: the enheritance only remaining in them. And to come to the end of his enterprise, this *Italian* Nero, not content with these so many slaughters, but thereunto adioyned a new treason, assaying to win the Citizens of *Nocera* to moue rebellion against their Lord, causing them to assemble before the Forte, vnto whome vpon the walles he vsed this or like Oration. I haue hitherto (my maisters) dissembled the litle pleasure that my heart hath felt to see so many true & faithful Citizens, subiect vnder the will & vnbrideled lustes of two or three tyraunts: who haue gotten power and authoritie ouer vs, more through our owne folly & cowardise, than by valiance, vertue and iustice, either in them or those which haue disporied this Countrey of their auncient libertie. I will not deny but principalities of long entraunce and foundation derived by succession of inheritaunce, haue had some spice and kinde of equitie, and that Lords of good life and conuersation

" ought to be obeyed, defended and honored. But where
" inuasion and seasure is against right, where the people
" is spoiled, and lawes violated, it is no cõscience to disobey and abolish such monsters of nature. The *Romanes*
" in their prime age of their common wealth ful wel declared the same, whẽ they banished out of their Citie the
" proud race of the Tirant Tarquine, and when they wer
" about to exterminate al the rotes of crueltie and Tyrannicall power. Our neighbours the *Sicilians* once did
" the like vnder the conduct of Dion, against the disruled
" fury and wilfull crueltie of Denis the Tirant of *Syracusa*, and the *Athenians* against the children of Pisistratus. And ye that be sorted from the stocke of those *Samnites*, which in times past so long held vp their heads a-
" gainst the *Romane* force, will ye be so very cowardes
" weake hearted for respect of the title of your seignio-
" rie as ye dare not with me to attempt a valiant enter-
" prise for reducing your selues into libertie, and to expel that vermine brode of Tyrauntes which swarme
" through out the whole Region of *Italie*. Will ye be so
" mated and dumped, as the shadowe alone of a fonde
" and inconstant yong man, shall holde your nose to the
" grindstone, and drawe you at his lust like an Ore into
" the stall? I feare that if ye saw your wiues and daugh-
" ters haled to the pastetime and pleasure of these Ti-
" rauntes, to glutte the whoredome of those stinking
" Goate bucks, more lecherous and filthy than the sense-
" lesse sparowes: I feare (I say) that ye durst not make
" one signe for demonstration of your wrathe and dis-
" pleasure. No, no (my masters of *Nocera*,) it is highe
" time to cutte of the *Hydra* his heades, and to strangle
" him within his caue. The time is come (I say) wherein
" it behoueth you to shewe your selues like men, and
" no longer to dissemble the case that toucheth you so
nere.

nére. Conſider whither it be good to follow mine ad-
uiſe, to repoſſide againe the thing which is your owne,
(that is to wit,) the frédome wherin your auncéſters
gloried ſo muche, and for which they feared not to ha-
zarde their goodes and liues. It will come good cheape,
if you be ruled by me, it will redound to your treble
fame, if like men ye follow mine aduiſe, which I hope
to let you ſhortly ſée without any great perill or loſſe
of your Citizens bloud. I haue felt the effect of the
Trinicien Tiranny, and the rigor of their vnrighteous
gouernement, which hauing begonne in me, they will
not faile, if they be not chaſtiſed in time, to extend on
you alſo, whome they déeme to be their ſlaues. In like
manner I haue firſt begon to repreſſe their boldneſſe,
and to withſtand their leud behauioure: yea and if you
minde to vnderſtand right from wrong, an eaſie mat-
ter it will be to perfourme the reſt, the time being ſo
commodious, and the diſcouery of the thing whereof I
haue made you priuy, ſo cõuenient. And know ye, that
for the exploit of mine intent, and to bring you againe
altogither in libertie, I haue taken the two Lords Ni-
cholas and Cæſar priſonners, attending till fortune doe
bring to me the third, to pay him with like money and
equall guerdon, that not onely you may be frée and ſet-
tled in your auncient priuiledge, but my heart alſo ſa-
tiſſied of ẏ wrong which I haue receiued by their iniu-
ſtice. Beleuę maſters) ẏ the thing which I haue done,
was not wbout great cauſe, nor wbout open iniury rece-
ned, as by keping it cloſe I burſt, & by telling ẏ ſame I
am aſhamed. I wil kepe it ſecrete notwſtãding, & ſhall
pray you to take héede vnto your ſelues, ẏ by vniuerſal
conſent, the miſchiefe may be preuented. Deuiſe what
anſwer you wil make me, to ẏ intent ẏ I by folowing
your aduiſe, may alſo be reſolued vpon ẏ I haue to do,

" without preiudice but to them to whome the case doth
" chiefly appertaine. During all this discourse, the wic-
ked captaine kept close the murder which he had com-
mitted, to draw the worme out of the Nocerines note, &
to see of what minde they were, that vpon the intelli-
gence thereof, he might worke and follow the time ac-
cordingly. He that had seene the Citizens of *Nocera* af-
ter that seditious Oration, would haue thought that he
had heard a murmure of Bees, when issuing forth their
hiues, they light amidst a pleasaunt Herber, adorned &
beautified with diuers coloured floures. For the people
flocked and assembled togithers, and began to murmur
vpon the imprisonment of their Lord, and the treason
cõmitted by the Lieuetenaũt, thinking it very straũge
that he which was a household seruaunt durst be so bold
to seaze on those to whome he did owe all honoure and
reuerence. And do assure you that if he had ben below,
as he was vpon the rampire of the walles, they hadde
torne him into so many pieces as he had made gobbets
of the Lord Nicholas bodie. But seeing that they could
not take him, they went about to seeke the deliueraũce
of them, whome they thought to be yet aliue: and one
of the chiefe of the Citie in the name of them all short-
" ly & briefly, answered him thus. If malice did not well
" discouer it self in the fugred and traiterous composi-
" on of thy wordes (O Captaine) it were easie inough
" for an inconstant people (bent to chaũge, and desirous
" of innouations,) to heare and do that, which such a trai-
" tor and flatterer as thou art doest propose: but we ha-
" uing till time indured nothing of the Trinicians that sa-
" uoreth of tiranny, cruelty, or excesse, we were no lesse
" to be accused of felonie, than thou art guiltie of rebels
" crime, by seasing vpon the persones of thy Lords, if we
" should yelde credit to thy serpents hissing, or lend aide
to.

to thy traiterous practise, thou goest about against them » who by innobling thee, are traiterously bereued of that » which concerned their reputation and greatnesse. We » be an honest people and faithfull subiects. We will not » be bothe wicked and vnhappy at once, & without cause » expel our heads out of our common wealth, when they » shall perpetrate the mischiefs which thou hast alleaged » for example. Vpon suche Nouelties and straunge facts » we shall take newe aduise and Councell. To be short, » thou shalt pleasure vs to set our Lords at libertie, and » thou like a wise man shalt doe thy duetie, and satisfie a » people which easily can not indure that a subiecte doe » wrong to those to whom he oweth obedience. And feare » not to receiue any euill of them, nor yet to fele anoy- » aunce, for we will take vpon vs by honest meanes to » craue pardone for thy fault how hainous so euer it be. » But if thou continue thine offence, be sure ý the Lord » Conrade shall be aduertised, and with al our power we » shall succour him, by force to let thee fele the nature of » treason, and what reward is incident to the practizers » of the same. The Captaine albeit he was abashed with » that answere, and saw that it would not be well with him, if he did not prouide speady remedy and order for his affaires, aswell for the comming of the Lord Conrade, as of the brother of the Duke *Camerino*, tolde the Citizens that within three or foure dayes he wold giue them a resolute answer, and so it might be, yelde vnto their willes, and deliuer them whome he had in holde. This gentle answer did nothing stay the Citizens for the accomplishment of that which they thought best to doe, knowing also that the gallant had not commenced that comedie, but for other toyes which his vngracious head had framed for a further intended mischiefe, for which cause they assembled their Councel, and conclu-

ded that one ſhould ride in poſte to the Lord Conrade, (the third and remnaũt of the brethren,) that he might come to take order for the deliuerance of Nicholas and Cæſar whom they thought he had reſerued ſtil a liue in captiuitie. The Nocerines ſhewed this curteſie (not but ẏ they wold gladly haue bene at liberty, if the way had bene better troden,) aſwell for the little truſt they repoſed in the Captaine, who they thought would be no more gentle and faithful, than he ſhewed himſelf to be loyall to his maſters, as for that Conrade was wel beloued of the Lordes his neighbors, and ſpecially of the impriſonned Duke and his brother Braccio Montone, who had the *Italian* men of warre at his pleaſure, & that the Noble men would aſſiſt him with all their power. Wherfore they cõſidered that their faireſt & beſt way, for auoiding of factiõs, was to kepe themſelues truſtie & true, and by not hearkening to a traitor, to bind their ſoueraigne Lord with ſuch duety and obedience, as the vnkindeſt man of the world wold cõfeſſe and acknowledge for the conſequẽce of a mater of ſuch importãce. The ſeditious captaine on the other ſide voide of hope, and in greater rage thã he was before, perſiſted in his follie, not without foreſeeing howe he might ſaue himſelfe, which he had pollitikely brought to paſſe, if God had not ſhortned his way, by paiment of vſurye for his wickednelle, and by the very diligence of them in whõ he repoſed his truſt, the manner and how, immediately doth follow.

So ſoone as he had giuen ouer the Councell of the Citizens, and a little bethought him what he had to do, he called before him two yong men, whome aboue all others he truſted beſt. To theſe yong men he deliuered all his Golde, Siluer and Iewels, that they might conuey the ſame out of the iuriſdiction of his Lords, to

the

the intent that when he sawe himselfe in daunger, he might retire to the place where those gallants had before caried his furniture, and mouting them vpon two good stedes, he let them forthe at the posterne gate, praying them so sone as they could to returne aduertisement of their abode, and that spedely he wold send after them his children and the rest of his moueables, telling them that he specially committed his life and godes into their handes, and that in time and place he would acknowledge the benefite done vnto him in that distresse. The two that were thus put in trust for sauegarde of his things, promised vnto him Golden hilles and miracles: but so sone as they hadde lost the sight of their master, they deuised another complotte, and determined to breake faith to him which was forsworne, and who made no conscience not onely to reuolt, but also cruelly to kill his soueraigne Lordes. They thought it better to ride to *Trenio*, to tell ẏ Lord Conrade the pitifull ende of his brethren, and the imprisonment of the Duke of *Camerino*, than to seke rest for him, whome God permitted not to be saued, for his heinous sinne already committed, and for that which he meant to do vpon his wife. For all the diligence that the Nocerines had made, yet were the Lieuetenauntes men at *Trenio* before them, and hauing filled the eares of Conrade with those heauy newes, and his eyes with teares, his mind with sorow, & spite with desire to be reuenged & as Conrade was about to mount on horseback with the traine he had, the Citizens were arriued to disclose the imprisonmẽt of his brethren. To whom Conrade made answere: I wold to God (my friends) » that the tirant had bene contented with ẏ litle cruelty » wherof you speake, for then I wold find the meanes to » agrée the parties vpon ẏ knowledge of their variance. »

But

" But (alas) his malice hath paſſed further, & hath beaſt-
" ly ſlaine my brethren: but I ſweare by the almightie
" God, that if he giue me life, I wil take ſuch, and ſo cru-
" ell vengeaunce on him, as he ſhall be a glaſſe to all his
" like, to ſee the puniſhmẽt of a fault ſo horrible. Depart
" my friends, depart & get you home, diſpoſe your watch
" and garde about the Caſtell, that the traiter do not eſ-
" cape: and aſſure your ſelues that this your loue ſhal ne-
" uer be forgotten, & you ſhall haue of me not a tyrant as
" he maliciouſly hath proteſted, but rather ſuche a Lord,
" and better alſo, than hitherto ye haue me proued. If
Conrade had not bene pzelled with beauinelle, he hadde
chaunted godly ſongs againſt the treaſon of the Lieue-
tenaunt, and would haue accuſed his brother of indiſ-
cretion, for truſting him, whoſe wife he had abuſed, and
well did know that he eſpied the ſame. But what? The
buſineſſe required other things than words: & extreme
follie it is to nippe the dead with taunts, or with baine
words to abuſe the abſent, ſpecially where vlition and
reuenge is eaſie, and the meanes manifeſt to chaſtiſe
the temeritie of ſuche, and to be acquited of the wrong
done vnto him that cannot doe it himſelf. Conrade then
toke his way towardes *Tuderto*, where then remained
the Lord Braccio, and therof was Lord and gouernour,
and had alſo vnder his gouernment *Perugia*, and many
other Cities of the *Romane* Churche, and who with the
dignitie of the great Conſtable of *Naples*, was alſo
Prince of *Capua*, to him ỳ Trinicien brother all be ſpẽt
with teares and tranſported with choler & griefe, came
to demaund ſuccor for reuenge of the Lieuetenauntes
" treſpaſſe, ſaying: For what aſſuraunce (my Lord) can
" Princes and great Lords hope henceforth, when their
" very ſeruaunts ſhall riſe, and by cõſtraining their ma-
" ſters, make aſſay to vſurpe their ſeignories wherein

they

they haue no title or interest: Is this a reuẽge of wrõg, in ſtede of one to kill twaine, and yet to wiſhe for the third to diſpatch the world of our race? Is this to purſue his ennimy, to ſeeke to catche him in trappe, which knoweth nothing of the quarell, & to make him to ſuffer the paine? My two brethren be dead, our cosin germaine the Duke is in priſon, I am heere comfortleſſe, all ſad & penſife before you, whome likewiſe this matter toucheth, although not ſo neere as it doeth me, but yet with like diſhonor. Let vs goe (my Lord) let vs goe I beſeeche you to viſite our good hoſte that ſo rudely intreateth his geſts which come to viſite him, and let vs beare him a reward, that he may taſt of our comming, let vs goe before he ſaue himſelf, ỳ with little trauaile & leſſe harme to an other, the ribauld may be puniſhed, who by his example if he longer liue, may encreaſe corage bothe in ſeruaũts to diſobey, and in ſubiects to rebel, without conſcience, againſt their heads and gouerners? It is a caſe of very great importance, and which ought to be followed with all rigor and cruelty. And he ought neuer to be ſupported, cõforted or fauored, which ſhal by any meanes attempt to reuolt or arme himſelf againſt his Prince, or ſhall conſtraine him or hir that is his ſoueraigne Lord or miſtreſſe. Is not a Prince conſtituted of God to be obeyed, loued and cheriſhed of his ſubiects? Is it not in him to make & ordaine lawes, ſuch as ſhal be thought nedeful and neceſſary for common welth? Ought not he then to be obeyed of his ſubiects and vaſſals? Ought they then to teach the head, & commaund the chiefeſt member of their body? I do remember a tale (my Lord) recited by Menenius Agrippa that wiſe and Notable *Romane*, who going about to reconcile the commons with the *Senate*, alleaged a fit and conuenable example. In time paſt (quod he) when the

" parts of mankinde were at variance, and euery mem-
" ber would be a Lord, generally conspiring, grudging &
" alleaging, how by their great trauail, paines, and care-
" full ministery, they prouided all furniture and mainte-
" naunce for the belly, and that he like a sluggishe beast
" stode still, & enioyed such pleasures as were giuen him,
" in this murmure and mutine, all they agreed that the
" hands should not minister, the mouth should not fede,
" the tethe shold not make it seruiceable, the gute shold
" not trauaile, nor head deuise to get the same: and whi-
" lest euery of them did forsake their seruice and obedi-
" ence, the belly grew so thin, and the mẽbers so weake
" and feble, as the whole body was brought to extreme
" decay & ruine, wherby (said Agrippa) it appeareth ẏ the
" seruice due vnto the belly (as the chief portion of man)
" by the other members is most necessary, the obeying &
" nurssing of whome doth instill force and vigor into the
" other parts through which we do liue and be refreshed,
" and the same disgested & dispearsed into the vaines and
" vitall powers ingendreth mature and fine bloud, and
" maintaineth ẏ whole state of the body, in comely form
" and order. By which trim comparison, applied to ciuile
" warre is deflected & mollified the stout corage & attẽpts
" of the multitude. Euen so agreeing with Agrippa, if the
" members grudge & disobey against their chief, the state
" must grow to ruine. To be short, in certain haps a trai-
" ter may be cherished, and he that hath falsified his first
" faith: but treason and periury euermore be detested as
" vices execrable. In this deede neither the thing, nor yet
" the doer hath any colour of excuse, the trespasse & cause
" for which it is done being considered. Suffiseth it sir,
" for so muche as there is neither time nor cause of fur-
" ther discourse, what neede we to decide the matter,
" which of it selfe is euident? Beholde me here a pore

Trinicien

Trinicien brother without brethren, ioyleſſe without a
ſort at *Nocera*. On the other part conſider the Duke of
Camerino in great diſtreſſe and daũger, to paſſe ẏ ſtrait
of death my brethren did. Let vs goe (I pray you) to de-
liuer the captiue, and by reuenging theſe offenſes and
murders to ſettle my Citie in former ſtate & fredome,
which ẏ villaine goeth about to take frõ me, by encoura-
ging my ſubiects to reuolt & to enter armes, therby to
expell our houſe from the title of the ſame. As Conrade
ſpake theſe words, & with great grauity & cõſtãcy pro-
nouncing ſundry tokẽs of ſorow, ẏ Conſtable of *Naples*
wroth beyond meaſure for theſe vnpleſãt newes, & ful
of griefe & choler againſt ẏ traiterous lieuetenãt, ſwore
in the hearing of them al, ẏ he wold neuer reſt one god
ſpace vntil that quarell were auẽged, and had quited ẏ
outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and ẏ wrong which
he felt in him for the impriſonmẽt of the Duke of *Ca-
merino*. So he concluded, and the ſouldiers were aſſem-
bled throughout all the parts of the conſtables lands,
vpon the end of the weeke to march againſt the fort of
Nocera, the Citizens wherof had layd diligẽt ſcout and
watch for the eſcape of the captain, who without baſh-
fulneſſe determined with his men to defend ẏ ſame, &
to proue fortune, making himſelf beleue that his qua-
rel was good, and cauſe iuſt to withſtand them ẏ ſhould
haue the heart to come to aſſaile him. The Conſtable
in the meane time ſent a Trumpet to *Nocera*, to ſom-
mon the Captaine to ſurrender, and to tell the cauſe
of his reuolt, and at whoſe prouocation he had commit-
ted ſo deteſtable a Treaſon.

The Captaine well aſſured and boldned in his wic-
kedneſſe, anſwered that he was not ſo well fortified to
make a ſurrender ſo good cheape, & for ſo ſmal a price to
forgoe his honor & reputation: and furthermore, ẏ his

" parts of mankinde were at variance, and euery mem-
" ber would be a Lord, generally conspiring, grudging &
" alleaging, how by their great trauail, paines, and care-
" full ministery, they prouided all furniture and mainte-
" naunce for the belly, and that he like a sluggishe beast
" stode still, & enioyed such pleasures as were giuen him,
" in this murmure and mutine, all they agreed that the
" hands should not minister, the mouth should not fede,
" the tethe shold not make it seruiceable, the gute shold
" not trauaile, nor head deuise to get the same: and whi-
" lest euery of them did forsake their seruice and obedi-
" ence, the belly grew so thin, and the mẽbers so weake
" and feble, as the whole body was brought to extreme
" decay & ruine, wherby (said Agrippa) it appeareth ẏ the
" seruice due vnto the belly (as the chief portion of man)
" by the other members is most necessary, the obeying &
" nurssing of whome doth instill force and vigor into the
" other parts through which we do liue and be refreshed,
" and the same disgested & dispearsed into the vaines and
" vitall powers ingendreth mature and fine bloud, and
" maintaineth ẏ whole state of the body, in comely form
" and order. By which trim comparison, applied to ciuile
" warre is deflected & mollified the stout corage & attẽpts
" of the multitude. Euen so agreeing with Agrippa, if the
" members grudge & disobey against their chief, the state
" must grow to ruine. To be short, in certain haps a trai-
" ter may be cherished, and he that hath falsified his first
" faith: but treason and periury euermore be detested as
" vices execrable. In this deede neither the thing, nor yet
" the doer hath any colour of excuse, the trespasse & cause
" for which it is done being considered. Suffiseth it sir,
" for so muche as there is neither time nor cause of fur-
" ther discourse, what neede we to decide the matter,
" which of it selfe is euident? Beholde me here a pore

Trinicien

Trinicien brother without brethren, ioyleſſe without a
ſon at *Nocera*. On the other part conſider the Duke of
Camerino in great diſtreſſe and daũger, to paſſe ẏ ſtrait
of death my brethren did. Let vs goe (I pray you) to de-
liuer the captiue, and by reuenging theſe offenſes and
murders to ſettle my Citie in former ſtate & fredome,
which ẏ villaine goeth about to take frõ me, by encoura-
ging my ſubiects to reuolt & to enter armes, therby to
expell our houſe from the title of the ſame. As Conrade
ſpake theſe words, & with great grauity & cõſtãcy pro-
nouncing ſundry tokẽs of ſorow, ẏ Conſtable of *Naples*
wroth beyond meaſure for theſe vnpleſãt newes, & ful
of griefe & choler againſt ẏ traiterous lieuetenãt, ſware
in the hearing of them al, ẏ he wold neuer reſt one good
ſlepe vntil that quarell were auẽged, and had quited ẏ
outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and ẏ wrong which
he felt in him for the impriſonmẽt of the Duke of *Ca-
merino*. So he concluded, and the ſouldiers were aſſem-
bled throughout all the parts of the conſtables lands,
vpon the end of the weeke to march againſt the fort of
Nocera, the Citizens wherof had layd diligẽt ſcout and
watch for the eſcape of the captain, who without baſh-
fulneſſe determined with his men to defend ẏ ſame, &
to proue fortune, making himſelf beleue that his qua-
rel was good, and cauſe iuſt to withſtand them ẏ ſhould
haue the heart to come to aſſaile him. The Conſtable
in the meane time ſent a Trumpet to *Nocera*, to ſom-
mon the Captaine to ſurrender, and to tell the cauſe
of his reuolt, and at whoſe prouocation he had commit-
ted ſo deteſtable a Treaſon.

The Captaine well aſſured and boldned in his wic-
kedneſſe, anſwered that he was not ſo well fortified to
make a ſurrender ſo good cheape, & for ſo ſmal a price to
forgoe his honor & reputation: and furthermore, ẏ his

wit was not so fẽder, but he durst deuise and attempt such a matter without the councel of any other, & that all the dedes and deuises passed till that time, were of his owne inuention. And to be euen with the wrong done to his honor by the Lord Nicholas Trinicio, for the violation of his wiues chastity, he had cõmitted ỳ murders (told to Braccio) being angry, that all the tirãnous race was not in his hand to spil, to the end he might deliuer his countrey, and put the Citizens in libertie, albeit that fõdly they had refused the same, as vnworthy of suche a benefite, and well deserued that the tyrants should tare them at their pleasure, and make them also their common slaues and drudges. The trumpet warned him also to rẽder to him the Duke, bicause he was guiltlesse of the fact, which the Captaine regarded so little as he did the first demaundes, which was ỳ cause (the company being arriued at *Nocera*, and the Constable vnderstanding the little accompt the Castell gentleman made of his summones) that the battry the very day of their arrinall was layd and shotte against the place with suche thunder and dreadful thumpes of Canon shot, as the hardiest of the mortpayes within, began to faint. But the corage & litle feare of their chief, retired their hearts into their bellies. The breache being made againe, the Constable who feared to lose the Duke in the Captaines furie, caused the Trumpet to summone them within to fall to composition, ỳ bloudshed might not stirre their souldioures to further cruelties. But so much gained this seconde warning as the first, for which cause the next day after the assault was giuen, wher if the assailed was valiaunt, the resistance was no lesse than bolde and venturous. But what can thirtie or fortie men doe against the force of a whole countrey, and where the generall was one of the most

valiant

valiant and wiſeſt Captains of his time, and who was accompanied with the floure of the *Neapolitane* ſowme. The aſſault continued .iiij. or .v. houres, but in the ende the Dead payes not able to ſuſtaine the force of the aſſailants, forſoke the breache, and allaying to ſaue themſelues, the Lieutenant retired to the Kipe of the Fort, where his wife continued priſoner, from the time that the two brethren were ſlaine. Whiles they without, ruffled in together in heapes amongs the defendaunts, the Duke of *Camerino*, with his men, founde meanes to eſcape out of priſon, and therwithall began furioully to chaſtiſe the miniſters of the diſloyall Captain, whiche in litle time were cut al to peices. Conrade being within, founde the Captains father, vpon whom he was reuenged, and killed him with his owne handes. And not content with that, caried into further rage and furie, he haſhed him into gobbets, and threwe them to the dogs. Truly a ſtrange maner of reuenge, if the Captens cruelties had not attempted like inhumanitie. To be ſhort, horrible it is to repeate the murders done in that ſtirre and hurly burly. For they that were of the Captaines part, and taken, receiued all the ſtraungeſt and cruelleſt puniſhment that man coulde deuiſe. And were it not that I haue a deſire in nothing to belie the author, and leſſe will to leaue that which he hath written vpon the miſerable end of thoſe that were the miniſters and ſeruants to the barbarous tirannie of the Captaine, I would paſſe no further, but conceyle that which dothe not deſerue remembrance, except to auoide the example, which is not ſtraunge, the crueltie of reuenging hearte in the nature of man, in all times growyng to ſuch audacitie, as the torments which ſeeme incredible, be liable to credite as well for thoſe we reade in auncient hiſtories, as thoſe we heare tel of by heare ſay, and

chauncing in our time. He that had the vpper hande of his enimie, not content to kill, but to eate with his rauenous teeth the hart disentrailde from his aduersarie, was he lesse furious than Conrade, by making an Anatomie of the bodie of the Captains father? And he that thrust Galleazze Fogase into the mouth of a Canon, tying his head vnto his knees, and causing him to be caried by the violent force of gunpouder into the citie from whence he came, to bribe and corrupte certaine of his enimies army, did he shew himself to be more curteous than one of these? Leaue we a part those that be past, to touche the miserable ende wherewith Conrade caused ỳ last tribute of the Captains souldiers to be payd. Now amongs these, some wer tied to ỳ tailes of wilde horses, & trained ouer hedges & bushes, & downe ỳ steepnesse of high rocks, some were haled in pieces, & afterwards burnt wᵭ great martyrdom, some wer diuided & parted aline in four quarters, other sowed naked within an ore hide, & so buried in earth vp to ỳ chin, by which torments they finished their liues with fearful groninges. Wil ye say that the Bull of Perillus, or Diomedes Horses, wer afflictions more cruel than these? I know not what ye cal crueltie, if these acts may beare ỳ title of modestie. But all this proceded of wrath & disdaine of either parts. The one disdained that the seruãt shold be his head, & the other was offended, ỳ his soueraigne lord should assay to take ỳ from him, which his dutie cõmaunded him to kepe. Conrade toke in yll part the treason of the Captain, who beyond measure was angrie ỳ the lord Nicholas had made him a brother of Vulcans order, & had registred him in the boke of husbands, which know that, they dare not speake. In sume, the one had right, & the other was not without some reason, & notwithstanding both surmounted ỳ bounds of mans mild nature. The one ought to contente himselfe (as I haue

sayd)

laid) for being reuẽged on him ẏ had offended him, & the other of ẏ murder done, during ẏ assault without shewing so blody tokens of his cruelti̇e, & so apparãt euidẽce of tiranny, vpon ẏ ministers of ẏ brutal & blody capten who seing his father put to death w̃ such martyrdom, & his men so strangely tormented, was vanquished with choler, dispaire & impaciẽce. And albeit ẏ he had no gret desire to hurt his wife, yet was he surmounted w̃ suche rage, as aprehẽding hir, & binding hir hãds & fæt, she stil crying him mercy, & craning pardon for hir faultes at ẏ hãds of god & him, he threw hir down frõ ẏ hiest Toure of ẏ kipe vpõ ẏ pauemẽt of the castle court, not without tears & abashmẽt of al which saw ẏ mõstrous & dredful sight: which ẏ souldiers viewing, they fired ẏ Toure, & with fire & smoke forced ẏ capten to com forth, & by like means made him, his brother & childrẽ to tread ẏ dãce ẏ his wife before had done. Cõrade by & by caused those bodies to be thrown forth for fode to ẏ wolues, & other rauening beasts & birds liuing vpon ẏ pray of carriõ, causing also his brethrẽ & ẏ gẽtlewomã honorably to be buried, which gentlewomã had born ẏ penãce worthy for hir fault. Such was ẏ end of ẏ most miserable, & yll gouerned loue, ẏ I thinke mã hath euer red in writing, & which doth clerely witnesse, ẏ ther is no plesure so gret but Fortune by changing & turning hir whéle maketh a hũdred times more bitter thã desire of such ioy dothe yeld delite. And far better it wer (besides ẏ offẽse done to god) neuer to cast eye on womã, thã to bord or prone them to raise such sclanders & facts which cannot be recoũted but w̃ the horror of the herers, nor written but to ẏ great grief of those ẏ muse & studie vpõ ẏ same: not withstãding for instructiõ of our life, both good & bad examples be introduced & offred to the view of ech degrée and state. To the end that whordom may be auoided, &

bodily

bodily pleasure eschewed, as moste mortall and pernicious plagues that doe infect as wel the body and reputation of man, as the integritie of the minde. Besides that eche man ought to possesse his owne vessel, and not to coueite that is none of his, vnseemely also it is to solicite the neighbors wife, to procure therby the disiunction and defaite of the whole bonde of mariage, which is a treasure so deare and precious, and carieth so great griefe to him that seeth it defaced, as our Lorde (to declare the grauitie of the fact) maketh a comparison of his wrathe against them which runne after straunge Gods, and applieth the honour due vnto hym to others that do not deserue the same, with the iust disdain and rightfull choler of a iealous husband, fraught wyth despite to see himselfe dispoiled of the seasure and possession onely giuen to him, and not subiecte to any other, what soeuer he be. Lerne here also (O ye husbands) not to flie with so nimble wing, as by your own authoritie to seeke reuenge without fearing the folies & sclanders that may insue. Your sorow is iust, but it behoueth that reason doe guide your fantasies, and bridle your ouer sodaine passions, to the intent that ye come not after to sing the dolefull song of repentance, like vnto this foolish man, who hauing done more than he ought, and not able to retire without his ouerthrowe, threw him self into the bottomlesse gulfe of perdition. And let vs all fixe fast in memorie, that neuer vnruled rage, and wilful choler, brought other benefite than the ruine of him that suffered him selfe to runne hedlong into the same, and who thinketh that all that which is natural in vs, is also reasonable, as though Nature were so perfect a workewoman, as in mans corruption she could make vs Angels or halfe gods. Nature following the instincte of that which is naturall in vs, doth not greatly straye

from

from perfection, but that is geuen to few, and those whome God dothe loue and chose. And Vertue is so selbome founde, as it is almoste impossible to imitate that perfection. And briefly to say, I wil conclude with the Author of this present Historie:

Angre is a furie short,
To him that can the same exwell:
But it is no laughing sport
In whome that senseleße rage doth dwell.
That pang confoundeth eche mans wittes
And shameth him with open shame,
His honour fades in frantike fittes,
And blemisheth his good name.

The King of Marocco.

¶ The great Curtesie of the Kyng of Marocco, (a Citie in BARBARIE) towarde a poore Fisherman, one of hys subiectes, that had lodged the Kyng, beyng strayed from his companie in hunting.

The.xxxiiij. Nouel.

FOr so much as the more than beastly cruelties recounted in the former Historie, doth yeld some sower taste to the minds of those that bée curteous, gentle and wel conditioned by nature, and as the stomacke of hym that dayly vseth one kinde of meate, be it neuer so delicate & daintie, dothe at length lothe and disdaine the same, and vtterly refuseth it. I now chaunge the diet, leaning for a certain time the murders, slaughters, despaires, and tragicall accidents, chaunced either in the loue, or in the ielosie of a louer, or of a husband, & turn my stile to a more pleasant thing, that may so wel serue for instruction of the noble to folowe vertue, as that which I haue alreadie written, maye rise to their profite, warely to take heede they fall not into such deformed and filthy faults, as the name and praise of mã, be defaced and his reputation decayed: if then the contraries be knowne by that which is of diuers natures,

the villanie of great cruelties shall be converted into the gentlenesse of great curtesie, and rigor shal be condemned, when with swetenesse and generositie, the noble shall assay to wynne the heart, seruice, and affected deuotion of the baleſt sort: so the greatnesse and nobilitie of man placed in dignitie, and who hath puissance aner other, consisteth not to shew himselfe hard and terrible, for that is the maner of tyrants, bicause he that is feared, is consequently hated, euill beloued, and in the ende forsaken of the whole world, which hath bene the cause that in times past Princes aspiryng to great conquests, haue made their way, more easie by gentlenesse and Curtesie, than by furie of armes, stabilishing the foundations of their dominions more firme & durable by those meanes, than they which by rigor and cruelties haue sacked townes, ouerthrowne Cities, depopulated prouinces, and fatted landes with the bodies of those, whose lines they haue depriued by dent of sword, sith the gouernement and authoritie ouer other, carieth greater subiection than puissance. Wherefore Antigonus, one of the successours of greate Alexander (that made all the earth to tremble vpon the recitall of his name) seing that his sonne behaued himself to arrogātly, and without modestie to one of his subiectes, reproued and checked him, and amongs many wordes of chastisement and admonition, sayde vnto him: Knowest thou not my sonne, that the estate of a King, is a noble and honorable seruitude? Royall words (in dede) and méete for a King: For albeit that eche man dothe him reuerence, and that he be honoured and obeyed of all, yet is he for all that, the seruaunt and publike minister, who ought no lesse to defende hys subiecte, than he that is the subiecte to doe hym honoure and homage. And the more the Prince doth humble himself,

the greater increase hath his glorie, and the more wonderful he is to euery wight. What aduanced the glory of that Iulius Cæsar, who firste depressed the *Senatorie* state of gouernement at *Rome*? Were his victories atchieued ouer the *Galles* and *Britons*, and afterwardes ouer *Rome* it selfe, when he had vanquished Pompee? All those serued his tourne, but his greatest fame rose of his clemencie and curtesie: In such wise as he shewed hym selfe to be gentle, and fauourable euen to them, whome he knewe not to loue him, otherwise than if he had bene their mortal enimie. His successors as Augustus, Vespasianus, Titus, Marcus Aurelius, & Flauius were worthily noted for clemencie: Notwithstanding I see not one drawe nére to great courage and gentlenesse, ioyned with the singular curtesie of Dom Roderigo Viuario the Spaniarde surnamed Cid towarde King Pietro of *Aragon* that hyndred his expedition againste the *Mores* at *Grenados*: For hauyng vanquished the said King, and taken hym in battell, not only remitted the reuenge of his wrong, but also suffered hym to goe without raunsome, and toke not from him so much as one forte, esteeming it to be a better exploite to winne such a king with curtesie, than beare the name of cruell, in putting hym to death, or seazing vpon his lande. But bicause acknowledging of the power, and enriching the small, is more cõmendable in a Prince, than when he sheweth himselfe gentle to his like, I haue collected thys discourse and facte of King Mansor of *Marocco*, whose children (by subtile and fained religion) Cherif succeeded, the sonne of whome at this day inioyeth the kingdoms of *Su*, *Marocco*, and the most part of the iles confinyng vpon *Æthiopia*. This history was told by an *Italian* called Nicholoso Baciadonne, who vpon this accident was in *Affrica*, and in traffike of marchandise

in

in the land of *Oran*, situated vpon the coast of ỳ South seas, and where the *Genenois* and Spaniards vse great entercourse, bicause the countrey is faire, wel peopled, and where the inhabitaunts (although the soile be barbarous) lyue indifferent ciuilly, vsing greate curtesie to straungers, and largely departyng their goodes to the poore, towarde whome they be so earnestly bente, and louing, as for their liberalitie and pitifull almesse, they shame vs Christians. They mainteyne a greate numbre of Hospitalls, to receyue and intertaine the poore and needie, which they doe more charitably than they that be bounde by the lawe of Iesus Christe, to vse charitie towardes their brethren, wyth that curtesie and humaine mylonesse. These *Oranois* delight also to recorde in writing the successe of things that chaunce in their tyme, and carefully reserue the same in memorie, whiche was the cause that hauyng registred in theyr Chronicles, (which be in the *Arabic* letters, as the moste parte of the Countreys do vse) thys present victorie, they imparted the same to the *Genenois* marchauntes, of whome the *Italian* Author confesseth to haue receyued the Copie. The cause why that *Genenois* marchaunt was so diligent to make that enquirie, was by reason of a citie of that prouince, built through the chaunce of this Victorie, and which was called in theyr tongue, Cæsar Elcabir, so much to say, as *A great Palace*. And bycause I am assured, that curteous myndes will delight in dedes of curtesie, I haue amongs other the Nouells of Bandello, chosen by Francois de Bellefforest, and my selfe discoursed thys, albeit the matter be not of great importance, and greater thyngs and more notorious curtesies haue bene done by our owne kings and Princes. As of Henry the eyght a Prince of notable memorie in his progresse in to the Northe the

xxvij. yeare of his raigne, when he disdained not a poore Millers house, being stragled from his traine, busily pursuing the Hart, and there unknown of the Miller, was welcomed with homely chere, as his mealy house was able for the time to minister, and afterwards for acknowledging his willing minde, recompenced him with dainties of the Courte, and a Princely rewarde. Of Edward the thirde, whose Royall nature was not displeased pleasauntly to vse a wayfaring Tanner, when deuided from his company, he metts him by the way not farre from Tamworth in Staffordshire, and by cheapening of his welfare steede (for stedinelle, sure and able to cary him so farre as the stable doore) growes to a price, and for exchaunge the Tanner craued fiue shillings to bote betwene the kings and his. And whē the King satisfied with disport, desired to shew himself by sounding his warning blast, assembled al his traine, And to the great amaze of the poore Tanner, (when he was guarded with that troupe) he well guardoned his good pastime and familiars dealing with the order of knighthode and reasonable reuenue for the maintenaunce of the same. The like examples our Chronicles, memory, and report plentifully doe avouche and witnesse. But what? this History is the more rare and worthy of noting, for respect of the people and Countrey, where seldome or neuer curteste haunteth or findeth harborough, and where Nature doth bring forth greater store of monsters, than things worthy of praise.

This great King Manfor then was not onely the temporall Lord of the Countrey of *Oran* and *Morocco*, but also (as is saide of *Prete Iean*,) Bishop of his land and the Mahomet priest, as he is at this day that raigneth in *Fezo*, *Sus*, and *Marocco*. Now this Prince a-

hope

beyond all other pleasure, lauded the game of hunting. And he is muche delighted in that pastime, as some times he would cause his Tentes in the middes of the desertes to be erected, to lie there all night, to the ende that the next day he might renewe his game, and defraude his men of idlenesse, and the wilde beastes of rest. And this manner of life he vsed still, after he had done iustice and hearkened the complaintes for which his subiectes came to disclose thereby their griefes, wherin also he toke so great pleasure, as some of our Magistrates doe seke their profite, whereof they be so sore ywithe, as they be desirous to satisfie the place whereunto they be called, and render all men their right due vnto them. For with their bribery and sacred golden hunger, Kings and Princes in these dayes be yll serued, the people wronged, and the wicked out of feare. There is none offense almost how villanous so euer it be, but is washed in the water of bribery, and clensed in the holly drop, wherewith the Poetes faine Iupiter to corrupt the daughter of Acrisius sacke closed within the brasen Toure. And who is able to resist that, which hath subdued the highest powers?

Now returne we from our wanderings: This great King Manfor on a day assebled his people to hunt in ye not marish & fenny Countrey, which in elder age was farre off from the Citie of *Asila*, which the *Portugalles* holde at this present, to make the way more free into the Iles of *Molucca*, of the most parte whereof their King is Lord.

As he was attentife in folowing a Bear, & his pastime at the best, the Elementes began to darke, and a great tempest rose, & such as with the storme & violent wind, scattred the train far of from the King, who not knowing

knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to auoyde the tempest, y greatest yͤ he sawe in all his life, would wyth a good wyl haue ben accōpanied as the *Troiane* Aeneas was, when being in like passyone and feare, he was constrayned to enter into a caue wyth his Quene Dido, where he perfourmed the toyes of hys vnhappie maryage. But Mahfor beyng without companie, and without any Caue at hande, wandered alongs the Champayne so carefull of his life, for feare of wylde beastes, which flocke together in thole deserties, as the Curtiers were pensiue, for that they knewe not whether their Prince was gone. And that which chiefly grieued Mahfor, was hys being alone without a guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durste passe no further for feare of drowneng, and to be destroyed amidde those Marshes, whereof all the countrey was very full. On the one side he was frighted with thunderclaps, which rumbled in the aire very thicke & terrible. On the other side the lightning cōtinually flashed on his face, the roaring of the beastes appalled him, the ignorāce of the way so astonied him, as he was afraid to fal into the running brookes, which ỹ outragious raines had caused to swel e rise. It is not to be doubted, that orisons and prayers vnto his great prophet Mahomet were forgotten, & whether he were more deuout than when he went on pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mosqua. He complayned of yll lucke, accusyng Fortune, but chiefly hys owne follie, for giuing himselfe so much to hunting, for the desire whereof, he was thus straggled into vnknowen Countreyes. Sometimes he raued and vomyted his gall agaynst his gentlemen and houshold seruants, and threatned death vnto his garde. But afterwardes, when reason ouershadowed his sense, he sawe that the time,

time, and not their negligence or litle care cauſed that diſgrace. He thought ẏ his Prophet had poured downe that tempeſt for ſome Notable ſinne, and had brought him into ſuche & ſo daũgerous extremity for his faults. For which cauſe he lifted vp his eyes, and made a thouſand Mahomet mowes, and Apiſh mocks (according to their manner.) And as he fixed his eyes aloft vp to the heauens, a flaſhe of lightning glaunced on his face ſo violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, like a little childe reproued by his maſter. But he was further daunted and amazed, when he ſawe the night approche, which with the darkneſſe of his cloudy mantel, ſtayed his pace from going any further, & brought him into ſuch perplexitie, as willingly he wold haue forſaken bothe his hunting and company of his ſeruauntes to be quitte of that daunger. But God carefull of good minds (with what law ſo euer they be trained vp.) and who maketh the ſunne to ſhine vpon ẏ iuſt and vniuſt, prepared a meanes for his ſauegarde, as ye ſhall heare. The *Africane* King being in this traunce, and naked of all hope, neceſſity (which is the cleareſt thing of light that is) made him diligently to loke about, whether he could ſée any perſone by whom he might attaine ſome ſecuritie. And as he thus bent himſelfe to diſcry all the partes of the Countrey, he ſaw not farre of from him, the glimpſe of a light which glimmered out at a little window, whereunto he addreſſed himſelf, & perceiued ẏ it was a ſimple cabane ſituate in the middeſt of the fennes, to which he approched for his ſuccor & defenſe in ẏ time of that tẽpeſt. He reioyſed as you may think, and whither his heart lept for ioy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue aſſayed like daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the ſailers on the ſeas féele no greater ioy whẽ they arriue to harborough, thã the king of *Ma-*

knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to auoyde the tempest, y greatest y he had in all his life, would wyth a good wyl haue ben accōpanied as the *Troiane* Aeneas was, when being in like parlyme and feare, he was constrayned to enter into a cane wyth his Quene Dido, where he perfourmed the ioyes of his wishapple mariage. But Manlor beyng without companie, and without any Cane at hande, wandered alongs the Champayne so carefull of his life, for feare of wylde beastes, which flocke together in those deserties, as the Curtiers were pensiue, for that they knewe not whether their Prince was gone. And that which chiefly grieued Manlor, was his being alone without a guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durste passe no further for feare of drowning, and to be destroyed amidst those Marshes, whereof all the countrey was very full. On the one side he was frighted with thunderclaps, which rumbled in the aire very thicke & terrible. On the other side the lightning cōtinually flashed on his face, the roring of the beastes appalled him, the ignorāce of the way so astonied him, as he was afraid to fal into the running brookes, which y outragious raines had caused to swel erile. It is not to be doubted, that orisons and prayers vnto his great prophet Mahomet were forgotten, & whether he were more deuout than when he went on pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mosqua. He complayned of yll lucke, accusyng Fortune, but chiefly his owne follie, for giuing himselfe so much to hunting, for the desire whereof, he was thus straggled into vnknowen Countreyes. Sometimes he raued and vomyted his gall agaynst his gentlemen and houshold seruants, and threatned death vnto his garde. But afterwardes, when reason ouershadowed his sense, he sawe that the time,

time, and not their negligence or litle care cauſed that diſgrace. He thought ẏ his Prophet had poured downe that tempeſt for ſome Notable ſinne, and had brought him into ſuche & ſo daũgerous extremity for his faults. For which cauſe he lifted vp his eyes, and made a thouſand Mahomet mowes, and Apiſh mocks (according to their manner.) And as he fixed his eyes a loft vp to the heauens, a flaſhe of lightning glaunced on his face ſo violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, like a litle childe reproued by his maſter. But he was further daunted and amazed, when he ſawe the night approche, which with the darkneſſe of his cloudy mantel, ſtayed his pace from going any further, & brought him into ſuch perpleritie, as willingly he wold haue forſaken bothe his hunting and company of his ſeruauntes to be quitte of that daunger. But God carefull of good minds (with what law ſo euer they be trained vp,) and who maketh the ſunne to ſhine vpon ẏ iuſt and vniuſt, prepared a meanes for his ſauegarde, as ye ſhall heare. The *Africane* King being in this traunce, and naked of all hope, neceſſity (which is the cleareſt thing of ſight that is) made him diligently to loke about, whether he could ſée any perſone by whom he might attaine ſome ſecuritie. And as he thus bent himſelfe to diſcry all the partes of the Countrey, he ſaw not farre of from him, the glimpſe of a light which glimmered out at a litle windowe, whereunto he addreſſed himſelf, & perceiued ẏ it was a ſimple cabane ſituate in the middeſt of the fennes, to which he approched for his ſuccor & defenſe in ẏ time of that tẽpeſt. He reioyſed as you may think, and whither his heart lept for ioy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue allayed like daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the ſailers on the ſeas fæle no greater ioy whẽ they arime to harborough, thã the king of *Ma-*

rocco did: or when after a Tempest, or other perill, they discry vpon the prowe of their shippe, the brightnesse of some cliffe, or other land. And this king hauing felt the tempest of winde, raine, haile, lightening, and Thunder claps, compassed round about with Marshes and violent streames of little riuers that ran along his way thought, he had found a Paradise by chauncing vpon that rusticall lodge. Now ỳ Cotage was the refuge place of a poore Fisher man, who liued and sustained his wife and children with Eeles which he toke alongs the diches of those deepe and huge Marshes. Mansor when he was arriued to the doore of that great palace, couered and thacked with Reede, called to them within, who at the first would make no answer to the Prince that taried their cõming at the gate. Then he knocked again, and with louder voice than before, which caused this fisher man, thinking that he had bene some Rippier (to whom he was wont to sel his ware, or else some straũger strayed out of his way,) spedily wẽt out, and seing the King wel mounted and richly clothed, and albeit he toke him not to be his soueraigne Lord yet he thought he was some one of his Courtly Gentlemen. Wherefore he sayd: what fortune hathe driuen yeu (sir) into
" these so desert and solitary places, and such as I maruel
" that you were not drowned a hundred times, in these
" streames and bottomes whereof this Marrish and fen-
" ny Countrey are full? It is the great God (answered
" Mansor) which hath had some care of me, and will not
" suffer me to perish without doing greater good turnes &
" better deedes than hitherto I haue done. The kings cõming thither, seemed to Prognosticate that which after chaunced, and that God had poured downe the tempest for the wealth of the Fisher man, and commodity of the Countrey. And the straying of the King was a thing

appointed

appoynted to make voyde those Marshes, and to purge and cleanse the Countrey. Semblable chaunces haue happened to other Princes, as to Constantine ye great, besides his Citie called New *Rome*, whē he caused certaine Marshes and Diches to be filled vp and dryed, to build a faire and sumptuous Temple, in the honor and memory of ye blessed Virgin that brought forth the Sauior of the world. But tel me good mā (replied Mansor) cānt thou not shew me the way to the Court, and whether the King is gone? for gladly (if it were possible) would I ride thither. Verely (sayd the Fisher man) it will be almost day before ye can come there, the same being .x. leagues from hēce. Forsomuch as thou knowest the way (answered Mansor) doe me so great pleasure to bring me thither, & be assured that besides the ye good turne, for which I shall be bound vnto thée, I will curteously content thée for thy paines. Syr (sayde the pore man) you séeme to be an honest gentleman, wherfore I pray you to light, and to tary héere this night, for that it is so late, and the way to the Citie is very euill and combersome for you to passe. No no (said the King) if it be possible, I must repaire to the place whither the King is gone, wherefore doe so muche for me as to be my guide, and thou shalt sée whether I be vnthankefull to them that imploy their paines for me. If King Mansor (sayd the Fisher man) were héere himselfe in person, and made the like request, I would not be so very a fole, nor so presumptuous, (at this time of the night) to take vpon me without daunger to bring him to his Palace. Wherfore (said the King)? Wherefore (quod you)? bicause the Marshes be so daungerous, as in the day time, if one knowe not well the way, the horse, (be he neuer so strong and lusty,) may chaunce to

" ſticke faſt, & tary behinde for gage. And I wold be ſory
" if the King were here, that he ſhold fall into my perill,
" or ſuffer anoyance, & therwithal wold deme my ſelf vn-
" happy if I did let him to incur ſuch euil or incõbrance.
" Manſor that delighted in the cõmunication of this good
" mã, and deſirous to know the cauſe that moued him to
" ſpeake with ſuch affection, ſayd vnto him: And why ca-
" reſt thou for ẏ life, health, or preſeruation of our king?
" What haſt to do with him that art ſo ſory for his ſtate,
" and carefull of his ſafety. Ho, ho, ſayd the godman, doe
" you ſay that I am careful for my prince? Verily I loue
" him a hundred times better than I do my ſelf, my wife
" or children which God hath ſent me: and what ſir, doe
" not you loue our Prince? Yes that I doe (replied the
" King,) for I haue better cauſe than thou, for that I am
" many times in his company, and liue vpon his charge,
" and am entertained with his wages. But what nedeſt
" thou to care for him? Thou knoweſt him not, he neuer
" did thee any good turne or pleaſure: nor yet thou nedeſt
" not hope hencefoorth to haue any pleaſure at his hands.
" What? (ſayd the fiſher man) muſt a Prince be loued
" for gaine and good turnes, rather than for his iuſtice &
" curteſie? I ſee wel that amongs you maſter Courtiers,
" the benefits of kings be more regarded, and their gifts
" better liked than their vertue and nobility, which ma-
" keth them wonderful vnto vs: and ye do more eſteme
" the gold, honor and eſtates that they beſtow vpon you,
" than their health and ſauegarde, which are the more to
" be conſidered, for that the King is our head, and God
" hath made him ſuche one to kepe vs in peace, and to be
" careful of our ſtates. Pardon me if I ſpeak ſo boldly in
" your preſence. The King (which toke ſingulare delite
" in this Coũtrey Philoſopher,) anſwered him: I am not
" offended bicauſe thy words aproche ſo neare the troth:

but

but tel me what benefit hast thou receiued of that king Manſor, of whome thou makeſt ſuche accompte and lo-
neſt ſo wel? For I cannot thinke that euer he did thee
good, or ſhewed thee pleaſure, by reaſon of thy pouerty,
and the little furniture within thy houſe in reſpecte of
that which they poſſeſſe whom he loueth and fauoreth,
and vnto whome he ſheweth ſo great familiaritie and
benefite. Doe tell me ſir (replied the good man) for ſo
much as you ſo greatly regard the fauoures which ſub-
iectes receiue at their Princes handes, as in déde they
ought to doe. What greater goodneſſe, richeſſe, or bene-
fite ought I to hope for, or can receiue of my King (be-
ing ſuche one as I am,) but the profit and vtilitie that
all we which be his vaſſalles doe apprehend from day
to day in the iuſtice that he rendreth to euery wight,
by not ſuffering the puiſſant and riche to ſuppreſſe and
ouertread the feble and weake, and him that is deuoid
of fortunes goodes, that indifferency be maintained by
the officers to whome he committeth the gouernment
of his prouinces, and the care which he hathe that his
people be not deuoured by exactions, and intollerable
tributes. I do eſteme more his goodneſſe, clemency and
loue, that he beareth to his ſubiects, than I doe all your
delicates and eaſe in following the court, I moſt hum-
bly honor and reuerence my king in that he being farre
from vs, doeth neuertheleſſe ſo vſe his gouernment, as
we feele his preſence like the Image of God, for the
peace and vnion, wherein we through him doe liue and
enioy without diſturbaunce that little which God and
fortune haue giuen vs. Who (if not the King) is he
that doeth preſerue vs, and defend vs from the incur-
ſions and pillages of thoſe Theues and Pirates of *Ara-
bie*, which make warre and inuade their neighbors? and
and there is no frend they haue but they wold diſpleaſe

" if the King wisely did not forbid & prevent their villa-
" nies. That great Lord which keepeth his Court at *Con-*
" *stantinople* and maketh himselfe to be adored of his peo-
" ple like a God, dwelleth not so much the *Arabians*, as
" our King doeth, vnder the Protection and sauegarde of
" whome, I that am a poore Fisher man, do ioy my pouer-
" tie in peace, and without feare of theeues do norish my
" little familie, applying my selfe to the fishing of Eeles
" that be in these diches and fenny places, which I cary
" to the market townes, and sell for the sustenaunce and
" feeding of my wife and children, and esteeme my selfe
" right happy, that returning to my cabane and homely
" lodge at my pleasure, in what so euer place I do abide,
" because (albeit farre of from neighboures,) by the bene
" fite and diligence of my Prince, none staye my iour-
" ney, or offendeth me by any meanes, which is the cause
" (sayd he lifting vp his hãds and eyes aloft,) that I pray
" vnto God and his great Prophet Mahomet, that it may
" please them to preserue our King in health, and to giue
" him so great happe and contentation, as he is vertuous
" and debonaire, and that ouer his ennimies (flying be-
" fore him,) he may euermore be victorious, for norishing
" his people in peace, and his children in ioy and Nobili-
" tie. The King seeing that deuout affection of the pas-
saunt, and knowing it to be without guile or Hipocri-
sie, would gladly haue discouered himself, but yet wil-
ling to reserue the same for better opportunitie, he sayd
" vnto him. Forsomuch as thou lou'st ỹ King so wel, it is
" not impossible but those of his house be welcome vnto
" thee, and that for thy Masters sake, thou wilt helpe and
" doe seruice to his Gentlemen. Let it suffise you (repli-
" ed he) that my heart is more inclined to the King, than
" to the willes of those that serue him, for hope of prefer-
ment,

ment. Now being so affectionate to the King as I am, „
thinke whither his houshold seruaunts haue power to „
commaund me, and whither my willing minde be prest „
to doe them good or not. But me thinke ye nede not to „
stay here at the gate in talke, being so wet as you be: „
wherefore vouchsafe to come into my house, which is „
your own, to take such simple lodging as I haue, wher „
I wil entreat you, (not according to your merite) but „
with the litle that God and his Prophet haue departed „
to my pouertie: And to morow morning I wil conduct „
you to the Citie, euen to ỳ royal Palace of my Prince. „
Truely (answered the King) albeit necessitie did not „
prouoke me, yet thine honestie deserueth wel other re- „
putation than a simple Countrey man, and I do thinke „
that I haue profited more in hearing thee speake, than „
by hearkening to the flattering and babbling tales of „
Courting triflers, which daily imploy thẽselues to cor- „
rupt the eares of Princes. What sir (said the paisant,) „
thinke you that this poore coate and simple lodging be „
not able to apprehend the preceptes of vertue? I haue „
sometimes heard tell, that the wise auoiding Cities & „
troupes of men, haue withdrawne themselues into „
the deserts, for leisure to contemplat heauenly things. „
Your skill is great replied Manſor: Goe we then, sith „
you please to doe me that curtesie as this night to be „
mine hoste. So the King went in to the rusticall lodge, „
where in stede of Tapistery and Turkey hangings,
he saw the house stately hanged with fisher nettes and
cordes, and in place of riche seeling of Noble mens hou-
ses, he beheld Canes and Redes which serued bothe for
the seeling and couering. The fishermanaes wife con-
tinued in ỳ kitchen, whilest Manſor himselfe both wal-
ked and dressed his owne horse, to which horse the fisher

man

man durſt not once come neare for his corage & ſtately trappour, with one thing he was abundãtly refreſhed, and that the moſt nedeful thing which was fire, wherof there was no ſpare, no more then there was of fiſhe. But the King which had bene daintely fed, and did not well taſt and like that kinde of meat, demaunded if his hunger could not be ſupplied with a little fleſh, for that his ſtomake was anoyed with the only ſauoure of the Eeles. The poore man, (as ye haue ſomwhat perceiued by the former diſcourſe,) was a pleſaunt fellowe, and delighted rather to prouoke laughter, than to prepare more dainty meat, ſaid vnto the King: It is no maruel "though our Kings doe furniſhe themſelues with coun- "trey men, to ſerue them in their warres, for the deli- "cate bringing vp and litle force in fine courtiers. We, "albeit the raine doth fal vpon our heads, and the winde "aſſaile euery part of our bodies all durtie and wet, doe "not care either for fire or bed, we fede vpon any kinde "of meat that is ſet before vs, without ſeeking cauſe for "increaſing of our appetite: and we (behold) are nimble, "healthy, luſty, and neuer ſicke, nor our mouth out of "taſte, where ye doe feele ſuche diſtemperaunce of ſto- "make, as pitie it is to ſee, & more adoe there is to bring "the ſame into his right order and taſte, than to ordaine "and dreſſe a ſupper for a whole armie. The King who laughed (with diſplayed throte,) hearing his hoſte ſo merily diſpoſed, could haue bene contented to haue heard him ſtill, had not his appetite prouoked him and "the time of the night very late. Wherfore he ſaid vnto "him. I doe agree to what you alleage, but performe I "pray thee my requeſt, & then we will ſatiſfie our ſelues "with further talke. Well ſir (replied the Kings hoſte,) "I ſee well that a hungry belly hathe no luſt to heare a "merry ſong, whereof were you not ſo egre and ſharpe

ſet,

set, I could sing a hundred. But I haue a little Boye which as yet is not weaned, the same wil I cause to be made ready, for I thinke it cannot be better bestowed. The supper by reason of the hostes curtesie, was passed forth in a thousande pleasant passetimes, which the Fisherman of purpose uttered to recreate his guest, bycause he sawe him to delight in those deuises. And vpon the ende of supper, he sayd vnto the King: Now sir, how like you this banket? It is not so sumptuous as those be that be ordinarily made at our Princes court, yet I thinke that you shall sleepe with no lesse appetite than you haue eaten with a good stomacke, as appereth by the few words you haue uttered in the time of your repast. But whervnto boteth it to employ time, ordeined for eating, in expense of talke, which serueth not but to passe the time, and to shorten the daye? And meates ought rather to be taken for sustentation of nature than for prouocation or motion of this feeble and transitorie flesh? Verily (sayde the King) youre reason is good, and I doe meane to ryse from the table, to passe the remnant of the night in rest, therwith to satisfie my selfe so well as I haue with eatyng, and do thanke you hartily for your good aduertisement. So the King went to bedde, and it was not long ere he fell a sleepe, and continued vntil the morning. And when the Sunne dyd rise, the Fisherman came to wake hym, tellyng hym that it was time to rise, and that he was readie to bring him to the Court. All this while the Gentlemen of the Kings traine were searching rounde aboute the countrey to finde his maiestie, making cries and hues, that he might heare them. The King knowyng their voices, and the noyse they made, went forth to mete them: and if his people were gladde when they found him, the Fisherman was no lesse amazed to see the honor

which the courtiers did vnto his guest. Which the cur-
" teous King perceiuing said vnto him: My friend, thou
" seest here, that Manſor, of whome yesternight thou ma-
" dest so great accompt, and whom thou saydst, that thou
" didst loue so well. Be assured, that for the curtesie thou
" hast done him, before it be long, the same shal be so well
" acquited, as for euer thou shalte haue good cause to re-
" membre it. The good man was alreadie vpon his mary-
bones beseeching the King that it would please him to
pardon his rude entertainment, and his ouermuch fa-
miliaritie whiche he had vsed vnto him. But Manſor
causing him to rise vp, willed him to depart, and said y
within few days after he shoulde heare further newes.
Now in these fennes and marrish groundes, the King
had alreadie builded diuers Castles and lodges for the
pleasure and solace of hunting. Wherefore he purpo-
sed there to erect a goodly Citie, causing the waters to
be voided with great expeditiõ, which citie he caused to
be builded immediatly, and compassing the circuite of
the appointed place, with strong walles and deepe dy-
ches, he gaue many immunities & priuiledges to those,
that wold repaire to people the same, by meanes wher-
of, in litle time, the same was reduced to the state of a
beautiful & welthie Citie, which is the very same, that
before we sayd to be Cæsar Elcabir, as much to say, *The
great Palace*. This goodly worke being thus performed,
" Manſor sent for his host, to whom he sayd: To the end
" from henceforth thou mayest more honourably enter-
" tayne Kyngs into thy house, and mayest intreate them
" with greater sumptuositie, for the better solacyng of
" them with thy Curtesie and pleasaunt talke, beholde
" the Citie that I haue buylded, whyche I doe gyue
" vnto thée and thyne for euer, reseruing nothyng but
" an acknowledgemente of good wyll, to the ende thou
mayest

mayeſt knowe, that a Gentlemans mynde noufled in villanie, is diſcouered, when forgetting a good turne, he incurreth the vice of Ingratitude. The good man ſeing ſo godly an offer, and preſent worthie of ſuche a King, fell down vpon his knees, and kiſſyng his feete with all humilitie, ſayd vnto hym: Syr if youre liberalitie dyd not ſupplie the imperfection of my merite, and perfourmed not what wanted in me, to attaine ſo great eſtate, I would excuſe my ſelfe of the charge whiche it pleaſeth you to giue me, and wherevnto for lacke of trainyng vp, and vſe of ſuche a dignitie, I am altogether vnfitte. But ſith that the graces of God, and the gyftes of Kyngs ought neuer to be reiected, by accepting this benefite with humble thankes for the clemencie of your royall maieſtie, I reſte the ſeruant and ſlaue of you and yours. The King hearyng him ſpeake ſo wiſely, toke him vp, and imbraced him, ſaying: Would to God and his greate Prophete, that all they whiche rule Cities, and gouerne Prouinces, hadde ſo good a nature as thine, then I durſte be bolde to ſay, that the people ſhoulde lyue better at theyr eaſe, and Monarches without greate charge of conſcience, for the yll behauiours of theyr officers. Lyue good man, lyue at thine eaſe, mayntayne thy people, obſerue our lawes, & increaſe the beautie of the Citie, wherof from this time forth we do make the poſſeſſer.

And truely the preſent was not to be contemned, for that the ſame at this day is one of the faireſt that is in *Affrica*, and is the lande of the black people, ſuche as the *Spaniards* call Negroes. It is very full of gardeins, furniſhed with aboundaunce of Spices brought from the *Molucces*, becauſe of the martes and fairs ordeined there. To be ſhort, Manſor ſhewed by this gift what is the force of a gentle heart, which can not abide to be

vanquished in curtesie, and lesse suffer that vnder forgetfulnesse ỹ memorie of a receiued good turne be lost. King Darius whilome, for a litle garment, receiued in gift by Silofon, the *Samien*, recompenced him, wyth the gaine and royall dignitie of that citie, and made him soueraine Lord therof, and of the Isle of *Samos*. And what greater vertue can illustrate the name of a noble man, than to acknowledge and preserue them, which for naturall shame and bashfulnesse, dare not behold the maiestie of their greatnesse: God sometimes with a more curteous eye doth loke vpon the presents of a poore mã, than the fat and rich offerings of him that is great and wealthie. Euen so a benefite, from what hande soeuer it proceedeth, cannot chose to bring forthe the frutes of his liberalitie that giueth the same, who by vsing largesse, keleth also the like in him, to whome it is employed. That magnificẽte no long time past vsed the Seignorie of *Venice*, to Francesco Dandulo, who after he had dured the great displeasures of the Pope, in the name of the whole Citie, vpon his returne to *Venice*, for acknowledgement of his pacience, and for abolishmente of that shame, was with happie and vniforme acclamation of the whole state elected, and made Prince and Duke of that Common welth. Worthie of praise truly is he, that by some pleasure bindeth an other to his curtesie: but when a noble man, acknowleageth for a benefite, that which a subiect is bound to giue him by dutie and seruice, there the prowse of prayse caryeth no fame at all. For which cause I determined to displaye the historie of the barbarous king Manſor, to the intent that our Gentlemen, norished and trained vp in great ciuilitie, may allay by their mildenesse and good education, to surmount the curtesie of that Prince, of whom for this time we purpose to take our Farewell.

The

The Concluſion, with an Aduertiſement to the Reader.

WHat thou haſt gained for thy better inſtruction, or what conceiued for recreation by reading theſe .xxxiiij. Nouells, I am no iudge, although (by deeming) in reading and peruſing, thou mayſt (at thy pleaſure) gather both. But how ſoeuer profite or delight, can ſatiſfie mine appointment, wherefore they were preferred into thy hands, contented am I that thou doe vouchſafe them. God leſſons howe to ſhunne the darts and prickes of inſolencie, thou findeſt in the ſame. The vertuous noble may ſauor the frutes and taſte the licour that ſtilleth from the gummes or buds of Vertue. The contrary may ſée the blolloms fal, that blome from the ſhrubs of diſloyaltie and degenerat kind. Yong Gétlemen & Ladies do viewe a plot founded on ſured ground, and what the foundation is, planted in ſhattring ſolle, with a faſhion of attire to garniſh their inward parts, ſo well as (ſpareleſſe) they imploy vpon the vaniſhing pompe. Euery ſort and ſere that warfare in the fielde of humaine life, may ſent here the ſauourous frute (to outward liking) that fanſied the ſenſuall faſt of Adams wife. They ſée alſo what griftes ſuch fading frutes produce vnto poſteritie: what likewiſe the luſkie growth and ſpring of vertues plant, and what delicates it braunceth, to thoſe that carefully kéepe the ſlips therof, within the orchard of their mindes. Diuerſe Tragicall ſhewes by the pennes deſcription haue bene diſcloſed in greateſt number of theſe hiſtories, the ſame alſo I haue mollified and ſwéetened with the courſe of pleaſant matters, of purpoſe not to dampe the deyntie

mindes of those that shrinke and feare at suche rehersall. And bicause sodainly (contrary to expectation) this volume is risen to greter heape of leaues, I do omit for this present time sundry Nouels of merie deuise, reserning the same to be ioyned with the rest of an other part, wherein shall succeede the remnant of Bandello, specially suche (sufferable) as the learned Frenche man François de Belleforrest hath selected, and the choisest done in the *Italian*. Some also out of Erizzo, Ser Giouani Fiorentino, Paraboſco, Cynthio, Straparole, Sansouino, and the best liked oute of the Queene of *Nauarre*, and other Authors. Take these in so good parte with those that haue and shall come forth, as I do offre them with good will, curteously correcting such faults and errors, as shall present themselues, either burying them in the bosom of fauor, or pretermitting them with the beck of Curtesie. The which in deede, or the most part, had not offended thée, if time had not ben spent before the Printer could draw to an ende hereof.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London
by Henry Bynneman
for Nicholas Englande.
ANNO. M. D. LXVII.
Nouembris. 8.

Diuers Faultes eſcaped in Printyng.

Faultes.	*Correction.*
In the Summarie of the Nouels. Tarquinus	Tarquinius
Fol.5.line.12.bicauſe	for that
Fol.39.page.2.line.19.On	Of
Fol.41.line.22.conciacion	Conciliacion
Fol.47.line.33.and	to
Fol.53.page.2.line.26.theſe	the
Fol.76.page.2. xiij.Nouel.	xij.Nouel.
Fol.87.line.7. xiiij.Nouel.	xiij. Nouel.
Eodem. Fol.line.22.the	theſe
Fol.92.line.15.page.2.ſhe	a word ſuperfluous
Fol.94.line.2.Seſtertias	Seſtertios
Eodem.line.28.Suetonuis	Suetonius
Eodem.page.2.line.8.muſt be	was
Fol.95.line.5. Nouel.xv.	Nouel.xiiij.
Eodem.Zenobia Quene of.&c. who although ſhe was a gentle Quéene, yet a Chriſtian Pꝛinceſſe.&c.	Zenobia Quéene of.&c who although ſhe was a Gentile Quéene, yet a Pꝛinceſſe ſo worthy of.&c.
Fol.102.line.31.ſteined	ſuſteined
Fol.105.line.12.committing	to commit
Fol.135.line.25.*Dicilia*	*Sicilia*
Fol.141.line.27. Paolina	Paola
Eodem.line3.In	a word ſuperfluous
Fol.154.page.2.Timagoras	Timagoras
Fol.161.line.26.ſawcons	ſawnes
Fol.163.line.8.griſlie	griſll

Fol.

Faultes.	Correction.
Fol.167.pag.2.line.11. inſinmate	inſinuate
Fo.178.line.2. page.2. qualitied	qualified
Fol.185.line.8.page.2.Romida	Romilda
Fol.214.line.22.To	a word ſuperfluous
Fol.242.line.22.then	when
Fol.249.line.6. pa.2.*Sanſantino*	*San Fantino*
Fol.292.page.2.line.3.bis	bir
Fol.306.page.2. line.17.arrined	approued
Fol.359.line.30.ſlued	ſlued
Fol.404.page.2.line.32.mans	man is
Fol.407.line.22.To	So

Le buone parole on zeno,
Le cattiue ponzeno.

62843